

**HEAVEN  
DOESN'T USE  
MONEY  
BECAUSE  
HEAVEN IS FREE!**

**By: Dr. Robin Fox, D.D.**

**Copyright 2013**

# **CONTENTS**

## **CHAPTER 1**

**NO BANKS, TAXES, OR MONEY NEEDED IN THE NEW EARTH  
AND THE NEW HEAVEN**

## **CHAPTER 2**

**THE MILLENNIAL REIGN OF CHRIST, THE 7<sup>TH</sup> TRUMPET,  
DEATH, THE RESURRECTION BIBLICALLY DEFINED &  
INTERPRETED DIFFERENTLY FROM MOST SCHOLARLY  
PRESENTATIONS**

## **CHAPTER 3**

**YOUR PERSONAL DEATH AND RESURRECTION -  
DEFINING 'THE GREAT TRIBULATION' BEFORE THE  
RAPTURE OF JESUS CHRIST'S SECOND COMING**

## **CHAPTER 4**

**THE POETRY OF ROBIN FOX: WILL MARRIED COUPLES BE  
REUNITED IN PARADISE?**

## **CHAPTER 5**

**NO MARRIAGE IN HEAVEN – NO LONGER WILL THERE BE  
ANY CURSE!**

## **CHAPTER 6**

**THE CURSE WARNING FOR NOT PROVIDING FOR YOUR  
RELATIVES AND IMMEDIATE FAMILY IN NEED – THE 20<sup>th</sup> &  
21<sup>ST</sup> CENTURY RICH MAN VERSUS LAZARUS SYNDROME**

## **CHAPTER 7**

**WHAT THE BIBLE TEACHES US ABOUT FREEDOM VERSUS MONEY, INTEREST, TAXES, LENDING, BORROWING**

## **CHAPTER 8**

**RETHINKING THE FEDERALIST PAPERS ON A CONSTITUTIONAL LEVEL WITHOUT BETRAYING OUR CONSTITUTION, OUR BILL OF RIGHTS, OUR BIBLICAL FREEDOMS, BY ASSESSING WHERE WE ALL WENT WRONG AND MAKE IT RIGHT AND PERHAPS BE BRIGHTER IN DEFENDING OUR PERSONAL, NATIONAL, AND GLOBAL SECURITY WITHOUT NUCLEAR WAR ASPIRATIONS THAT ENEMIES OF FREEDOM HAVE CONSPIRED**

## **CHAPTER 9**

**YOU ARE FACING THE BEAST AND GOING THROUGH THE TRIBULATION WHETHER YOU BELIEVE IT OR NOT**

## **CHAPTER 1**

### **NO BANKS, TAXES, OR MONEY NEEDED IN THE NEW EARTH AND THE NEW HEAVEN**

**THE BIBLICAL SOLUTION** of global problems is a **SIMPLE** solution, but humanity is too sinful, fallen, and stupid to get it. For as long as false religions and false gods exist to torment the human race and people feel the need to price and tax each other to death, there can never be world peace, never be world safety and security, never be a world that would come close to resembling **HEAVEN** or **GOD'S GLORY**.

Despite the Freemasonic belief about **"THE POWER OF POSITIVE THINKING,"** while bad teachers are saying, "Peace, prosperity, & security," destruction will come suddenly.

This world has chosen to accept **THE MARK OF THE BEAST**.

What exactly is **"THE MARK" OF THE BEAST**?

It's **MONEY**.

Perhaps that shocks you.

Perhaps you disagree that **MONEY** is the **MARK OF MANKIND** and particularly going to be the mark of the 8<sup>th</sup> king of Revelation 17, as it was historically the mark of other world rulers whose portrait was numbered by money.

While **HEAVEN** does not need nor require money, Earth's many kingdoms have accepted the **MARK OF MONEY**, without which **NO ONE CAN BUY OR SELL**. This mark, which carries the images of world rulers, even **U.S. PRESIDENTS**, is the **TERRORIST** of humanity and the chief cause of all human slavery and misery.

**WHY** do you suppose that Earth's Creator stated, **"YOU CAN'T serve BOTH GOD AND MONEY."** **YOU CAN'T!** Why?

Money is not based on **LOVE** or **SELFLESSNESS**.

**MONEY** is based on a philosophy of **SELF**. How?

**"I will not give you ANYTHING unless you give me something in return."**

**“Our land has a resource that yours doesn’t have, so we will trade you what OUR LAND has with what YOUR LAND has to avoid war and invasion.”**

**The PHILOSOPHY of a DEMOCRATIC REPUBLIC is that MONEY can be used for GOOD instead of evil, to replace WAR, to replace the SELFISH notion that certain resources cannot be obtained on someone else’s turf UNLESS something is given back.**

**Such a philosophy NEVER EVER CAME FROM GOD.**

**Since GOD created the world without banks and taxes, God created the world FREE and it is only the devil and those who said, “Yes” instead of “No” to his offer of GLOBAL DOMINION that MONEY and TAXATION exist. Even ‘the elect’ were deceived and fooled.**

**A world without MONEY would truly be HEAVEN, but because we live in a world that requires MONEY we must navigate through the hell of what our world leaders have compromised FREEDOM for.**

**This world, as it is today, is corrupted by MONEY.**

**So I don’t sit around blaming GOD for death, or suffering, or human misery, because it is PEOPLE who went bad and went wrong.**

**ALL OF US ARE GUILTY OF GOING IN THE WRONG DIRECTION!  
MONEY is THE MAIN LIE that has FOOLED ALL NATIONS.**

**Our dependency upon this kind of exchange of earth’s resources has DESTROYED liberty throughout the world and caused every gift and talent that God’s Children have to be held hostage to it.**

**MONEY is the main problem and not the main solution, but the advocates and worshipers of money are as numerous as the sand on the seashore because PRISON WARDENS working for hell existed before we were born to enslave our entire lives with it!**

**Most of those who created the MONEY SYSTEMS are now dead and the people trying to keep it alive today are TRAPPED and BURDENED with the nightmare headache of trying to SAVE the world through banks, through tax collectors, and through various methods of collecting MONEY through various ‘hard workers.’**

**I personally TRUST IN GOD, but not in MONEY.**

**MONEY IS MERCILESS.**

**THE MATH OF MONEY does not offer FREEDOM unless you earn lots of it! Even then, having to buy and sell with money, being dependent on millions of human batteries running on the lowest financial energy possible, should strike the hearts, minds, and**

**consciences of every person who QUESTIONS all financial systems – and deems them all A LIE.**

**We are so busy WARRING and FIGHTING against each other, we aren't seeing the bigger picture that MONEY is causing all of our fighting and wars and most of our problems.**

**There would most likely be a lot less crime if MONEY didn't exist.**

**People would most likely abandon these false gods and these false religions if MONEY were made obsolete.**

**WAR would continue, even if we got rid of money because there are too many people who worship false gods and follow false religions and would continue fighting and hating each other over gods they think exist, but in fact, do not.**

**THE GOD OF ISRAEL EXISTS and the TEN COMMANDMENTS demand our exclusive worship of Him ALONE alongside nobody else.**

**Today, the GOD OF ISRAEL is not forcing anyone to worship Him and has only requested, by HIS LAW that the world community RESPECT HIS TORAH LAW by allowing ISRAEL to have their own piece of land and property in the Middle East, freed of threats and harassment, terrorism and war.**

**But because EARTH'S RESOURCES are being held hostage to the MARK OF MONEY, nothing is changing, ignorance among world leaders continues; the falsehoods of preaching 'peace and prosperity and security' continue to deceive the masses; and MONEY continues to destroy humanity all over the world.**

**I remember as a child growing up how FREE I felt. The Gift of prophetic vision was sometimes very frightening, but also very comforting. As a child, I could not interpret my dreams or nightmares, but when I grew older I came to understand WHY God allowed me to have such a great gift.**

**I had GIFTS without being priced, or taxed, or jailed, or subjected to someone telling me I should have to be in debt to the ROCKEFELLER CITIBANK SYSTEM a whole lifetime in order to ACHIEVE what God wanted me to achieve.**

**Dreams and visions, nightmares and prophecies all played a major role in my life and as a child, God inspired me to also use the fullest capability of my imagination, in combination with music, to allow my soul to travel to different places in my mind, experiencing the most awesome SPIRITUAL world a young person could have.**

**When you wake up to the real world, it is not like the dream world or the place where you go as a child when you combine your dreams with a very vivid imagination.**

**In the REAL WORLD, money DESTROYS your dreams, your inspiration, and your talents – if you don't make a lot of it!**

**Surely I enjoyed arcades, amusement parks, movies, dancing, music, and spending lots of time with my good parents having lots of fun and playing with all kinds of new inventions and gadgets.**

**I had a VERY FUN childhood!**

**But I ALWAYS thanked GOD first that many inventors, builders, and creators of "AMERICAN" innovation were able to come up with all of this great stuff that young people got to enjoy throughout the 1970s, 1980s, 1990s, and the present!**

**So WHY would I be AGAINST MONEY since I used some of it for self indulgences? Am I a HYPOCRITE for enjoying American "FREEDOM" by using money? No. It's the ONLY system we were taught to be dependent on for modern survival.**

**I followed THE FOX NEWS CHALLENGE of working dead end jobs and followed the JESUS CHRIST CHALLENGE of not being a lover or a pursuer of money.**

**Everyone has a FOOL-OSOPHY about MONEY.**

**I just never liked it or agreed with it. I always kind of wondered why people couldn't just invent, create, build, and work WITHOUT MONEY, without being priced or taxed because putting a price on people and earth's resources seemed so UN-NATURAL to God's HOLY SPIRIT. I always viewed MONEY as against His will and against Heaven's GLORY about FREEDOM.**

**We are ALL PRISONERS of MONEY and TAXATION in this world, as the common joke surfaced: "There are only two facts you must face about your life: TAXES and DEATH."**

**None of us are HYPOCRITES for using some of our own hard labor wages to INDULGE ourselves and have some fun.**

**Truthfully, in CALIFORNIA, I had the most fun any young person could have. When it came to fun and games and entertainment, people were usually always nice, friendly, funny, and had the appearances of happiness and carefreeness that was part of our American culture.**

**AMERICANS LOVE TO HAVE FUN.**

**Unfortunately, as soon as the fun is over, and we have to go back to working for strangers who hold our paychecks hostage and strangers own our homes and our bills, people in corporate California can be very angry, mean, cruel, nasty, rude, backstabbing, and evil. These same people you might have fun with at drinking or drug use parties will be different in a place of employment, going on power trips, playing games, stabbing people on the back – while business managers and owners are always looking for their next victims to fire in order to save money for a company that won't always earn extra revenue.**

**California ENTERTAINMENT is the best.**

**But CALIFORNIA JOBS are THE WORST.**

**Lots of nice fancy buildings, skyscrapers, business centers, and architectural wonders got built in California by very talented and smart builders, but the people occupying them were much too stressed out about how to keep their businesses operating good enough to pay all the ridiculous bills imposed upon them by an unappreciative communist government. And even the prosperous companies who earned HUGE PROFITS had CEOs and owners cashing in on the profits, as was and is THEIR RIGHT to take their surplus, instead of giving people more pay, more hours, and actually helping their employees to earn HUGE bonuses. And as the PROFITERS of hard slave labor cashed in and cashed out, they made cuts to benefits, hours, and jobs. And they always question why terminated employees are always going around shooting employers!**

**On a SOCIALIST level, California was VERY GENEROUS, especially to my dad and I have a lot of people to thank for saving his life for 15 years, in addition to my special thanks to God who was my dad's #1 Savior the whole time.**

**But as soon as Obama became president and Nancy Pelosi and Gray Davis pushed "OBAMACARE" with immediate cuts, my dad died under their careless system. I DO blame Obamacare for the changing attitudes of doctors and hospitals towards their patients. With all the THREATS of government politics, the QUALITY of care would greatly diminish as a new culture of CHINESE DOCTORS, ARAB DOCTORS AND DENTISTS would take over health care and dentistry and virtually kill off Americans through a new EUTHANASIA government.**



**Instead of doctors being able to provide GOOD QUALITY CARE to patients, patients were being neglected, and therefore with that diminishing attention to patient needs, wants, and concerns, people were dying and suffering right and left.**

**CALIFORNIA HEALTH CARE, although once superior, took a nose dive into hell during 2011 and 2012 with the threats of Obamacare taking from the ESTABLISHED POOR on Medicare and giving to the un-established poor without medicare. The wealthy could only FLEE California or else sell out to FOREIGN BUYERS moving a new culture of trash and garbage into every city.**

**Before the year 2000, California was pretty cool.**

**But after the year 2000, California went to hell. High inflation; high gas prices; mortgage prices ridiculous; new COMMUNIST HOMEOWNER ASSOCIATIONS being established through the construction of massive TUNE TOWN walled communities which were \$800,000.00 for one square house stacked on top of hundreds of other stacked houses; massive unemployment; massive layoffs; massive budget cuts; more government rules and regulations and restrictions being enforced; more population; more pollution; more crowded freeways; more crime; more gangs; more drugs; more tattooed fuglies; more homosexual offenders on the parade; and just altogether MORE HELL ON EARTH.**

**California turned from being a fun, open, friendly place, to a REAL SEWER with every square inch of land destroyed.**

**In the 1980s, things were pretty cool, even though Carter had caused a massive unemployment rate that carried over into the Reagan era, who could only empower the wealthy to create more jobs for the poor – something that Clintonian and Obama regimes would destroy with their TRAITOROUS AND TREASONOUS sellouts of American businesses.**

**From the study of the 20<sup>th</sup> and 21<sup>st</sup> century, despite all the progress achieved through lots of underpaid and overworked American and Chinese slave laborers under communist threat, MONEY did NOT IMPROVE a majority of households living IN DEBT and therefore, financial poverty.**

**Neither the democratic FOOLOSOPHY nor the REPUBLICAN philosophy about MONEY work for EVERYONE.**

**A golden chain is only as strong as its weakest link and when that link snaps the whole chain falls!**

**On EARTH, MONEY and TAXATION have become the tools of the earth's BEASTLY kings and have enslaved humanity since the world fell because of sin.**

**Throughout Junior High and High School, when public education was boring, unenlightened, left God out of math, science, history, current events, reading, and whatever other boring course caused me to just either lay my head down sleeping on the desk or cracking jokes with fellow classmates [with an occasional mischief here and there], I was occupied with reading and writing books that INTERESTED ME.**

**PUBLIC EDUCATION, although FREE to the student, was a waste of a lot of student time!**

**I was never really quite interested in learning someone else's secular and godless programs. But that's what I had to ENDURE like everyone else did. It was simply PROGRAMMED into every house to be PROGRAMMED by THEIR CURRICULUM.**

**I'm a firm believer that CHILDHOOD should be about having lots of fun, playing, learning, growing, and experiencing freedom.**

**Thanks to loving and caring parents and an awesome grandmother, I was allowed to be a FREE CHILD and a FREE TEEN, with the exception of that prison called: SCHOOL.**

**A SECULAR PUBLIC EDUCATION that left the God of Israel in the Name of Yeshua Maschiach out of its studies was not interesting to me and I figured that any society that would leave the Creator out of education would become a society of dead beat godless zombies who learn a bunch of facts and figures but never really have any intellectual or spiritual depth on a Biblical or Godly level.**

**Just like BEN STEIN showed in his expose on College and University biasness towards EVOLUTION and the EXPELLING of THE GOD OF CREATION from Science and Education, back in the 1980s, I just expelled myself from even TRYING to score straight A's. I just couldn't dig being programmed by a secular society and never really adapted, conformed, or even rebelled while still young. I just played by the rules, got by, and got the heck out of there only to suffer the repeated disappointment of being THREATENED with College and University education, which required a lifetime of debt. No thanks.**

**I did NOT believe in the Student Loan System, although I eventually took a less expensive loan, which I would regret taking out later in life!**

**Really, as a child, I HATED SIN.**

**As a child, I HATED 'THE SYSTEM' of MONEY.**

**As a child, I LOVED GOD'S HOLINESS and hated everything and everyone unholy. I hated coarse joking, foolish talk, dark humor, and people's various annoying loud and meaningless talk which left God out of every conversation. I certainly didn't like seeing PRICES being put on people or resources.**

**Everyone who LOVES GOD'S HOLY SPIRIT hates what is unholy and blasphemous to that SPIRIT of being WHOLE/HOLY.**

**And even those who included "God" in religious conversations just seemed kind of dumb.**

**Having a sense of God and His Holiness while you are a child and a teen helps you to view sin with absolute clarity and see through most people's fascades. And when you have such confidence that God gave you intelligence, and the ability to grasp what is HOLY through OBEDIENCE to His Laws, you are not arrogant in assuming you are better than others, nor would you be condescending by looking down on others. It's just that God is SMART, INTELLIGENT and HOLY, and a majority of your peers aren't smart, aren't intelligent, and aren't holy. And you get criticized when you strive for Holiness.**

**If you SIN over a lifetime, you can become insensitive to God's Holiness, but when you first enter this faith with a child like innocence you are SUPER AWARE of sin. I remember how sensitive I was as a child growing up in the 1970s, 1980s, and 1990s, just how evil Hollywood had become, how the music industry glorified the devil versus God instead, how our school system was godless and the people had become complacent; how our churches fell asleep in the midst of 'global spiritual revivals.'**

**The only thing you know as a child is that your parents are THREATENED and HARRASSED and PROVOKED by the financial systems set in place to make you a slave and prohibit you from continuing the freedom you enjoyed as a child.**

**I was smarter as a child and a teen than I was as an adult and such confidence came from God.**

**It is when I became an adult, that somehow I got dumber when it came to my spirit of blankness in sinning. But I suppose it was for the reason of being able to ‘delight in the things that show my weaknesses’ for when I am weak, then I am strong. Even Jesus stated, “My grace is sufficient for you for my power is made perfect in weakness.” I can honestly say, that in this world, I led a pretty weak life in this context.**

**Throughout my twenties, I went from being super sensitive to sin, to being insensitive to sin. When you grow up in a society that is insensitive to God’s Holiness, you can easily become numb and insensitive too as the world is fallen, jaded, and out of control. And sometimes I lost CONTROL.**

**When I was young, I also had THE CONFIDENCE, by Biblical reason and definition that THE WHOLE WORLD WAS ONE BIG LIE.**

**I didn’t understand why any FREE society would use MONEY to exchange resources that God created free.**

**I had a sense of Heaven’s glory that in His Kingdom, MONEY doesn’t exist.**

**And if MONEY doesn’t exist in Heaven, why does it exist on earth?**

**TAXES also seemed cruel and evil and I knew with 100% clarity that taxes didn’t exist in Heaven either.**

**Preachers would preach that “HARD WORK IS A BLESSING! THIS COUNTRY WAS FOUNDED ON HARD WORK AND YOU SHOULD WORK HARD TOO! IF YOU DON’T WORK HARD, YOU ARE LAZY AND WORTHLESS!”**

**Although it was true that ‘hard work’ was part of the curse and the fall, as Adam and Eve had to leave their easy work of tending the Garden of Eden to be cursed with the sweat of hard work and child rearing outside of Eden, why was HARD WORK punished through putting a price on people and on earth’s resources?**

**Ge 2:15 The LORD God took the man and put him in the Garden of Eden <sup>m</sup> to work it and take care of it.**

**Okay, so we learn that preachers are being Scriptural in saying that working in a garden and taking care of it is in harmony with God’s first works in Creating MAN and allowing man to work in a Garden and take care of it.**

**Man was created HOLY and so was CREATION.**

**Man's natural order was to work in a garden all by himself, alone, in peaceful solitude and independence.**

**SOLITUDE and INDEPENDENCE are NATURAL because God created us to live in SOLITUDE and INDEPENDENCE. This kind of work was a BLESSING not cursed by the fall. Since our CREATOR LOVES TO CREATE, we can only inherit that blessing of wanting to be 'creators' too! CREATING requires lots of 'hard work!'**

**But a man working alone by himself was NOT GOOD.**

**God created WOMAN as a companion to man.**

**Creation was HOLY/WHOLE.**

**Man was HOLY/WHOLE.**

**Woman was DEFINITELY HOLY/WHOLE.**

**But it wasn't good for a man to be alone by himself to work all by himself.**

**But for Adam <sup>10</sup> no suitable helper <sup>v</sup> was found.**

**Ge 2:21 So the LORD God caused the man to fall into a deep sleep; <sup>w</sup> and while he was sleeping, he took one of the man's ribs <sup>11</sup> and closed up the place with flesh.**

**Ge 2:22 Then the LORD God made a woman from the rib <sup>12 x</sup> he had taken out of the man, and he brought her to the man.**

**Ge 2:23 The man said, "This is now bone of my bones and flesh of my flesh; <sup>y</sup> she shall be called <sup>z</sup> 'woman, <sup>13</sup> ' for she was taken out of man. <sup>a</sup>**

**The CURSE of hard work didn't occur until after Adam and Eve disobeyed God together. Work had been pretty easy in the Garden of Eden before the fall.**

**Satan, that ancient serpent called: the devil, Lucifer the fallen angel, would cause the blessing of GOOD WORK in the Garden to become a curse of 'hard work' after the fall.**

**Ge 3:16 To the woman he said, "I will greatly increase your pains in childbearing; with pain you will give birth to children. <sup>d</sup> Your desire will be for your husband, and he will rule over you. <sup>e</sup> "**

**Ge 3:17 To Adam he said, "Because you listened to your wife and ate from the tree about which I commanded you, 'You must not eat of it,' <sup>f</sup> "Cursed <sup>g</sup> is the ground <sup>h</sup> because of you; through painful toil <sup>i</sup> you will eat of it all the days of your life. <sup>j</sup>**

**Ge 3:18 It will produce thorns and thistles<sup>k</sup> for you, and you will eat the plants of the field.<sup>l</sup>**

**Ge 3:19 By the sweat of your brow<sup>m</sup> you will eat your food<sup>n</sup> until you return to the ground, since from it you were taken; for dust you are and to dust you will return.”<sup>o</sup>**

**Working was not evil, UNTIL the fall.**

**Working was not bad, UNTIL the curse.**

**Did God create any banks in the Garden of Eden? NO.**

**Did God tax Adam and Eve? No.**

**Did they become ‘like GOD’ after they ate the forbidden fruit? No.**

**Have you become ‘like GOD’ by eating the forbidden fruit of MONEY and TAXATION? No.**

**Adam lived 930 years and then he died after populating the earth with Eve.**

**It has been said among some Freemason lore that “Lucifer is the patron god of hard work.”**

**So this should settle the argument that because GOD cursed man with hard work that man can only be BLESSED by taxing and banking each other? Right? Or wrong? What do you think?**

**When Jesus died and rose again, He DESTROYED the curse of the fall, so that mankind could once again RETURN to the Garden and not be CURSED by ‘hard work’ but be blessed by GOOD WORK, as our first human parents enjoyed in the Garden.**

**But the EARTH, as it is CURSED TODAY is NOT A GARDEN!**

**Today, your HARD WORK is being banked, taxed, and jailed by an angry planet full of angry greedy leaders who enjoy enslaving each other and enslaving you with MONEY.**

**To be honest, MONEY came from THE DEVIL and not from God.**

**Well Mister Fox, why were you such a supporter of Fox News for over a decade? Aren't they CAPITALIST MONEY WORSHIPERS?**

**Because we all lived and experienced the "GOOD SIDE" of capitalism, as well as the bad and ugly side. If you had lots of money the system worked great. If you had little or no money, the system SUCKED! I have MANY DISAGREEMENTS about MONEY and TAXATION imprisoning society, but as an AMERICAN I respect the leaders who tried creating something good out of something bad. If you have JOB STABILITY like many Fox News heroes have, the SYSTEM IS GREAT! If you are the recipient of a millionaire or billionaire fund, your whole world view CHANGES because you are now FREE to buy anything in the system that you want or need. This is why people of financial wealth carry themselves differently and are treated differently than people without financial wealth – because they are free within this created system to do what they want without restrictions.**

**It is only when you are financially broke that the system suddenly changes into an angry beast that you just simply want to run away from and not really confront anymore because you've come to realize that THE SYSTEM is really quite just an illusion to feed one's pride and ego....'that you can be like GOD or like gods.'**

**MONEY has always been a FOOLOSOPHY based on SELF more than FREEDOM. Why? Because it says, "I am agreeing to get something from you by giving you something." Freedom is the freedom to give something without expecting anything in return, which is how CREATION WAS CREATED.**

**God CREATED the world FREE. He gave us EVERYTHING and demanded nothing back but respect.**

**God stated, "I am GIVING YOU THE WHOLE WORLD and expecting nothing in return but your faithfulness and devotion."**

**Imagine CREATING without expecting to get anything back! Imagine other people GIVING you everything without demanding something in**

**return! That my friends is the DIFFERENCE between HEAVEN's freedom and Earth's enslavement by MONEY FOOLOSOPHY.**

**MONEY preaches, "This resource is MINE and NOT YOURS and you can't HAVE IT unless you give me something back of VALUE, that I may PROFIT enough to be able to PURCHASE what is not mine, but other people's resources."**

**I'm convinced that when Adam and Eve's children grew up, at the same time God created other civilizations in other lands with other tribes also created in God's Image, in addition to Adam's lines, they didn't have money or taxes. They had SACRIFICES and OFFERINGS and WORSHIP through words or music.**

**If you were on the land and placed borders between yourself and your neighbors you were entitled to whatever you sowed or reaped on that land and showed your neighbors and neighboring tribes RESPECT by not moving your neighbor's boundary stones by force or by war.**

**If your neighbor had a resource on their land, you could simply ask them for that resource and they would give it to you, whether it was food or medicine or water or cattle – at NO PRICE!**

**When civilizations first began, BEFORE THE FLOOD, I'm positive that Earth's resources were shared and given freely among families and neighbors and tribes, until, of course, the fallen angels chose to marry whatever women they chose and thus corrupt the earth with sin and evil.**



## Cain and Abel

Ge 4:1 Adam <sup>19</sup> lay with his wife <sup>z</sup> Eve, <sup>a</sup> and she became pregnant and gave birth to **Cain**. <sup>20 b</sup> She said, “With the help of the LORD I have brought forth <sup>21</sup> a man.”

Ge 4:2 Later she gave birth to his brother Abel. <sup>c</sup> **Now Abel kept flocks, and Cain worked the soil.** <sup>d</sup>

Ge 4:3 In the course of time **Cain** brought some of the fruits of the soil as an offering <sup>e</sup> to the LORD. <sup>f</sup>

Ge 4:4 But Abel brought fat portions <sup>g</sup> from some of the firstborn of his flock. <sup>h</sup> The LORD looked with favor on Abel and his offering, <sup>i</sup>

Ge 4:5 but on **Cain** and his offering he did not look with favor. So **Cain** was very angry, and his face was downcast.

Ge 4:6 Then the LORD said to **Cain**, “Why are you angry? <sup>j</sup> Why is your face downcast?

Ge 4:7 If you do what is right, will you not be accepted? But if you do not do what is right, sin is crouching at your door; <sup>k</sup> it desires to have you, but you must master it. <sup>l</sup> ” —

Ge 4:8 Now **Cain** said to his brother Abel, “Let’s go out to the field.” <sup>22</sup> And while they were in the field, **Cain** attacked his brother Abel and killed him. <sup>m</sup>

Each person had their different types of working.

Abel kept the flocks and Cain worked the soil and we know that as an act of worship, they brought to God, a sacrifice.

Because CAIN was jealous of Abel, Cain murdered his own brother and we know that after Cain was exiled, there were other people created by God in other civilized cities. He would be known as the first murderer in human history, the consequence of which would cause men to be SELFISH. Cain was worried that he himself would be murdered in the same manner he killed his brother, but God placed a mark on him so that nobody would murder Cain. This new awareness that Cain had sinned and might have an act of revenge against him, included awareness that other men were capable of murdering him too, and thus, man killing man became another forbidden fruit causing man to fall further into disobedience to God’s Will.

**SELFISHNESS and GREED would cause murder, wars, fighting, arguing, division, pride, arrogance, and Satan's old attitude that if you disobeyed the Creator, you could become like God.**

**In the Genesis 6 narrative, we read that giants were born as a result of fallen angel intercourse with human women, and that such societies became so evil that God had to flood the world and start over again.**

**It is clear that after Noah and his three sons came out of the ark after the flood, God most likely created more people in other lands as the earth would be repopulated by new tribes in new flesh, uncorrupted by the fallen angels who had corrupted the pre-flood era.**

**We can go back to the history of how bartering was made obsolete by various ancient money systems, but we do know that many sins would cause earth's resources to be held hostage by various rulers and tribes who would follow the devil in worshiping and serving false gods and following false prophets.**

**Since mankind was given free will, he would only be allotted about 120 years on earth to experience a mortal life.**

**Many different tribes, since the flood have created their own gods, appointed their own kings and kingdoms, and because of the pride of sin, BORDERS would be established, rulers would become territorial and not TRUST other sinful rulers with threats of invasion looming over every land. Instead of SHARING earth's resources, man would selfishly hoard those resources for themselves and adopt a philosophy that, "THIS RESOURCE IS IN OUR LAND AND YOU CAN'T HAVE IT UNLESS YOU GIVE US SOMETHING IN RETURN FROM YOUR LAND THAT WE VALUE FOR OURSELVES!"**

**Such a SELFISH impulse was not born of God but born of man.**

**Instead of doing what HEAVEN'S ANGELS do and acknowledge that ALL RESOURCES belong to the Creator who created those resources and we ought to SHARE those resources with each other because we LOVE one another, Satan had corrupted the earth by telling each world ruler that they could be like God, sit on God's Throne, take over other countries, and be superior to either another country or another people. Thus, SLAVERY would be born with the Satanic philosophy that each god or king should be worshiped ABOVE and BESIDE another! Forget**

**about God as THE CREATOR and worship and serve created things – as if you are part of them and they are part of you and you can OWN the whole universe by worshiping them within YOURSELF!**

**Man had to choose to either worship the dirt he came from, or the Creator Who allowed man to have life above the dirt before descending below the dirt to rot.**

**Just now, I taught you something new that GOD ALREADY KNEW before He created the Earth we have inhabited with these decaying bodies: In HEAVEN, angels SHARE the resources GOD CREATED by His own Power, as not BELONGING TO THEM, but as belonging to God!**

**In Heaven, food is shared. Not priced or taxed.**

**In Heaven, there is no SIN, therefore no need to put up borders or fences or shut the door for privacy.**

**Rev 21:22 I did not see a temple<sup>h</sup> in the city, because the Lord God Almighty<sup>i</sup> and the Lamb<sup>j</sup> are its temple.**

**Rev 21:23 The city does not need the sun or the moon to shine on it, for the glory of God<sup>k</sup> gives it light,<sup>l</sup> and the Lamb<sup>m</sup> is its lamp.**

**Rev 21:24 The nations will walk by its light, and the kings of the earth will bring their splendor into it.<sup>n</sup>**

**Rev 21:25 On no day will its gates<sup>o</sup> ever be shut,<sup>p</sup> for there will be no night there.<sup>q</sup>**

**Rev 21:26 The glory and honor of the nations will be brought into it.<sup>r</sup>**

**Rev 21:27 Nothing impure will ever enter it, nor will anyone who does what is shameful or deceitful,<sup>s</sup> but only those whose names are written in the Lamb's book of life.<sup>t</sup>**

**On NO DAY will HEAVEN'S GATES ever be shut.**

**There will be NO WARS or FIGHTING or TURF WARS.**

**Nobody will tell you, "This is MINE and not yours and you can't have it unless you pay a price for it!"**

**All of the devil's money and government systems were always based on GREED, SELFISHNESS, SELF-IMPORTANCE, SELF-WORSHIP, and the attitude that you can't have ANYTHING unless you bow down and serve someone or something else other than God, the Creator.**

**That is the CONCLUSION of ALL FAILED world governments and empires, of kings and rulers of the world who rose up and then died. Did any of them rule the whole world? No.**

**Who today, really OWNS planet earth? Well, it might appear that the devil has the nations under his evil spell and God will only allow it for a short time longer, but trust the Bible when it says that JESUS CHRIST IS COMING SOON WITH A NEW EARTH that will never be destroyed or experience war again!**

**You won't have to worry about slanted eyed pygmy embryo aliens that have heads resembling aborted fetuses scaring you with genetic experimentations, that are most likely Satan's demons torturing people in hell. You won't have to worry about some 'higher intelligence' carrying you away in a mysterious UFO to some unknown planet that takes you into some other step of 'human evolution,' as your science fiction writers have fooled you into believing.**

**JESUS CHRIST is COMING SOON! We have THAT PROMISE for our NEAR FUTURE!**

**And it is THIS COMING I choose to discuss.**

**If MONEY doesn't exist in Heaven, why should it exist on earth?**

**Why can't humanity learn to love each other and SHARE earth's resources as belonging to God and not to them?**

**"Well, nobody has the right to take what belongs to you without asking first! That's stealing!"**

**Very true. Nobody likes to be robbed. We enjoy capturing thieves from stealing and taking what belongs to us for themselves! We are**

**always quick to judge, apprehend, prosecute thieves, for we are a nation of laws and God's law says, "DO NOT STEAL!"**

**It is true that nobody has the right to take what belongs to you without asking first whether or not you can give it to them.**

**We all have the RIGHTS to SECURE POSSESSIONS on earth and if something belongs to YOU it is your right to keep it until YOU choose to give it away!**

**Jesus did say something interesting that often goes ignored:**

**Lk 6:29 If someone strikes you on one cheek, turn to him the other also. If someone takes your cloak, do not stop him from taking your tunic.**

**Lk 6:30 Give to everyone who asks you, and if anyone takes what belongs to you, do not demand it back. <sup>d</sup>**

**Lk 6:31 Do to others as you would have them do to you. <sup>e</sup>**

**Lk 6:32 "If you love those who love you, what credit is that to you? <sup>f</sup> Even 'sinners' love those who love them.**

**Lk 6:33 And if you do good to those who are good to you, what credit is that to you? Even 'sinners' do that.**

**Lk 6:34 And if you lend to those from whom you expect repayment, what credit is that to you? <sup>g</sup> Even 'sinners' lend to 'sinners,' expecting to be repaid in full.**

**Lk 6:35 But love your enemies, do good to them, <sup>h</sup> and lend to them without expecting to get anything back. Then your reward will be great, and you will be sons <sup>i</sup> of the Most High, <sup>j</sup> because he is kind to the ungrateful and wicked.**

**Lk 6:36 Be merciful, <sup>k</sup> just as your Father <sup>l</sup> is merciful.**

**Unfortunately, we live in a world where people lend to you and expect to get it all back and WITH INTEREST even though God's law discourages brothers and sisters from charging each other interest.**

**If someone tries taking what belongs to you, you usually grab a gun and shoot them or use force to bring them down and prevent you from taking what belongs to you. We usually ALWAYS demand OUR PROPERTY back. This is perhaps one of the toughest teachings Jesus**

ever taught, because when someone **STEALS** from you, the most natural tendency is to retrieve **YOUR** property back by whatever means necessary and then **OFFEND THE OFFENDER** with prison time and a lawsuit. But are **WE** wrong? We can assume that Jesus does **NOT** want us to be doormats or allow **THIEVES** to always get their way or not defend ourselves from **THEFT**.

Indeed, **STEALING** is against **GOD'S LAW** and violators caught should normally be judged when caught.

Jesus stated that a **THIEF** who steals from you is **YOUR ENEMY**. I think what Jesus was saying here is that we are not supposed to be so attached to material things that we forget the value of a person's salvation as taking priority over our own selfish claims.

Let's do a recap on Jesus' words:

**If someone takes your cloak, do not stop him from taking your tunic.**  
**Lk 6:30 Give to everyone who asks you, and if anyone takes what belongs to you, do not demand it back.**<sup>d</sup>

**If someone takes my jacket, I'm going to beat the crap out of them and take it back! If anyone steals my property they are going DOWN-TOWN!**

Jesus was saying that if a thief steals from you, you are to place that person's **SALVATION** ahead of the retrieval of your own property and you are to **LOVE THEM** by being above being attached to material possessions and goods. Whatever you have **BELONGS TO GOD** and as **WORSHIPERS OF GOD**, we shouldn't be so attached to "HIS" material world, that we forget to show an act of courage in **FORGIVING THE THIEF**, especially if we have plenty of supplies and they have none. We must determine what the **MOTIVE** of a person's heart was first, before rendering judgment and if they were indeed, taking what belongs to you because you have a lot of it and they don't have any of it, **FORGIVENESS** can do better than punishment.

**During the last days of life on earth, we are not supposed to be attached to material possessions.**

**Mt 24:17 Let no one on the roof of his house<sup>y</sup> go down to take anything out of the house.**

**Mt 24:18 Let no one in the field go back to get his cloak.**

**Lk 23:39 One of the thieves who hung there hurled insults at him: “Aren’t you the Christ? Save yourself and us!”<sup>b</sup>**

**Lk 23:40 But the other thief rebuked him. “Don’t you fear God,” he said, “since you are under the same sentence?**

**Lk 23:41 We are punished justly, for we are getting what our deeds deserve. But this man has done nothing wrong.”<sup>c</sup>**

**Lk 23:42 Then he said, “Jesus, remember me when you come into your kingdom.”<sup>93 999 d</sup>**

**Lk 23:43 Jesus answered him, “I tell you the truth, today you will be with me in paradise.”<sup>e</sup>**

**Here we read that a BELIEVING THIEF was forgiven by Jesus because he knew the motive of this thief’s heart when he asked for forgiveness. And Jesus FORGAVE the thief with the promise he would enter paradise on THAT DAY! Amazing GRACE!**

**Have we become so attached to our material possessions that we place them above the value of another human being?**

**Have the methods of MONEY and TAXATION caused us to place them ABOVE GOD and ahead of the value of other people in our lives?**

**Have we been SELFISH with earth’s resources?**

**Have we been UNFORGIVING in ANY WAY towards our enemies?**

**Do you feel that other people ROBBED YOU? Yes. We are angry and want JUSTICE! They stole from your parents! They stole from your grandparents! They stole from YOU!**

**Shouldn’t they DIE for that? Of course they should, but Jesus taught us that instead of getting REVENGE, we should PRAY for our enemies**

**to be saved and to be attached to GOD more than the material possessions that have been stolen from us by thieves who spend their lives as parasites, living at the expense of others without making any useful returns.**

**IN HEAVEN, it doesn't matter whether THEY BUILT IT or YOU built it or you didn't build it. Heaven also doesn't say, "Well, you didn't build it, so you OWE US something in return in order for you to enjoy OUR building and if you don't give us something, you CAN'T HAVE IT!"**

**There is no BOASTING about what is YOURS or MINE or THEIRS because ALL RESOURCES are acknowledged as being FREE RESOURCES that GOD CREATED and because GOD is the AUTHOR and CREATOR and KING of all resources, we SHARE our buildings and inventions with Him first, and then, because we LOVE EVERYONE, we share such resources as belonging to God and therefore EVERYONE.**

**Nobody has to STEAL or ROB or be TERRITORIAL because there is NO MONEY and no reason to take what belongs to someone else, since each person acknowledges that GOD owns everything.**

**Although "PRIVATE OWNERSHIP" is from God and nobody has the right to take what belongs to YOU by force, a Christian society will VOLUNTARILY share resources as belonging to GOD!**

**This is to HEAVEN'S GLORY and not Earth's shame and demise.**

## **Love of Money**

**<sup>1Ti 6:3</sup> If anyone teaches false doctrines <sup>t</sup> and does not agree to the sound instruction <sup>u</sup> of our Lord Jesus Christ and to godly teaching, <sup>1Ti 6:4</sup> he is conceited <sup>v</sup> and understands nothing. He has an unhealthy interest in controversies and quarrels about words <sup>w</sup> that result in envy, strife, malicious talk, evil suspicions**

**<sup>1Ti 6:5</sup> and constant friction between men of corrupt mind, who have been robbed of the truth <sup>x</sup> and who think that godliness is a means to financial gain.**

**<sup>1Ti 6:6</sup> But godliness with contentment <sup>y</sup> is great gain. <sup>z</sup>**



**1Ti 6:7 For we brought nothing into the world, and we can take nothing out of it. <sup>a</sup>**

**1Ti 6:8 But if we have food and clothing, we will be content with that. <sup>b</sup>**

**1Ti 6:9 People who want to get rich <sup>c</sup> fall into temptation and a trap <sup>d</sup> and into many foolish and harmful desires that plunge men into ruin and destruction.**

**1Ti 6:10 For **the love of money** <sup>e</sup> is a root of all kinds of evil. Some people, eager for money, have wandered from the faith <sup>f</sup> and pierced themselves with many griefs. <sup>g</sup> \_**

**If you are a BELIEVER that MONEY, BANKS, and TAXATION does not exist in Heaven, you belong to a KINGDOM that is not of this world. Today, because of human sin, money, banks, and taxation exists to torment humanity and set it on the wide path of destruction as the TITANS of money fight and war and use it to MARK their BEASTS – their world leaders who seek the POWER and PLEASURE of having their own images worshiped by all.**

**Some people believe in taking a lifetime to ‘work their way up the minimum waged ladder’ to ‘achieve SUCCESS,’ and there is NOTHING WRONG with “SUCCESS”. SUCCESS comes from God and the INSPIRATION he gives us to use our abilities and talents to do something that helps and serves others. But I don’t believe God believes in PRICING that GIFT or TALENT.**

**Ac 8:15 When they arrived, they prayed for them that they might receive the Holy Spirit, <sup>f</sup>**

**Ac 8:16 because the Holy Spirit had not yet come upon any of them; <sup>g</sup> they had simply been baptized into <sup>37</sup> the name of the Lord Jesus. <sup>h</sup>**

**Ac 8:17 Then Peter and John placed their hands on them, <sup>i</sup> and they received the Holy Spirit. <sup>j</sup>**

**Ac 8:18 When Simon saw that the Spirit was given at the laying on of the apostles’ hands, he offered them money**

**Ac 8:19 and said, “Give me also this ability so that everyone on whom I lay my hands may receive the Holy Spirit.”**

**Ac 8:20 Peter answered: “May your money perish with you, because you **thought you could buy** the gift of God with money! <sup>k</sup>**

**Ac 8:21 You have no part or share<sup>l</sup> in this ministry, because your heart is not right<sup>m</sup> before God.**

**Ac 8:22 Repent<sup>n</sup> of this wickedness and pray to the Lord. Perhaps he will forgive you for having such a thought in your heart.**

**Ac 8:23 For I see that you are full of bitterness and captive to sin.”**

**This is one of the many sets of verses that inspired me to believe that many Churches are wrong in teaching youth that they can BUY the Holy Spirit by going into Student Loan Debt in order to become pastors and teachers and counselors or do any ministry. Many UNIVERSITY and COLLEGE DEGREED pastors and teachers of God’s words thought that THE HOLY SPIRIT could be bought with money and this thought ends up cursing whole congregations instead of blessing them. When it comes to MONEY and TAXATION, there is really no separation between church and state, because THE STATE and THE GOVERNMENT owns their electric bills; owns their land; owns their people! CHURCH people are NOT FREE but enslaved by MONEY and many churches become legalistic in asking people, in addition to paying taxes to Caesar to give MONEY TITHES and MONEY SPECIAL CONTRIBUTIONS without much protest or rebellion on the part of their ‘submissive’ followers.**

**You can’t BUY the Holy Spirit with a College degree.**

**You can’t BUY the GIFTS of GOD with money.**

**You can’t BUY your way into HEAVEN.**

**You can’t take your MONEY with you into heaven when you die, in addition to any of the resources you enjoyed on earth. All that remains, which is FREE is THE SOUL God gave you and YOUR CHOICES you made while your soul was captivated by sinful flesh. From one funeral to the next, NOTHING MATTERS in this world. As Solomon stated, “EVERYTHING is meaningless and a chasing after the wind.”**

**If you feel DISCOURAGED because of MONEY and TAXATION, be encouraged that such methods will not last forever and are soon to become extinct with the devil’s shortened time, as Earth’s REAL owner is coming soon to take those who are His away from this evil planet**

**and relocate them to THE NEW EARTH and THE NEW HEAVEN – THE HOME OF RIGHTEOUSNESS AND GOODNESS.**

**We must ALL RESPECT the builders, inventors, planners, leaders, employers, employees, investors, buyers, sellers of AMERICAN businesses who made all this MATERIAL WORLD possible.**

**Have no violence, nor rebellion against those who work hard, try to earn an honest living, and like yourself, are held hostage to making MONEY NUMBERS work for themselves, their families, and sometimes for you. I happen to RESPECT those who work hard to make the illusions of money work for themselves.**

**But in this volume we will not be giving glory to man in what he has accomplished, built, dreamed about, or earned bank for.**

**What we are seeking is HEAVEN'S HEALING touch and figure out a way, somehow, to ENJOY our labor without PRICING, TAXING, and using MONEY. There has GOT TO BE A BETTER WAY achieved peacefully!**

**Let's not forget that many of the original Rockefeller, Rothschild, Goldman Sachs first and second generation children are all dead and it is their grandchildren who carry on their visions for how they thought the world ought to be ruled.**

**A new generation, that HATES MONEY and HATES TAXATION has arisen yearning for EARTH'S RESOURCES to be freedom from taxation and money.**

**The JPMORGANCHASE commercial wishing everyone: "HAPPY HOLIDAYS" telling people that Americans are celebrating a good economy have become the enemies of Christmas and "Happiness" defined by our constitution. While taking away people's rights, life, liberty and the pursuit of happiness, they have all caged humanity with their oppressive policies.**

**While it is UNDISPUTABLE as patriotic Americans that our Constitution is better than a communist manifesto, an Islamic radical constitution, or some other doctrine from some agitated dictator who oppresses and murders his own people for the sake of greed, pride, and personal want and gain, our leaders have become dictators, changing the set times and GODLY LAWS for selfish means which do not represent FREEDOM for the people's assembled in mass protest.**

**Neither the conservative argument nor the liberal argument over MONEY and TAXATION has worked to free GOD'S RESOURCES from those holding such resources hostage to money and taxation.**

**POVERTY and HOMELESS EXIST so long as the bankers such as JPMORGANCHASE hold HOUSES hostage; hold energy hostage; hold water hostage; hold food hostage; and hold EVERY AMERICAN HOSTAGE to minimum wages, higher debts, higher taxes, and ever increasing slavery to foreign interests seeking the demise of good American FREEDOM.**

**Our U.S. CONSTITUTION, although sacred, cannot be VALUED under the clauses which speak of rights to collect revenue and taxes from its citizens anymore. Though the non-money parts of our Constitution ought to be upheld, the money parts ought to be dissolved and reformed as the abuses of the powerful tenants of money and taxation revenue have abused their privileges and rights to the decay of civilization, as evidenced by one bad news report after another, continue to harass, threaten and annoy all peaceful peoples.**

**RULES and LAWS, as BIBLICAL ORDAINED, have been bypassed by strange and unusual men, foreign to our freedoms, infiltrating the U.S. GOVERNMENT for evil, malicious, and subversive means, empowered by financial resources FOREIGN to those seeking honest and just gain versus dishonest and unjust gain, which our good prosecutors have been unable to effectively prosecute due to an overwhelming flood of DEMOCRATIC VOTES corrupted by fraud and dishonesty, deception, and total lack of trust.**

**The DEMOCRATIC PARTY, together with the Republican party, have not represented the masses through a failed democracy, and therefore should be totally dissolved by the will of the people.**

**Since all FIGHTING and ARGUMENTS are over MONEY AND TAXATION nationally and globally and personally, it is only fitting that in order for world peace to be accomplished, MONEY and TAXATION methods must be abolished for a FREE and GOOD society to thrive and flourish.**

**To enjoy the same benefits of an advanced society, means, that all employees must no longer be threatened nor harassed by prices being placed on themselves, their labor, or the resources they cherish to buy and sell with this illusion of money imposed on every land as a THREATENING method of exchange.**

**NEW RULES and LAWS** would have to be voted for that **NONE OF EARTH'S RESOURCES** are to be **EXCLUSIVELY** hoarded by the few at the expense of the masses, nor to be so priced and taxed as to harass and annoy the principles of freedom that God **CREATED** to be **FREE**.

If Earth's Owner said, "**YOU CAN'T SERVE BOTH GOD AND MONEY**," this is a very serious statement from earth's Messiah, as **MOTH and RUST** continue to destroy every household.

If a **TORNADO** strikes a Church building, such as happened in Alabama to a Baptist Church that destroyed a church building, the focus of a Church pastor should not be focusing on how to rebuild a building with **MORE MONEY**, but rather focusing on the needs of his own community, his own people, who, in the aftermath of a disaster cannot pay the bankers 'what they owe' to them, some of whom lost their own homes and roofs.

**Make churches out of people rather than buildings.**

Sure, the Baptist preacher believed that it was "**God's Will**" to rebuild a building destroyed by a tornado, but perhaps it was God's Will to blow down that building so that people could focus on each other rather than on a building or money.

Such a **FREEMASON PASTOR** thinks more about building materials and financial resources and sending his gospel of raising money to rebuild a building, rather than using the gospel of helping out a congregation who most likely needs financial help themselves.

In the event of **EVERY NATURAL DISASTER**, there is not enough money nor resources to pay for everyone – therefore a **NEW PLAN** needs to take effect, which opens up Earth's resources at no cost to those suffering losses caused by the devil's anger answered by God's continual wrath combined with weather warfare waged by merciless enemies.

While we oppose evil dictators and their foreign doctrines which terrorize the world and seek to continue the financial illusions to curb such foreign interests, unfortunately, our own democrats have invited foreign enemies into our government and corporate facilities to dictate to Americans how they can and should live their lives under their **MONEY and TAXATION METHODS** which are **FOREIGN to FREEDOM**.

Yes, an America ruled by **DEMOCRATS** is a dead America – not a free America, as proven by their failed policies.

**While GOOD REPUBLICAN MEN tried to follow an honest constitution with honest conservative math, even conservative math has become a burden that does not work to do anything but threaten to cut, cut, cut what should and not be cut, while the democrats, who seek methods of oppression, suppression, by selling America to foreign financial interests continue to exasperate a free society by financial methods treasonous to honest math which exploits the emotions of the poor.**

**The solicitation of votes on behalf of money exchange methods which are violently opposed by even a good peoples clumped together with the same fascists and communists seeking the overthrow of Republican government, is form of prostitution that has now turned pimps into heroes and subjected the daughter of every married couple to take off her clothing in order to get extra money.**

**The exploitation of female nudity has wickedly numbed and dumbled down society with all kinds of perversions that the unmarried and unloved resort to in fantasy as marriage is financially unattainable to those who refuse to prostitute themselves to the illusions of 'success' which the media ever preaches, even to the violation of Gospel Truth.**

**While we have 'SYMPATHY FOR THE BEAST' and its advocates, who aren't criminals or evil and are doing their best to keep the illusions of capitalism, money and taxation alive, our sympathies cannot blind us to the overwhelming reality that our own homes are being held hostage, so long as a MONEY BILL is sent to make us pay for God's Free Water, God's Free Energy, God's Free Education, God's Free health Care, God's Free RESOURCES harvested by ever increasing TAXATION, INFLATION, DEBT – and if you don't pay they take it all away.**

**We need a new resistance that DOESN'T HURT the masses by threatening with expulsion or deprivation, but rather HELPS the masses by methods of FREEDOM. Such methods of freedom are COMPASSIONATE, but cannot be compassionate so long as money and taxation continue to threaten the FREE masses whose royalty has been stripped and trampled on by those wearing fine clothes and insulting others for not having what they take for granted at the expense of those they just trampled on.**

**Obama is a MONSTER created by a wicked generation.**

**It was MONEY and TAXATION methods that created the monster that is Barack Hussein Obama and now WRATH has come on all states as a result of the wickedness of a system that failed to produce freedom for the peoples.**

**Now the beast owns America and what can Americans do but either crouch and hide or else raise LOUD PROTESTS, which, although non-violent, will simply be laughed off by the champagne and vacation clubs who continue to golf and go to nice hideaways to avoid the voices of masses assembled in protest, ready in arms to shoot such leaders in the democratic party who don't realize they shot themselves down in suicide.**

**To avoid VIOLENCE we need to arm our citizens with FREEDOM. HOW to do this is LOVE.**

**LOVE IS FREE. LOVE does not have money or taxation attached to it.**

## **CHAPTER 2**

### **THE MILLENNIAL REIGN OF CHRIST, THE 7<sup>TH</sup> TRUMPET, DEATH, THE RESURRECTION BIBLICALLY DEFINED & INTERPRETED DIFFERENTLY FROM MOST SCHOLARLY PRESENTATIONS**

**Since our HEALTH CARE SYSTEM has become a new financial concentration camp to murder countless citizens worldwide due to the wicked “Obama” name being attached to everyone who cannot buy or sell without the mandates of his monkey god killing and hurting everyone, a lot of people are about to die. Since FREEDOM is destroyed and our most vulnerable citizens are now on hospital beds helpless and paralyzed HOPING and PRAYING to be delivered from the suffering and death imposed by a FAILED financial world, we should and ought to prepare for THE REALITY OF DEATH AND HEAVEN since we must face and believe in only ONE SAVIOR to deliver us from such a world caused by the devil and his wicked advocates:**

**What REALLY happens when we die?**

**Do we go to Heaven immediately?**

**Do we go to Heaven at the 7<sup>th</sup> trumpet?**

**Do we go to Heaven after Jesus Christ’s Second Coming?**

**Do we simply blank out and wake up? Nobody, except Jesus Christ rose from death to give us an answer beyond His own resurrection and ascension into Heaven.**

**Here is what I’m convinced of: Most scholars are WRONG about the MILLENNIAL REIGN OF CHRIST as transcribed from Revelation 20.**



**I don't believe there are two raptures, one before the tribulation and one after. I don't believe in some kind of 'invisible vanishing' of last days believers, except of course, through death.**

**I don't believe that Jesus Christ will come and rule on this first earth for 1,000 years and then release the devil to attack His rule on earth after that 1,000 years.**

**If you feel and interpret the Bible the same way, then this book is for you – something different on a Biblical level from the mainstream thinkers.**

**I DO BELIEVE that Jesus Christ is REIGNING IN HEAVEN TODAY and has been ruling from Heaven with angels and His resurrected saints before and after He ascended to Heaven. Moses and Elijah appeared to Jesus during the transfiguration, which indicates that Elijah had gone to Heaven without dying and Moses had been resurrected with his new body and was alive during the life, death, and resurrection of Jesus. Moses and Elijah are CONFIRMED human beings who were RULING WITH JESUS from Heaven.**

**I believe the MILLENNIUM began with Jesus Christ's ascension into Heaven and that the first 300 years of Christian martyrs slain for their faith under Roman oppression went to heaven IMMEDIATELY to rule with Jesus. Even the THIEF on the Cross, whom Jesus said, "TODAY, YOU WILL BE WITH ME IN PARADISE," went to Heaven THAT DAY.**

**This means that such people are recipients of what Revelation 20 calls: THE FIRST RESURRECTION!**

**Since the beast had 7 heads during John's generation, five of those heads had fallen and one head was alive through the Roman Caesars. Many Israeli saints had been slain by the Assyrians, Babylonians, the Persians, the Greeks, the Syrians, the Egyptians, and the Romans.**

**The 7<sup>th</sup> head of Revelation 17 had not risen yet and the 8<sup>th</sup> head would be the final beast of the last days, to which the ten kings who hadn't yet received a kingdom would hand their authority to.**

**At the SECOND COMING, God will, "BRING WITH JESUS THOSE WHO HAVE DIED IN HIM," indicating that many believers had already been resurrected into Heaven BEFORE the Second Coming and are going to return WITH HIM on the clouds of Heaven to pick up the remaining believers on earth who are waiting for him during the 8<sup>th</sup> king's last days tyrannical rule.**

**Some BELIEVERS who die will get to participate in the first resurrection immediately.**

**But some BELIEVERS will not participate in the FIRST RESURRECTION and will participate in the FINAL RESURRECTION after the Second Coming, or perhaps just before the Second Coming.**

**I disagree with a lot of what Randy Alcorn wrote in his book entitled: HEAVEN and so I am writing this volume about HEAVEN with my own perspectives from some different Biblical angles that challenge some of his existing views.**

**Some of his incorrect beliefs are:**

- 1. THAT “THE FIRST EARTH” we live on today won’t be totally destroyed. I believe this whole world is about to be COMPLETELY DESTROYED and replaced by the NEW EARTH, as Revelation 21:1 makes very clear, along with 2 Peter 3.**
- 2. THAT we get “intermediate bodies” until some other resurrection. I believe that you get ONE RESURRECTION only, whether it is with Jesus in Heaven immediately; with Jesus just before His Second Coming; with Jesus after His Second coming before His Great White Throne Judgment. I don’t believe in a ‘transitional’ body, but that we get one transformation into our Eternal bodies when Jesus Christ resurrects us.**
- 3. THAT there are two raptures instead of just one rapture at the Second Coming. I believe the SECOND COMING is THE RAPTURE and don’t believe millions of “Christians” are going to disappear and just vanish mysteriously from the earth as all the fiction writers have fooled us into believing.**
- 4. THAT the MILLENNIUM will occur ‘someday’ on this earth. I believe that Jesus has been RULING in Heaven from Moses to Elijah as “THE GOD OF ISRAEL” / “THE ANGEL OF THE LORD” / and came down from Heaven to Earth for 33 years in the Name of Yeshua Mashiach; and after He died was resurrected and returned to His Throne in Heaven; that the first 300 years of martyred Christians and Jews were resurrected IMMEDIATELY into Heaven and have been ruling in Heaven as participants in “THE MILLENNIAL REIGN OF CHRIST” from the time He ascended through now.**

**THESE are the people Jesus brings with Him during the RAPTURE of His Second Coming, when there are believers alive on earth, standing up and lifting up their heads as their redemption draws near and all the nations of the earth mourn at His Coming.**

**Theology has been twisted during the 20<sup>th</sup> century, from the times that the MASONIC TBN GOLDEN THRONE Crouches with their pink wigs and fake evangelists arose to today’s prophecy leaders who don’t**

really do a whole lot in challenging existing views with **CORRECT Biblical views**, for fear of losing money, fame, fortune, and glory, which comes with being ‘accepted’ by the University and Book writing ‘authorities,’ who are all slaves to money and politics, as any other day laborer.

It’s an insult to **CENTURIES** of martyred Jews and Christians that last days believers won’t have to go through the trials of the **GREAT TRIBULATION** and be spared by **VANISHING FROM THE EARTH**, with clothes lying on the ground in some sort of invisible rapture that the Bible clearly **NEVER NARRATES**. The pre-tribulation rapture spin on words is **VERY FICTITIOUS**.

And for this chapter I will include the Biblical **EVIDENCE** of just how wrong people are for not believing that **THE SECOND COMING IS THE ONE AND ONLY RAPTURE!**

I do believe in “**THE RAPTURE**” of Judeo-Christian believers, but **ONLY** at the **SECOND COMING** which Matthew 24 and Luke 21 clearly narrate.

## **THE THOUSAND YEARS REIGN OF JESUS – THE MILLENNIAL REIGN OF CHRIST IN HEAVEN DEFINED**

**(Where Tim LaHaye & 20<sup>TH</sup> Century Thinking Went Wrong)**

**0 A.D. – 1000 A.D. – SATAN DECEIVES THE WORLD AND ATTACKS JEWISH AND CHRISTIAN BELIEVERS THROUGH THE ROMAN EMPIRE AND THE RISE OF ISLAMIC NATIONS [HISTORICAL BEAST & FALSE PROPHET THAT ONCE WAS]**

**1000 A.D. – SAINTS PERSECUTED BY ROME AND THE NATIONS OF ISLAM. THE SAINTS ARE RESURRECTED TO PARTICIPATE RULING WITH JESUS IN HEAVEN. MILLENNIAL REIGN OF CHRIST IN HEAVEN BEGINS WITH THOSE HISTORICALLY SLAIN BY THE ROMAN & ISLAMIC BEASTS.**

**900 to 1900 A.D or 1000 A.D. – 2000 A.D. – THE SAINTS RULE WITH JESUS IN HEAVENLY TEMPLE WHILE SATAN IS INCARCERATED.**

**1900 OR 2000 A.D. – THE PRESENT - THE MILLENNIUM RULE OF JESUS IN HEAVEN HAS CONCLUDED THE FIRST RESURRECTION. SATAN IS RELEASED FROM HIS PRISON TO GO OUT AND DECEIVE NATIONS I N THE 4 CORNERS OF THE WORLD AND THE TRIBULATION OF THE LAST DAYS BEGINS. THE SAINTS TO BE SLAIN IN THE FUTURE, AS HISTORICAL SAINTS HAD BEEN, WILL BE COMPLETED.**

**I wrote the above chart, not as a golden plate to be etched as 100% fact, but I wrote this as a THEORY to explain the Millennial Reign of Christ in simple terms, just like Tim LaHaye attempted to do with his charts. I don't know whether my theory is true or not. I can only offer an opinion based on what I have interpreted from Scriptures and then I must bump heads with various scholars and believers to see if there's any agreement between us in my evaluations.**

**As RIDICULOUS as the above EASY CHART seems, it may very well be more accurate than LaHaye's charts!**

**How did you feel during the OBAMA NATION OF DESOLATION years of 2008 through 2012? Feel like Obama was one of the devil's ten horns being used by Satan? Of course you did! The time was RIPE.**

**Natural disasters and economic chaos unprecedented with the whole world being 'astonished' at the rise of Obama!**

**What I just did is formulate an opinion and come up with a chart for an explanation of the Millennium. This is what many scholars and theologians have done with their charts for Revelation Prophecy.**

**When they don't know something, they will come up with an educated guess, a hypothesis, a FICTIONAL thesis, which they believe makes sense based on what they have read. They will try to be seeker friendly by providing some kind of answers, instead of no answers and instead of saying, "WE DON'T KNOW," they would rather form an opinion or a fiction that fits with what they have read.**

**And prophecy books, among the controlled publishers, have earned MILLIONS off the pre-tribulation rapture fictions.**

**I accept Tim LaHaye and Jerry Jenkins as enthusiastic believers who have charted Revelation based upon their own studies and based upon the studies of countless scholars of Bible Prophecy. Could they be wrong? Yes. They could!**

**Can their viewpoints be challenged on a Biblical level?**

**Absolutely. What I intend to do with MY NEW THEORY ON THE**

**TRIBULATION AND THE RAPTURE** is challenge the doctrines of Tim LaHaye and Jerry Jenkins in their interpretations of Bible Prophecy, something that most believers are unwilling to do, simply because it's just such a time consuming project, not to mention the most difficult Bible Study anyone can take on – especially on their own. However, you don't really need a College degree to study the Bible or Prophecy, especially when you read the books of authors such as: **RANDALL PRICE: THE TEMPLE AND BIBLE PROPHECY** or **HEAVEN** by Randy Alcorn. You can quite get an independent education by studying and researching lots of books and commentaries, with the Bible as your anchor source.

This common attitude that you need your hand held during Bible study is just another manipulation by modern leaders to keep you asleep as slaves to money and debt. First, the Freemasons, infiltrating Churches always wanted you to **“GO TO COLLEGE FIRST!”** Why? To make you a slave to the **CITIBANK STUDENT LOAN DEBT SYSTEM**. The **“EDUCATED PREACHER”** of the 20<sup>th</sup> century was a slave to **MONEY** and **DEBT**, just like any other slave laborer and this kind of lie kept our Churches asleep and prohibited so many young and gifted

**people from speaking at church, writing books, giving sermons, leading Bible studies, and still obtaining the rights of any preacher in having a house to raise a family in.**

**And the preachers who EARNED a “WAGE” by working for Churches had to submit and conform to their Church doctrines in order to not be expelled as heretics or ‘untraditional.’**

**Really, the pre-internet age was kind of like the Churches were still trapped in the DARK AGES where the Bible was only allowed to be read by THE ELITE while poor people shunned.**

**THE BAPTIST and CATHOLIC CHURCHES were synonymous in telling people they had to “prove themselves as obedient capitalists” first, before having a voice, an opinion, a book, or leading anyone or anything. Only if you went into debt for that college loan could you have a voice or be considered someone to be listened to or respected.**

**However, all throughout the ages, Jesus resurrected simple believers who OBEYED HIS WILL and were committed to Him.**

**When you free yourself from the slavery of POPULAR OPINION, you might come up with a different conclusion. Once you clear out all of the dust kicked up by the media’s attention towards Tim LaHaye’s**



**books you can clearly see what they could not see as they were busy flinging dust and clouding the atmosphere with an obscured vision.**

**In this chapter we are addressing an explanation or a series of explanations for THE MILLENNIUM as written in Revelation 20.**

**Revelation 20 mentions “THE THOUSAND YEARS” 6 times:**

- 1. Verse 2 – He seized the dragon, that ancient serpent, who is the devil, or Satan, and bound him for 1,000 years.**
- 2. Verse 3 – He threw him into the Abyss, and locked and sealed it over him, to keep him from deceiving the nations anymore until the 1,000 years were ended. After that, he must be set free for a short time.**
- 3. Verse 4 – And I saw the souls of those who had been beheaded because of their testimony for Jesus and because of the word of God They had not worshiped the beast or his image and had not received his mark in their foreheads or in their hands. They came to life and reigned with Christ for 1,000 years.**
- 4. Verse 5 – The rest of the dead did not come to life until the thousand years were ended.**

5. **Verse 6 – Blessed and holy are those who have part in the first resurrection. The second death has no power over them, but they will be priests of God and of Christ and will reign with him for 1,000 years.**
6. **Verses 7 – 8 – When the 1,000 years are OVER, Satan will be released from his prison and will go out to deceive the nations in the 4 corners of the earth—Gog and Magog—to gather them for battle.**

**I want to REPEAT THE ABOVE verses and comment on what we are truly reading here:**

**Revelation 20 mentions “THE THOUSAND YEARS” 6 times:**

7. **Verse 2 – He seized the dragon, that ancient serpent, who is the devil, or Satan, and bound him for 1,000 years. COMMENT: This 1,000 years is thought of CHRONOLOGICALLY as occurring just after Revelation 19 and would end the argument that only after the beast is slain along with the false prophet will Jesus “REIGN ON EARTH” for 1,000 literal years while Satan is locked up, only to be released against Jesus Christ**

**ruling on earth again. But this is simply fiction. It IS POSSIBLE that the 1,000 years can blend with Revelation 17, 18, and 19 in that it occurs during the same time frame. The 1,000 years might not be 1,000 LITERAL YEARS but figurative of the time when Jesus ascended to the moment of His Second Coming, which would encompass all of history, from the times BEFORE the beast arose to the time the last beast is destroyed by the appearance of Jesus Christ.**

- 8. Verse 3 – He threw him into the Abyss, and locked and sealed it over him, to keep him from deceiving the nations anymore until the 1,000 years were ended. After that, he must be set free for a short time.**

**Rev 12:12.**

**But woe<sup>w</sup> to the earth and the sea,<sup>x</sup> because the devil has gone down to you! He is filled with fury, because he knows that his time is short.”**

**It was clear to all Bible prophecy scholars that Revelation 12 was speaking about the rise of the Roman Caesars slaying Christians,**

**Jews, and the inhabitants of Jerusalem for 300 years until Constantine legalized Christianity after the dragon's appointment of the evil Roman rulers.**

**The reference to the devil as THE DRAGON in Revelation 20 being locked up and kept from deceiving anymore was last read in Revelation 12 when the dragon, through the Roman Empire's Caesars attacked and murdered Christian and Jewish saints for the first 300 years of oppressed Christianity.**

**The earth helped the woman, Jerusalem, Judeo-Christians scattered among many waters through the Byzantine Empire's legalization of Christianity throughout the Roman Empire, during which time "Christianity" had been combined with paganism through "Bishops" appointed by Roman rulers to purify "paganism" with "Christian" symbolism to replace Jewish Synagogues and the 'independent' Christians living without fathers or bishops or rulers or kings.**

**It would appear that the devil's hold over the Roman rulers ended for a short time with the rise of Byzantine Catholicism, however, a new BEAST EMERGED that would cause even more bloodshed and violence**

**than the Roman Caesars committed: A new religion for a false god who now was not a god, by an alleged false prophet who claimed that false god as sitting on the throne of the God of Israel – a false god named Allah. As the DRAGON CAESARS had ceased their oppressions of Jews and Christians for a short time, the devil empowered the false prophet Muhammad by giving Allah a voice to speak so that all who refused to worship Allah were killed. This history of Islam taking over Arabia, Egypt, Libya, Babylon, Persia, Turkey, Syria, Jordan, and all Middle Eastern countries is filled with just as much violence and bloodshed and oppression as the history of European oppressions caused by Roman rulers and Catholic leaders.**

- 9. Verse 4 – And I saw the souls of those who had been beheaded because of their testimony for Jesus and because of the word of God They had not worshiped the beast or his image and had not received his mark in their foreheads or in their hands.**

**They came to life and reigned with Christ for 1,000 years.**

**It makes PERFECT SENSE that the MILLENNIAL REIGN OF CHRIST was occurring already in HEAVEN! This is not something to yet occur**

**in the future, but something that occurred in history and is occurring today – in HEAVEN!**

**10. Verse 5 – The rest of the dead did not come to life until the thousand years were ended.**

**11. Verse 6 – Blessed and holy are those who have part in the first resurrection. The second death has no power over them, but they will be priests of God and of Christ and will reign with him for 1,000 years.**

**12. Verses 7 – 8 – When the 1,000 years are OVER, Satan will be released from his prison and will go out to deceive the nations in the 4 corners of the earth—Gog and Magog—to gather them for battle.**

**It makes perfect sense that “THE MILLENNIAL REIGN OF CHRIST” began as Jesus spoke with Moses and Elijah about his departure and return to earth before, during, and after His Resurrection.**

**We also have evidence of people going to either HELL or HEAVEN immediately through Jesus’ words on THE RICH MAN AND LAZARUS:**

**The Rich Man and Lazarus**

Lk 16:19 **“There was a rich man who was dressed in purple and fine linen and lived in luxury every day.<sup>h</sup>**

Lk 16:20 **At his gate was laid a beggar<sup>i</sup> named Lazarus, covered with sores**

Lk 16:21 **and longing to eat what fell from the rich man’s table.<sup>j</sup> Even the dogs came and licked his sores.**

Lk 16:22 **“The time came when the beggar died and the angels carried him to Abraham’s side. The rich man also died and was buried.**

Lk 16:23 **In hell,<sup>66</sup> where he was in torment, he looked up and saw Abraham far away, with Lazarus by his side.**

Lk 16:24 **So he called to him, ‘Father Abraham,<sup>k</sup> have pity on me and send Lazarus to dip the tip of his finger in water and cool my tongue, because I am in agony in this fire.’<sup>l</sup>**

Lk 16:25 **“But Abraham replied, ‘Son, remember that in your lifetime you received your good things, while Lazarus received bad things,<sup>m</sup> but now he is comforted here and you are in agony.<sup>n</sup>**

Lk 16:26 **And besides all this, between us and you a great chasm has been fixed, so that those who want to go from here to you cannot, nor can anyone cross over from there to us.’**

Lk 16:27 **“He answered, ‘Then I beg you, father, send Lazarus to my father’s house,**

Lk 16:28 **for I have five brothers. Let him warn them,<sup>o</sup> so that they will not also come to this place of torment.’**

Lk 16:29 **“Abraham replied, ‘They have Moses<sup>p</sup> and the Prophets;<sup>q</sup> let them listen to them.’**

Lk 16:30 **“ ‘No, father Abraham,’<sup>r</sup> he said, ‘but if someone from the dead goes to them, they will repent.’**

Lk 16:31 **“He said to him, ‘If they do not listen to Moses and the Prophets, they will not be convinced even if someone rises from the dead.’ ” \_**

**This is CONVINCING proof of the evidence that some people go to hell immediately and some people go to Heaven immediately.**

**In this analogy that Jesus used, the rich man lived a life of greed and selfishness while ignoring the many needs of the beggar laid at his**

**gate and the response to both lives was immediate. What's interesting is that when we think about the millennial reign of Christ in Heaven, we think about martyred saints who rule with Jesus during the FIRST RESURRECTION, which is an immediate resurrection, but we rarely consider that a lot of people go to hell immediately too. We know during this time that the devil is locked up and kept from deceiving the nations anymore, until the end times, when his time to deceive the world is short. We know that this short period of time, in Revelation 20 has disastrous consequences for the nations of the world who are "deceived" into gathering the Ezekiel 38 nations to war against Israel.**

**The devil, who manipulated history into worshipping the beast who once was and now is not will empower an 8<sup>th</sup> and final king who yet will come in the name of a false god and false prophet to mirror and repeat the history that once was during the last days.**

**This historical beast had martyred several Christians and Jews, as Islamic murders have done historically, presently and in the near future.**

**I'm convinced of the possibility that since my grandmother was a saint, although her body died in 2004, her soul may have immediately**



**gone to Heaven in 2004 and has been reigning in the MILLENNIAL REIGN OF JESUS CHRIST IN HEAVEN from 2004 to the present.**

**My died, who died in 2012, may not have gone right away to participate in the First Resurrection, and would be raised when the MILLENNIAL REIGN OF JESUS CHRIST ends when the devil is thrown into the lake of fire and the GREAT WHITE THRONE JUDGMENT begins.**

**Christian Believers usually have one of three viewpoints about the Millennium:**

**VIEWPOINT #1: AMILLENNIALISM – According to many scholars throughout the history of Christian Churches, the Millennium is not 1,000 literal years, nor will Jesus Christ rule on Earth in any Earthly State. Jesus will not rule from the current city of Jerusalem on this first earth, which Revelation 21 says will pass away. Instead, the martyred saints are ruling with Jesus right now in Heaven. This viewpoint follows more closely with my own viewpoint, that from the moment Jesus returned to Heaven, saints were ruling with Jesus in Heaven and the thousand years were figurative of his entire rule in Heaven with Resurrected Saints throughout Church**

**History through the present time. Not only Christian saints, but Jewish saints as well. Enoch, Elijah, and Moses are seen as being in Heaven BEFORE Jesus rose from the dead.**

**Those Christian and Jewish saints martyred by the beasts of the Roman Emperors and Islamic Rulers were resurrected immediately into Heaven to rule with Jesus until Satan's release from prison.**

**At the point when the devil is released from his prison to deceive the nations into attacking the earthly Jerusalem, Jesus would be handed the scroll with the seven seals of God's Judgment, during which time God would allow the angels with the 7 trumpets and the angels with the 7 bowls to unleash God's Wrath upon all dominion, authority and power on earth, so that everything is put under the feet of Jesus.**

**We know that WRATH came against the Roman Rulers who martyred the saints from 33 A.D. through 333 A.D.**

**The woman in Revelation 12 refers to Jerusalem. The dragon could symbolize the Roman Empire's conquest of Christian-Jews in Jerusalem, who had just given birth to the Messiah, Jesus. It can be undisputed that Revelation 12 has to do with the adversary of God's**

**people being the Roman rulers, not only in history, but perhaps in the present as well.**

**Historically, Rome had 12 horns of Caesars in history who ruled the Roman Empire and ruthlessly persecuted the woman, Jerusalem, & the Messiah's followers who had just been given birth there. Until Constantine became emperor, the 12 Caesars of the Dragon Rome ate Jerusalem's flesh and burned her with fire.**

**They were:**

- |                                      |                           |
|--------------------------------------|---------------------------|
| 1. <b>Julius Caesar</b>              | <b>49 B.C. - 44 B.C.</b>  |
| 2. <b>Octavian (Augustus) Caesar</b> | <b>44 B.C. - 14 A.D.,</b> |
| 3. <b>Tiberius Caesar</b>            | <b>14 A.D. - 37 A.D.</b>  |
| 4. <b>Caligula</b>                   | <b>37 A.D. - 41 A.D.</b>  |
| 5. <b>Claudius</b>                   | <b>41-54 A.D.</b>         |
| 6. <b>Nero</b>                       | <b>54-68 A.D.</b>         |
| 7. <b>Galba</b>                      | <b>68-69 A.D.</b>         |
| 8. <b>Otho</b>                       | <b>69 A.D.</b>            |
| 9. <b>Vitellius</b>                  | <b>69 A.D.</b>            |
| 10. <b>Vespasian</b>                 | <b>69 - 79 A.D.</b>       |
| 11. <b>Titus</b>                     | <b>79 - 81 A.D.</b>       |
| 12. <b>Domitian</b>                  | <b>81 - 96 A.D.</b>       |

**DATES OF THE LATTER-DAY EMPERORS OF ROME**

- |                             |                       |
|-----------------------------|-----------------------|
| 13. <b>Nerva</b>            | <b>96 - 98 A.D.</b>   |
| 14. <b>Trajan</b>           | <b>117 - 138 A.D.</b> |
| 15. <b>Antonius Puis</b>    | <b>138 - 161 A.D.</b> |
| 16. <b>Lucius Verus</b>     | <b>161 - 169 A.D.</b> |
| 17. <b>Marcus Aurelius</b>  | <b>161 - 180 A.D.</b> |
| 18. <b>Commodus</b>         | <b>180 - 192 A.D.</b> |
| 19. <b>Septimus Severus</b> | <b>193 - 211 A.D.</b> |

- |  |  |                                       |
|--|--|---------------------------------------|
| 20. <b>Valerian</b>                      | <b>253 - 260 A.D.</b>                            |                                       |
| 21. <b>Gallienus</b>                     | <b>253 - 268 A.D.</b>                            |                                       |
| 22. <b>Aurelian</b>                      | <b>270 - 275 A.D.</b>                            |                                       |
| 23. <b>Diocletian</b>                    | <b>284 - 305 A.D.</b>                            |                                       |
| 24. <b>Constantine I The Great</b>       | <b>306 - 337 A.D.</b>                            |                                       |
| 25. <b>Julian The Apostate</b>           | <b>361 - 363 A.D.</b>                            |                                       |
| 26. <b>Romulus Augustulus</b>            | <b>475 - 476 A.D.</b>                            | <b>(The last Emperor of the West)</b> |
| 27. <b>Justinian I</b>                   | <b>527 - 565 A.D.</b>                            |                                       |
| 28. <b>Constantine XI</b>                | <b>1449 - 1453 A.D.</b>                          | <b>(The last Emperor of the East)</b> |
| 29. <b>Mussolini</b>                     | <b>1919 - 1945 A.D.</b>                          |                                       |
| 30. <b>Aurelio Peccei (Club of Rome)</b> | <b>1968</b>                                      |                                       |
| 31. <b>SATAN (EEC)</b>                   | <b>20<sup>th</sup> – 21<sup>st</sup> Century</b> |                                       |
| 32. <b>SATAN (ALLAH)</b>                 |  |                                       |
| 33. <b>SATAN (MASONRY)</b>               |  |                                       |
| 34. <b>SATAN (CATHOLIC CHURCH?)</b>      |  |                                       |

**Luke 21:20-24 says – “When you see Jerusalem being surrounded by armies, you will know that its desolation is near. Jerusalem will be trampled on by the Gentiles until the times of the Gentiles are fulfilled.” What Gentiles? The following is a list of the Gentiles who fulfilled this verse in history and are fulfilling this prophecy today:**

- |                                       |              |
|---------------------------------------|--------------|
| 1. BABYLONIANS (NEBUCHADNEZZAR)       | 587 B.C.     |
| 2. PERSIANS (CYRUS)                   | 539 B.C.     |
| 3. GREEKS (ALEXANDER)                 | 323 B.C.     |
| 4. SYRIAN GREEKS (ANTIOCHUS IV)       | 167 B.C.     |
| 5. ROMANS (CAESAR)                    | 63 B.C.      |
| 6. ROMANS (ITALY)                     | 70 A.D.      |
| 7. ROMANS (ITALY)                     | 135 A.D.     |
| 8. BYZANTINES (CONSTANTINE)           | 324-629 A.D. |
| 9. MUSLIM ARABS (SAUDI ARABIA)        | 638 A.D.     |
| 10. SYRIAN MUSLIMS (DAMASCUS)         | 661 A.D.     |
| 11. ABBASID MUSLIMS (BAGHDAD)         | 750 A.D.     |
| 12. EGYPTIAN MAMLUK DYNASTIES         | 878 A.D.     |
| 13. EUROPEAN CRUSADERS (CHRISTIANS)   | 1099 A.D.    |
| 14. SALADIN (SULTAN OF EGYPT & SYRIA) | 1187 A.D.    |

- |     |   |                     |
|-----|---|---------------------|
| 15. | KHAREZMIAN TARTARS (SIBERIANS & MONGOLIANS) | 1244 A.D.           |
| 16. | MAMLUKS (EGYPT)                             | 1250-1517 A.D.      |
| 17. | OTTOMAN TURKS (TURKEY-ASIA MINOR)           | 1517-1917 A.D.      |
| 18. | MUHAMMAD ALI (EGYPT)                        | 1831 A.D.           |
| 19. | OTTOMAN TURKS (TURKEY)                      | 1840 A.D.           |
| 20. | BRITISH CONQUEST (BRITAIN)                  | 1917 A.D.           |
| 21. | JORDAN (EAST JERUSALEM)                     | 1948-1949 A.D.      |
| 22. | PALESTINE NATIONAL AUTHORITY                | 1964 A.D. – Present |
| 23. | PLO & THE GLOBAL ECONOMIC COMMUNITY         | 2000 A.D. – Present |
| 24. | BARACK HUSSEIN OBAMA ALLIED WITH IRAN       | 2008 - 2012         |

**The one mistake I believe with the viewpoint of AMILLENNIALISM is that the Millennium was always on earth through the rule of “Christian” Churches. Even though “Catholicism” was paganized Christianity in the sight of the God of Israel and His people ISRAEL were often oppressed and mistreated by some very evil Catholic and Monarchial leaders, many ‘independent believers’ were slain for their FAITH and stood up**

**against the so called 'authorities' of this world which were abusing and misusing God's ABSOLUTE AUTHORITY.**

**Although Jesus Christ was accepted by believers throughout the world on earth through many Churches during "THE CHURCH AGE", those who suffered and died for the Name of Jesus will participate in an immediate Resurrection into Heaven as God's promises for repentant BELIEVERS will always COMFORT such BELIEVERS. This immediate resurrection into Heaven during "THE CHURCH AGE" is what I believe is the Millennial Reign of Christ, not on Earth, but in Heaven. But modern scholars have always stated that Jesus will rule on earth for a thousand years, which is fictional and Biblically NOT THERE.**

**VIEWPOINT #2 – The pre-tribulation "Rapture" will occur BEFORE the 7 last years tribulation. Tim LaHaye and Jerry Jenkins follow this global viewpoint that millions of "Christian Believers Only" will vanish from the earth and that this MYSTERIOUS EVENT OF MILLIONS OF PEOPLE VANISHING SUDDENLY FROM THE EARTH will mark either the beginning of the tribulation or if not the**



**beginning, then a certain amount of time will pass between the Rapture and the Tribulation.**

**After thousands of years of Jewish and Christian believers being slain for their faith and many Scriptures showing how thousands of Believers entered Heaven's Glory, it is quite dumb to believe that the "Believers" we see today would get any special treatment over historical believers who had to suffer and die for their faith to enter Heaven's rest. In other words, I think it's a false teaching to preach to BELIEVERS TODAY that God wouldn't 'allow them to face the monstrous horrors of God's wrath in the last days!'**

**We have over 2,500 years of Jewish and Christian Believers who entered Heaven through suffering and death and there is no indication that such a pattern will suddenly change until THE SECOND COMING OF JESUS CHRIST, which will be loud, everyone will see it and for those BELIEVERS who are still alive and left on this earth at his appearance, the ONE RAPTURE that Matthew 24 and Luke 21 speaks about is fulfilled and those believers surviving to the SECOND COMING will meet the MILLENNIAL SAINTS in the air. And THIS is more Scriptural than the fiction they sold you at a**

**profit of MILLIONS throughout the 20<sup>th</sup> and 21<sup>st</sup> centuries – to keep you asleep, even as the whole world was spinning out of control.**

**After the 7 years of trumpets and bowls, Jesus Christ's Second Coming will bring a SECOND rapture for those who became Christians during the 7 years of Tribulation.**

**In my opinion, after 17 years of Bible Study, this is a fictitious fairytale to be disregarded on the same level as people who thought the world was flat. Although I can appreciate and respect the enthusiasm of men like Tim LaHaye and Jerry Jenkins and the various scholars and believers who accept this viewpoint, I have no respect for this viewpoint on a Biblical level.**

**The fiction that there are two raptures instead of only just one has FOOLED a lot of believers and made them fall asleep with deceptive teachings that have an appearance of looking and sounding good, but are a mirage.**

**There is ONLY ONE RAPTURE – the SECOND COMING and I make this a point that your clothes won't be lying on the ground as you suddenly vanish, but you will be taken up AT THE SECOND COMING**

**and if you aren't taken BEFORE the second coming, you will simply vanish from this earth through DEATH.**

**In my educated opinion, yes, millions of Christian Believers will vanish THROUGH DEATH before the Second Coming of Jesus Christ and I define the rapture as THE SECOND COMING. Matthew 24 and Luke 21 explain the Rapture of Christ's Second Coming in vivid and simplistic detail, but I think that many scholars and commentators just missed it. I will absolutely challenge the belief of a pre-tribulation rapture in this book and narrate a sound Biblical discussion as to where Tim LaHaye, Jerry Jenkins, and many scholars went wrong with their interpretations.**

**The PRE-MILLENNIAL view was defined in Tim LaHaye's: *QUICK***

***REFERENCE GUIDE: BIBLE PROPHECY – WHAT YOU NEED TO KNOW.***

**THE CHART SAYS THE FOLLOWING**

**THE PROPHECY TIME LINE**

**1. THE CROSS – JESUS DIED AND ROSE AGAIN (Revelation 1)**

**2. THE CHURCH AGE (1990 + X) Why did Tim LaHaye use 1990 to mark the beginning of the Church age? 1990 PLUS X? He**

**doesn't clarify this date in his quick reference guide. (Revelation 2 -5)**

**3. RAPTURE (Revelation 6-7)**

**4. 7-YEAR TRIBULATION (Revelation 8-18) – BELIEVER'S JUDGMENT**

**5. GLORIOUS APPEARING (Revelation 19-20)**

**6. 1,000 year MILLENNIUM (Revelation 20)**

**7. GREAT WHITE THRONE JUDGMENT (Revelation 21-22)**

**8. AGES TO COME**

**This kind of just leaves you empty with lots of questions that remain unanswered because they try to convince you they have it all figured out, when they don't have the slightest clue what they are talking about when putting together a stupid chart like this!**

**How would I have written this chart?**

**1. JESUS DIED AND ROSE AGAIN (30 to 33 A.D.)**

**2. 0 A.D. – 1000 A.D. – SATAN DECEIVES THE WORLD AND ATTACKS JEWISH AND CHRISTIAN BELIEVERS THROUGH THE ROMAN EMPIRE AND THE RISE OF ISLAMIC NATIONS 1000 A.D. – ROMAN EMPIRE IS GIVEN A BREAK FROM SATAN AROUND 333**

**A.D. UNTIL MUHAMMAD AROSE TO ATTACK THE SAINTS AGAIN THROUGH THE DEVIL'S UNBOUND INSPIRATION. SAINTS PERSECUTED BY ROME AND NATIONS OF ISLAM ARE RESURRECTED TO PARTICIPATE RULING WITH JESUS IN HEAVEN. MILLENNIAL REIGN OF CHRIST IN HEAVEN BEGINS.**

**1000 A.D. – 2000 A.D. – THE SAINTS RULE WITH JESUS IN HEAVENLY TEMPLE WHILE SATAN IS INCARCERATED 2000 A.D. – SATAN IS RELEASED FROM HIS PRISON TO GO OUT AND DECEIVE NATIONS I N THE 4 CORNERS OF THE WORLD. These dates don't have to be exact and are intended as an approximate evaluation of the Millennium. The Millennium could also span over 2,000 years, if 1,000 years is not to be taken literally and is figurative of Christ's rule in the Heavenly Temple from the time He ascended to Heaven until His Second Coming. To me the Millennium defines the period between Christ's Ascension and the moment when the devil is released from his prison. Perhaps the Millennium lasts up through the 7<sup>th</sup> Trumpet?**

- 3. After the saints have ruled with Jesus in Heaven throughout the generations of Earth's history, the devil is released from his**

**prison and joins the nations together in attacking Jerusalem/Israel. When this takes place, the fire that falls from Heaven is the 7 trumpets and 7 bowls of God's wrath, as defined in Matthew 24 and Luke 21. During this time, more Christian believers will suffer and die and at the 7<sup>th</sup> trumpet, those who died during the tribulation of the 6 trumpets and 7 bowls will be raised from the dead. THE DEAD IN CHRIST RISE FIRST, then, AFTER THAT, we who are still alive on earth and left on earth until the Second Coming of the Lord will be caught up (Raptured) together with them, to meet them in the air (1 Thessalonians 4:16-17).**

**4. THE FIRST HEAVEN AND THE FIRST EARTH PASS AWAY. The rest of the dead are raised and stand before the Great White Throne. JUDGMENT DAY happens. The reason why JUDGMENT DAY cannot be the 1,000 years reign of Jesus, is that the devil is released upon the first earth after the 1,000 years and the first earth passes away BEFORE Judgment Day.**

**5. Satan and all of God's Adversaries are thrown into the lake of fire.**

**6. GOD ESTABLISHED HIS ETERNAL KINGDOM ON THE NEW EARTH  
WITHIN A NEW HEAVEN where believers will rule with Him  
forever.**

**The pre-tribulation Rapture viewpoint is against this kind of  
thinking.**

**7. VIEWPOINT #3: The reason why JUDGMENT DAY cannot be the  
1,000 years reign of Jesus, is that the devil is released upon the  
first earth after the 1,000 years and the first earth passes away  
BEFORE Judgment Day.**

**8. Satan and all of God's Adversaries are thrown into the lake of  
fire.**

**9. GOD ESTABLISHED HIS ETERNAL KINGDOM ON THE NEW EARTH  
WITHIN A NEW HEAVEN where believers will rule with Him  
forever.**

**The pre-tribulation Rapture viewpoint is against this kind of  
thinking.**

**VIEWPOINT #3: POSTMILLENIALISM – Christ's Kingdom is spreading  
throughout the world, and God's Justice will prevail across the earth  
prior to Christ's return. After his reign is established through his**

**people for a long duration (not necessarily 1,000 literal years), Jesus will return on this earth to rule from the Jerusalem that is on earth today. I don't believe there will be a physical reign of Jesus on this present earth. Jehovah's Witnesses believe Jesus will rule on this earth and that this earth will never be destroyed and some Christians have fallen prey to this kind of doctrine which excludes God's Coming Wrath and Judgment on this earth.**

**Now that we have examined all three viewpoints, I wish to address my new theory, which attempts to correct the errors behind all three views and blend them together to make better sense on a Biblical level. Since other people attempted to chart prophecy for us, we must take a second look at what has been presented to us and overcome the blank stare we have whenever anything they teach us doesn't make any good sense.**

## **THE MILLENNIUM SAINTS SLAIN BY THE BEAST**

**"And I saw thrones, and they sat upon them, and judgment was given unto them: and / *saw* the souls of them that were beheaded for the witness of Jesus, and for the word of God, and which had not**



**worshipped the beast, neither his image, neither had received *his* mark IN their foreheads, or IN their hands; and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years. But the rest of the dead lived not again until the thousand years were finished. This *is* the first resurrection. Blessed and holy *is* he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand years. Rev 20:4-6 (KJV)**

**Whether these are BELIEVERS who rejected the Roman Caesars, or the Catholic persecutors, or the Islamic oppressions, or ALL OF THE ABOVE slain victims of these LIES that the devil deceived nations into believing, these are saints who are resurrected to rule with Jesus in Heaven until the time of Revelation 20 /Ezekiel 38 nations being gathered together by the devil and those who surrendered their countries to his lies.**

**These MILLENNIUM SAINTS are resurrected into Heaven because either they had been slain during the first periods of the historical Tribulation or slain throughout history from the time Christ Ascended into Heaven until the devil was released from his prison in Revelation 20.**

**We assumed that “THE GREAT TRIBULATION” would only be 3 ½ to 7 years during the final years of earth, but it might encompass ALL OF THE HISTORY from the moments when Jesus ascended to Heaven until the final days of life on earth.**

**The FIRST RESURRECTION, would happen BEFORE the 7<sup>th</sup> Trumpet as well as during the 7<sup>th</sup> Trumpet. How?**

**At the 7<sup>th</sup> Trumpet, the rest of the dead in Christ who did not rule with Him in Heaven throughout History, sitting on thrones of judgment, would arise at the 7<sup>th</sup> Last Trumpet, on THE LAST DAY when Jesus Christ’s Second Coming raptures the living believers on Earth into Heaven. In Matthew 24 and Luke 21, Jesus narrates the signs that last days believers are to look out for BEFORE THE RAPTURE OF HIS SECOND COMING.**

**Therefore, for believers who are not immediately resurrected during the Millennium in Heaven, they will blink their eyes and appear at the Seventh Trumpet blast, either in the middle or the end of the Tribulation. If they are resurrected during the middle of the tribulation, then they will be watching God’s Judgment in the form of**

**the seven bowls being poured out on earth. The reason for this supposition is the response of the altar after the third bowl is poured out in Revelation 16:7 – “Yes, Lord God Almighty, true and just are your judgments.” Revelation 6:9 interprets who is standing UNDER THE ALTAR: “The souls of those who had been slain because of the words of God and the testimony they maintained.”**

**So in the Millennium of Heaven’s Reign, from Christ’s Ascension when Jesus sat down at the Right Hand of the Father and established the TWENTY-FOUR THRONES OF THE ELDERS (Rev. 4), all the way up to the MIDDLE OF THE TRIBULATION, defined by the two witnesses and the 7<sup>th</sup> Trumpet blast, thrones had already been set in place, assuming that the 7<sup>th</sup> Trumpet would mark the middle of the Tribulation and not the end.**

**THE GREAT MULTITUDE IN WHITE ROBES (Revelation 7:9-17) have gone through THE GREAT TRIBULATION which is defined by the 7 trumpets and perhaps also the 7 bowls (if the 7 bowls are poured out at the same time the 7 trumpets sound). However if we separate the first 7 trumpets as occurring during the first months of the tribulation and the 7 bowls as occurring during the last months of the tribulation,**

**then the 7<sup>th</sup> Trumpet would involve the resurrection of all the saints who died during the first 7 trumpets. We do know from other Scriptures that the dead in Christ are raised FIRST, AT THE LAST TRUMPET (1 Thessalonians 4:16-17). The phrase, “AND THE DEAD IN CHRIST WILL RISE FIRST,” does not conclude any specific period of time. We only know that AFTER THE DEAD IN CHRIST rise FIRST, “we who are still alive (on earth) and are left (left behind on earth) will be caught up together with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air. This means that the saints had to have been resurrected BEFORE THE SECOND COMING of Jesus Christ. This is what Revelation 20 calls: THE FIRST RESURRECTION.**

**On the thrones of Revelation 20 were seated those who had been given authority to judge, who had rejected the historical beast, and standing before them are the SAINTS WHO HAD BEEN BEHEADED for their testimony in Jesus.**

**These SAINTS, who had died in the tribulation, had not worshipped the beast or his image, and therefore, in the blink of an eye they immediately participate in THE FIRST RESURRECTION and rule with Christ in the Heavenly Temple Court, UNDER the ALTAR (for**

**they are sacrificial lambs of God), while the full wrath of the Lord is soon to be poured out in the 7 bowls. These saints are spared from the hour of trial coming upon the earth in the 7 bowls. That is what Revelation 3:10 says – “Since you have kept my command to ENDURE PATIENTLY, I will also keep you from the HOUR OF TRIAL that is coming upon the whole world to test those who live on the earth.”**

**This does not mean that Believers will ESCAPE the tribulation and vanish BEFORE the tribulation happens. This is the wrong interpretation. When Jesus stated, “ENDURE PATIENTLY” what was it that the saints ENDURED PATIENTLY?**

**It doesn't sound to me like, “Oh, then we are going to be raptured BEFORE the tribulation and spared the 7 trumpets and 7 bowls!” NOT!**

**No, Revelation 1:9 says – “I, John, your brother and companion in the SUFFERING and KINGDOM and PATIENT ENDURANCE that are ours in Jesus, was on the island of Patmos because of the word of God and the testimony of Jesus.”**

**I could imagine John participating in the 5<sup>th</sup> Seal resurrection under this context.**

**Revelation 13:10 says – “This calls for PATIENT ENDURANCE and faithfulness on the part of the saints.” What did the saints of this verse ENDURE? The persecution of the BEAST OUT OF THE SEA in Revelation 13. Verse 10 also says, “”If anyone is to go into captivity, into captivity he will go. If anyone is to be killed with the sword, with the sword he will be killed. This calls for patient endurance and faithfulness on the part of the saints.”**

**Revelation 14:11-12 says – “There is no rest day or night for those who worship the beast and his image, or for anyone who receives the mark of his name. This calls for PATIENT ENDURANCE on the part of the saints who obey God’s commandments and remain faithful to Jesus. Then I heard a voice from heaven say, ‘Write: Blessed are the dead who die in the Lord from now on..’ The Holy Spirit says, “Yes, they will rest from their labor for their deeds will follow them.”**

**Now read Revelation 3:10 again: “Since you have kept my command to ENDURE PATIENTLY.” The above saints ENDURED suffering, hardships, & death under the rule of the beast. Since Satan was the dragon of Rome for the first 300 years through the Roman**

**Caesars of history, so will Satan be the Dragon of the world ruling in the last days. Those who participate in THE FIRST RESURRECTION will be kept from the hour of trial that is coming upon the whole world to test those who live on the earth, since they kept God's commands to endure patiently. The Apostle John introduces Revelation with: "I, John, your brother and companion in the SUFFERING and KINGDOM and PATIENT ENDURANCE that are ours in Jesus..."**

**Revelation 15:8 says – "And the Temple was filled with smoke from the glory of God and from his power, and NO ONE COULD ENTER THE TEMPLE until the seven plagues of the seven angels were completed." This is THE HOUR OF TRIAL that is coming on the whole world from which the saints will be rescued from as they reign with Christ in the Heavenly courts. They will not be allowed to enter the Heavenly Temple until those seven last plagues are completed on earth.**

**Were these saints, "RAPTURED"? No. They were RESURRECTED.**

**So when you see that your loved ones have vanished, they have vanished THROUGH DEATH and if Jesus calls their names, they are now in Heaven ruling with Jesus today!**

**If no one could enter the Temple until the seven last plagues of the seven angels were completed, then they are clearly awaiting the Final Curtain of Christ's Second Coming to Earth, set aside as the FIRSTFRUITS resurrection saints.**

**Whoever said that Revelation 16 does not mention believers being on earth during the time when the 7 bowls of God's Wrath and that God would never allow His children to suffer along side of the beast's kingdom on earth? After the six bowls of God's Judgment are poured out upon the Earth, Jesus Christ says in Revelation 16:15 – “BEHOLD! I come like a thief! Blessed is he WHO STAYS AWAKE and keeps his clothes with him so that he may not go naked and be shamefully exposed.”**

**Obviously, if believers have been raptured BEFORE the tribulation of the 7 bowls, Jesus would not call anyone on earth BLESSED or give a blessing to anyone. Jesus blesses THOSE WHO STAY AWAKE. So**



**we read that believers in Jesus will stay awake during this time of great wrath and rebellion on earth. Jesus stated in Matthew 24:12 – “Because of the increase of wickedness, the love of most will grow cold, BUT HE WHO STANDS FIRM TO THE END will be saved.” TO THE END FOLKS!**

**I’m sorry to burst the Tim LaHaye and Jerry Jenkins media circus bubble for a moment.**

**The saints of the resurrection of the 5<sup>th</sup> Seal are also told to wait a little longer until the number of their fellow bretheren who are to be killed as they had been is completed (Revelation 6:11).**

**Only at THE THIRD ANGEL’S bowl, do we hear the ALTAR respond, “YES, LORD GOD ALMIGHTY, true and just are your judgments.”**

**So the martyred saints are CLEARLY RESURRECTED into Heaven, spared from Earth’s Destruction during the wrath of the seven bowls. However, according to Revelation 16:15 God’s blessing is given to those who STAY AWAKE before, after, & during the time of the 7 bowls of God’s Judgment on the earth.**

**You might ask: BUT DOESN'T THE MILLENNIAL REIGN OF CHRIST HAPPEN AFTER THE SECOND COMING OF JESUS? The Mainstream view is that the Millennium of Revelation 20 will not occur until AFTER the Second Coming in which Jesus will somehow reign in modern Jerusalem for 1,000 literal years, on this present Earth. As usual, Satan will work within Christian circles to create confusion and I am convinced that this is what happened. Although it's possible that Tim LaHaye and Jerry Jenkins are not Masonic imposters to our Christian Faith, their fictitious ideas are an imposter to what the Bible says and teaches.**

**The devil is supposed to be locked up during this millennium and then unleashed to attack Jesus and His City Jerusalem, the camp of God's Holy People (Revelation 20:9)..**

**I strongly disagree with the theory that the Millennium occurs AFTER the tribulation. All the Biblical evidence suggests that there is a FIRST RESURRECTION in Heaven, where Jesus sits at God's Right Hand and that these saints who had suffered on earth through the historical beast that once was, now is not, and yet will come, are**

**reigning with Jesus IN HEAVEN BEFORE Jesus Christ's Second Coming.**

**1 Thessalonians 4:14 – “We believe that God will bring with Jesus those who have died (fallen asleep) in him.”**

**It makes more sense that Jesus will rule FOREVER, in the New Jerusalem of Revelation 21 and 22 and the last two chapters of Revelation make it crystal clear that the first heaven and the first earth are destroyed at the Coming of the Lord. Jesus will rule forever in the New Jerusalem which comes down out of heaven from God on the New Earth (Revelation 21). This city and this New Earth will never be attacked by Satan again. Jesus will not rule on the New Earth for 1,000 years after the first heaven and the first earth are destroyed. Jesus will judge the world after the world is destroyed and Satan will be destroyed as earth is destroyed. So BEFORE Jesus Christ's SECOND COMING, Satan was released from his prison to deceive the nations in the four corners of the earth to attack the EARTHLY JERUSALEM of the FIRST EARTH BEFORE the first earth passes away.**

**It is my conviction that the Millennial Reign of Christ has occurred BEFORE THE SECOND COMING OF CHRIST and the RAPTURE of this second coming is highlighted in Matthew 24, a point I wish to repeat over and over again so that you can overcome being brainwashed by Tim LaHaye's media frenzy.**

**When the devil is released from his prison, he goes out to deceive the nations in the four corners of the world for battle against Israeli Jerusalem.**

**I believe saints were resurrected and ruling in Heaven with Jesus throughout the span of Earth's time and space from the First Resurrection up through last years of life on earth. Satan is filled with fury because 'HE KNOWS HIS TIME IS SHORT.'**

**How will the devil know that his time is short? Obviously this indicates that the devil knows he has only a short time between the time he is released from incarceration (Revelation 20) until Jesus Christ's Second Coming destroys the empire he builds on earth.**

**I believe that the devil will either have been released just before the Tribulation, at the start of the Tribulation or in the middle, after the**

**first 3 ½ years of the 6 trumpets. I don't believe that Jesus will rule on this earth for 1,000 literal years because ALL BIBLE PROPHECY says that this earth is going to be completely laid waste and totally plundered (Isaiah 24) and it will be the same for priest as for people.**

**The Mystery of the Millennium sounds confusing only when interpreted with the Mainstream views. When we deprogram ourselves from Mainstream interpretations and learn to think differently, the Millennium is not really such a hard mystery to figure out when applying a certain logic. But do you know what I discovered when examining every Scripture closely? That no matter which viewpoint you have about the Millennium there is a huge monkey wrench that obliterates EVERY THEORY and EVERY INTERPRETATION that sucks up every man's attempt to link every Scripture together.**

**We often use REASON and LOGIC to accept or reject certain theories and ALL THEORIES will have a huge hole in them because there is a monkey wrench in every prophesy, put there by interpretations, translations, and spinning words around to make the Bible cater to a certain prophetic world view. This is not to say that the Bible is inaccurate, but only that certain translations are losing the**

**luster, the meat, of what the original texts are saying. Knowing Greek & Hebrew would be helpful in this area, so we could determine how many different words could be used within a sentence in order to explore which possibility has God's Heart in mind.**

**When I learned to approach Bible Prophecy as a newborn baby, I ignored the teachings presented to me by the Mainstream speculators, and learned to think for myself, as the Holy Spirit guided me to think logically and truthfully. Could I be wrong at certain points? Yes, there are some areas I feel that I can loose an argument or a discussion, where my fellow bretheren prevail. At the point that any man tells you he has solved the mystery of the Millennium with 100% accuracy is lying. I cannot offer you a 100% correct interpretation. There will be holes in my theory as much as any other theory. I believe there are less holes in my theory than Tim LaHaye's theories which are like a black hole or a flat earth in my mind.**

**Moving on, we must ask, "So who are these saints that rule with Jesus for a thousand years, during which time Satan was incarcerated?"**

**The Millennial Saints had been resurrected during the 7-year tribulation of the beast, so how could the Millennium come AFTER the Second Coming? It makes more sense that these believers were alive with Jesus before Revelation 20 when, “EARTH AND SKY FLED FROM HIS PRESENCE AND THERE WAS NO PLACE FOR THEM.”**

**2 Peter 3:8 says – “But do not forget this one thing, dear friends: With the Lord A DAY IS LIKE A THOUSAND YEARS and a thousand years like a day.”**

**WOW! That makes sense now!**

**If A DAY IS LIKE A THOUSAND YEARS TO GOD, then perhaps the period before and during the 7 trumpets of God’s Wrath, AND the 7 bowls of God’s Wrath, WOULD REPRESENT THAT THOUSAND YEARS? Or what if THE LAST DAY, lasted ONE THOUSAND YEARS or is THE DAY OF THE LORD? What if the 7-year tribulation is not 7 literal years? What if the tribulation is spanned out over a longer time than just 7 years?**

**The only problem with the Millennium occurring on THE VERY LAST DAY, is that the devil is supposed to be released for the final**

**world war, so the Millennium had to conclude BEFORE the last seven years of life on earth, as the devil is upon the earth during the reign of the beast and the false prophet.**

**Perhaps “THE THOUSAND YEARS”, metaphorical of an epoch, BEGAN with Christ’s Ascension in the 1<sup>st</sup> Century A.D. and ends with the first 3 ½ years of the Trib. Perhaps Satan is released either before the Tribulation begins or in the Middle of the Tribulation period, and is “FILLED WITH FURY BECAUSE HE KNOWS THAT HIS TIME IS SHORT.”**

**Are you confused yet? I hope you are. Because there is NO EASY EXPLANATION for solving how the Millennium fits into context with other Scriptures.**

**Are you really surprised after examining all of our ‘conspiracies against Israel, America, and Christianity’?**

**The devil is going to be alive DURING the Tribulation phase, therefore, AFTER Christ’s Millennial Reign of Grace in Heaven, he is RELEASED FOR A SHORT TIME.**

**Perhaps that SHORT TIME is the last 3 ½ years of Tribulation, A TIME THAT NO ONE EXPECTS OR KNOWS ABOUT, not even the devil.**



**Why else would the devil be so angry? He has been imprisoned for the time that Jesus has been ruling with his saints in Heaven and when he is released, he has the knowledge that his time on earth is short. His time is so short, that he will attempt to slaughter every Jew and Christian he can before Christ's Second Coming, which will bring the 7 bowls of God's Wrath upon the earth in the form of the cosmic signs.**

**What if the scholars are wrong about THE TRIBULATION being only 7 years?**

**IF A DAY IS LIKE A THOUSAND YEARS, then 3 ½ years, which equals 1,260 days, WOULD MORE OR LESS LOOK LIKE 1,260 YEARS if we were to take the DAYS as symbolic of years!**

**Could the 1,260 days in the context of 2 Peter 3:8, BE THE CLIMAX OF THE MILLENNIUM?**

**The throne of the beast was given power by the devil and the beast has triumphed and prospered while the devil has been imprisoned for a thousand years. The saints who participate in THE FIRST RESURRECTION had been slain by the historical beast of Roman and Islamic Rule. During this Millennium in Heaven, the 5<sup>th</sup> Seal saints**

**are resurrected in THE FIRST RESURRECTION period and are told to wait 'a little longer' until the number of their fellow bretheren who are to be slain is completed. And so there will be saints slain by the future beast who yet will come. The beast could symbolize EMPEROR WORSHIP/FALSE GOD WORSHIP in history, erected by Satan and the beast could symbolize the FUTURE BEAST as well, when the 'man of lawlessness' professes to be God and stands in God's temple.**

**The beast, "ONCE WAS, NOW IS NOT, AND YET WILL COME." It is possible that the ANTI-CHRIST attempted to rule during the first 300 years of the Christian Churches through the Roman Dictators but was slain.**

**It is possible that the anti-Christ made another attempt to rule historically through the Islamic dictators in history and either/or would symbolize the beast who once was and now is not.**

**The beast who yet will come, would build on the work of the historical beasts (as the beast has 7 HEADS, AND 10 HORNS, which all could have been historical rulers. The 8<sup>th</sup> king of Revelation 17:11 is the beast who once was and now is not. He belongs to the seven**

**kings and is going to his destruction. So the beast is not just ONE KING, but 8 kings! The 7 heads of the beast in Revelation 17 were symbolic of 7 hills (or empires) upon which the prostitute historically sat. These 7 heads or 7 hills of the beast were also 7 kings. ONE BEAST with SEVEN KINGS! The 8<sup>th</sup> king, who is the beast that once was, belongs to these 7 kings. The 8<sup>th</sup> king now is not, but yet will come and belongs to all 7 of these kings.**

**When we examine the possibility of Pastor Steve Woods being right about HITLER being the 7<sup>th</sup> king of the beast, Hitler would have symbolized Satan's son coming onto the world stage for worship, but he was destroyed and his body thrown into the blazing furnace. I could imagine that all the Jews who were slain by Hitler participated in the FIRST RESURRECTION and are reigning with their Messiah, Jesus, in Heaven, RIGHT NOW. They will have to wait a little longer until the number of their fellow brothers and sisters who are to be killed as they had been is completed. This means that the ten horns of the beast must rule. The 'man of lawlessness' is held back until Jesus is taken away and the power of the Holy People has been broken**

**(Daniel 12 and 2 Thessalonians 2:6). “Now you know what is holding him back so that he may be revealed at the proper time.”**

**Satan had given the beast of ten horns and 8 kings his power to rule until God’s Words are fulfilled. The devil of Revelation 12 would have been locked up and the beast with 7 heads and 10 horns would have ruled in his place during the Millennium, until the closure of the Millennium with the devil’s release for the last 7 years of life on earth through the 8 kings and 10 horns gathered together under ONE WORLD GOVERNMENT..**

**The deception of the beast rules over the entire earth and kills the Jewish and Christian saints who refused to worship him during the time that Jesus is ruling in Heaven in His Thousand Year Reign. The devil deceived the Earth BEFORE the Millennium and then got locked up for a Millennium, until the Millennium was completed.**

**During this Millennium, JEWISH AND CHRISTIAN SAINTS on the Earth had been slain and had not worshiped the beast or his image. They were historically and futuristically slain and immediately resurrected into Heaven to rule with Jesus up until the moment when**

**the devil was released from his prison to go out and deceive the nations in the four corners of the world to gather them for battle.**

**We know that those who were slain by the beast, refusing to accept the mark of his name are RESURRECTED BEFORE THE DEVIL'S RELEASE, therefore, perhaps the FIRST 1,260 days of the six trumpets were part of the MILLENNIUM REIGN OF JESUS and these saints who were killed by the beast during the span of his many years in power, through the 7 kings, were RESURRECTED immediately into heaven? The saints who are killed during the first 6 trumpets would perhaps rise at the 7<sup>th</sup> last trumpet. (The 7<sup>th</sup> Trumpet will be explained in the next chapter).**

**How else would "THE ALTAR" (Revelation 16:7) respond to glorify the Lord during the 7 bowls or witness the unleashing of the devil upon the earth (Revelation 20)? The devil is mad (Revelation 12:12) because a third of the world has been destroyed by the six trumpets (Revelation 8 – 9) and he is unleashed as God's Wrath is being poured out (Revelation 20), so the devil's last pathetic attempt at proving he is "GOD" will bring about a massive assault on Jerusalem, with the**

**United Nations under his wing. However, such an assault on Israel will mean the 7 bowls of God's wrath.**

**Would the first six trumpets be visibly noticeable if they were spanned out over 1,260 years, versus 1,260 days? Not really. You would visibly notice that the Earth was being destroyed over a 3 ½ year period. However, I am in agreement with the general agreement that there will be only 7 years of Tribulation, much like it took God only 7 days to create the world, He will take only 7 years to destroy it. Then again, the 7 years could actually be 7 epochs, but nobody really knows for 100% sure – except for Jack Van Impe and Hal Lindsey who seem to have all the answers figured out..**

**What if these 1,260 days are actually symbolic of years? Then we would have to change our whole pattern of thinking to include these YEARS as the Millennium!**

**But we are sticking to 1,260 days as being literal for now and will assume that the two sets of 3 ½ years, or 2,520 days (7 years), IS PART OF THE MILLENNIAL REIGN OF CHRIST IN HEAVEN with His Resurrected Saints. With the Lord A DAY IS LIKE A THOUSAND**

**YEARS. UNLESS, those 2,520 days would span out over 2,000 years, perhaps into 2520 A.D.?**

**Also, if 2,000 years of Earth history has passed while Jesus has ruled in Heaven with the 24 Thrones established since His Ascension to the Right Hand of God, then those 2,000 years have been LIKE A DAY. The Throne Room of God might have moved with the time of EARTH'S SPACE-TIME CONTINUUM. If Jesus said he would be with us until the end of time, then this means that he has been with every Believer since He took the throne of Heaven about 2,000 years ago!**

**Also, in the FIRST RESURRECTION, involving those 2,000 years there have been multitudes of SAINTS resurrected immediately into the Heavenly Courts to Reign with Jesus in Heaven as the generations of the world moved towards the 21<sup>st</sup> Century. Perhaps there are no resurrections during the first 3 ½ years of the tribulation which are marked with the blasting of the first trumpet and the rise of the GLOBAL BEAST? Perhaps during the first 3 ½ years, saints are persecuted and slain, and these MILLENNIUM SAINTS ALSO RISE FROM THE DEAD IN MID-TRIB for the witness of the 7 bowls of God's Wrath upon the earth. Perhaps MID-TRIB experiences the RISE OF**

**THE DEVIL against Jerusalem and the close of the LAST OF THE FIRSTFRUITS OF THE FIRST RESURRECTION BEING RAISED.**

**Whatever scenario we should choose to believe in, the last 1,260 years or days will also have more BELIEVERS who are alive upon the earth who will be killed as the MILLENNIUM SAINTS HAD BEEN KILLED. Also, there will be survivors to the end who, after witnessing the COSMIC UNIVERSAL SHAKING and the DARKENING OF THE SUN, MOON, & STARS will be standing up and lifting up their heads to the skies, awaiting the Angels Of Jesus to carry them home just before the WHOLE EARTH EXPLODES SO THAT THERE IS NO PLACE FOR EARTH AND SKY AS JUDGMENT DAY ARRIVES at THE LAST DAY. Even the kings of the earth acknowledge during the 6<sup>th</sup> Seal as they flee to the mountains and caves and holes in the ground from the dread of the Lord and the splendor of his majesty: “THE GREAT DAY OF THEIR WRATH HAS COME AND WHO CAN STAND?”(Revelation 6:15-17) EVERYONE WILL KNOW THAT GOD’S WRATH HAS COME ON EARTH! Even the saints LEFT BEHIND will stand up, lifting up their heads, knowing that their redemption is near (Luke 21). “FOR AS LIGHTNING that comes from the east is visible even in the west, SO WILL BE THE**



**COMING OF THE SON OF MAN.” (Matthew 24:27). There are not going to be TWO raptures. There is only going to be ONE RAPTURE at the Second Coming of Jesus, for although no one will have an exact calendar date for the Second Coming, there will be visible signs in the sky just before his return. The term ‘he is coming like a thief in the night’ means that historically, ‘WHEREVER THERE IS A DEAD BODY, THERE THE VULTURES WILL GATHER.” (Matthew 24:28)**

**It also means that Jesus is coming SOON (Revelation 22:7, 12, 20)**

- 1. Behold, I am coming SOON! (Revelation 22:7)**
- 2. Behold, I am coming SOON (Revelation 22:12)**
- 3. Yes, I am coming SOON (Revelation 22:20)**

**Jesus coming like a thief in the night is not to be interpreted as a RAPTURE BEFORE THE TRIBULATION. It’s a play on words that scholars have used to fit their interpretations. Jesus coming like a thief in the night means one of two things: DEATH and THE SPEED WITH WHICH THE END OF THE WORLD IS COMING AT HIS LOUD ONE TIME RETURN.**

**1 Thessalonians 4:16 says – “For the Lord Himself will come down from heaven:**

- 1. WITH A LOUD COMMAND**
- 2. WITH THE VOICE OF THE ARCHANGEL**
- 3. WITH THE TRUMPET CALL OF GOD**
- 4. THE DEAD IN CHRIST HAVE RISEN FIRST**
- 5. THOSE “WE” WHO ARE STILL ALIVE AND REMAIN ARE CAUGHT UP (RAPTURED) TO MEET THEM IN THE AIR.**

**In HISTORY we can recognize the following martyrs who have been reigning in Heaven with Jesus during the Millennium already:**

- 1. JEWISH PROPHETS AND JEWISH SAINTS who were slain from the days of Nebuchadnezzar up until the days of Jesus. When Jesus ascended to Heaven to sit down at the RIGHT HAND OF GOD, He could have resurrected many Jewish saints, JUST LIKE HE DID WITH MOSES BEFORE HIS TRANSFIGURATION and there’s no telling at what point in history God raised Moses from the dead. We know that Moses was alive when Jesus was on earth (Matthew 17:3 – “Just then, there appeared before them Moses and Elijah, talking with Jesus.”)**

## **2. JUDEO-CHRISTIAN AND GENTILE-CHRISTIAN SAINTS/MARTYRS**

**who were slain by the Dragon Caesars of Rome for the first 300 years, known as THE GREAT PERSECUTION. Perhaps immediately after these saints died, they were resurrected into the Throne Room of the Elders who already had taken their seats when John went up to Heaven in Revelation 4. Perhaps Jesus would choose which saints would be immediately resurrected to rule with him in Heaven, and Jesus sitting at the Right Hand of God in Heaven, would be THE THOUSAND YEARS REIGN, not 1,000 literal years, but a representation of A.D. (ANNO DOMINI – IN THE YEAR OR REIGN OF OUR LORD).**

## **3. MARTYRED GENTILE CHRISTIANS BY THE CATHOLIC CHURCH**

**PERSECUTIONS – From the Dark Ages, throughout Medieval History, the great Roman Dragon of Caesars would continue to oppress believers through the Roman Catholic Church.**

## **4. MARTYRED GENTILE CHRISTIANS AND MARTYRED ISRAELITES**

**who were slain by refusing to accept Allah as “GOD” and who rejected Muhammad as a false prophet upon the penalty of**

**death. Jews and Christians throughout Islamic history were required to either accept Islam or die or pay a head tax.**

**5. MODERN SUDANSE CHRISTIANS – Millions of modern Sudanese**

**Christians have been slain by Islamic oppression in this OPEC country. Their martyrdom under the attack of the beast of Islam would personify all the modern Jews and Christians slaughtered by Muslims because of their believe in the God of Israel through Jesus Name.**

**6. HITLER'S NAZI GERMAN SLAUGHTER OF 11 MILLION PEOPLE –**

**The 6,000,000 Jews may be alive in Heaven today, ruling with Christ in Heaven.**

**7. MARTYRS OF THE FIRST 3 ½ YEAR TRIBULATION – As the NAME**

**of the beast is forced upon all nations who can't buy or sell without accepting his name, many believing Jews and Christians will reject it upon the penalty of death, much like SUDANESE Christians rejected Islam before dying at the hands of murdering fundamentalists. We might or might not be the present and future martyrs for Jesus, but when we die we will immediately wake up with new bodies in God's Kingdom, whether on the**

**same day of death, or at the 7<sup>th</sup> Trumpet, or the LAST TRUMPET of the Second Coming.**

**THE MILLENNIAL REIGN OF CHRIST IN HEAVEN, from the moment of His Ascension, up through the SEVENTH TRUMPET, sounded in the Middle of the Tribulation, would involve THE FIRST RESURRECTION of all these saints who were martyred throughout time because of the Words of God and the Testimony they maintained. From the beheaded Jewish saints to the beheaded Christians, they are RESURRECTED IN MID-TRIB AT THE SEVENTH LAST TRUMPET to witness the destruction of the earth – THE LAST DAY OF THE 7 BOWLS OF GOD’S JUDGMENT. This would make sense since we are going to meet them in the air.**

**Who are we going to meet in the air?**

**Who are these martyrs going to be?**

**It just so happens that I have read JESUS FREAKS II: REVOLUTIONARIES by dc Talk. In addition to FOX’S BOOK OF MARTYRS, this JESUS FREAKS series shows stories of martyrs who**

**gave up their lives for Jesus. These are great books that I highly recommend for reading.**

**At the end of JESUS FREAKS: REVOLUTIONARIES is their chart with approximate number for just how many martyrs have died throughout the centuries for the testimony of God.**

**Why did these martyrs of the 5<sup>th</sup> Seal die? “Because of the word of God and the testimony they maintained.”**

## JESUS FREAKS II: REVOLUTIONARIES

<b>PERIOD/EVENT PLACE</b>	<b>RULER</b>	<b>DATE</b>	<b>ESTIMATED # OF MARTYRS</b>
<b>JESUS</b>	<b>Pilate</b>	<b>33 A.D.</b>	<b>1</b>
<b>FIRST Roman Persecution</b>	<b>Nero</b>	<b>64-68</b>	<b>5,000</b>
<b>First Missionaries To Armenia</b>	<b>Astyages</b>	<b>66-97</b>	<b>1,000</b>
<b>First Jewish Rebellion</b>		<b>70</b>	<b>10,000</b>
<b>Second Roman Persecution</b>	<b>Domitian</b>	<b>91-96</b>	<b>2,000</b>
<b>Third Roman Persecution</b>	<b>Trajan</b>	<b>104-117</b>	<b>1,500</b>
<b>Persian Persecution</b>	<b>Artaxerxes</b>	<b>110-125</b>	<b>14,000</b>
<b>Jewish Revolt</b>	<b>Hadrian</b>	<b>117-138</b>	<b>10,000</b>
<b>Second Jewish Rebellion</b>	<b>Bar-Kochba/ Hadrian</b>	<b>132-135</b>	<b>30,000</b>
<b>Fourth Roman Persecution</b>	<b>Lucius Verus / Marcus Antoninus</b>	<b>161-180</b>	<b>4,000</b>
<b>Fifth Roman Persecution</b>	<b>Septimus Severus</b>	<b>193-211</b>	<b>40,000</b>
<b>Sixth Roman Persecution</b>	<b>Maximus</b>	<b>235-238</b>	<b>3,000</b>
<b>Shapur I's Persecution</b>	<b>Shapur I</b>	<b>241-272</b>	<b>10,000</b>
<b>Seventh Roman Persecution</b>	<b>Decius</b>	<b>249-251</b>	<b>120,000</b>

<b>PERIOD/EVENT PLACE</b>	<b>RULER</b>	<b>DATE</b>	<b>ESTIMATED # OF MARTYRS</b>
<b>Eighth Roman Persecution</b>	<b>Valerian</b>	<b>253-260</b>	<b>150,000</b>
<b>Ninth Roman Persecution</b>	<b>Aurelian</b>	<b>270-275</b>	<b>5,000</b>
<b>First Persian Persecution</b>	<b>Varahran II</b>	<b>276-293</b>	<b>4,000</b>
<b>Coptic Era of Martyrs</b>	<b>Roman Officials Under Diocletian</b>	<b>284-311</b>	<b>450,000</b>
<b>Martyrs of Agaunum</b>	<b>Maximian</b>	<b>287</b>	<b>5,000</b>
<b>Armenian Persecution</b>	<b>Tiridates III</b>	<b>287-301</b>	<b>20,000</b>
<b>Tenth Roman Persecution</b>	<b>Diocletian</b> <b>Marcus Aerelius</b> <b>Maximian</b> <b>Gaius Galerius</b> <b>Caesar Augustus</b>	<b>284-305</b> <b>286-305</b> <b>293-305</b> <b>305-311</b>	
<b>Licinius's Persecution</b>	<b>Licinius</b>	<b>316-324</b>	<b>2,000</b>
<b>Persecution of the Donatists</b>	<b>Constantine</b>	<b>317-337</b>	<b>10,000</b>
<b>Great (Second) Persian Persecution</b>	<b>Shapur II</b>	<b>333-337</b>	<b>120,000</b>
<b>Visagoth War with Rome</b>	<b>Theodosius I</b> <b>Honorius</b>	<b>379-395</b> <b>395-423</b> <b>390-410</b>	<b>10,000</b>
<b>Third Persian Persecution</b>	<b>Bahram V</b>	<b>420-424</b>	<b>90,000</b>
<b>Attila the Hun</b>	<b>Attila The Hun</b>	<b>433-453</b>	<b>200,000</b>



<b>PERIOD/EVENT PLACE</b>	<b>RULER</b>	<b>DATE</b>	<b>ESTIMATED # OF MARTYRS</b>
-------------------------------	--------------	-------------	-----------------------------------

<b>Under Arian Vandals</b>	<b>Gaeseric Huneric</b>	<b>428-477 477-484</b>	<b>10,000</b>
----------------------------	-----------------------------	----------------------------	---------------

<b>Anglo-Saxon Invasion</b>	<b>Anglo-Saxons</b>	<b>442-472</b>	<b>20,000</b>
-----------------------------	---------------------	----------------	---------------

<b>Fourth Persian Persecution</b>	<b>Yazdegerd II</b>	<b>448-454</b>	<b>178,000</b>
---------------------------------------	---------------------	----------------	----------------

<b>Ethiopian Persecution</b>	<b>Local Rulers</b>	<b>450</b>	<b>11,000</b>
----------------------------------	---------------------	------------	---------------

**TOTAL NUMBER OF MARTYRS**

<b><u>During Roman Empire</u></b>	<b>33-500 A.D.</b>	<b>2,101,751</b>
-----------------------------------	--------------------	------------------

<b>Islam founded</b>	<b>Muhammad</b>	<b>610-632 A.D.</b>
----------------------	-----------------	---------------------

<b>Persian Invasion</b>	<b>Khusro II</b>	<b>615</b>	<b>90,000</b>
-------------------------	------------------	------------	---------------

<b>Islamic Persecution</b>	<b>Arab Factions</b>	<b>700-797</b>	<b>80,000</b>
----------------------------	----------------------	----------------	---------------

<b>Viking Raids</b>	<b>Vikings</b>	<b>807</b>	<b>20,000</b>
---------------------	----------------	------------	---------------

<b>Byzantine Persecution of Paulicians</b>	<b>Michael III Theophilus II Basil I</b>	<b>842-867 867 867-886 842-874</b>	<b>100,000</b>
--	--	--	----------------

<b>Moorish Persecutions</b>	<b>Abderamene II</b>	<b>850-859</b>	<b>50</b>
-----------------------------	----------------------	----------------	-----------

<b><u>THE DARK AGES TOTAL</u></b>	<b>500-950</b>	<b>792,810</b>
-----------------------------------	----------------	----------------

<b>Copts Persecuted</b>	<b>Caliph al-Hakim</b>	<b>996-1021</b>	<b>50,000</b>
-------------------------	------------------------	-----------------	---------------

<b>Turkish Persecution</b>	<b>Seljuk Turks</b>	<b>1064</b>	<b>100,000</b>
----------------------------	---------------------	-------------	----------------

<b>English persecution</b>	<b>Henry II</b>	<b>1166</b>	<b>2,000</b>
----------------------------	-----------------	-------------	--------------

<b>Muslim Recapture Of Holy Lands</b>	<b>Saladin</b>	<b>1173</b>	<b>130,000</b>
---	----------------	-------------	----------------

<b>Raids of Genghis Khan PERIOD/EVENT PLACE</b>	<b>Genghis Khan RULER</b>	<b>1214 DATE</b>	<b>5,000,000 ESTIMATED # OF MARTYRS</b>
<b>Raids of Genghis Khan</b>	<b>Genghis Khan</b>	<b>1220</b>	<b>150,000</b>
<b>Mongol Persecutions</b>	<b>Mongols</b>	<b>1221</b>	<b>600,000</b>
<b>INQUISTION</b>	<b>Gregory IX</b>	<b>1231-1531</b>	<b>10,000</b>
<b>Mongol Invasion of Russia</b>	<b>Ogodei Khan</b>	<b>1237-1241</b>	<b>313,000</b>
<b>Mongol Persecutions</b>	<b>Hulagu Khan</b>	<b>1258</b>	<b>1,100,000</b>
<b>Mameluke Persecutions</b>	<b>Mamelukes</b>	<b>1301-1400</b>	<b>80,000</b>
<b>Muslim Persecutions</b>	<b>Kurds &amp; Arabs</b>	<b>1310</b>	<b>150,000</b>
<b>Mongol Persecutions</b>	<b>Mongols</b>	<b>1339</b>	<b>100,000</b>
<b>The Black Death (Bubonic Plague hits Europe)</b>		<b>1348-1349</b>	<b>1/3 of Europe</b>
<b>Resurgence &amp; Advancement</b>		<b>950-1350</b>	<b>8,919,792</b>
<b>Persecutions under Tamerlane</b>	<b>Tamerlane</b>	<b>1358-1400</b>	<b>5,079,000</b>
<b>Dissidents Executed</b>	<b>Boniface IX Innocent VII Gregory XII</b>	<b>1389-1404 1406-1406 1393-1416</b>	<b>5,000</b>
<b>Lollard Persecutions</b>	<b>Henry IV Henry V</b>	<b>1399-1413 1413-1422</b>	<b>100</b>
<b>Witch Trials (Many tried were innocent Church goers)</b>	<b>Various Leaders</b>	<b>1400-1700</b>	<b>500,000</b>
<b><u>PRE-REFORMATION TOTALS</u></b>			<b><u>5,583,700</u></b>

<b>PERIOD/EVENT PLACE</b>	<b>RULER</b>	<b>DATE</b>	<b>ESTIMATED # OF MARTYRS</b>
-------------------------------	--------------	-------------	-----------------------------------

<b>American Persecutions</b>	<b>Native American Tribes</b>	<b>1519-1536</b>	<b>1,000,000</b>
------------------------------	-------------------------------	------------------	------------------

**\*Nearly 6 million American Indians had been baptized during this period**

<b>Turkish Invasion of Hungary</b>	<b>Suleiman I</b>	<b>1520-1556</b>	<b>50,000</b>
------------------------------------	-------------------	------------------	---------------

<b>Muslim Persecutions</b>	<b>Ahmed Gran</b>	<b>1527-1542</b>	<b>100,000</b>
----------------------------	-------------------	------------------	----------------

<b>State Persecutions</b>	<b>Henry VIII</b>	<b>1528-1547</b>	<b>300</b>
---------------------------	-------------------	------------------	------------

<b>Missionaries killed</b>	<b>Native Amer. Tribes</b>	<b>1542-1597</b>	<b>350</b>
----------------------------	----------------------------	------------------	------------

<b>Waldenses Massacred In Vaudois</b>	<b>Francis I</b>	<b>1545</b>	<b>3,000</b>
---------------------------------------	------------------	-------------	--------------

<b>Dissidents Executed</b>	<b>Henry II</b>	<b>1547-1559</b>	<b>10,000</b>
----------------------------	-----------------	------------------	---------------

<b>Missionaries killed</b>	<b>Native Amer. Tribes</b>	<b>1549-1597</b>	<b>100</b>
----------------------------	----------------------------	------------------	------------

<b>Reign of Mary I</b>	<b>Mary I</b>	<b>1553-1558</b>	<b>300</b>
------------------------	---------------	------------------	------------

<b>Spanish Inquisition</b>	<b>Charles V</b>	<b>1558</b>	<b>300</b>
----------------------------	------------------	-------------	------------

<b>Spanish Conquistadors</b>	<b>Philip II</b>	<b>1556-1598</b>	<b>2,200,000</b>
------------------------------	------------------	------------------	------------------

<b>Huguenots Persecuted</b>	<b>Charles IX</b>	<b>1562</b>	<b>3,000</b>
-----------------------------	-------------------	-------------	--------------

<b>Huguenot Colony</b>	<b>Philip III</b>	<b>1562</b>	<b>200</b>
------------------------	-------------------	-------------	------------

<b>Dissidents Executed</b>	<b>Elizabeth I</b>	<b>1565</b>	<b>400</b>
----------------------------	--------------------	-------------	------------

<b>St. Bartholemew's Day Massacre</b>	<b>Charles IX</b>	<b>1572</b>	<b>72,000</b>
---------------------------------------	-------------------	-------------	---------------

<b>The Kirishtan Holocaust</b>	<b>Toyotomi Hideyoshi Taikosama</b>	<b>1596-1637</b>	<b>175,120</b>
--------------------------------	-------------------------------------	------------------	----------------

<b>30 Years' War</b>		<b>1618-1648</b>	<b>15,000</b>
----------------------	--	------------------	---------------

<b>Waldenses Massacred in Tirano, Lombardy</b>	<b>Philip II</b>	<b>1620</b>	<b>1,000</b>
--	------------------	-------------	--------------

<b>PERIOD/EVENT PLACE</b>	<b>RULER</b>	<b>DATE</b>	<b>ESTIMATED # OF MARTYRS</b>
<b>Missionaries Killed</b>	<b>Tibet</b>	<b>1624-1630</b>	<b>400</b>
<b>English Civil War</b>	<b>Oliver Cromwell</b>	<b>1640-1660</b>	<b>700</b>
<b>Massacre of 1641</b>	<b>Family of O'Neals</b>	<b>1641</b>	<b>7,000</b>
<b>The Kirishtan Holocaust</b>	<b>Tokugawa Shogunate</b>	<b>1649-1697</b>	<b>61,000</b>
<b>Waldenses Persecuted In Piedmont</b>	<b>Philip IV</b>	<b>1655</b>	<b>2,000</b>
<b>Covenanters and Quakers Persecuted</b>	<b>Charles II</b>	<b>1660-1688</b>	<b>3,500</b>
<b>Edict of Nantes Revoked</b>	<b>Louis XIV Innocent XI</b>	<b>1685-1686</b>	<b>13,000</b>
<b>Dissidents Executed</b>	<b>Louis XIV</b>	<b>1702</b>	<b>15,000</b>
<b>English Governor Destroys Capuchin Missions</b>	<b>Anne</b>	<b>1704</b>	<b>400</b>
<b>Reformation Totals</b>		<b>1500-1750</b>	<b>4,513,701</b>
<b>Ottoman Persecutions</b>	<b>Osman III</b>	<b>1754-1757</b>	<b>30,000</b>
	<b>Mustafa III</b>	<b>1757-1774</b>	
	<b>Abd al-Hamid I</b>	<b>1774-1789</b>	
	<b>Salim III</b>	<b>1789-1807</b>	
		<b>1754-1795</b>	
<b>French Revolution</b>	<b>France</b>	<b>1789-1799</b>	<b>5,000</b>
<b>First Major Slave Rebellion</b>	<b>John Adams</b>	<b>1797-1801</b>	<b>300</b>
<b>Missions and Revival</b>		<b>1750-1815</b>	<b>153,243</b>
<b>Slave Rebellion</b>	<b>James Monroe</b>	<b>1817-1825</b>	<b>350</b>
<b>Slave Rebellion</b>	<b>Andrew Jackson</b>	<b>1829-1837</b>	<b>800</b>

<b>PERIOD/EVENT PLACE</b>	<b>RULER</b>	<b>DATE</b>	<b>ESTIMATED # OF MARTYRS</b>
<b>Great Heavenly Kingdom Members Persecuted</b>	<b>Hung Hsiu-Ch'uan</b>	<b>1853-1864</b>	<b>1,000,000</b>
<b>Final Great Persecution</b>	<b>Taewon'gun</b>	<b>1866</b>	<b>10,000</b>
<b>Commune of Paris Uprising</b>		<b>1871</b>	<b>300</b>
<b>Suppression of Bulgars, Armenians, Manorites &amp; Others</b>	<b>Abdul-Aziz Murad V Abdul-Hamid II Mehmed V</b>	<b>1861-1876 1876 1876-1909 1909-1918</b>	<b>1,185,000</b>
<b>Persecution of Salvation Army Members</b>	<b>Skeleton Army</b>	<b>1880-1885</b>	<b>50</b>
<b>Racial Violence</b>	<b>White Racist Grps.</b>	<b>1882-1922</b>	<b>2,300</b>
<b>North China Boxer Revolt</b>	<b>Boxers</b>	<b>1900-1901</b>	<b>49,000</b>
<b>National Revolution</b>		<b>1910-1929</b>	<b>70,000</b>
<b>The Greatest Century of Christian Expansion Missions</b>		<b>1815-1914</b>	<b>2,275,433</b>
<b>World War I</b>		<b>1914-1919</b>	<b>100,000</b>
<b>Bolshevik (Early Soviet Communists Persecutions)</b>	<b>Russian Revolution Vladimir Lennin Joseph Stalin Nikita Khurshchev Leonid Brezhnev</b>	<b>1917 1922-1924 1922-1953 1953-1964 1964-1982 1917-1980</b>	<b>16,060,000</b>
<b>Tulsa Race Riot</b>	<b>White Racists</b>	<b>1921</b>	<b>200</b>
<b>Roman Catholic Church</b>	<b>Joseph Stalin</b>	<b>1925-1950</b>	<b>1,200,000</b>
<b>Soviet Persecution in The Ukraine</b>	<b>Joseph Stalin</b>	<b>1927</b>	<b>500,000</b>

<b>PERIOD/EVENT PLACE</b>	<b>RULER</b>	<b>DATE</b>	<b>ESTIMATED # OF MARTYRS</b>
<b>Chinese Civil Wars</b>	<b>Bandits &amp; Guerillas</b>	<b>1927-1943</b>	<b>200,000</b>
<b>Autocephalous Church Extermination</b>	<b>Joseph Stalin</b>	<b>1927-1943</b>	<b>120,000</b>
<b>Lutherans Persecuted</b>	<b>Joseph Stalin</b>	<b>1927-1953</b>	<b>600,000</b>
<b>Orthodox Persecuted; Terror-Famine</b>	<b>Joseph Stalin</b>	<b>1922-1953</b>	<b>3,000,000</b>
<b>DURING THE PERIODS OF WORLD WAR AD THEIR AFTERMATH/THE RISE OF COMMUNISM</b>			<b>31,724,520</b>
<b>Communist Vietnam</b>	<b>Vietnamese Leaders</b>	<b>1950-1953</b>	<b>28,000</b>
<b>Korean War</b>	<b>Kim II Sung</b>	<b>1950-1960</b>	<b>800,000</b>
<b>Liquidation of Churches</b>	<b>Zhou Enlai</b>	<b>1950-1980</b>	<b>500,000</b>
<b>“Churches of Silence” Liquidated in 8 countries</b>	<b>Communists</b>	<b>1950-1980</b>	<b>900,000</b>
<b>Muslim &amp; Hindu Retaliation</b>	<b>India</b>	<b>1950-1999</b>	<b>400,000</b>
<b>More Soviet Persecutions</b>	<b>Joseph Stalin</b> <b>Nikita Khrushchev</b> <b>Leonid Brezhnev</b>	<b>1922-1953</b> <b>1953-1964</b> <b>1964-1982</b>	<b>5,000,000</b>
<b>Chinese Independent Churches</b>	<b>Zhou Enlai</b>	<b>1949-1976</b>	<b>74,000</b>
<b>Fidel Castro’s Communist Revolution</b>	<b>Fidel Castro</b>	<b>1959 – 2005</b>	<b>15,000</b>
<b>Great Leap Forward</b>	<b>Zhou Enlai</b>	<b>1959-1962</b>	<b>300,000</b>
<b>Civil Wars</b>	<b>Latin America</b>	<b>1960 – 2005</b>	<b>300,000</b>
<b>Muslim Resurgence</b>	<b>Indonesia</b>	<b>1962-1990s</b>	<b>70,000</b>

<b>PERIOD/EVENT PLACE</b>	<b>RULER</b>	<b>DATE</b>	<b>ESTIMATED # OF MARTYRS</b>
<b>Sudanese Civil War</b>	<b>Northern Arabs vs. Black Africans</b>	<b>1963-2005</b>	<b>660,000</b>
<b>Great Proletarian Cultural Revolution</b>	<b>China</b>	<b>1966-1969</b>	<b>400,000</b>
<b>Biafra Civil War</b>	<b>Nigeria</b>	<b>1967-1970</b>	<b>200,000</b>
<b>Communist Persecutions</b>	<b>Cambodia</b>	<b>1970-1977</b>	<b>50,000</b>
<b>Unregistered Churches Targeted by KGB</b>	<b>Leonid Brezhnev</b>	<b>1970-1980s</b>	<b>60,000</b>
<b>Amin Persecutions</b>	<b>Uganda</b>	<b>1971-1979</b>	<b>200,000</b>
<b>Communist Persecution</b>	<b>Le Duan (Vietnam)</b>	<b>1975-1985</b>	<b>50,000</b>
<b>Lebanese Civil War</b>	<b>Lebanon</b>	<b>1975-1995</b>	<b>25,000</b>
<b>Communist Persecutions</b>	<b>Cambodia</b>	<b>1975-1979</b>	<b>42,000</b>
<b>UDT-Fretilin Civil War</b>	<b>East Timor</b>	<b>1975-2000</b>	<b>90,000</b>
<b>Indian Persecutions</b>	<b>Indira Gandhi</b>	<b>1980</b>	<b>240,000</b>
<b>Government Persecutions</b>	<b>Philippines</b>	<b>1985</b>	<b>40,000</b>
<b>Hutu Massacre</b>	<b>Hutu Tribe</b>	<b>1993-1995</b>	<b>560,000</b>
<b>CHRISTIANITY'S SURGE IN THIRD WORLD/ THE COLD WAR TOTALS</b>			<b>13,356,280</b>
<b>TOTAL MARTYRS SINCE JESUS =</b>		<b>33-2000 A.D.</b>	<b>69,421,230</b>

## **END OF JESUS FREAKS: REVOLUTIONARIES CHART**

**So for 1,967 years from 33 A.D. to 2000 A.D., dcTalk counted**

**approximately 69,421,000 martyrs who died for the word of God. Now**

**what's interesting is that in 1967 A.D. Israel recaptured the Holy Land**

**for their nation. Suppose that for 1,967 years, the Millennial Reign of Christ has been occurring in Heaven. All these saints of the 5<sup>th</sup> Seal have been resurrected in the FIRST RESURRECTION of Revelation 20! So at present there could be approximately 70 million martyrs in Heaven RIGHT NOW.**

**1 Thessalonians 4:14 says – “God will bring WITH JESUS THOSE WHO HAVE DIED IN HIM.”**

**Death has been replaced with THE FIRST RAPTURE by Tim LaHaye who falsely interpreted Scriptures. There is no FIRST RAPTURE before the Tribulation. There is DEATH before and during the tribulation but the ONE AND ONLY RAPTURE will not take place until the SECOND COMING as Matthew 24 defines.**

**We have seen FIRST RESURRECTION SAINTS who were resurrected BEFORE the six trumpets Tribulation and we have seen FIRST RESURRECTION SAINTS who have been resurrected to REIGN WITH CHRIST IN HEAVEN in the MIDDLE of the tribulation, at THE 7<sup>th</sup> LAST TRUMPET.**



**At the SECOND COMING, God “BRINGS WITH JESUS THOSE WHO HAVE DIED IN HIM,” therefore they had to have been resurrected before His Second Coming. 1 Thessalonians 4:17 says – “THE DEAD IN CHRIST WILL RISE FIRST. AFTER THAT, we who are STILL ALIVE and ARE LEFT, will be caught up TOGETHER WITH THEM in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air.” So it’s highly probable that the 70 million martyrs who died between 33 A.D. and 2000 A.D. were resurrected in Heaven.**

**If Satan was released from prison in 2000 A.D. or 1966 A.D., that the tribulation would expand into the 21<sup>st</sup> Century globally as his empire grew and still grows today.**

**These were not saints resurrected AFTER the Millennium Reign of Christ concluded, BUT BEFORE! After Satan is released from his prison he surrounds Jerusalem with his ONE WORLD ARMIES, but the fires of the 7 bowls are poured out on him and Heaven’s saints consistently witness God’s Wrath from THE ALTAR (Revelation 16:7).**

**EVIDENCE #1: Revelation 15:2-5 says – “And I saw those who had been victorious over the beast and his image and over the number**

**of his name. They held harps given them by God and sang the song of Moses the servant of God and the song of the Lamb: ‘Great and marvelous are your deeds Lord God Almighty [3 names]...After this I looked and in heaven the TEMPLE, that is, the tabernacle of the Testimony was opened. Out of the temple came the seven angels with the seven plagues.’”**

**EVIDENCE #2: Revelation 16:5-7 says --“Then I heard the angel in charge of the waters say: ‘You are just in these judgments, you who are and who were, the Holy One, because you have so judged; for they have shed the blood of your saints and prophets and you have given them blood to drink as they deserve.’ And I heard THE ALTAR respond, ‘Yes, LORD GOD ALMIGHTY, true and just are your judgments.” This is evidence that those who had been victorious over the beast and his image were resurrected into heaven. They had died believing in Jesus and that is why they spoke from THE ALTAR is because they sacrificed themselves for the love and honor of the Lord.**

**EVIDENCE #3: Revelation 11:15 says—“The seventh angel sounded his trumpet, and there were LOUD VOICES IN HEAVEN which**

**said, ‘The kingdom of the world has become the kingdom of our Lord and of his Christ, and he will reign for ever and ever.’”**

**These people who participate in the FIRST RESURRECTION of THE MILLENNIUM SAINTS would involve everyone who refused to worship the devil’s pride in the faces of the Satanic Caesars, the Satanic Catholic Popes, the Satanic Muslims, and the Satanic Nazi Germany, and even the Satanic Masonic Orders of the future.**

**Therefore, there are saints who were “RAPTURED” or rather, “RESURRECTED” BEFORE the tribulation (Moses, Enoch, Elijah, Lazarus, the dead young girl, those who came out of their tombs at Christ’s Death; the young boy in the coffin); saints who were resurrected in the MIDDLE of the Tribulation at the SEVENTH LAST TRUMPET; saints who are resurrected AT THE LAST DAY (John 11) and saints who will be alive upon the earth, STANDING FIRM TO THE END (Luke 21), who receive their Salvation at the Second Coming.**

**The MILLENNIUM SAINTS who refused to accept the mark of the beast historically and futuristically through the 8 kings and 10 horns,**

**are obviously raised from the dead at the 7<sup>th</sup> TRUMPET which signals the middle of the tribulation.**

**They had to have been raised BEFORE THE SECOND COMING, just before the 7 bowls of the 7 plagues. This is the only explanation for how “GOD WILL BRING WITH JESUS THOSE WHO HAVE DIED IN HIM.” We will meet them in the air! Therefore, the THOUSAND YEAR REIGN OF JESUS IN HEAVEN had to have happened BEFORE THE SECOND COMING, not after! Tim LaHaye interprets the Millennium as happening AFTER the SECOND COMING in his prophecy chart. However, a man that would mix astrology and personality profiling with our great Christian Faith cannot be trusted with interpreting Bible Prophecy for us, therefore, we can disregard anything he has to say about the “first’ rapture or the millennium.**

**There is much confusion theologically about “THE THOUSAND YEAR REIGN OF CHRIST” and many scholars, including Tim LaHaye have concluded:**

- 1. There is a first pre-tribulation rapture**
- 2. Then the tribulation.**

- 3. Then the second rapture of the Second Coming**
- 4. Then the MILLENNIAL REIGN OF CHRIST (On Earth?)**
- 5. Then Satan goes to war against Jesus in Jerusalem.**
- 6. Then Earth is “renewed”.**
- 7. Then the Great White Throne**

**WRONG!**

**A good argument against this view is if Christ were ruling on earth and over the earth, for a thousand literal years, from the current city of Jerusalem, there would be no need for a Second Coming because he would already be here. Jesus gave a clear warning in Matthew 24:23 – 27 – “At that time, if anyone says to you, ‘Look, here is the Messiah!’ or, ‘There he is!’ do not believe it. For false Christs and false prophets will appear and perform great signs and miracles to deceive EVEN THE ELECT—if that were possible. See, I have told you ahead of time. So if anyone tells you, ‘THERE HE IS, OUT IN THE DESERT, do not go out; or, ‘HERE HE IS, IN THE INNER ROOMS,” don’t believe it.”**

**So Tim LaHaye’s Jesus ruling on earth from the current city of Jerusalem for 1,000 years AFTER the Second Coming is a false Jesus**

**and a false messiah. Hitler claimed he wanted to rule the world through the Third Reich for 1,000 years and so Tim LaHaye's "Jesus" and "Messiah" could be nothing more than a deception.**

**The language gets tricky and the interpretation becomes intricately complex when attempting to solve the riddle of the MILLENNIUM with the context of other Scriptures, in which CHRIST RULES and THE DEVIL IS LOCKED UP for a thousand years.**

**Perhaps 2,000 A.D. would have been the end of the MILLENNIUM and the beginning of Satan's release from prison? We don't know yet.**

**We do know that at the end of this MILLENNIAL REIGN OF CHRIST, Satan is released to surround the earthly Jerusalem again, as it is today in the beginning of the 3<sup>rd</sup> Millennium.**

**Let me first say, that THE EARTH IS GOING TO BE WIPED OUT AND DESTROYED before and during Jesus Christ's Second Coming.**

**Jesus will not come and rule for a thousand years on this present earth! In order for Satan to be released from his prison after the Millennial Reign of Christ is done, Jerusalem on this present earth must still be standing!**

**“They marched across the breadth of the earth and surrounded the camp of God’s people, the city he loves.” (Revelation 20:9)**

**Jesus will not rule the MILLENNIUM on this present EARTH and 2 Peter 3:10 makes it clear – “The DAY OF THE LORD will come like a thief. The heavens will disappear with a roar; the elements will be destroyed by fire, and the earth and everything in it will be laid bare....that day will bring about the destruction of the heavens by fire and the elements will melt in the heat.” Revelation 20:9 says – “Fire came down from heaven and devoured Satan and his armies.”**

**We have to assume that THE THOUSAND YEAR REIGN OF CHRIST, as mentioned in Revelation 20, would be Christ’s reign in Heaven in the Heavenly Jerusalem and not on first earth in the Earthly Jerusalem and some scholars agree with this school of thought.**

**Randall Price, author of THE COMING LAST DAYS TEMPLE came close to this conclusion. He makes an excellent point that there is a TEMPLE IN HEAVEN that existed before Earth was created and that the First and Second Temples on Earth, built by Israeli Masons were a reflection of a blueprint that already existed in Heaven.**

**Exodus 25:40 says – “See that you make them according to the pattern shown you on the mountain.” Hebrews 8:5 says – “They serve at a sanctuary that is a copy and shadow of what is in heaven.”**

**Revelation gives us countless pictures of God’s Rule from Heaven, as well as many Old Testament peeks into the Heavenly Throne Room.**

**We know that Jesus rose from the dead and went back up to Heaven to sit at the Right Hand of God, therefore, since all Christians believe that Jesus is alive and RULING FROM HEAVEN, that His THOUSAND YEAR REIGN would be in Heaven.**

**Jesus will rule in the New Heaven and the New Earth after the FIRST EARTH AND THE FIRST HEAVEN PASSED AWAY (Revelation 21:1).**

**It is obvious that the Second Coming of Christ brings the destruction of the first heaven and the first earth by fire after the rapture of his saints at the Second Coming. “Earth and sky fled from his presence, and there was no place for them.” (Revelation 20:11). I would disagree with Randy Alcorn on one point in his book entitled:**



**HEAVEN where he believes that this present Earth will not be destroyed, but just simply renewed. He gives a good argument and IT IS POSSIBLE he could be right. However, if EARTH AND SKY flee from Christ's presence, then they are destroyed. I don't have a problem with the whole world being destroyed and a New Earth existing after this one passes away. I would prefer that the first earth never be seen again. To live in Paradise on a New Earth with Jesus with no sin, corruption, pollution, or death would be more desirable. I would completely cheer with the saints when the first earth is destroyed and my loved ones are all alive, resurrected with new bodies that will never perish again..**

**So what are we to make of Revelation 20 and "THE FIRST RESURRECTION" of "THE THOUSAND YEARS REIGN OF CHRIST"? How did Tim LaHaye, Jerry Jenkins, and all interpreters before them go way off base in the wrong direction?**

**That is the result of people not challenging them on a Biblical level, after all, how can unschooled, ordinary men like Sunstar, possible have anything to teach or to say to men who have acquired millions of dollars and global media attention?**

**Tim LaHaye is married & has a family of 4 children.**

**Sunstar has no children and is single.**

**Tim LaHaye has sold millions of copies.**

**Sunstar hasn't quite sold that many copies – yet.**

**Tim LaHaye has gone to many Colleges achieving many degrees.**

**Sunstar has not gone to College or Seminary.**

**There are clear differences between men who went to College and men who didn't and it's all PRIDE. I don't have to compare myself with Tim LaHaye's achievements or background for I believe his SUCCESS can go more against him than it can for him – especially if his whole view on the Rapture is WRONG. He doesn't care – he earned bank and millions of deceived disciples. For those of us who cannot boast of the PRIDE of a College Degree, we just simply speak by the power of God's Words and His Holy Spirit and we shall compare the difference between Tim LaHaye's rejection and acceptance and Sunstar's rejection and acceptance – with the evidence of time.**

**We must first open up the Book Of Revelation and take a look, collectively at all the songs of those who are in Heaven to better understand why the MILLENNIAL REIGN OF CHRIST has already existed in Heaven since Christ's ascension and will not occur after the Second Coming of Jesus.**

**When we read the following verses we must ask one question: Was John seeing people who were alive in Heaven during his generation?**

**Revelation 20:4-6 says – “I saw thrones on which were seated those who had been given authority to judge. And I saw the souls of those who had been beheaded because of their testimony for Jesus and because of the word of God. They had not worshiped the beast or his image and had not received his mark in their foreheads or in their hands. They came to life and REIGNED WITH CHRIST A THOUSAND YEARS. (The rest of the dead did not come to life until the thousand years were ended.) THIS IS THE FIRST RESURRECTION. Blessed and holy are those who have part in THE FIRST RESURRECTION.”**

**What is a simpler explanation of “THE FIRST RESURRECTION”?**

**1 Corinthians 15:20-23 says – “But Christ has indeed been raised from the dead, THE FIRSTFRUITS of those who have died. For as in Adam all die, so in Christ all will be made alive. But each in his own turn: Christ THE FIRSTFRUITS; then, when he comes, those who belong to him. Then the end will come.”**

**Clearly “THE FIRSTFRUITS” are those who partake in the first resurrection of Revelation 20 and reign with Christ in Heaven for the thousand years.**

**The “dead in Christ” at the LAST TRUMPET arise, and come with those who are already sitting on Thrones in Heaven who participated in the THOUSAND YEAR REIGN OF CHRIST and those alive upon the earth will witness them all coming with the CLOUDS OF HEAVEN as Jesus appears and gathers his elect from the Earth AFTER the signs of Matthew 24 and Luke 21 have been fulfilled.**

**According to Matthew 24:36-50, “No one knows about that day or hour, only God knows.”**

**We will not be able to calculate the exact calendar date of a minute, hour, day, or year as some lunatics and mockers have done in the Ted Turner media circus.**

**Whether the “thousand years” is literally 1,000 years or whether ‘the thousand years’ is figurative or metaphorical to describe a certain period of time, perhaps compressed into 7 years, we’ll never 100% be certain as to what God’s interpretation of this thousand year time frame is in connection with other verses from other books in the Bible. In my opinion, this analysis of the Millennium fits more closely to the truth of what Scriptures teach than Tim LaHaye’s fictitious analysis. I hope you will agree.**

**For all we know the 2,000 years from Christ’s Ascension until 2,000 A.D. could have been the Millennial Reign of Christ, and the Year 2000 A.D. could have been the Year Satan was released from his prison for the final world war in the 3<sup>rd</sup> Millennium. Perhaps Terminator 3 is a more accurate depiction for the Global disasters predicted, only the robots will be fallen angels trying to terminate the human race with their last desperate attempts to throw everyone into the Abyss?**

**What is a simpler explanation of “THE FIRST RESURRECTION”  
and “THE MILLENNIAL REIGN OF CHRIST”?**

**There are several actions we are working with in the time frame  
of Revelation 20 (which might have begun in 1 A.D. and ended in 2000  
A.D. or began in 1000 A.D. and ended in 2,000 A.D., GOD ONLY KNOWS)  
and details must be properly noted and commented on when it comes  
to the many simultaneous actions of the FIRST RESURRECTION.**

**From the moment Christ ascended into Heaven in about 30-33  
A.D., Christian and Jewish saints who died believing in Him as the  
Messiah, might have been immediately resurrected and assigned  
thrones of Judgment in the Eternal Throne room of Jesus when He  
ascended and took His Seat in Heaven (Revelation 20).**

**Jesus resurrected people while he was alive on earth. Jesus had  
resurrected the dead at the moment of His death. Jesus resurrected  
saints after his death as well.**

**In other words, our thousand-year reign of Jesus as the Messiah  
would have begun with Christ’s ascension into heaven to sit on God’s  
Throne at His Right Hand.**

**EVIDENCE #1: Matthew 27:52-53 gives us evidence of the ‘firstfruits’ of the Resurrection: “The tombs broke open and the bodies of many holy people who had died were raised to life. They came out of the tombs, and AFTER Jesus’ resurrection they went into the Holy City and appeared to many people.” We can note from this resurrection on earth that with Christ’s death began the resurrection of the dead. Although these people were raised to life on earth, our first resurrection of God’s children began with these holy people who were raised to life as their tombs broke open. This happened after Christ’s death.**

**EVIDENCE #2: John 11:44 says—“The dead man [Lazarus] came out, his hands and feet wrapped with strips of linen, and a cloth around his face.” This happened while Christ was alive on earth.**

**EVIDENCE #3: Mark 6:41-42 says—“Jesus took her by the hand and said to her, “Talitha koum!” which means, ‘Little girl, I say to you, get up!’ Immediately the girl stood up and walked around (she was twelve years old).” This also happened while Jesus was still alive on earth.**

**EVIDENCE #4: Luke 7:15 says—“The dead man sat up and began to talk, and Jesus gave him back to his mother.” Again, we see another man who was raised to life who would represent the firstfruits of the first resurrection.**

**EVIDENCE #5: Matthew 17:3 says—“Just then there appeared before them Moses and Elijah, talking with Jesus.” Here we discover evidence that Moses and Elijah were alive in Heaven while Jesus was still here on earth. Elijah had been taken up to heaven without dying in the Old Testament and he would symbolize all those who would be raptured “caught up” into heaven without dying, while Moses would represent those who would be resurrected from the dead in Heaven.**

**2 Kings 2:11 says – “Suddenly a chariot of fire and horses of fire appeared and separated the two of them and Elijah went up to heaven in a whirlwind.” We can see why it is Elijah who appears to Jesus just before his death because of the fact that many people in the last days would be taken up to heaven in the same way Elijah was and Elijah’s appearance was also important for the fulfillment of the prophecies concerning the coming Messiah. God had obviously resurrected Moses in Heaven as well. Elijah’s return was prophesied in (Malachi 4:5-6);**



**equated with John the Baptist (Matthew 17:9-13); appeared with Moses during the transfiguration of Jesus (Matthew 17:1-8).**

**EVIDENCE #6: John 21:21-23 says—“When Peter saw Lazarus, he asked, ‘Lord, what about him?’ Jesus answered, ‘If I want him to remain alive until I return, what is that to you? You must follow me.’” Because of this, the rumor spread among the brothers that this disciple would not die. But Jesus did not say that he would not die; he only said, ‘If I want him to remain alive until I return, what is that to you?’”**

**When the tombs of many holy people who had died had opened up, that means they were resurrected as the FIRSTFRUITS. Even though Jesus raised people from the dead BEFORE He was raised from the dead, they are considered participants in the FIRSTFRUITS of God’s redemptive power of Resurrection.**

**Would these dead people who Jesus raised back to life remain alive on earth until Christ’s return, indicating immortal existence on earth, or would they be taken up to heaven to reign with Christ, as Elijah was? God only knows what happened to these people, but we**

**can assume that either they died again a second time or Jesus took them into Heaven after He ascended or that perhaps they are alive upon the earth today working silently behind the scenes. It's all speculation. I am more likely to believe that after Jesus flew to Heaven to sit at God's Right Hand, that at some point, one by one, these people disappeared from the face of the Earth just like Enoch and Elijah did. It wouldn't have been announced with trumpets or written down. They would just quietly disappear into the pages of history as the FIRST PEOPLE ON EARTH to experience LIFE after death by the Power of God moving at the Word of Jesus.**

**EVIDENCE #7: John 20:27 says—"Put your finger here; see my hands. Reach out your hand and put it into my side. Stop doubting and believe." At this point, we find that Jesus was resurrected from the dead and Thomas got to touch his physical body, discovering proof that Jesus was no ghost, nor was he dead anymore.**

**EVIDENCE #8: Luke 23:43 says—"I tell you the truth, TODAY you will be with me in Paradise." These words were spoken while Jesus was hanging on a cross between two criminals who had been executed with him. TODAY could be taken literally or figuratively.**

**Perhaps they would blink their eyes and appear in the future, even if two millenniums had passed? Perhaps TODAY really meant that after they had died with Christ on that particular day, they would be immediately resurrected into heaven?**

**Jesus hadn't risen from the dead until three days after their deaths, so we don't really know whether the two thieves arose immediately into Heaven as part of the FIRSTFRUITS resurrection, where Elijah, Enoch, and Moses were dwelling, or whether they would blink their eyes and be resurrected AT THE LAST DAY.**

**Jesus only knows.**

**To end the argument of what kind of bodies we will wake up in at our own resurrection, these people all woke up in the same bodies they had died in, with their mental and physical identities still intact and restored. We will no doubt get new bodies, but our identities that we bear today, will be perfected in their immortal state that God will robe our Eternal souls with.**

**Jesus returned to Heaven in the Body He died in and will Forever wear the marks of His crucifixion on His physical body. Moses, Elijah,**

**Lazarus, Jesus and those he resurrected prove that we will not be raised up to look like ghosts or some cosmic energy force, but prove that we will all be resurrected with the same physical identities we had before we died.**

**Therefore, from Christ's Resurrection in 32-33 A.D., until the Satan of the last days is released from His prison, the millennial reign of Christ would have begun both in Heaven, where Jesus sits on God's Throne, and on Earth, where the ministry of the Gospel would be preached as a testimony to all nations through His Earthly Churches.**

**Jesus proved, that by His own Will, at the command of His own voice, which was the voice of God, He could raise the dead at any time and that to Him all who have died are alive. Jesus raised the dead on earth and He could raise the dead in Heaven at any time. Anyone whom God would call out of the grave would be raised at any place and at anytime. Again, Moses and Elijah, who appeared to Jesus while He was on earth, would personify those who would be raptured into God's Kingdom without dying.**

**ANNO DOMINI (In the Year of Our Lord A.D.) would include the reign of Christ on earth through the spread of the Gospel among His Churches on earth and also the saints whom God chose to immediately resurrect into the Kingdom of Heaven to sit on Heavenly thrones during this time of Church History on earth. They have been, all throughout Church History, granted immediate Resurrection into new immortal bodies, standing in the Heavenly Temple of the Heavenly Jerusalem, which today is hovering above the new earth in the new heavens, waiting to descend so that mankind can dwell with God forever where there will be no more sin, death, crying or pain again (Revelation 21-22).**

**Therefore, those Christian and Jewish saints who have died all throughout history, may have been immediately resurrected into the Kingdom of God, one by one, individually as the procession of time moved forward throughout the generations. At any time, those who would hear God's Voice would be resurrected with a new immortal body in Heaven, being given thrones to sit upon, to judge the world and its inhabitants as the generations moved forward through time. This is the first resurrection in simpler terms.**

**The first resurrection would have two to three major events:**

- 1. Those resurrected by Jesus on Earth who were raised before He died and those who came out of their tombs after He died.**
- 2. After Jesus ascended to Heaven in Acts, He might have resurrected many Jewish saints, such as Ezekiel or Daniel. When Peter died, he might have been given an immediate resurrection in Heaven and been given a seat in Heaven. “<sup>4</sup> Twenty-four smaller thrones surrounded his, with twenty-four Elders sitting on them; all were clothed in white, with golden crowns upon their heads - Rev 4:4 (Living).” This is our proof, that when John wrote the Book of Revelation, twenty-four elders were sitting on thrones next to Jesus. “<sup>4</sup> Then I saw thrones, and sitting on them were those who had been given the right to judge - Rev 20:4 (Living).” We can see evidence of visible thrones in Heaven when John first entered Heaven in Revelation 4. The question we can ask is: Were these thrones already established when John was alive or did John enter into the future, right into Judgment Day? I personally believe that if Moses and Elijah could appear to Jesus in new bodies that were obviously glorified at His transfiguration,**

**then when Jesus sat down at the RIGHT HAND OF GOD, these thrones in Revelation 4:4 and Revelation 20:4 were established in John's generation, thus beginning the Millennial Reign of Christ IN HEAVEN with the saints of the FIRSTFRUITS of the FIRST RESURRECTION.**

- 3. As Earth time proceeded forward, BELIEVERS throughout the world who died in Christ would rise first, being given new bodies in Heaven immediately, all the way up to the tribulation. It is clear, from the text of Revelation 6:9-11 that many BELIEVERS who had been slain were raised back to life in God's Heavenly Throne Room, but many BELIEVERS would still be alive on Earth, suffering and dying as they had suffered and died. “<sup>9</sup> And when he broke open the fifth seal, I saw an altar, and underneath it all the souls of those who had been martyred for preaching the Word of God and for being faithful in their witnessing. <sup>10</sup> They called loudly to the Lord and said, "O Sovereign Lord, holy and true, how long will it be before you judge the people of the earth for what they've done to us? When will you avenge our blood against those living on the earth?" <sup>11</sup> White robes were given to each of**

**them, and they were told to rest a little longer until their other brothers, fellow servants of Jesus, had been martyred on the earth and joined them - Rev 6:9-11 (Living).” We will repeat these verses again and again so you can view the picture more clearly for how the FIRST RESURRECTION works in a three-dimensional mirror.**

- 4. As the saints who had died for Christ were resurrected and given white robes, they are commanded to wait and be patient, until their brothers and sisters on earth were killed as they had been killed and these are the saints who come out of the GREAT TRIBULATION rejecting the beast and the false prophet, suffering and dying for the God of Israel in Jesus’ Name.**

**Again, Revelation 20:4 says—“I saw thrones on which were seated those who had been given authority to judge. And I saw the souls of those who had been beheaded because of their testimony for Jesus and because of the word of God.”**

**Daniel 7:9 says – “I looked and THRONES WERE SET IN PLACE.”**



**These thrones would have been raised with Christ after He ascended into Heaven, so it is possible that these judges have already arisen from the dead throughout history and are currently reigning with Christ in Heaven, as Moses and Elijah were in Heaven during Christ's ministry on earth and appeared to Him at His transfiguration.**

**These Jewish and Christian saints who participate in the Millennial Reign of Christ in Heaven are also a part of the 5<sup>th</sup> Seal, which could also span throughout history (instead of just the 3 ½ year tribulation period that has been suggested). Yes, saints will be killed during the tribulation for their faith and those who come out of the GREAT TRIBULATION OF THE SEVEN YEARS will rise from the dead FIRST at THE LAST DAY.**

**Yes, there are saints who are resurrected before the tribulation into Heaven and there are saints resurrected during the tribulation and there are saints who will rise FIRST in the LAST DAY, which explains PRE-TRIB, MID-TRIB, AND POST-TRIB RAPTURE more adequately, with all three viewpoints having the element of Biblical truth with the wrong perspective. Given the proper perspective, THE MILLENNIAL**

**REIGN OF CHRIST was in existence when He ascended into Heaven and would close with Satan's release in Revelation 20.**

**During the short time when the devil gathers the nations in the four corners of the world to battle, many saints have been spared from that 7-year tribulation because they had been resurrected into the Heavenly Temple of the Heavenly Jerusalem, clothed with new immortal bodies and white robes. These people who had died throughout history, suffering for the Name of Jesus, were told to wait a little bit longer until the tribulation saints were killed by the beast as they had been.**

**Many tribulation saints will reject the devil's GLOBAL DOMINION and will come out of the great tribulation of the last seven years, hearing the LAST TRUMPET SOUND and being instantly raised from the dead, as Moses, the twenty four elders of Revelation 4, the saints of the fifth seal in Revelation 6:9, and the thrones of the first resurrection in Revelation 20,**

**All these saints, resurrected in Heaven, with new bodies, will return in the way Matthew 24 and Luke 21 narrate. Just as Elijah and**

**Enoch were taken up to heaven without dying, so will the SURVIVING CHRISTIAN AND JEWISH saints who are still alive during the last days tribulation, stand up and lift up their heads as their redemption draws near at the Second Coming of Jesus.**

**PROOF? Try Hebrews 9:28 – “Jesus will appear A SECOND TIME, not to bear sin, but to bring salvation to THOSE WHO ARE WAITING FOR HIM.”**

**Did this say Jesus is coming a second AND THIRD time? No. Just a second time. A pre-tribulation rapture would mean Jesus came a second time and the “SECOND” coming would actually be the THIRD COMING if there are going to be two raptures. NOT! The SECOND coming is the SECOND coming and not the third coming. Hebrews 9:28 says that Jesus will appear A SECOND TIME. Jesus Messiah’s first coming was 2,000 years ago and His Second Coming is in Matthew 24:29-31.**

**The elect (God’s children) will be gathered from the four corners of the world in ONE RAPTURE at Christ’s SECOND Coming, to join**

**those dead in Christ who had risen first at the SEVENTH LAST TRUMPET.**

**What about everybody else?**

**2 Thessalonians 1:6-10 says – “God will pay back trouble to those who trouble you and give relief to you who are troubled., and to us as well. This will happen when the Lord Jesus is revealed from heaven IN BLAZING FIRE with his powerful angels. He will punish those who don’t know God and don’t obey the Gospel of our Lord Jesus. They will be punished with everlasting destruction and shut out from the presence of the Lord and from the majesty of his power on the day he comes to be glorified in his holy people and to be marveled at among all those who have believed.”**

**After the universe rolls up like a scroll (Revelation 6:14, Revelation 16:17-21), Jesus sits enthroned on the GREAT WHITE THRONE of REVELATION 20 and the rest of the dead are raised back to life for judgment. The reason why the God of Israel chose to resurrect His believing saints first, I believe, is because <sup>28</sup> Jesus**

**replied, "When I, the Messiah, shall sit upon my glorious throne in the Kingdom, you my disciples shall certainly sit on twelve thrones judging the twelve tribes of Israel. 29 And anyone who gives up his home, brothers, sisters, father, mother, wife, children, or property, to follow me, shall receive a hundred times as much in return, and shall have eternal life. 30 But many who are first now will be last then; and some who are last now will be first then."**

**Matt 19:28-30 (Living)**

**They were last on earth, but will be first in Heaven.**

**Let me repeat this verse again: Revelation 6:9 says—"When he opened the fifth seal, I saw under the altar the souls of those who had been slain because of the word of God and the testimony they maintained. They called out in a loud voice, 'How long, Sovereign Lord, holy and true, until you judge the inhabitants of the earth and avenge our blood?' Then each of them was given a white robe, and they were told to wait a little longer, until the number of their fellow servants and brothers who were to be killed as they had been was completed."**

**As a reward for waiting patiently, their sins are removed and Christ clothed them with white robes while they patiently wait for Judgment Day to bring their enemies who had killed them to justice.**

**11 Let everyone who can hear listen to what the Spirit is saying to the churches: He who is victorious shall not be hurt by the Second Death. Rev 2:11 (Living)**

**6 Blessed and holy are those who share in the First Resurrection. For them the Second Death holds no terrors, for they will be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand years.**

**Rev 20:6 (Living)**

**THE FIRST RESURRECTION of Revelation 20 seems to match Revelation 6, in its details of the fifth seal and could also apply to “those who have come out of the great tribulation.” They could be separate events, but they could also happen at the same time.**

**Instead of thinking of these Revelation events in chronological order, since the original manuscript had no divisions of chapters, verses, or chapter titles, we could narrate the prophecies of**

**Revelation to apply to anytime in history or the present. In other words, Chapter 17 could happen at the same time as Chapter 13, or the 6 seals could be opened at the same time the six trumpets are sounded.**

**The 6 bowls may very well happen after the six trumpets have sounded.**

### **WHAT DO I MEAN?**

**Let's look at the 3-DIMENSIONAL MIRROR:**

**The Book Of Revelation, in its original form in Greek and Latin, was not divided into chapters and verses and there was no original chronological order, except what the Church decided to piece together by organizing the Book into some kind of logical order.**

**The golden questions we must ask in the Book of Revelation are:**

**Do the 7 Seals, 7 Trumpets, and 7 Bowls happen in a chronological time frame, as 3 separate stages in time? In other words, do the 7 Seals happen in one time phase, the 7 trumpets in a secondary time phase, and the 7 bowls in a third time phase?**

**Or, do the 7 Seals, 7 Trumpets, and 7 bowls all happen in ONE 7-YEAR PERIOD, mirroring each other with each account telling us the same story with different symbols that are all happening simultaneously at the same time? Could John have been seeing the same picture 3 different ways, with more or less details added & subtracted with each new revelation?**

**7 Seals + 7 Trumpets + 7 bowls = 7-year tribulation?**

**Some schools teach that the 7 trumpets will sound during the first 3 ½ years of the Tribulation and that the 7 bowls will be poured out during the last 3 ½ years of the GREAT TRIBULATION. Any possibility could be true and we must be open to any worst-case scenario to better spiritually prepare and arm ourselves for the fight ahead.**

**Some schools teach that either the 7 trumpets or the 7 bowls happen at the same time as the 7 seals are opened. I believe that all three happen at the same time, as prophesy works like a three-dimensional mirror of the same story. I don't think or believe they are chronological, but I could be wrong.**



**What I am doing now is preparing for either death or the Second Coming and I am not wasting my time with the pre-tribulation thesis anymore, but if I am 100% wrong, may the Lord forgive me as I am zealous for His Truth and not my own.**

### **A MID-TRIB SEVENTH TRUMPET**

**If the 7+7+7 were actually in chronological order, then if the 7 trumpets sounded during the first 3 ½ years of the 7-year tribulation, then the SEVENTH LAST TRUMPET would sing the RAPTURE, which would make the MID-TRIBULATIONISTS correct. I believe that BELIEVERS who reject the beast and the false prophet during the first 3 ½ years will be resurrected in Heaven, with the rest of the martyrs already ruling with in Heaven.**

### **A PRE-TRIB SEVENTH TRUMPET**

**The seven trumpets would sound before the 7-year tribulation period and the 7<sup>th</sup> last trumpet would sound as the RAPTURE HORN.**

**Then after the RAPTURE, the seven bowls of God's Wrath would be poured out during the 7-year tribulation.**

## **AN AFTER TRIBULATION TRUMPET**

**My view is that the 7 Seals, 7 Trumpets, and 7 Bowls all happen at the same time working as a three-dimensional mirror of simultaneous events. I believe also that it's possible to separate the 7 trumpets as the first 3 ½ years tribulation and to separate the last 3 ½ years with the 7 bowls. Without a doubt, the 7 trumpets and 7 bowls are happening within the 6<sup>th</sup> Seal.**

**I believe there are saints who will be resurrected before, during, and after the tribulation and at the Second Coming, millions of Christians will vanish from the earth in the greatest unidentified flying object of all time – the New Jerusalem. All three RAPTURE THEORIES can only work when considering DEATH AND RESURRECTION and people vanishing from the earth through death, until the SECOND COMING of Matthew 24.**

**The 5<sup>th</sup> Seal could also be a separate event from the thousand years resurrection and apply to those who were persecuted before, during, and after Christ's resurrection, while the thousand years resurrection could apply to those who refused to accept Allah or the false religion of Islam and were slain as a result.**

**Those who did not immediately get resurrected into Heaven all throughout history in the 5<sup>th</sup> Seal and Millennial Reign of Christ, to sit upon assigned thrones of Judgment in Heaven, will be awakened in Heaven, standing with Jesus at the LAST TRUMPET, as he gathers the rest of his children from the earth at the rapture of the Second Coming. When Jesus raptures the Jewish and Christian believers from the earth in the last days, they will be standing beside their Lord watching the angels harvest the earth with Christ's Second Coming.**

**At the seventh last trumpet, the dead in Christ rise first and so God will bring with Jesus those who have died in Him on the clouds of Heaven. (1 Thessalonians 4:14). I am closer to accept their resurrection in the middle of the tribulation, when the two witnesses are resurrected than I am to accepting the seventh trumpet as being blasted at the Second Coming.**

**On Earth, we will not have the viewpoint of who gets resurrected in Heaven first, and we might never hear the trumpets sound or see which angel is pouring which bowl. What little bit we will be able to know about is 2 Peter 3:10—“But the DAY OF THE LORD will come like a thief. The heavens will disappear with a roar; the elements will be destroyed by fire, and the earth and everything in it will be laid bare.”**

**The Jewish and Christian saints participate in THE FIRST RESURRECTION during the Millennial Reign of Christ on Earth (through His Churches) and in Heaven (for those assigned to sit in judgment seats with Christ in Heaven).**

**The SEVENTH LAST TRUMPET RESURRECTION will involve the rest of the dead believers, ‘the elect’ whom God will resurrect either in the middle or after the tribulation of the last days.**

**WHAT ABOUT EVERYBODY ELSE? I’M NO SAINT!**

**Jesus said in Matthew 12:41-42 says—“The men of Nineveh will stand up at the judgment with this generation and condemn it; for they repented at the preaching of Jonah, and now one greater than Jonah is**

**here. The Queen of the South will rise at the judgment with this generation and condemn it; for she came from the ends of the earth to listen to Solomon's wisdom, and now one greater than Solomon is here."**

**JUDGMENT DAY, as written in Revelation 20, will occur after the time of the GENERAL RESURRECTION, which includes those resurrected after THE RAPTURE of THE SECOND COMING highlighted in Matthew 24 and the destruction of the world is complete.**

**Everybody else will be resurrected after the Earth has been completely destroyed and Jesus has gathered His elect up into His Holy City. When the Judgment has been completed and Satan destroyed forever, the New Jerusalem will land upon the New Earth where God will make His Home with us forever.**

**THE FIRSTFRUITS of the FIRST RESURRECTION will not be judged or have to fear THE SECOND DEATH on Judgment Day, but the rest of the dead who did not participate in the FIRST RESURRECTION, will face the JUDGMENT in the General Resurrection.**

**Who can face the God of Israel or JUDGMENT DAY? It is a Day that all nations fear and dread the most, even the arrogant who live a whole lifetime of ignorance, greed, and stupidity.**

**To the rest of the dead who have died in history awakening at the FINAL RESURRECTION, it has been a flash, the twinkling of an eye, for them to be consciously awakened within new bodies before the great white throne of JUDGMENT DAY in Revelation 20. Also, for the Christian and Jewish saints participating in THE FIRST RESURRECTION before and during the SEVENTH TRUMPET blast, they blinked and appeared with Christ sitting in Heavenly seats of Authority until the end of time.**

**In conclusion, we can disregard the vanishing of millions of Christians and Jews from the earth in an invisible rapture BEFORE the tribulation, but we can expect the vanishing of the Jewish and Christian saints through death and through martyrdom until the Second Coming of Christ. This will not be the signal of the last seven years of life on earth.**

**Expect to go through the tribulation and don't buy into what the fiction writers are selling you. If you die before the tribulation you obviously won't have to go through it or endure it, but watch out and be prepared for the reality that some of us who are believers will have to go through the tribulation of the last days until Jesus returns. You may just long for death, but death is going to elude you (Revelation 9:6).**

**Revelation 12:11 says – “They overcame him by the blood of the Lamb and by the word of their testimony; they did NOT LOVE THEIR LIVES SO MUCH AS TO SHRINK FROM DEATH.”**

**Remember, we are not going to know who is going to become the FIRSTFRUITS of the Resurrection and we are not going to hear the trumpets sound on earth. All of the events that Angels, the elders, the four living creatures, the martyrs, the First Resurrection saints and the four living creatures witness will be from a vantage point we on earth are not going to visibly see. What we will visibly see is the MASONIC SUN-MOON GOD eclipsed and the stars that they worship will fall BEFORE THE COMING OF THE GREAT AND GLORIOUS DAY OF THE LORD.**

**The 6<sup>th</sup> Seal of Revelation 6 says that THE SUN WILL TURN BLACK LIKE SACKCLOTH MADE OF GOAT HAIR. So say goodbye to the GOAT GOD, for Jesus is coming soon, enthroned as GOD.**

**The only true visible signs of Jesus' Second Coming can be found in Matthew 24 and Luke 21 and these Scriptures will forever represent the signs of the end that we must all look out for signaling our Lord's Coming Kingdom.**

**A common argument has been: "NO ONE KNOWS ABOUT THAT DAY OR HOUR." True. The people Jesus spoke to about 2,000 years ago did not know about the day or the hour of when Jesus Christ was coming again. 2,000 years of saints have lived and died without knowing about that day or hour. However, in the last days, the visible signs will be in the skies that Jesus is COMING SOON. The whole world will know that the great day of God's Wrath has come and it is when we as believers who are still alive and left who will look up, knowing that our redemption is near. We may not have an exact calendar date, but we will be able to see Jesus coming on the clouds of Heaven and we WILL ALL SEE JESUS COMING!**

**THE SEVENTH LAST TRUMPET**



**Are there really TWO different “RAPTURES” as some scholars interpret, or is there only going to be ONE rapture at the Second Coming of Jesus as defined in Matthew 24 and Luke 21? The reason we should ask this question is that the whole scenario of the PRE-TRIBULATION Rapture sounds confusing when we open up the Bible and study something entirely different from what the Science Fiction writers of Bible Prophecy have mass marketed on our intellectual behalf.**

**Here are some of the great leaders of the Christian Faith who all believed and still believe in the Pre-Tribulation Rapture:**

- 1. TIM LAHAYE**
- 2. JERRY JENKINS**
- 3. HAL LINDSEY**
- 4. DAVE HUNT**
- 5. CHUCK MISSLER**
- 6. JACK VAN IMPE**
- 7. RANDALL PRICE**
- 8. CHARLES STANLEY**
- 9. JACK HAYFORD**
- 10. DR. JAMES KENNEDY**
- 11. JERRY FALWELL**
- 12. RANDALL PRICE**
- 13. ZOLA LEVITT**
- 14. BILLY GRAHAM**

**Could all of these 'educated' men be wrong? Could these and so many thousands of Pastors and Reverends be 100% wrong about a pre-Tribulation rapture? My conclusion: YES!**

**Have the PRE-TRIBULATION RAPTURE scholars used a spin on words that have misled us from THE TRUTH about the Rapture?**

**We are always presented the sequence of the last days in the narration of a PRE-TRIBULATION RAPTURE viewpoint:**

- 1. THE "FIRST" RAPTURE HAPPENS FIRST IN WHICH MILLIONS OF CHRISTIANS VANISH FROM THE EARTH.**
- 2. THE TRIBULATION WILL HAPPEN**
- 3. THE "SECOND" RAPTURE IN THE FORM OF THE SECOND COMING WILL END THE TRIBULATION**

**"THE RAPTURE WILL HAPPEN FIRST, THEN THE TRIBULATION, AND THEN A SECOND RAPTURE AT THE SECOND COMING." I had to tolerate this viewpoint in Baptist and Calvary Chapel Churches and I always had a challenge in my heart towards this viewpoint.**

**We are never taught: “THE TRIBULATION WILL HAPPEN FIRST and then THE ONE AND ONLY RAPTURE AT THE SECOND COMING.”**

**We are also told that the Second Coming of Jesus Christ is NOT the Rapture, which of course, always raised a loud JEOPARDY buzzer alarm in my mind. Oops! Sorry. Wrong Answer.**

**I believe that the 7-year tribulation will happen first and then the Second Coming Rapture will happen either before or after the 7<sup>th</sup> bowl has been poured out.**

**For 15 years I listened patiently to the PRE-TRIBULATION RAPTURE viewpoint, only to come up with a different conclusion than what many “educated” men arrived at.**

**THE SEVENTH ANGEL BLOWS THE SEVENTH TRUMPET “It’s Time To Judge The Dead”**

**I would like to now discuss the SEVENTH TRUMPET of Revelation 11:15-18, because there is too much confusion about THE**

**RAPTURE, THE GREAT TRIBULATION, and THE RESURRECTION as far as the sequence of events is presented by our studious theologians.**

**Rev 11:15-19 (Living) says – For just then the seventh angel blew his trumpet, and there were loud voices shouting down from heaven, "The Kingdom of the world now belongs to our Lord, and to his Christ; and he shall reign forever and ever." Stopping here, THE WORLD NOW BELONGS TO GOD at the Seventh Trumpet.**

**In Revelation 20, the world belonged to the devil to deceive the nations in the four corners of the world to attack Jerusalem. Now it appears that the Earth has concluded and the SAINTS are praising Jesus from Heaven, indicating their Resurrection after the first six trumpets.**

**“And the twenty-four Elders sitting on their thrones before God threw themselves down in worship, saying, "We give thanks, Lord God Almighty, who is and was, for now you have assumed your great power and have begun to reign. The nations were angry with you, but now it is your turn to be angry with them. It is time to judge the dead and reward your servants--prophets and people alike, all who fear your**

**Name, both great and small--and to destroy those who have caused destruction upon the earth."**

**This is the grand finale of the six trumpets which had destroyed a third of the earth, a third of earth's water, a third of the sun, moon & stars, & and the final trumpet had concluded with a third of mankind being killed by the four angels bound at the Euphrates River in which 200 million troops are involved in a great battle preparing the way for the Eastern Kings during the final world war.**

**Now there are a few different ways of looking at the 7<sup>th</sup> Trumpet of Revelation 11. You could say that when the 7<sup>th</sup> angel blows his trumpet, millions of Christians will vanish from the earth and appear in Heaven as the MID-TRIB Rapture view logically dictates.**

**In the pre-Tribulation rapture viewpoint, there is not a single sound, word, or noise given by Heaven to Earth. Jesus does not flash and light up the sky from one end to the other, as Jesus said His Coming would be in Matthew 24.**

**Christians just mysteriously vanish. They are gone. However, NO VERSES back up this fantasia of religious perception that has been presented in countless books and movies on the subject.**

**“God would never allow his people to suffer His own wrath, therefore, we will never see the 7 trumpets or 7 bowls,” is the greatest argument against the POST TRIBULATION rapture view, but when I consider the wrath I have personally suffered with the death of my grandmother and the affliction of my parents, I think somebody, somewhere, at some time went wrong in their theological interpretations and it’s NOT ME, IT’S THEM!**

**Not because I have a personal bias against the pre-tribulation rapture view based on my own experiences, but more or less just looking at my grandmother’s empty chair and she has VANISHED through Death. I have watched countless believers vanish through death! Not long after Tim LaHaye made the POPE vanish in his book, Pope John Paul II died and the whole world witnessed his dead body lying before the entire world. It is this scenario that Jesus meant when he said, “Wherever there is a dead body, there the vultures will gather,” a detail that every pre-tribulation scholar ignores. Yes, now**

**Pope John Paul's body is buried and decomposing. He vanished through death. As to whether he went to Heaven or hell is uncertain.**

**Tim LaHaye raptures the Pope in his book and I would join Dave Hunt in condemning this theological assumption. Pope John Paul did not vanish or disappear from the earth. He vanished through death.**

**Millions of believers have historically vanished through death, many of which became martyrs who had suffered before leaving this world.**

**Yes, when a Believer dies, they leave their clothes and their material possessions behind, but guess what also they leave behind: Their rotting dead bodies! "Wherever there is a dead body, there the vultures will gather!" (Matthew 24)**

**It is this perspective that gives me a clear view of how Jesus said we would disappear from the earth until HE LOUDLY COMES in the Matthew 24 and Luke 21 scenario.**

**We must separate Biblical fact from Biblical fiction for the sake of those Jesus is speaking to during the last and final days of life on earth.**

**If these saints in the 7<sup>th</sup> Last Trumpet call of God had been raptured BEFORE the tribulation, then we would have seen the first angel with the blowing his trumpet as THE LAST TRUMPET and these loud voices in Heaven would have said these words of praise to God before or during the first trumpet.**

**How come the pre-tribulation rapture scholars did not conclude the 7<sup>th</sup> trumpet as THE LAST TRUMPET? The pre-tribulation view claims that Christians were raptured BEFORE the first trumpet ever sounded! I found no Scriptural evidence before the first trumpet, which gave any solid ground to stand upon for the pre-tribulation view.**

**They explain this away by saying that the 7<sup>th</sup> trumpet is not the last trumpet, which is ridiculous logic to begin with. Of course the 7<sup>th</sup> trumpet IS THE LAST TRUMPET, it's just that the seventh last trumpet proposes a problem to the pre-tribulation viewpoint and so in order to fit their fictitious theory into the words, they simply ignore the 7<sup>th</sup> trumpet as being the last trumpet.**

**It appears that the first six trumpets of Revelation 8 & 9 already released God's Wrath upon the earth and it is not until the conclusion**



**of the 6<sup>th</sup> Trumpet, that these loud voices in Heaven are giving thanks to the Lord and are proclaiming that it's time to judge the dead and that the whole world NOW BELONGS TO GOD. The nations were angry and God's Wrath has come upon the world. Even in the context of a mid-tribulation trumpet, we do not find evidence of any language that points to a rapture, although it is possible that BEFORE the 7 bowls are poured out, Jesus Christ's Second Coming harvests the earth.**

**Are there going to be BELIEVERS on earth during the 7 bowls of God's Wrath?**

**The pre-tribulation rapture scholars have said, "We find no evidence of any believers being on earth during the 7 bowls." Really? They have conveniently ignored one verse that proves that statement false and it can be found in Revelation 16:15 – "Behold, I come like a thief! Blessed is he who stays awake and keeps his clothes with him, so that he may not go naked and be shamefully exposed."**

**This is said by Jesus AFTER the 6<sup>th</sup> bowl is poured out on the Euphrates River!**

**Why would Jesus give a blessing for believers to STAY AWAKE and KEEP THEIR CLOTHES WITH THEM if they had already been raptured into heaven? I find evidence that Jesus was speaking to believers who are on the earth during the period between the 6<sup>th</sup> bowl and the 7<sup>th</sup> bowl.**

**The pre-tribulation rapture scholars stated: “We find no evidence to suggest that believers are on the earth during the six trumpet blasts.”**

**After the fifth angel sounds his trumpet, the locusts are: “told not to harm the grass of the earth or any plant or tree, but only those people who did not have the SEAL OF GOD IN THEIR FOREHEADS.” So here we read that believers have the SEAL OF GOD in their foreheads. Pre-tribulation raptures scholars also ignore the two witnesses of Revelation 11 who stand in Jerusalem and are attacked and slain by the beast. It is now the mid-tribulation rapture scholars say that the rapture of Christians will happen as the two witnesses symbolize the rapture of Christian Churches with these two men. With the death and the rapture of the two witnesses in Revelation 11 – “The second woe has passed; the third woe is COMING SOON.”**

**Jesus said that “HE IS COMING SOON,” so perhaps the THIRD WOE is his second coming, by which all the nations of the earth shall mourn. It is possible for the 7<sup>th</sup> trumpet to sound with the opening of the 5<sup>th</sup> Seal, because after the 5<sup>th</sup> seal saints and 7<sup>th</sup> trumpet saints glorify God, the 6<sup>th</sup> Seal is broken in which the kings of the earth flee before Jesus Christ’s coming wrath and the 7 bowls of God’s Wrath are poured out upon the earth.**

**The period between the 6<sup>th</sup> trumpet and the 7<sup>th</sup> trumpet could also connect with the period between the 6<sup>th</sup> bowl and the 7<sup>th</sup> bowl for Jesus says in Revelation 16:15 – “Behold, I come LIKE A THIEF! Blessed is he who stays awake and keeps his clothes with him.” But we are merely assuming that a mid-tribulation rapture has occurred with the 7<sup>th</sup> last trumpet blast. We can’t assume a mid-tribulation rapture either because of Jesus telling believers to stay awake AFTER the 6<sup>th</sup> bowl has been poured out.**

**I have concluded that it is AFTER THE 6<sup>TH</sup> BOWL that the Rapture will happen, just before the 7<sup>th</sup> bowl is poured out on the earth which finalizes God’s Judgment against all of the wicked. God is going to come and save his believing children just before the world is**

**completely destroyed and this follows more closely with Matthew 24, Luke 21, Revelation 6:12-17, Revelation 9:4, Revelation 11:1-18, and Revelation 16:15.**

**The pre-tribulation rapture scholars try to go around the fact that believers will go through the tribulation by stating, “Oh yes, after millions of Christians vanish from the earth, there will be sinful Christians who were left behind who will notice that Christians have disappeared and they will become Christians during the tribulation.” I found no such evidence of this claim either. In fact, the only evidence I find is that BELIEVERS NEVER LEFT EARTH either BEFORE, DURING or even AFTER the 6<sup>th</sup> bowl of God’s Wrath!**

**After the second woe passed, the 7<sup>th</sup> angel sounds the 7<sup>th</sup> last trumpet and believers in Heaven are worshipping God as they are spared from the torments of the 7 bowls of God’s Wrath. Now if the believers are not raptured during the 7<sup>th</sup> trumpet blast, then the 7<sup>th</sup> trumpet is part of the FIRST RESURRECTION mentioned in the Millennial Reign of Christ in Heaven.**

**The reason why we have to separate the 7 trumpets from the 7 bowls and not conclude the rapture in the middle of the tribulation is found in Revelation 15:1 – “I saw in heaven another great and marvelous sign: seven angels with SEVEN LAST PLAGUES—LAST because WITH THEM God’s Wrath is completed.”**

**God’s Wrath was not completed with the 7 trumpets! After the 7 trumpets there will still be 7 bowls of God’s Wrath and Revelation 16:15 shows evidence of Jesus speaking to the remaining believers on earth that “BEHOLD, I COME LIKE A THIEF!” So Jesus Christ’s SECOND COMING NEVER HAPPENED BEFORE THE 6 BOWLS! Revelation 16:15 shows Jesus telling believers on earth that those who STAY AWAKE are BLESSED. This means some believers haven’t died and are still on earth awaiting their redemption. 1 Thessalonians 4:16 says – “For the Lord Himself will come down from heaven, with a loud command, with the voice of the archangel and with THE TRUMPET CALL OF GOD, and THE DEAD IN CHRIST WILL RISE FIRST.”**

**So these people recorded in the 7<sup>th</sup> Trumpet of Revelation 11:15 – 19 would be THE DEAD IN CHRIST RISING FIRST. In addition to the martyrs who had participated in ruling with Jesus during the historical**

**millennium just before Satan's release from prison, the 7<sup>th</sup> trumpet would also include other saints participating in THE DEAD IN CHRIST RISING FIRST. It is these saints who will stand under the altar in Revelation 6:9 and Revelation 16:7. The DEAD IN CHRIST rise first before Jesus Christ's Second Coming!**

### **THE DEAD ARE RAISED & CHANGED AT THE LAST TRUMPET**

**1 Corinthians 15:51-52 says—"Listen, I tell you a mystery: We will not all die (sleep), but we will all be changed—in a flash, in the twinkling of an eye at the LAST TRUMPET. For the trumpet will sound, the dead will be raised imperishable and we will be changed."**

**When we tie in Revelation 11:15 -18 with 1 Corinthians 15, we are seeing that the SEVENTH TRUMPET of the last Revelation Trumpet would obviously be the LAST TRUMPET mentioned in 1 Corinthians 15, since the 7<sup>th</sup> Trumpet is the last trumpet in the book of Revelation.**

**Pre-trib scholars have explained that the 7<sup>th</sup> Trumpet of Revelation IS NOT the LAST TRUMPET mentioned in the other**

**Scriptures. Is this possible? After the 7<sup>th</sup> Trumpet Resurrection, there is no other trumpet sounding in the Book of Revelation.**

**Perhaps after the 7<sup>th</sup> trumpet there is another kind of trumpet blast signaling Jesus Christ's return? Well, the LAST TRUMPET signals the dead being raised with imperishable bodies.**

**I believe the reason Tim LaHaye and other pre-trib scholars justify their views is to hide the huge gaping hole that swallows the whole PRE-TRIB RAPTURE view into nothing more than a spin on words.**

**That's correct. The whole Pre-Tribulation Rapture scenario has been a spin on words from the birth of its conception and held by every scholar throughout time, until now.**

**When we open up the Book of Revelation, we see absolute evidence that the SEVENTH TRUMPET IS THE LAST TRUMPET! But the 7<sup>th</sup> Trumpet does not give an immediate Second Coming of Jesus Christ as Revelation 16:15 proves that Jesus still has yet to COME LIKE A THIEF after the 6<sup>th</sup> bowl has been poured!**

**So IF THE DEAD IN CHRIST RISE FIRST 1 Thessalonians 4:16 and “God will bring with Jesus those who have died in him,” (1 Thessalonians 4:14), then we can only conclude that THE RAPTURE OF THE SECOND COMING will happen as defined in Matthew 24 and Luke 21.**

**The six trumpets and six bowls of God’s Wrath are the visible signs of Jesus Christ’s Second Coming. As Luke 21:25-27 says – “There will be signs in the sun, moon, and stars. On the earth, nations will be in anguish and perplexity at the roaring and tossing of the sea. Men will faint from terror apprehensive of what is coming on the world, for the heavenly bodies will be shaken. AT THAT TIME, they will see the Son of Man...” Okay, so AT THAT TIME of the 6 trumpets and 6 bowls of God’s Wrath, “the kings of the earth, the princes, the generals, the rich, the mighty, and every slave and free man hid in caves and among the rocks of the mountains. They called out to the mountains and the rocks, ‘Fall on us and hide us from the face of him who sits on the throne and from the wrath of the Lamb! For the great day of their wrath has come, and who can stand?’”**



**Jesus said to believers in the last days, “When you see these things BEGIN TO TAKE PLACE, stand up and lift up your heads for your redemption is drawing near.”**

**Matthew 24:13 says – “But he who stands firm TO THE END will be saved.”**

**Some scholars concluded that the first 7 trumpets are the first 3 ½ years of the tribulation and the 7 bowls are the last 3 ½ years of the Tribulation and that Christians will not be here to experience ANY TRIBULATION AT ALL because God would not destroy His own children in His Wrath which is reserved for the devil’s world and his children. It makes sense that only the devil and his armies would be wiped out alone, however, why would Revelation 20 say the armies of the devil’s world will surround the camp of God’s Holy People if God’s Holy People had already vanished into Heaven?**

**Why do the locusts hurt only “those who don’t have the SEAL OF GOD in their foreheads?” Why does Jesus give a blessing AFTER the 6<sup>th</sup> bowl?**

**I am convinced that the Rapture will happen not long after the 6<sup>th</sup> bowl of God's Judgment as the Scriptural evidence proves.**

**The pre-tribulation rapture theory is explained away that BELIEVERS IN JESUS ONLY had vanished BEFORE the six trumpets and six bowls and that during the final 7 years of life on earth, there will be people who come to believe in Jesus who will go through the great tribulation. "DON'T WORRY ABOUT IT! YOU WILL NEVER GO THROUGH IT!" That has been and is being taught! It makes me think of the goat god leading all the children away from the city with his magical flute.**

**This spin on words sounds pretty logical, but if you look closely at such statements, it is only a series of men's interpretations based upon a certain logic that reads in between the lines of what the Bible actually says. IF YOU ARE CONFUSED it is because you have been fooled by a false interpretation of the facts by some very intelligent men who have all sold themselves to certain logical compromises, just to be submissively sentimental and not rock the boat. Keep asking yourselves:**

**What if THEY are wrong? Should we care if they are right or wrong? Absolutely! We don't want to have any soul turn away from the faith on account of false and primitive theological interpretation. We don't want to incorrectly assume that just because the whole world at one time believed the world was flat means that it must be true. Only a few men set out to prove the world was round and ONLY A FEW MEN out of countless nations who believed the world was flat were PROVEN right. It's the same paradigm with Bible prophecy. It is not men like Tim LaHaye who have a FLAT EARTH interpretation of the world. It is the few men who have not been mass marketed who will be proven correct.**

**If anyone thinks for themselves apart from MAINSTREAM BRAINWASHING, they will come up with a different kind of logic about the Pre-Tribulation Rapture scenario.**

**Whoever lives and believes in Jesus will truthfully never die because when we are slain for Jesus and His Words, we will immediately go to Heaven in the BLINK OF AN EYE. This is the hope of all believers, however, there will be somewhat of a persecution that**

**will break out against Israel and Christians that will slaughter many in the last days of life on earth.**

**IT IS NOT UNTIL THE 7<sup>TH</sup> TRUMPET THAT THE DEAD ARE RAISED IMPERISHABLE and are changed. This does not exclude the Millennial Reign of Christ in Heaven, where countless throngs of Believers had been Resurrected to rule with Jesus during the FIRST RESURRECTION (explained in Chapter 2). In fact, the 7<sup>th</sup> trumpet DOES NOT HAVE TO translate to another Resurrection or a rapture but could simply just translate to the saints who ruled with Jesus during the Millennium, before Satan was released from prison. Once again, the 7<sup>th</sup> trumpet saints with loud voices in Heaven could very well be the FIRST RESURRECTION saints of Revelation 20 who had ruled with Jesus in Heaven. They could also be the martyrs of the 5<sup>th</sup> Seal saints as well.**

**So what we are looking at is all THE DEAD IN CHRIST who participated in the Millennial Reign of Christ in Heaven prior to the Tribulation of the 6 trumpets.**

**Since THE BEAST has seven kings & seven hills and includes an 8<sup>th</sup> king who belongs to the seven and the beast has ten**

**horns/kingdoms who ruled with the beast, then we must assume that the 7 heads are seven kings who had been given authority by Satan to rule over the earth throughout history. The saints would have historically been martyred throughout history, from beheadings, to the various forms of death that were administered to God's Children throughout the centuries. Those who participate in the FIRST RESURRECTION of Revelation 20 'HAD NOT worshiped the beast or his image and had not received his mark IN their foreheads or IN their hands.'**

**In Revelation 17, the beast once was, now is not, and yet will come. So historically, Christians refused Emperor worship and worshiping the Roman Emperors as 'god.' Therefore, these saints would have been slain by the beast who once was, which would have included the seven heads or seven kings. They could also include the saints of the first 3 ½ years of the tribulation trumpets who refuse to worship the beast who yet will come in the future. So historically and futuristically, the DEAD IN CHRIST WOULD RISE FIRST and the 7<sup>th</sup> trumpet would include all the martyrs who had died under the 8 heads or 8 kings of the beast. The beast is SATAN'S SON, so these 8 kings**

**were Satan's sons throughout history and the last son of Satan to rule the world would also persecute the last days martyrs.**

**These saints of the 7<sup>th</sup> Trumpet are now in Heaven, spared from the terrors of the 7 bowls of God's Wrath on the Earth in the last days. But Revelation 16:15 gives that hint that there will still be believers on earth during the 6 bowls of God's Wrath.**

**It is my conviction that between the 6<sup>th</sup> bowl and the 7<sup>th</sup> bowl, the Rapture of Jesus Christ's Second Coming will occur, but like other scholars, I am reading in between the lines.**

**It is the 7<sup>th</sup> Trumpet in Revelation 11 that we hear their voices giving thanks to God Almighty and announcing that it is time for judging the world and its inhabitants. If "IT IS TIME TO JUDGE THE WORLD AND ITS INHABITANTS," then the Millennium has ended, the devil and the earth has been destroyed, and Judgment Day is at hand.**

**If it's time to judge the dead, then Revelation 20:11-15 is at hand.**

**I find evidence that the 7<sup>th</sup> Trumpet is a "FIRST RESURRECTION" trumpet, part of the FIRST RESURRECTION OF THE MILLENNIUM, possibly sounding in the middle of the Tribulation, after a third of the**

**earth, sun, moon, & stars have been struck and a third of mankind has been killed.**

**Perhaps it is true that the 7<sup>th</sup> Trumpet voices did not go through the first six trumpets and were merely resurrected in the blink of an eye, spared the judgments that fell upon earth during those first six trumpets.**

**In this case the Millennium would have to have started in the Middle of the Tribulation after the first six trumpets and end with the last of the seven bowls of God's Wrath. Therefore, perhaps THE DAY OF THE LORD would include the 7 bowls of God's Judgment and the last 3 ½ years on earth could last 1,000 years in Heaven if time were to work differently in Heaven than it does on earth?**

**We could condense the whole Millennium into the DAY OF THE LORD, defined as 3 ½ years of the 7 bowls of God's Wrath upon the Earth. Or, this ONE 7<sup>th</sup> TRUMPET could be ONE DAY, lasting 1,000 years in Heaven, but only 24 hours on Earth?**

**When we think of a day, we naturally think in terms of 24 hours.**

**Could God wrap up everything within 24 hours?**

**Assuming that the SECOND COMING happens between the 6<sup>th</sup> bowl and the 7<sup>th</sup> bowl, the Lord may very well destroy the earth within 24 hours during the 7<sup>th</sup> bowl wrath.**

**After the Rapture of the Second Coming takes place when the elect are gathered from the four winds, as narrated in Matthew 24, then those who are left behind are the devil and his advocates who waged war against Jesus, Israel and the saints.**

**2 Thessalonians 1: 7-10 affirms this fact: “This will happen when the Lord Jesus is revealed from heaven in blazing fire with his powerful angels. He will punish those who don’t know God and don’t obey the Gospel of our Lord Jesus. They will be punished with everlasting destruction and shut out from the presence of the Lord and from the majesty of his power on the day he comes to be glorified in his holy people and to be marveled at among all those who have believed.”**

**So the 7<sup>th</sup> bowl would complete this destruction of the ungodly. It is during the 7<sup>th</sup> bowl that the Believers will be in Heaven AT THE LAST TRUMPET witnessing the end of the first heaven and the first**



**earth which pass away and have no room before God's White Throne Judgment Seat.**

**These loud voices in heaven giving thanks to God will see God's Judgment poured out upon the Earth in the form of 7 bowls of God's Wrath. In view of this evidence, the PRE-TRIB view does not make any sense. What makes more sense is that the 7<sup>th</sup> Trumpet announces "THE FIRST RESURRECTION" of 1 Corinthians 15.**

#### **THE DEAD IN CHRIST RISE FIRST AT THE TRUMPET CALL OF GOD**

**1 Thessalonians 4:16 says – "For the Lord Himself will come down from heaven, with a LOUD COMMAND, with the voice of the archangel and with THE TRUMPET CALL OF GOD, and THE DEAD in Christ rise first...."**

**NOTICE THE TERM, "DEAD IN CHRIST" are FIRST to RISE into heaven. AFTER THE DEAD IN CHRIST ARE RAISED FIRST, "WE WHO ARE STILL ALIVE UPON THE EARTH, and are LEFT (BEHIND) WILL BE CAUGHT UP (RAPTURED) together with them in the clouds to MEET THE LORD IN THE AIR."**

**Do these verses say that millions of Christians will vanish from the earth first BEFORE the tribulation? No.**

**Does the Bible say that BEFORE the sun, moon, and stars are afflicted that Jesus is going to take us away so that millions will vanish from the earth and that this will mark the beginning of the tribulation? Revelation 16:15 destroys this theory that we will not be around during the first 6 bowls.**

**No. The Pre-Trib Rapture view is merely a theatrical spin on words with no signs of Scriptural evidence to support these claims.**

**The Bible says that when the Lord Himself comes down from Heaven, THE DEAD have been RAISED FIRST. It does not say that LIVING BELIEVERS WILL VANISH FROM EARTH first.**

**This verse in 1 Thessalonians 4:16 seems to herald the Second Coming of Christ as the One and Only Rapture. Two raptures are not seen, only one.**

**ELECT ARE RAPTURED WITH A LOUD TRUMPET CALL “AT THAT TIME”**

**Matthew 24:30-31 SAYS – “AT THAT TIME (the time of the signs in the sun, moon, & stars highlighted [Luke 21] in the first six trumpets), the Sign of the Son of Man will appear in the sky and all the nations of the earth will mourn. They will see the Son of Man coming on the clouds of the sky, with power and great glory. And he will send his angels with a LOUD TRUMPET CALL, and they will gather his elect from the four winds, from one end of the heavens to the other.”**

**NOTICE: LOUD TRUMPET CALL. In Revelation 11 and 1 Corinthians 15, the 7<sup>th</sup> LAST TRUMPET announces the fact that the DEAD have been raised and are giving glory to God. “AFTER THAT, WE WHO ARE STILL ALIVE AND ARE LEFT WILL BE CAUGHT UP TOGETHER WITH THEM IN THE CLOUDS TO MEET THE LORD IN THE AIR.”**

**Still ALIVE? Where? On Earth! Saints are resurrected in Heaven, while saints are STILL ALIVE upon the earth. The martyrs who were resurrected in the 5<sup>th</sup> Seal are told to “wait a little longer until the**

**number of their fellow servants and brothers who were to be killed as they had been is completed.”**

**After the saints of the first resurrection of the millennium, the 5<sup>th</sup> seal, & the 7<sup>th</sup> trumpet are giving glory to the Lord, Jesus returns on the clouds of Heaven to RAPTURE his ELECT from the four winds.**

**Most theological circles teach that there will be two separate raptures, and not just one. They teach that there will be a first rapture BEFORE the tribulation (or in the middle) and a second rapture AFTER the tribulation at Christ’s Second Coming. I did not find any Scriptural evidence that bluntly states these ideals with any substantial Biblical fact.**

## **TWO RAPTURES OR JUST ONE RAPTURE?**

**We have to learn humility in theology realizing scholars from history can make huge mistakes in interpretations of prophecy. And when we attempt to take on interpreting prophecy we are destined to make mistakes too.**

**What Jesus does is break up the prophecy puzzle into thousands of different pieces and thousands of different believers will hold a piece of the puzzle in their hearts and pretty soon, God is connecting the pieces together to form a picture for all believers everywhere.**

**The words of the Bible themselves will remain unchanged, but our points of view on interpretation of prophecy can greatly change with time and evidence.**

**Clearly the Bible does appear to discuss two separate raptures, according to the way it is intelligently presented by the PRE-TRIB THEORY, which offers a play on words to suit the imaginative movies and books produced, but the Biblical evidence I found was that Jesus clearly suggested there will be THREE TYPES OF RAPTURES, defined as:**

# **1. RAPTURE INTO HEAVEN THROUGH DEATH/RESURRECTION (The Millennium, the 5<sup>th</sup> Seal, the 7<sup>th</sup> Trumpet)**

## **2. RAPTURE INTO HEAVEN AT THE SEVENTH TRUMPET**

**RESURRECTION (Mid-trib for the two witnesses, either literally two men or the two men are figurative of two classes of believers, perhaps Jews & Christians giving testimony in Jerusalem)**

## **3. RAPTURE INTO HEAVEN FROM EARTH AT THE SECOND COMING**

**What do I mean by RAPTURE through DEATH/RESURRECTION?**

**There will be a RAPTURE through Death & Resurrection, meaning, Luke 17:37 - “Wherever there is a dead body, there the vultures will gather.” Two people will be in one bed, one will die and the other will be LEFT BEHIND.**

**If Jesus calls our names in an immediate Resurrection to Heaven, that will be one kind of rapture. The body will VANISH from its place of authority on earth and decay in the grave, while the soul is immediately taken up into Heaven to live with Jesus Who now sits enthroned forever in the Center of God’s Throne (Revelation 5).**

**This is what I interpret as THE MILLENNIUM, when saints are individually RESURRECTED into Heaven upon the moment of death to**

**REIGN WITH CHRIST IN HEAVEN until the devil is unleashed upon the Earth for the Revelation 20 deception that surrounds Israeli Jerusalem on Earth described as the Camp of God's Holy People.**

**Which martyred saints am I referring to?**

**Historically there have been many beasts. The beast of the future, the anti-Christ, once was, now is not, yet will come (Revelation 17). It appears within the context of the 5<sup>th</sup> Seal and the Millennium that people died for not accepting the beast and the false prophet. Well, the beast has 7 kings and ten horns that receive authority along with the 8<sup>th</sup> king who belongs to all the other kings. ONE BEAST, 7 kings, plus an 8<sup>th</sup> king.**

**In the chart I included in Chapter 3 of this book from JESUS FREAKS: REVOLUTIONARIES, I showed many of the martyrs who died historically, who right now are ruling with Jesus in Heaven.**

**Those who participate in the FIRST RESURRECTION from the moment Jesus ascended to Heaven until the devil is released, will be delivered from the Tribulation of the 7 bowls since they will be reigning with Christ in Heaven.**

**Also, in the middle of the Tribulation, if the 7<sup>th</sup> Trumpet is sounded in the Middle of the Tribulation, the saints who died during the first 3 ½ years of the beast's reign and were persecuted and slaughtered by the beast, might also be RAISED FIRST in the FIRSTFRUITS Resurrection and Rule With Christ during the last 3 ½ years of the Tribulation. 7<sup>th</sup> trumpet of Revelation 11 does not say the loud voices from heaven were raptured or resurrected. For all we know, they could have already been in Heaven before the 7<sup>th</sup> Trumpet had sounded. What's interesting about the 7<sup>th</sup> trumpet is that immediately after the loud voice and the 24 elders praise the Lord, Revelation 12, 13, & 14 go over a period of great persecution from the dragon, the beast, and the false prophet.**

**Just before the 7 last plagues of Revelation 16 are poured out John says in Revelation 15:1-5 "I saw seven angels with seven last plagues—last, because with them God's wrath is completed. And I saw what looked like a sea of glass mixed with fire, and standing beside the sea, THOSE WHO HAD BEEN VICTORIOUS OVER THE BEAST AND HIS IMAGE AND OVER THE NUMBER OF HIS NAME. They held harps given to them by God and sang the song of Moses."**



**We learned in Revelation 12:17 – “The dragon was enraged at the woman and went off to make war against the rest of her offspring—those who obey God’s Commandments and hold to the testimony of Jesus.” These saints are waged war against and martyred.**

**The dragon then gives his authority to the beast out of the sea. Revelation 13:10 says – “If anyone is to go into captivity, into captivity he will go. If anyone is to be killed with the sword, with the sword he will be killed. This calls for PATIENT ENDURANCE and faithfulness on the part of the saints.”**

**Another beast comes out of the earth and exercises all the authority of the first beast whose fatal wound had been healed. Revelation 13:15 says – “He was given power to give breath to the image of the first beast, so that it could speak and cause all who refused to worship the image TO BE KILLED.”**

**Revelation 14:9-13 says – “If ANYONE worships the beast and his image and receives his mark in the forehead or in the hand, he, too, will drink of the wine of God’s fury...This calls for PATIENT ENDURANCE on the part of the saints who obey God’s commandments**

**and remain faithful to Jesus. Then I heard a voice from heaven say, 'Write: BLESSED ARE THE DEAD WHO DIE IN THE LORD FROM NOW ON.' The Holy Spirit says, "Yes, they will rest from their labor, for their deeds will follow them."**

**In the verses between the 6 seals and the 6 trumpets we find 144,000 Jewish people given THE SEAL OF GOD in their foreheads. We also see a GREAT MULTITUDE THAT NO ONE COULD COUNT who had COME OUT OF THE GREAT TRIBULATION (Revelation 7:1-17).**

**Revelation has several mirrors and a whole lot of smoke, so for us to divide Revelation into an order of sequence with chapters and verses may not have any chronological benefit as we remember how Revelation was divided up by scholars.**

**With this in mind, we read about the 5<sup>th</sup> Seal martyrs in Revelation 6:9-11 "WHO HAD BEEN SLAIN because of the word of God and the testimony they maintained."**

**Revelation 20:4-6 sees 'THE SOULS OF THOSE WHO HAD BEEN BEHEADED BECAUSE OF THEIR TESTIMONY FOR JESUS AND BECAUSE OF THE WORD OF GOD. They had not worshiped the beast**

**or his image and had not received his mark in their foreheads or in their hands.”**

**Revelation 11:15 says – “The seventh angel sounded his trumpet and there were loud voices in heaven, which said: ‘The kingdom of the world has become the kingdom of our Lord and of his Messiah, and he will reign forever and ever.”**

**And so we read that the saints who were slain by both the beast of history and the futuristic beast are raised from the dead. Do we find any Scriptural evidence that ANY MARTYR OR SAINT WAS SPARED FROM PERSECUTION in any section of Revelation? NO! We actually discovered that every saint WENT THROUGH THE GREAT TRIBULATION!**

**I realize that I must repeat the same points over and over again, but I want you to visually notice patterns and through these patterns to discover the Biblical Truth about the TRIBULATION and the RAPTURE.**

**Could THE GREAT TRIBULATION saints have included the list of  
70 million martyrs highlighted in JESUS FREAKS: REVOLUTIONARIES?**

**Absolutely.**

**Let's go over that chart again to discover clues as to who has  
LOUD VOICES in heaven at the 7<sup>th</sup> Trumpet so far:**

**JESUS FREAKS II: REVOLUTIONARIES**

<b>PERIOD/EVENT PLACE</b>	<b>RULER</b>	<b>DATE</b>	<b>ESTIMATED # OF MARTYRS</b>
<b>JESUS</b>	<b>Pilate</b>	<b>33 A.D.</b>	<b>1</b>
<b>FIRST Roman Persecution</b>	<b>Nero</b>	<b>64-68</b>	<b>5,000</b>
<b>First Missionaries To Armenia</b>	<b>Astyages</b>	<b>66-97</b>	<b>1,000</b>
<b>First Jewish Rebellion</b>		<b>70</b>	<b>10,000</b>
<b>Second Roman Persecution</b>	<b>Domitian</b>	<b>91-96</b>	<b>2,000</b>

**Third Roman**

<b>Persecution</b>	<b>Trajan</b>	<b>104-117</b>	<b>1,500</b>
--------------------	---------------	----------------	--------------

**Persian**

<b>Persecution</b>	<b>Artaxerxes</b>	<b>110-125</b>	<b>14,000</b>
--------------------	-------------------	----------------	---------------

<b>Jewish Revolt</b>	<b>Hadrian</b>	<b>117-138</b>	<b>10,000</b>
----------------------	----------------	----------------	---------------

**Second Jewish**

<b>Rebellion</b>	<b>Bar-Kochba/ Hadrian</b>	<b>132-135</b>	<b>30,000</b>
------------------	--------------------------------	----------------	---------------

**Fourth Roman**

<b>Persecution</b>	<b>Lucius Verus / Marcus Antoninus</b>	<b>161-180</b>	<b>4,000</b>
--------------------	--	----------------	--------------

**Fifth Roman**

<b>Persecution</b>	<b>Septimus Severus</b>	<b>193-211</b>	<b>40,000</b>
--------------------	-------------------------	----------------	---------------

**Sixth Roman**

<b>Persecution</b>	<b>Maximus</b>	<b>235-238</b>	<b>3,000</b>
--------------------	----------------	----------------	--------------

**Shapur I's**

<b>Persecution</b>	<b>Shapur I</b>	<b>241-272</b>	<b>10,000</b>
--------------------	-----------------	----------------	---------------

**Seventh Roman**

<b>Persecution</b>	<b>Decius</b>	<b>249-251</b>	<b>120,000</b>
--------------------	---------------	----------------	----------------

<b>PERIOD/EVENT PLACE</b>	<b>RULER</b>	<b>DATE</b>	<b>ESTIMATED # OF MARTYRS</b>
-------------------------------	--------------	-------------	-----------------------------------

### **Eighth Roman**

<b>Persecution</b>	<b>Valerian</b>	<b>253-260</b>	<b>150,000</b>
--------------------	-----------------	----------------	----------------

### **Ninth Roman**

<b>Persecution</b>	<b>Aurelian</b>	<b>270-275</b>	<b>5,000</b>
--------------------	-----------------	----------------	--------------

### **First Persian**

<b>Persecution</b>	<b>Varahran II</b>	<b>276-293</b>	<b>4,000</b>
--------------------	--------------------	----------------	--------------

### **Coptic Era of**

<b>Martyrs</b>	<b>Roman Officials</b>		
	<b>Under Diocletian</b>	<b>284-311</b>	<b>450,000</b>

<b>Martyrs of Agaunum</b>	<b>Maximian</b>	<b>287</b>	<b>5,000</b>
---------------------------	-----------------	------------	--------------

### **Armenian**

<b>Persecution</b>	<b>Tiridates III</b>	<b>287-301</b>	<b>20,000</b>
--------------------	----------------------	----------------	---------------

### **Tenth Roman**

<b>Persecution</b>	<b>Diocletian</b>	<b>284-305</b>	
--------------------	-------------------	----------------	--

	<b>Marcus Aerelius</b>		
	<b>Maximian</b>	<b>286-305</b>	
	<b>Gaius Galerius</b>	<b>293-305</b>	
	<b>Caesar Augustus</b>	<b>305-311</b>	
<b>Licinius's Persecution</b>	<b>Licinius</b>	<b>316-324</b>	<b>2,000</b>
<b>Persecution of the</b>			
<b>Donatists</b>	<b>Constantine</b>	<b>317-337</b>	<b>10,000</b>
<b>Great (Second)</b>			
<b>Persian Persecution</b>	<b>Shapur II</b>	<b>333-337</b>	<b>120,000</b>
<b>Visagoth War with Rome</b>	<b>Theodosius I</b>	<b>379-395</b>	
	<b>Honorius</b>	<b>395-423</b>	
		<b>390-411</b>	<b>10,000</b>
<b>Third Persian</b>			
<b>Persecution</b>	<b>Bahram V</b>	<b>420-424</b>	<b>90,000</b>
<b>Attila the Hun</b>	<b>Attila The Hun</b>	<b>433-453</b>	<b>200,000</b>
<b>PERIOD/EVENT</b>	<b>RULER</b>	<b>DATE</b>	<b>ESTIMATED #</b>
<b>PLACE</b>			<b>OF MARTYRS</b>

Under Arian Vandals	Gaeseric	428-477	
	Huneric	477-484	10,000

Anglo-Saxon Invasion	Anglo-Saxons	442-472	20,000
----------------------	--------------	---------	--------

#### Fourth Persian

Persecution	Yazdegerd II	448-454	178,000
-------------	--------------	---------	---------

#### Ethiopian

Persecution	Local Rulers	450	11,000
-------------	--------------	-----	--------

#### TOTAL NUMBER OF MARTYRS

<u>During Roman Empire</u>	<u>33-500 A.D.</u>	<u>2,101,751</u>
----------------------------	--------------------	------------------

Islam founded	Muhammad	610-632 A.D.
---------------	----------	--------------

Persian Invasion	Khusro II	615	90,000
------------------	-----------	-----	--------

Islamic Persecution	Arab Factions	700-797	80,000
---------------------	---------------	---------	--------

Viking Raids	Vikings	807	20,000
--------------	---------	-----	--------

#### Byzantine Persecution of

Paulicians	Michael III	842-867
------------	-------------	---------



	<b>Theophilus II</b>	<b>867</b>	
	<b>Basil I</b>	<b>867-886</b>	
		<b>842-875</b>	<b>100,000</b>
<b>Moorish Persecutions</b>	<b>Abderamene II</b>	<b>850-859</b>	<b>50</b>
<b><u>THE DARK AGES TOTAL</u></b>		<b><u>500-950</u></b>	<b><u>792,810</u></b>

<b>Copts Persecuted</b>	<b>Caliph al-Hakim</b>	<b>996-1021</b>	<b>50,000</b>
<b>Turkish Persecution</b>	<b>Seljuk Turks</b>	<b>1064</b>	<b>100,000</b>
<b>English persecution</b>	<b>Henry II</b>	<b>1166</b>	<b>2,000</b>

#### **Muslim Recapture**

<b>Of Holy Lands</b>	<b>Saladin</b>	<b>1173</b>	<b>130,000</b>
----------------------	----------------	-------------	----------------

<b>Raids of Genghis Khan</b>	<b>Genghis Khan</b>	<b>1214</b>	<b>5,000,000</b>
------------------------------	---------------------	-------------	------------------

<b>PERIOD/EVENT</b>	<b>RULER</b>	<b>DATE</b>	<b>ESTIMATED #</b>
<b><u>PLACE</u></b>			<b><u>OF MARTYRS</u></b>

<b>Raids of Genghis Khan</b>	<b>Genghis Khan</b>	<b>1220</b>	<b>150,000</b>
------------------------------	---------------------	-------------	----------------

<b>Mongol Persecutions</b>	<b>Mongols</b>	<b>1221</b>	<b>600,000</b>
----------------------------	----------------	-------------	----------------

<b>INQUISTION</b>	<b>Gregory IX</b>	<b>1231-1531</b>	<b>10,000</b>
<b>Mongol Invasion of Russia</b>	<b>Ogodei Khan</b>	<b>1237-1241</b>	<b>313,000</b>
<b>Mongol Persecutions</b>	<b>Hulagu Khan</b>	<b>1258</b>	<b>1,100,000</b>
<b>Mameluke Persecutions</b>	<b>Mamelukes</b>	<b>1301-1400</b>	<b>80,000</b>
<b>Muslim Persecutions</b>	<b>Kurds &amp; Arabs</b>	<b>1310</b>	<b>150,000</b>
<b>Mongol Persecutions</b>	<b>Mongols</b>	<b>1339</b>	<b>100,000</b>
<b>The Black Death (Bubonic Plague hits Europe)</b>		<b>1348-1349</b>	<b>1/3 of Europe</b>
<b>Resurgence &amp; Advancement</b>		<b>950-1350</b>	<b>8,919,792</b>
<b>Persecutions under Tamerlane</b>	<b>Tamerlane</b>	<b>1358-1400</b>	<b>5,079,000</b>
<b>Dissidents Executed</b>	<b>Boniface IX</b>	<b>1389-1404</b>	

	Innocent VII	1406-1406	
	Gregory XII	1393-1416	5,000
Lollard Persecutions	Henry IV	1399-1413	
	Henry V	1413-1422	100
Witch Trials	Various Leaders	1400-1700	500,000
(Many tried were innocent Church goers)			
<b><u>PRE-REFORMATION TOTALS</u></b>			<b>5,583,700</b>

<b>PERIOD/EVENT PLACE</b>	<b>RULER</b>	<b>DATE</b>	<b>ESTIMATED # OF MARTYRS</b>
-------------------------------	--------------	-------------	-----------------------------------

---

<b>American Persecutions</b>	<b>Native American Tribes</b>	<b>1519-1536</b>	<b>1,000,000</b>
------------------------------	-----------------------------------	------------------	------------------

**\*Nearly 6 million American Indians had been baptized during this period**

<b>Turkish Invasion of Hungary</b>	<b>Suleiman I</b>	<b>1520-1556</b>	<b>50,000</b>
--	-------------------	------------------	---------------

<b>Muslim Persecutions</b>	<b>Ahmed Gran</b>	<b>1527-1542</b>	<b>100,000</b>
----------------------------	-------------------	------------------	----------------

<b>State Persecutions</b>	<b>Henry VIII</b>	<b>1528-1547</b>	<b>300</b>
---------------------------	-------------------	------------------	------------

<b>Missionaries killed</b>	<b>Native Amer. Tribes</b>	<b>1542-1597</b>	<b>350</b>
----------------------------	----------------------------	------------------	------------

<b>Waldenses Massacred In Vaudois</b>	<b>Francis I</b>	<b>1545</b>	<b>3,000</b>
---	------------------	-------------	--------------

<b>Dissidents Executed</b>	<b>Henry II</b>	<b>1547-1559</b>	<b>10,000</b>
----------------------------	-----------------	------------------	---------------

<b>Missionaries killed</b>	<b>Native Amer. Tribes</b>	<b>1549-1597</b>	<b>100</b>
----------------------------	----------------------------	------------------	------------

<b>Reign of Mary I</b>	<b>Mary I</b>	<b>1553-1558</b>	<b>300</b>
------------------------	---------------	------------------	------------

Spanish Inquisition	Charles V	1558	300
Spanish			
Conquistadors	Philip II	1556-1598	2,200,000
Huguenots Persecuted	Charles IX	1562	3,000
Huguenot Colony	Philip III	1562	200
Dissidents Executed	Elizabeth I	1565	400
St. Bartholemew's			
Day Massacre	Charles IX	1572	72,000
The Kirishtan Holocaust	Toyotomi Hideyoshi		
	Taikosama	1596-1637	175,120
30 Years' War		1618-1648	15,000
Waldenses Massacred in			
Tirano, Lombardy	Philip II	1620	1,000
PERIOD/EVENT	RULER	DATE	ESTIMATED #
PLACE			OF MARTYRS
Missionaries Killed	Tibet	1624-1630	400

<b>English Civil War</b>	<b>Oliver Cromwell</b>	<b>1640-1660</b>	<b>700</b>
<b>Massacre of 1641</b>	<b>Family of O'Neals</b>	<b>1641</b>	<b>7,000</b>
<b>The Kirishtan Holocaust</b>	<b>Tokugawa</b>		
	<b>Shogunate</b>	<b>1649-1697</b>	<b>61,000</b>
<b>Waldenses Persecuted</b>			
<b>In Piedmont</b>	<b>Philip IV</b>	<b>1655</b>	<b>2,000</b>
<b>Covenanters and</b>			
<b>Quakers Persecuted</b>	<b>Charles II</b>	<b>1660-1688</b>	<b>3,500</b>
<b>Edict of Nantes Revoked</b>	<b>Louis XIV</b>		
	<b>Innocent XI</b>	<b>1685-1686</b>	<b>13,000</b>
<b>Dissidents Executed</b>	<b>Louis XIV</b>	<b>1702</b>	<b>15,000</b>
<b>English Governor Destroys</b>			
<b>Capuchin Missions</b>	<b>Anne</b>	<b>1704</b>	<b>400</b>
<b><u>Reformation Totals</u></b>		<b><u>1500-1750</u></b>	<b><u>4,513,701</u></b>
<b>Ottoman Persecutions</b>	<b>Osman III</b>	<b>1754-1757</b>	

	Mustafa III	1757-1774	
	Abd al-Hamid I	1774-1789	
	Salim III	1789-1807	
		1754-1796	30,000
French Revolution	France	1789-1799	5,000
First Major Slave Rebellion	John Adams	1797-1801	300
Missions and Revival		1750-1815	153,243
Slave Rebellion	James Monroe	1817-1825	350
Slave Rebellion	Andrew Jackson	1829-1837	800
<b>PERIOD/EVENT</b>	<b>RULER</b>	<b>DATE</b>	<b>ESTIMATED #</b>
<b><u>PLACE</u></b>			<b><u>OF MARTYRS</u></b>
Great Heavenly Kingdom			
Members Persecuted	Hung Hsiu-Ch'uan	1853-1864	1,000,000
Final Great Persecution	Taewon'gun	1866	10,000

<b>Commune of Paris Uprising</b>		<b>1871</b>	<b>300</b>
<b>Suppression of Bulgars, Armenians, Manorites &amp; Others</b>	<b>Abdul-Aziz</b>	<b>1861-1876</b>	
	<b>Murad V</b>	<b>1876</b>	
	<b>Abdul-Hamid II</b>	<b>1876-1909</b>	
	<b>Mehmed V</b>	<b>1909-1918</b>	<b>1,185,000</b>
<b>Persecution of</b>			
<b>Salvation Army Members</b>	<b>Skeleton Army</b>	<b>1880-1885</b>	<b>50</b>
<b>Racial Violence</b>	<b>White Racist Grps.</b>	<b>1882-1922</b>	<b>2,300</b>
<b>North China Boxer Revolt</b>	<b>Boxers</b>	<b>1900-1901</b>	<b>49,000</b>
<b>National Revolution</b>		<b>1910-1929</b>	<b>70,000</b>
<b>The Greatest Century of Christian</b>			
<b>Expansion Missions</b>		<b>1815-1914</b>	<b>2,275,433</b>
<b>World War I</b>		<b>1914-1919</b>	<b>100,000</b>
<b>Bolshevik (Early Soviet</b>			
<b>Communists Persecutions)</b>	<b>Russian Revolution</b>	<b>1917</b>	
	<b>Vladimir Lennin</b>	<b>1922-1924</b>	
	<b>Joseph Stalin</b>	<b>1922-1953</b>	



	<b>Nikita Khurshchev</b>	<b>1953-1964</b>	
	<b>Leonid Brezhnev</b>	<b>1964-1982</b>	
		<b>1917-1981</b>	<b>16,060,000</b>
<b>Tulsa Race Riot</b>	<b>White Racists</b>	<b>1921</b>	<b>200</b>
<b>Roman Catholic Church</b>	<b>Joseph Stalin</b>	<b>1925-1950</b>	<b>1,200,000</b>
<b>Soviet Persecution in</b>			
<b>The Ukraine</b>	<b>Joseph Stalin</b>	<b>1927</b>	<b>500,000</b>

<b>PERIOD/EVENT PLACE</b>	<b>RULER</b>	<b>DATE</b>	<b>ESTIMATED # OF MARTYRS</b>
-------------------------------	--------------	-------------	-----------------------------------

---

Chinese Civil Wars	Bandits & Guerillas	1927-1943	200,000
--------------------	---------------------	-----------	---------

#### **Autocephalous Church**

Extermination	Joseph Stalin	1927-1943	120,000
---------------	---------------	-----------	---------

Lutherans Persecuted	Joseph Stalin	1927-1953	600,000
----------------------	---------------	-----------	---------

#### **Orthodox Persecuted;**

Terror-Famine	Joseph Stalin	1922-1953	3,000,000
---------------	---------------	-----------	-----------

#### **DURING THE PERIODS OF WORLD WAR**

AD THEIR AFTERMATH/THE RISE OF COMMUNISM			31,724,520
--	--	--	------------

Communist Vietnam	Vietnamese Leaders	1950-1953	28,000
-------------------	--------------------	-----------	--------

Korean War	Kim II Sung	1950-1960	800,000
------------	-------------	-----------	---------

Liquidation of Churches	Zhou Enlai	1950-1980	500,000
-------------------------	------------	-----------	---------

#### **“Churches of Silence”**

Liquidated in 8 countries	Communists	1950-1980	900,000
---------------------------	------------	-----------	---------

**Muslim & Hindu**

<b>Retaliation</b>	<b>India</b>	<b>1950-1999</b>	<b>400,000</b>
--------------------	--------------	------------------	----------------

**More Soviet**

<b>Persecutions</b>	<b>Joseph Stalin</b>	<b>1922-1953</b>	
	<b>Nikita Khrushchev</b>	<b>1953-1964</b>	
	<b>Leonid Brezhnev</b>	<b>1964-1982</b>	<b>5,000,000</b>

**Chinese Independent**

<b>Churches</b>	<b>Zhou Enlai</b>	<b>1949-1976</b>	<b>74,000</b>
-----------------	-------------------	------------------	---------------

**Fidel Castro's**

<b>Communist Revolution</b>	<b>Fidel Castro</b>	<b>1959 – 2005</b>	<b>15,000</b>
-----------------------------	---------------------	--------------------	---------------

<b>Great Leap Forward</b>	<b>Zhou Enlai</b>	<b>1959-1962</b>	<b>300,000</b>
---------------------------	-------------------	------------------	----------------

<b>Civil Wars</b>	<b>Latin America</b>	<b>1960 – 2005</b>	<b>300,000</b>
-------------------	----------------------	--------------------	----------------

<b>Muslim Resurgence</b>	<b>Indonesia</b>	<b>1962-1990s</b>	<b>70,000</b>
--------------------------	------------------	-------------------	---------------

<b>PERIOD/EVENT</b>	<b>RULER</b>	<b>DATE</b>	<b>ESTIMATED #</b>
<b><u>PLACE</u></b>			<b><u>OF MARTYRS</u></b>

<b>Sudanese Civil War</b>	<b>Northern Arabs vs.</b>		
---------------------------	---------------------------	--	--

	<b>Black Africans</b>	<b>1963-2005</b>	<b>660,000</b>
<b>Great Proletarian</b>			
<b>Cultural Revolution</b>	<b>China</b>	<b>1966-1969</b>	<b>400,000</b>
<b>Biafra Civil War</b>	<b>Nigeria</b>	<b>1967-1970</b>	<b>200,000</b>
<b>Communist Persecutions</b>	<b>Cambodia</b>	<b>1970-1977</b>	<b>50,000</b>
<b>Unregistered Churches</b>			
<b>Targeted by KGB</b>	<b>Leonid Brezhnev</b>	<b>1970-1980s</b>	<b>60,000</b>
<b>Amin Persecutions</b>	<b>Uganda</b>	<b>1971-1979</b>	<b>200,000</b>
<b>Communist Persecution</b>	<b>Le Duan (Vietnam)</b>	<b>1975-1985</b>	<b>50,000</b>
<b>Lebanese Civil War</b>	<b>Lebanon</b>	<b>1975-1995</b>	<b>25,000</b>
<b>Communist Persecutions</b>	<b>Cambodia</b>	<b>1975-1979</b>	<b>42,000</b>
<b>UDT-Fretilin Civil War</b>	<b>East Timor</b>	<b>1975-2000</b>	<b>90,000</b>
<b>Indian Persecutions</b>	<b>Indira Gandhi</b>	<b>1980</b>	<b>240,000</b>
<b>Government Persecutions</b>	<b>Philippines</b>	<b>1985</b>	<b>40,000</b>

Hutu Massacre	Hutu Tribe	1993-1995	560,000
---------------	------------	-----------	---------

**CHRISTIANITY'S SURGE IN THIRD WORLD/**

<b>THE COLD WAR TOTALS</b>	<b>13,356,280</b>
----------------------------	-------------------

<b>TOTAL MARTYRS SINCE JESUS =</b>	<b>33-2000 A.D. 69,421,230</b>
------------------------------------	--------------------------------

**At the 5<sup>th</sup> Seal Resurrection, these 70 million martyrs ask the question, IN A LOUD VOICE (Revelation 6:10-11): “How long, Sovereign Lord, holy and true, until you judge the inhabitants of the earth and avenge our blood?” Then each of them was given a white robe, and they WERE TOLD TO WAIT A LITTLE LONGER, until the number of fellow servants and brothers WHO WERE TO BE KILLED AS THEY HAD BEEN was completed.”**

**Is the persecution over yet? No.**

**Islamic fundamentalists are still attacking Israel by committing acts of mass murder, homicide bombings, & death. In America, Christians are suffering persecution from liberal democrats who are seizing our courts of law and promoting homosexuality, abortion,**

**taking down the Ten Commandments and the Cross, and hating every Christian Republican that is taking office.**

**Around the world, especially in Sudan, Christians are still being hated and slaughtered by Islamic fundamentalism and the rise of terrorism has increased. There was life before September 11, 2001 and life after September 11, 2001 and somewhere between 2000 to 2005 we witnessed some global catastrophies besides blood shed and genocide against Christians and Jews. We witnessed a Tsunami in 2004 that wiped out about 300,000 Asians. We witnessed Hurricane Katrina wipe out Louisiana and Mississippi in America leaving thousands of Americans homeless. We witnessed a 7.6 earthquake on the Pakistan/India/Afghan borders killing at least 30,000. There was an earthquake in Iran in 2004 that killed at least 50,000 people.**

**Earthquakes, fires, hurricanes, volcanoes erupting, global warming, polar ice caps melting, the Ozone layer rapidly depleting, floods & tsunamis globally. From 2000 to 2005 the world witnessed some terrible catastrophies unlike we have ever known before.**

**Those who are slain for their faith will rest from their labor when Jesus Christ Resurrects them and we find a repeated theme throughout Scriptures that there will be more saints in the last days who suffer and die for rejecting the beast's global economic system.**

**What I would encourage all Christian Believers to prepare themselves for, is NOT A PRE-TRIBULATION RAPTURE, but I would encourage to look out for the signs in the skies BEFORE the Rapture of Jesus Christ's SECOND COMING.**

**We could be instantly raised from the dead into His Heavenly Courts to reign with him in heaven, joining Moses, Enoch, and Elijah who are already home with the Lord. My grandma died in 2004. I hope that she is in Heaven ruling with Jesus right now. She had been killed as a martyr by all my worthless relatives who chose to cling to every selfish penny in their bank accounts – refusing to help her during her time of great need. My grandmother and my mother received persecution, banishment, death, & exile from relatives who were unconcerned about her welfare and well-being and I know that she died a heroes death as she was more slain by negligence than she was slain by clogged arteries in her right leg. Despite my desire to see her**

**in Heaven immediately, knowing she deserved to participate in THE FIRST RESURRECTION of the martyred saints, that is something only Jesus could decide, so it is not my place to say for sure whether she was resurrected with the other martyrs.**

**If we do not participate in an immediate Resurrection, in the FIRST RESURRECTION of the Millennial Reign of Jesus in Heaven, then another possibility to consider is that we will participate in the MID-TRIBULATION RESURRECTION AT THE SEVENTH LAST TRUMPET, after the SAINTS ARE BEHEADED (Rev. 20:4-6) for rejecting the mark of the beast.**

**If the 7 trumpets are sounded at the same time the 7 bowls are poured out and the 7 bowls are a mirror of the 7 trumpets, then the 7<sup>th</sup> Trumpet would sound at the end of the Tribulation and therefore, saints would be resurrected FIRST at the end of the Tribulation, to join those who had already participated in the FIRST RESURRECTION of the Millennium, whereupon the SECOND COMING OF THE LORD gathers his elect from the four winds who are still alive on earth.**



**THE SEVENTH TRUMPET** would then be called **THE LAST DAY**. If the Seventh Trumpet is not sounded within the last 24 hours of life on earth, then it would be sounded before the seven last plagues of God's Judgment is poured out on the earth.

### **SEVENTH TRUMPET AT THE END OR MIDDLE OF THE TRIBULATION?**

When we approach Revelation, at the seventh trumpet, we are unclear as to whether the seventh trumpet of Revelation **IS THE LAST TRUMPET** or **A MID-TRIBULATION RESURRECTION IN THE HEAVENLY COURTS OF GOD'S CITY IN HEAVEN**.

For all we know, the **SEVENTH TRUMPET** could signal the end of the tribulation just as much as it could signal the middle. Both interpretations work within the proper context.

Revelation gives us every indication that the **SEVENTH TRUMPET** is either the **VERY LAST TRUMPET**, or the **TRUMPET** signaling the middle of the tribulation, before the 7 bowls are poured out, **UNLESS** the seven trumpets sound at the very same time the 7 bowls are

**poured out as the details mirror each other within the same time frame.**

**In other words, the first angel sounds his trumpet at the same time the first angel pours out his bowl. The second angel sounds his trumpet while the second angel pours out the second bowl. A Trumpet could sound at the same time a bowl is poured out. However, if a trumpet does not sound at the same time that a bowl is poured out, then we would have to conclude that the trumpets sound chronologically before the 7 bowls.**

**The one verse that cuts down this argument is found in Revelation 15:1 which says – “I saw in heaven another great and marvelous sign: seven angels with the SEVEN LAST PLAGUES – LAST, because with them God’s Wrath is completed.”**

**We reason that God’s Wrath was NOT COMPLETED with the 7 trumpets.**

**God’s Wrath was completed with the 6<sup>th</sup> Seal, so we can absolutely combine the 6 seals with either the 6 trumpets or the 6 bowls (or both).**

**It would make more sense that the 7 trumpets do not sound at the same time the seven bowls are poured out, because these SEVEN BOWLS are the SEVEN LAST PLAGUES of God's Wrath upon the Earth. With these plagues, God's Wrath is completed.**

**I don't know if you caught this or not, but there are no verses to suggest that these 7 bowls with the 7 last plagues will only last 3 ½ years.**

**There is also no evidence that the 7 trumpets will take 3 ½ years either, although Revelation 11 mentions that the two witnesses will prophesy in Jerusalem for 3 ½ years. It is assumed that the first six trumpets will sound during the time of the two witnesses, which is a credible argument that could prove the argument that the first 7 trumpets would herald the first 3 ½ years of the tribulation, as 1,260 days amounts to 3 ½ years in calendar terms.**

**However, the 7 bowls do not give a time frame. Could the 7 bowls all be poured out in a 24-hour period? Possibly. THE DAY OF THE LORD is to come quickly. THE LAST DAY will happen quickly.**

**So everything could possibly happen all in one day, even the Second Coming.**

**The 7<sup>th</sup> Last Trumpet of Revelation 11: 15-18 can possibly sound EITHER during the Middle of the Tribulation period or the End of the Tribulation period and both views make sense, given a logical approach with this interpretation. We are looking for a simple explanation for something that appears to be very complicated and end up with no answers, except answers based on logic.**

**Human logic and intellect have an ending, because we will never hear the seven angels sound their trumpets on Earth and we will never see Angels pouring out God's Wrath on the Earth. What we will witness is global destruction mirroring the Tsunami 2004 and Hurricane Katrina 2005.**

**We will see visible manifestations of God's Wrath upon the Earth, which will be explained by the news media as "NATURAL PHENOMENON" which is how the nations will be deceived.**

**Evolutionists, pagans, & atheists who say there is no god, will have the hard hearts of Pharaoh Ramses, and will mistake God's Wrath**

**for something SCIENTIFICALLY NATURAL. The consequences of these NATURAL DISASTERS from “MOTHER EARTH” will be globally devastating, and the Prophets of the Old Testament define these events as God’s visible wrath upon the visible world.**

**You will often hear the media saying, “Well, Mother Nature sure is furious today.” Nature worshippers will not interpret natural disasters quite the same way God will. However, during the time of the 7 bowls of God’s Wrath the whole world will recognize that the destruction happening to earth is God’s Wrath.**

**Revelation 16:11 –“They CURSED the GOD OF HEAVEN because of their pains and their sores, but they refused to repent of what they had done.”**

**The 6<sup>th</sup> Seal shows “the kings of the earth, the princes, the generals, the rich, the mighty, and every slave and free man hiding” and calling out to the rocks to fall on them and hide them from the great day of the Lamb’s wrath. The fact they call out to the mountains and rocks gives an evolutionist, atheistic, pagan worship of the elements, since they do not believe in God. Yet they will blame the**

**God of Heaven for the disasters that are coming, even though they don't believe in Him.**

**Remember that Revelation 1:7 says – “Look, he is coming with the clouds, and every eye will see him, EVEN THOSE WHO PIERCED HIM, and all the peoples of the earth will mourn because of him. So it shall be. Amen.”**

**I would also like to add that there is a possibility that the deeper you go into prophesy there is always a monkey wrench that fouls up our whole perspective on prophesy so that we are so confused and frustrated that we give up, throw up our hands with a simple, “I DON'T KNOW!” It's the way that God wanted it, so that none of us can earn a salary by giving a 100% perfect interpretation.**

**Perhaps God wanted to make fools of us all in our worldly intellectual wisdom. There is a huge black hole in every viewpoint, the deeper you study and eventually you arrive at some basic conclusions that sound right and look right. But the Truth will be very uncomfortable any way you choose to look at it. At this point, I would just delete the idea of a pre-tribulation rapture.**

## **THE RAPTURE OF THE ELECT AT THE SECOND COMING**

**Getting back on track here, if the first seven trumpets are sounded during the first 3 ½ years of the tribulation, this would mean that the seventh trumpet would sound in MID-TRIB.**

**That means we would have 3 ½ years more of the 7 bowls of God's Wrath being poured out upon the Earth as the cosmic signs of Matthew 24:29 and Luke 21:25-28 are fulfilled BEFORE THE RAPTURE OF THE SECOND COMING. The Rapture of "THE ELECT" at the SECOND COMING will happen as defined by Acts 2:20, "The sun will be turned to darkness and the moon to blood BEFORE the coming of the great and glorious day of the Lord."**

**These seven bowls of God's Wrath would be poured out, perhaps at the same time that the sixth seal is broken with the same types of details from these referenced Scriptures (Again turn to Matthew 24:29, Luke 21:25-28, Acts 2:20, Revelation 6:12-16, Revelation 16:17-21, Joel 3:14-15)**

**Let's go over each account independently, because they are all telling the same exact story in their independent accounts:**

**THEY WILL SEE THE SON OF MAN COMING ON THE CLOUDS AND THE ELECT ARE GATHERED, CAUGHT UP**

**Matt 24:29-31 (NKJV) "Immediately after the tribulation of those days the sun will be darkened, and the moon will not give its light; the stars will fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens will be shaken. "Then the sign of the Son of Man will appear in heaven, and then all the tribes of the earth will mourn, and they will see the Son of Man coming on the clouds of heaven with power and great glory. "And He will send His angels with a great sound of a trumpet, and they will gather together His elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other.**

**THE DARKNESS BEFORE THE COMING**



**Acts 2:20-21 (NKJV) "The sun shall be turned into darkness, And the moon into blood, BEFORE the coming of the great and awesome day of the LORD. And it shall come to pass *That* whoever calls on the name of the LORD Shall be saved."**

## **THE SIXTH SEAL**

**Rev 6:12-17 (NKJV) "I looked when He opened the sixth seal, and behold, there was a great earthquake; and the sun became black as sackcloth of goat hair, and the moon became like blood. And the stars of heaven fell to the earth, as a fig tree drops its late figs when it is shaken by a mighty wind. Then the sky receded as a scroll when it is rolled up, and every mountain and island was moved out of its place. And the kings of the earth, the great men, the rich men, the commanders, the mighty men, every slave and every free man, hid themselves in the caves and in the rocks of the mountains, and said to the mountains and rocks, "Fall on us and hide us from the face of Him who sits on the throne and from the wrath of the Lamb! "For the great day of His wrath has come, and who is able to stand?"**

## **THE SEVENTH BOWL "IT IS DONE!"**

**Rev 16:17-21 (NKJV) "Then the seventh angel poured out his bowl into the air, and a loud voice came out of the temple of heaven, from the throne, saying, "It is done!" And there were noises and thunderings and lightnings; and there was a great earthquake, such a mighty and great earthquake as had not occurred since men were on the earth. Now the great city was divided into three parts, and the cities of the nations fell. And great Babylon was remembered before God, to give her the cup of the wine of the fierceness of His wrath. Then every island fled away, and the mountains were not found. And great hail from heaven fell upon men, *each hailstone* about the weight of a talent.**

## **THE SUN, MOON, STARS DARKENED**

**Joel 3:14-16 (NKJV) "Multitudes, multitudes in the valley of decision! For the day of the LORD *is* near in the valley of decision. The sun and moon will grow dark, And the stars will diminish their brightness. The LORD also will roar from Zion, And utter His voice from Jerusalem; The heavens and earth will shake; But the LORD will be a shelter for His people, And the strength of the children of Israel."**

### **SIGNS IN THE SUN, MOON, STARS**

**Luke 21:25-28 (NKJV) "And there will be signs in the sun, in the moon, and in the stars; and on the earth distress of nations, with perplexity, the sea and the waves roaring; "men's hearts failing them from fear and the expectation of those things which are coming on the earth, for the powers of heaven will be shaken. "Then they will see the Son of Man coming in a cloud with power and great glory. "Now when these things begin to happen, look up and lift up your heads, because your redemption draws near."**

**Do you notice how all these independent accounts seem to be saying the same thing over and over again?**

**The seventh trumpet could sound in Heaven BEFORE the seven bowls.**

**The seventh trumpet could sound in Heaven at the same time as the seventh bowl is poured out.**

**The seventh trumpet could sound in Heaven AFTER THE SEVENTH BOWL IS POURED out, depending on how we choose to view the texts with our perspectives. Ever notice how there is a TRINITY of possibilities for viewing Scripture?**

**If you think in only one kind of format, PRE-TRIB RAPTURE, as TIM LAHAYE illustrated for us, this will all confuse the heck out of you because you were expecting that you wouldn't be here on earth during the last 7 years. Well, the Bible tells us to expect the unexpected. What is unexpected is the experience of any kind of trial or tribulation.**

**Only if you are raptured through death and taken into the FIRST RESURRECTION in Heaven will you be spared the last days tribulation, but unless you die, and the vultures eat your flesh, you will hopefully be a survivor through Generation Z. Keep watching as millions of people throughout the Earth die, for this is the scenario Jesus clearly**

**gave us to expect until THE LOUD APPEARANCE OF HIS SECOND COMING AFTER THE SIGNS IN THE SUN, MOON, & STARS.**

**If we become a survivor on earth, during those times, we are never going to hear that SEVENTH TRUMPET sound in Heaven in MID-TRIB. Only those in Heaven who give thanks to the Lord will hear that Seventh Trumpet sound, because they will be ruling with Jesus in Heaven as His wrath is poured out upon the earth. Unless we are dead and Jesus resurrects us, then we are stuck down here on earth, LEFT BEHIND with everybody else. It is true that all “THE ELECT” will be taken from the Earth, but our enemies around us will perish as they watch us being carried up into Heaven. Let me repeat this point: AT THE SECOND COMING of Matthew 24, Jesus will gather his elect from one end of the earth to the other and ALL OF OUR ENEMIES WILL SEE JESUS COMING.**

**Where did this myth develop that our enemies aren’t going see Christians being raptured because we’re all going to just suddenly vanish before the Tribulation?**

**TIME LAHAYE SAYS, “DO YOU BELIEVE FIRMLY IN YOUR HEART THAT YOUR CHILDREN PLAYING IN THE SUNLIGHT WON’T HAVE TO ENDURE THE MONSTROUS HORRORS OF THE TRIBULATION?”**

**Tim LaHaye narrates a mythical, imaginative scenario in his book entitled, “RAPTURE UNDER ATTACK,” in which he admits that a friend of his ditched the PRE-TRIB RAPTURE SCENARIO and his sugary, flowery, candy-coated rapture defense for PRE-TRIB RAPTURE is as follows: *“Are you able to look at your children playing in the sunlight and believe firmly in your heart that they will not have to endure the monstrous horrors of the Tribulation?”* No, because they might have to PATIENTLY ENDURE THE MONSTROUS HORRORS OF THE TRIBULATION and I’m going to have to train them to look at what the Bible says in how to cope with what they have to endure and must endure according to the Creator’s will for the Last Days Saints. Uhm, Tim, shouldn’t we be teaching our children how they can share the victory of Revelation 7:14 which says – “These are they who have COME OUT OF THE GREAT TRIBULATION; they have washed their robes and made them white in the blood of the Lamb.” What about preparing our children and telling our children the Truth, as recorded**

**in Revelation 14:12-13 – “This calls for patient endurance on the part of the saints who obey God’s commandments and remain faithful to Jesus. Then I heard a voice from heaven say, “WRITE: BLESSED ARE THE DEAD WHO DIE IN THE LORD FROM NOW ON.”**

**As for our children playing in the sunlight, today, we have chemical trails attempting to curb global warming and the Earth’s temperature keeps rising as the sun grows hotter and global warming gets worsened. Children are falling from illness and disease at an unprecedented rate Children are now forced to get a SECULAR PUBLIC EDUCATION where schools take the God of Creation out of every teaching and while removing prayer and the cross from our children’s hearts, they are promoting homosexuality as something good, natural, and right. Drugs, pornography, and sex without the possibility of marriage are what our ‘children playing in the Masonic sunlight’ are experiencing today.**

**Revelation 7:16 goes on to say, concerning those “WHO HAVE COME OUT OF THE GREAT TRIBULATION.....The sun will not beat upon them, nor any scorching heat.” This indicates our children will have to endure the scorching heat. The term, “THESE ARE THEY WHO HAVE**

**COME OUT OF THE GREAT TRIBULATION,” should strike a chord that there are Christian Saints who will go through the tribulation washing their robes and making them white in the blood of the Lamb.**

**You will find Tim LaHaye and Jerry Jenkins either buried in a nice expensive grave or you will find them LEFT BEHIND in the last days before the Rapture of Jesus Christ’s Second Coming.**

**Shouldn’t we prepare our Christian soldiers in combat for the hard core REALITY as recorded in Revelation 13:10 which says –“If anyone is to go into captivity, into captivity he will go. If anyone is to be killed with the sword, with the sword he will be killed.” Dave Johnson, a contractor who worked on Apache Helicopters, was beheaded in June 2004 and learned this reality. The beheading of our American people by Islamic extremists brought to life the reality that decapitation was still alive on earth through murderous anti-Christ chronies.**

**He vanished through death and may God have mercy on his soul.**



**We only know for certain that there will be a “taking up” of “the elect” “who are still alive and are left’ AT THE TIME the SECOND COMING.**

**The time of the SECOND COMING will happen after the cosmic signs in the sun, moon & stars which will be quite visible and in our faces. Although nobody will have a calendar date, the SIGNS of His return will be quite visible. As Luke 21:26 says – “Men will faint from terror, apprehensive of what is coming on the world, for the heavenly bodies will be shaken.”**

**Sorry, PRE-TRIBBERS, there will NOT BE A VANISHING of millions of Christians BEFORE the Tribulation as Tim LaHaye presents to us, but millions of Christians will vanish and be taken through death, until the Second Coming.**

**“BLESSED ARE THE DEAD WHO DIE IN THE LORD FROM NOW ON,” bears a logical indication that Believers are still going to be here. Why else would the whole Book of Revelation say, “THIS CALLS FOR PATIENT ENDURANCE ON THE PART OF THE SAINTS WHO OBEY GOD’S COMMANDMENTS AND REMAIN FAITHFUL TO JESUS.” If we**

**are not here on earth, then who is enduring patiently? Who are these saints who obey God's Commandments and remain faithful to Jesus? Does Revelation say that people who were disobedient BEFORE the tribulation will suddenly obey God's Commandments and remain faithful to Jesus? No. Revelation says that during the tribulation period, those who obey God's commandments and remain faithful to Jesus are called to endure their afflictions and the world's chaos patiently.**

**The argument that God would never allow His own people to suffer the tribulation is Biblically inaccurate. When you survey the 70 million martyrs who died in history why on God's Earth would God treat last days Christians any differently, giving them some kind of preferential treatment over martyrs who died in history and the martyrs who will die during the tribulation? Today's Churches are going to be raptured? I don't think so, considering every Church is locked into the economic beast now. (That will be discussed in my next book about Church – coming soon!).**

**What happened to the Prophets of Israel and Judah? What happened to the first three hundred years of Christians slaughtered by**

**the Roman Empire? What happened to all the Believers, Jewish & Christian who refused to accept Allah as God or Muhammad as a prophet?**

**Are the Christians living in the last days going to get some kind of preferential treatment over ALL THE SAINTS who have died, been beheaded, and died in the Lord? I don't think so. These "Churches" today are apostate! Even if we narrow down the true believers from every Christian Church, you will hear many confessions that we are sinful, immoral and worthy of death and hell, so we can expect not to get any preferential treatment by escaping the great tribulation. However, we can place our faith and hope and trust in the Lord before, during and after the tribulation!**

**Tim LaHaye and all the PRE-TRIB scholars, and all the people they misled are going to be in for a BIG ASTONISHMENT that their viewpoint about the RAPTURE was incorrect the whole time!**

**For the men who deceived Tim LaHaye, there can be grace given on the basis of righteous zeal, hot enthusiasm for the Revelation decoders. Ezekiel 13 warns us about false prophets and the coming**

**disasters for those who were prideful in misleading the people with false and lying visions and according to Isaiah 24 the devastation of the earth will be the same FOR PRIEST AS FOR PEOPLE.**

**I apologize for my confidence, but ALL THE BOOKS about PRE-TRIBULATION RAPTURE could very well be WAY OFF BASE and we have very few Believers taking a stand on a Biblical level because no one asks the right kinds of questions, taking it on authority that they are confused because the Pre-Trib Rapture view is right, while there is no possibility for error.**

**After all, can't a Pastor who went to Seminary, sits in a leather sofa and drinks Starbucks coffee be someone above you in your theological understanding because he studied Greek, Hebrew, & Latin, but you didn't? Shouldn't we feel rather intimidated and impressed by these MASTERS OF THEOLOGY, to the point where we should just keep condemning the Catholic Church, Abortion, and the democratic left-wingers and ignore everything other issue? Should we just ignore Revelation because we can't understand it and leave it in the hands of men who went to College and studied prophecy for us? No, let's just**

**go to our local Christian bookstore and pay twenty dollars for each book Tim LaHaye/Jenkins wrote and call it a wrap on Bible Prophecy.**

**No, I am not part of some Illuminati conspiracy or a Jesuit conspiracy to ruin your hopes for a PRE-TRIB RAPTURE. I absolutely detest the Catholic Church as I would any CLUB that requires MEMBERSHIP and a MANDATORY TITHING rule.**

**Although I am a RENEGADE CHRISTIAN who is against the Yuppie Fascist Gummy Bear Christians in Mainstream Seminary, I still have deep love for my fellow believers who are of a different view from me. Like Peter and Paul had to go their separate ways when they came into sharp disagreement, so I must go my separate ways from all Churches that preach a pre-tribulation rapture and ally myself with the believers who are expecting something quite different from Tim LaHaye's scenario.**

**I am merely presenting the facts and details as I have studied them, AS A CHRISTIAN, and sharing with you the joys and sorrows I am experiencing with this theory that many Bible-believing Christians**

**are arriving at together, contrary to those who are earning millions of dollars in book sales and movie titles from their PRE-TRIB views.**

**With all the WORD FAITH HEALING TEACHERS on TBN who are purposefully out to KILL CHRISTIANITY by making the Bible look stupid and idiotic through ‘spiritual’ people like Benny Hinn, can you really trust in this school of PRE-TRIB views? With all of the Masonic infiltration of the Southern Baptist Convention and millions of Rockefeller dollars poured into their Seminaries, can we trust any Baptist Convention Seminaries with our theology? Can we really trust most TBN Ministers with our theology?**

**When Church leaders start dividing the sexes and creating inequality in gender preferences, should we trust in their theology of a flat earth?**

**We can absolutely trust that the Bible is accurate and filled with God’s Words, but we cannot absolutely trust the men who manipulate us into compliance with prophesy views that are theologically off base. Even my theory can be challenged, although, I’m convinced in what I have come to learn and know.**

**As Christians, we all agree as to what the term RAPTURE means.**

**We all agree that there will be RAPTURE.**

**“Rapture” means, “caught up” or “taken up” or “snatched” and we will soon learn that the “rapture” of the God of Israel’s people, (BOTH True Faithful Jews and True Faithful Christians -“THE ELECT” scattered throughout many Christian Churches and Jewish Synagogues, henceforth, “THE CHURCH”) occurs at the seventh last trumpet and the SECOND COMING as either the same event or two separate events.**

**What is the Seventh Trumpet of Revelation 11:15-19 and should we conclude this Seventh Trumpet as the LAST TRUMPET of 1 Corinthians 15:52 or not?**

**Matthew 24:31 says – “And Jesus will send out his angels with a LOUD TRUMPET CALL and they will gather his elect from the four winds, from one end of the heavens to the other.” This will not take place BEFORE the Tribulation, but AFTER. The Bible is clear on this one point and you can rest uncomfortably with that assurance.**

**At the SEVENTH LAST TRUMPET of Revelation, the first six seals have already been broken, and the six trumpets blasted, which means that the earth has already undergone an extensive amount of wrath, unless the 6 Seals, 6 Trumpets, and 6 Bowls are all happening at the same time.**

### **THREE TO FOUR “TYPES” OF RAPTURE, NOT JUST ONE OR TWO**

**When we examine the facts, scholars tried to separate the SECOND COMING from the “PRE-TRIB” rapture as two separate events, as if there are two different raptures. The reality is that there are THREE TO FOUR DIFFERENT TYPES OF “RAPTURES” ALL OF WHICH CAN BE TRUE AT THE SAME TIME, applying ALL THREE VIEWS OF PRE-TRIB, MID-TRIB, AND POST-TRIB RAPTURE THEORIES. All three views have elements that can be accepted and elements that can be rejected.**

**How can we logically believe this kind of interpretation on a Biblical level without PRE-TRIBBERS condemning us as clueless heretics committing a great blasphemy against their widely accepted**



**televised book reviews? How can we launch our campaign for TRUTH when countless books, Seminaries, Colleges, Radio Talk Shows, and TV Preachers bombard us every day with this myth that we'll vanish before the six trumpets begin to sound? I would conceive the possibility that there could be a mid-tribulation rapture, so that we'll not see the 7 bowls of God's Wrath poured out on the Throne of the Beast, but we are likely going to see the first six trumpets on Earth as they are sounded in Heaven.**

**There will only be one VISIBLE AND LOUD rapture/second coming of Christ and according to Matthew 24, which is the simplest explanation of the rapture, the SECOND COMING will not happen until the signs in the sun, moon, and stars begin to take place. These signs tell last days believers to stand up, lift up our heads for our redemption is coming soon.**

**What if John went to sleep on one night and dreamed of the 7 Seals? What if he woke up and then slept again the next night and dreamed about the 7 trumpets? What if he went to sleep the third night and dreamed about the 7 bowls? Could we treat each "7" as**

**independent accounts of the same story and not interpret them chronologically?**

**Can each independent “7” be three chronological phases of tribulation? Or perhaps just the 7 Seals are independent from the 7 trumpets and 7 bowls, meaning that they happen at the same time as the first 3 ½ years of the 7 trumpets and during the last 3 ½ years of the 7 bowls? WE DON’T HAVE AN ANSWER UNTIL IT ACTUALLY HAPPENS. I don’t believe we are meant to figure this out until we get there. One of the conclusions that EVERY PROPHECY SCHOLAR CONCLUDES is that EVERY INTERPRETATION IS INCONCLUSIVE and NOBODY IS 100% CLEAR on what the symbols mean, even after connecting the dots. The words are closed up and sealed, UNTIL THE TIME OF THE END.**

**If we were to connect Matthew 24:31 “THE LOUD TRUMPET” with THE SEVENTH TRUMPET in Revelation 11:15-18, we would then define the SEVENTH TRUMPET as the CLOSING OF THE TRIBULATION as John wakes up from his dream to record this and come back to sleep again on the third night to see the 7 bowls.**

**In my opinion, to the ‘elect,’ or ‘saved’ (both Jewish and Christian saints), who have already died and have been physically declared as being dead in history, the time lapse for them, consciously, from the moment of death, to the Resurrection at the LAST TRUMPET, is the blink of an eye according to 1 Corinthians 15:51-52.**

**As this LAST TRUMPET is sounded all the dead in Christ rise first and as they are standing with Christ in Heaven, at the sound of this SEVENTH TRUMPET, the great Rapture of those Jews and Christians left alive upon the earth in the last days of the tribulation will be caught up together with them, to meet them in the air. What makes even more sense, is that some saints would be resurrected during the MIDDLE of the Tribulation at the Seventh Last Trumpet to witness God’s Wrath upon the earth unfolding in the 7 bowls, so that they could participate in the victory of watching all the enemies of God perish.**

#### **THE DEAD IN CHRIST RISE FIRST**

**1 Thessalonians 4:16-17 says—“For the Lord himself will come down from heaven, with a loud command, with the voice of the**

**archangel and with the trumpet [SEVENTH LAST TRUMPET] call of God, and the dead in Christ will rise first.”**

**What does this mean that ‘THE DEAD in Christ will rise first?’**

**What this DOES NOT say is that the ALIVE IN CHRIST WILL RISE FIRST. PRE-TRIBS state that the ALIVE IN CHRIST ON EARTH WILL RISE FIRST, but this is an extra-Biblical idea read into the script which simply doesn’t exist as anything more than a hopeful fantasy or wishful thinking in the Astrological mind of Tim LaHaye..**

**Show us the verse where it says that the ALIVE ON EARTH WILL RISE INTO HEAVEN FIRST please? No, there is only evidence that THE DEAD IN CHRIST ARE TAKEN FIRST, meaning that THE DEAD ARE RESURRECTED INTO THE HEAVENLY COURTS WHERE JESUS SITS AT THE RIGHT HAND OF THE FATHER. They participate in the FIRST RESURRECTION of the Millennial Reign of Christ in Heaven.**

**These are the RESURRECTED SAINTS THAT WE ARE GOING TO MEET IN THE AIR when Jesus returns. We are not going to meet the Christians who were just raptured before the 7-year tribulation, who never experienced suffering, death, torture, or the trials of the beast.**

**Since THE DEAD IN CHRIST RISE FIRST, then we who are still alive upon the earth and left behind will be caught up together with the Dead In Christ who rose from the dead first.**

**They have to already be ALIVE WITH CHRIST IN HEAVEN at His Second Coming, and so we will meet them in the air.**

**Notice the language of 1 Thessalonians 4:16-17 again. “THE DEAD IN CHRIST RISE FIRST. AFTER THAT, we who are STILL ALIVE and ARE LEFT will be caught up together with them in the clouds to meet them in the air.” Amazing what you can learn when studying words closely and carefully. Did this say that the ALIVE IN CHRIST rise first? Did this say that the ALIVE IN CHRIST will be taken up first? Did this say that BEFORE THE TRIBULATION WE WILL BE TAKEN UP AND SPARED THE TRIBULATION? NO! Come on folks, let’s wake up and strengthen what remains and is about to DIE! Hello? Is this starting to make any sense now?**

- 1. THE LORD HIMSELF WILL COME DOWN FROM  
HEAVEN**
- 2. WITH A LOUD COMMAND**

**3. WITH THE VOICE OF THE ARCHANGEL**

**4. WITH THE TRUMPET CALL OF GOD**

**5. THE DEAD IN CHRIST RISE FIRST**

**6. AFTER THAT WE WHO ARE STILL ALIVE WILL BE**

**CAUGHT UP TOGETHER WITH THEM TO MEET**

**THEM IN THE AIR**

**Weren't LIVING Christians on earth raptured ALIVE already  
BEFORE THE TRIBULATION?**

**No.**

**Does it sound confusing because the PRE-TRIBULATION  
theorists blew it real bad?**

**Now if 'the dead in Christ' do not rise until the LAST TRUMPET,  
then why should we assume that Christians who are alive upon the  
earth would be RAPTURED before the Tribulation, or even during the  
middle of it, when it is clear that only after the LORD COMES DOWN  
FROM HEAVEN with the LOUD COMMAND, THE VOICE OF THE  
ARCHANGEL, THE TRUMPET CALL, the dead in Christ will be raised  
FIRST?**

**At THE SEVENTH LAST TRUMPET the dead in Christ will rise from their graves FIRST. This means that those who died in history, believing in the Messiah, will arise first, whomever the Lord chooses.**

**The dead in Christ RISE at the LAST TRUMPET and this event will happen in addition to those who were already assigned thrones with Christ in Heaven throughout history as the firstfruits to be raised from the dead. Say what? What do I mean?**

**An example of this truth can be found in John 11:23-26 (ASV):**

**23 Jesus saith unto her, Thy brother shall rise again.**

**24 Martha saith unto him, I know that he shall rise again in the resurrection AT THE LAST DAY.**

**25 Jesus said unto her, I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believeth on me, though he die, yet shall he live; 26 and whosoever liveth and believeth on me shall never die. Believest thou this?"**

**Martha understood how things were supposed to go down: THE DEAD WOULD BE RAISED AT THE LAST DAY. However, although she**

**had the correct belief, Jesus informed her that He could and would raise the dead, anytime He wants. He gives a signal by raising LAZARUS from the dead that He has the Power to raise the dead anytime. Jesus did not raise Lazarus just to prove that He has the power to resurrect anyone anywhere at any time, but he resurrected Lazarus as a sign of Love, Faith, and Hope for everyone believing in Him as Messiah. Even the two thieves who were with Jesus were encouraged when Jesus said, “TODAY YOU WILL BE WITH ME IN PARADISE.” Maybe they really did go to Heaven that day? Or perhaps they just blinked their eyes and they are already resurrected at the LAST DAY since time does not exist for the dead.**

**When we study the first six trumpets that were sounded, BEFORE this seventh last trumpet, a third of the earth was destroyed in the tribulation of Revelation 8-11. The first six trumpets indicate a time of great tribulation in which a third of everything is struck, even the sun, moon and stars, the first VISIBLE SIGNS that Jesus is coming soon.**

**After the great tribulation of the first six trumpets and the six bowls, as well as the persecution of the two witnesses in Revelation 11, the believers left behind on earth, who didn't die or vanish through**



**death, will join the other believers in the clouds, who had been resurrected all throughout history in heaven as participants of the MILLENNIAL FIRST RESURRECTION in Revelation 20.**

**1 Thessalonians 4:17 says—“After that, we who are still alive (on earth) and are left (on earth) will be caught up together with them (the FIRST RESURRECTION SAINTS) in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air.”**

**Matthew 24 is perhaps the easiest guide for the easiest explanation of the signs to look out for before the rapture of Christ’s Second Coming.**

**THE RAPTURE of Matthew 24 says—“And Jesus will send out his angels with a LOUD TRUMPET CALL, and they will gather his elect from the four winds, from one end of the heavens to the other.” THIS RAPTURE will not occur before or during the tribulation of the six trumpets, but AFTER the tribulation of the six trumpets!**

**Luke 21:25-28 says—“There will be signs in the sun, moon and stars (Revelation 8-10 demonstrate those signs with the six trumpets). On the earth, nations will be in anguish and perplexity at the roaring**

**and tossing of the sea. Men will faint from terror, apprehensive of what is coming on the world, for the heavenly bodies will be shaken. AT THAT TIME, they will see the Son of Man coming in a cloud with power and great glory. WHEN THESE THINGS BEGIN TO TAKE PLACE, stand up and lift up your heads, because YOUR REDEMPTION IS DRAWING NEAR.”**

**AT THAT TIME THE SON OF MAN COMES IN THE CLOUDS OF HEAVEN!**

**If the Christian Believers had already been raptured ALIVE BEFORE the tribulation, then why would he ask his Last Days saints to stand up, and lift up their heads?**

**Doesn't this evidence indicate that there will be Bible believing Christians in the LAST DAYS who will be gathered up in His Second Coming?**

**He comes ONLY ONCE ON THE CLOUDS OF HEAVEN and the event is VERY LOUD, not as quiet or mysterious as PRE-TRIBULATIONISTS present. He will come like a thief in the night, meaning that He will come quickly as the universe is dissolving**

**quickly. He comes like a thief in the night through death and comes at a time when we don't expect him, because EVERYONE EXPECTS THE PRE-TRIB VIEW AS THE CORRECT VIEW, unprepared for the reality of how Jesus is Coming Soon at the signs of universal destruction.**

**There will not be a QUIET VANISHING or DISAPPEARANCE of millions of Christians, nor will such an event signal the tribulation, which will be unexpected to the PRE-TRIB students, but there will be a LOUD SECOND COMING and we are told to stand up and lift up our heads, because AT THAT TIME OF GREAT TRIBULATION, the Son of Man comes on the clouds of Heaven.**

**Is there a possibility that millions of people will mysteriously vanish through a UFO appearance from hell? Yes. WAR OF THE WORLDS by Stephen Spielberg prepares us for a rapture by hostile aliens invading earth and abducting human beings to suck their brains out. So it's possible that the devil could imitate a fake rapture by making millions of people disappear from the earth – vanish – to give the appearance of a pre-tribulation vanishing. But I don't think that is something God will allow.**

**Until, “THESE THINGS BEGIN TO TAKE PLACE” Jesus says in Matthew 24:28—“Wherever there is a dead body, there the vultures will gather.”**

**At the same time we are terrified over the discouraging destruction of the Earth, we are given the Blessed Hope that Jesus is ALIVE and ruling in Heaven with the Resurrected Saints. We are assured that after the time of the great tribulation when the sun, moon & stars are shaken, that he will bring with Himself all those who have died in Him and we will meet them all in the air at His Second Coming.**

**The vultures gathering around dead bodies, wherever dead bodies can be found, indicates a vanishing and removal of Believers, like unbelievers, through DEATH. Rapture through Death? Yes, millions of Christians and Jews will vanish through death and the vultures will eat up our physical bodies. So our physical bodies will not have vanished into heaven, but remain on earth, decaying, since it will not be until the Seventh Last Trumpet that the dead in Christ will rise first.**

**Luke 17:34 says—"I tell you, on that night two people will be in one bed; one will be taken and the other left. Two women will be grinding grain together; one will be taken and the other left...Wherever there is a dead body, there the vultures will gather."**

**"TAKEN/RAPTURED" where? I don't see an indication in these verses that millions of bodies will vanish and disappear from the earth, but that: "two people will be in one bed, one will DIE and the other left ALIVE. Two women will be working together; one will die and the other will be left behind on earth alive." Immediately after this statement we read, "Wherever THERE IS A DEAD BODY, there the vultures will gather." So Jesus was referring to DEATH in these verses of Luke 17:34.**

**Why is death referred to as a 'sleep'? Jesus said in John 11:11-13 – "Our friend Lazarus has fallen asleep; but I am going there to wake him up.' His disciples replied, "Lord, if he sleeps, he will get better.' JESUS HAD BEEN SPEAKING OF THIS DEATH, but his disciples thought he meant natural sleep. So then Jesus told them plainly, 'LAZARUS IS DEAD, and for your sake I am glad I was not there, SO THAT YOU MAY BELIEVE."**

**Until the RAPTURE of CHRIST'S SECOND COMING, most people will vanish in their sleep, or rather, they will die, whether Christian, Jewish or secular and we will examine the Scriptures that prove this. Everyone gets LEFT BEHIND until the SECOND COMING and the weak PRE-TRIB argument that a good and loving God would never allow His children to suffer and die the horrors of Tribulation comes from the mouth of the devils and not from the mouth of God. When Peter tried to stop Jesus from going to the Cross saying, "Lord, this shall never happen to you!" the response Jesus gave was, "Get behind me Satan. For you have not in mind the things of God but the things of man."**

**If it's anything that is going to cause Christians to betray and hate each other and cause more falling away, it's the PRE-TRIB view which has served as a monkey wrench in God's Truth for a long time. In the mean time, ALL BELIEVERS ARE COPING OR NOT COPING WITH THE DEATH OF LOVED ONES because they were never taught on how to face DEATH or to approach a "RAPTURE THROUGH DEATH" preparation.**

**Revelation 14:12-13 makes this point very clear: "This calls for patient endurance on the part of the saints who obey God's**

**commandments and remain faithful to Jesus. Then I heard a voice from heaven say, “Blessed ARE THE DEAD WHO DIE IN THE LORD FROM NOW ON.”**

**DIE IN THE LORD FROM NOW ON? Sorry for the pessimism, but it sounds like some of us will be raptured through death! Get over it PRE-TRIBBERS! That’s REALITY, a reality that none of us are ever prepared for, a reality that I’m not prepared for. Not even my most faithful prayers and not even all of my mental preparation can stop what is going to have to happen before the Lord returns.**

**DEATH ALWAYS COMES UNEXPECTEDLY LIKE A THIEF IN THE NIGHT. We expect to go on living forever, but we are vanishing one by one, with no visible signs of anyone ever coming back from the dead!**

**If we were already in Heaven, we would not die in the Lord. Matthew 24:13 says – “But he who STANDS FIRM TO THE END will be saved.” This means that there will be BELIEVERS WHO STAND FIRM TO THE END.**

**Revelation 14:9-13 indicates that Believers will be alive during the reign of the beast who enforces his name of GODHEAD upon the**

**whole world, which is why the CHRISTIAN & JEWISH saints are called to endure those times with PATIENT ENDURANCE.**

**The words “PATIENT ENDURANCE” indicate believers will have to endure the RISE OF THE BEAST PATIENTLY and those who DIE IN THE LORD FROM NOW ON will be blessed because their deeds of overcoming the ANTI-CHRIST WORLD will follow them Home to Heaven.**

**Revelation 12:11 says – “They overcame him by the blood of the Lamb and by the word of their testimony; they did not love their lives so much as TO SHRINK FROM DEATH.”**

**Revelation 7:14 says – “These are they who have come out of the GREAT TRIBULATION; they have washed their robes and made them white in the blood of the Lamb.”**

**Sounds like it will get pretty dirty and bloody until then doesn't it?**

**There will be Christian and Jewish saints who will live and die upon the earth, until the Second Coming of Christ as recorded in Matthew 24 and the Second Coming of Christ will not occur until**



**AFTER the tribulation of Matthew 24:1-28 which concludes: “Wherever there is a carcass, there the vultures will gather.” Matthew 24:29-31 continues, “IMMEDIATELY after the distress OF THOSE DAYS:**

**‘the sun will be darkened,  
and the moon will not give its light;  
the stars will fall from the sky,  
and the heavenly bodies will be shaken.’**

**AT THAT TIME, the SIGN of the Son of Man will appear on the clouds of the sky.”**

**The SIGN of THE RAPTURE will not be INVISIBLE as Pre-Tribbers present, but VERY VISIBLE! “For as lightning that comes from the east is visible even in the west, so will be the coming of the Son of Man.” HIS SIGN will be LOUD and SHAKE the entire world.**

**Until the Second Coming of Christ, Christian and Jewish saints will suffer and die as the beast rises up to oppress the world with his Name of GOD-HEAD..**

**However, the God of Israel’s promise, perfected in the Name of Jesus, is that those who died, believing in the Messiah Jesus, will be**

**resurrected from the dead, in the LAST DAY, at the SEVENTH LAST TRUMPET. We can conclude the SEVENTH TRUMPET of Revelation 11 as being the LAST TRUMPET of Revelation because that's exactly how many trumpets there are.**

**The believers who did not partake in sitting on thrones of judgment in THE FIRST RESURRECTION OF THE MILLENNIAL REIGN OF CHRIST IN HEAVEN will arise at the LAST DAY and the believers still alive on earth will meet them in the air when Jesus returns.**

**This is the hope of every Christian, that just as the God of Israel delivered the Jewish Nation from slavery to Egypt, so will all believers be redeemed from slavery to Earth. We will be delivered from the Egyptian-styled slavery to come under the rule of the Anti-Christ beast and false prophet.**

**The Jewish and Christian saints who are alive upon the earth until the end of the world, "STANDING UP AND LIFTING UP THEIR HEADS" (Luke 21) when the cosmic signs begin to take place," will be raptured as they witness Jesus coming on the clouds of the sky with power and great glory.**

**Those of us who do die believing in Christ will rise first, in a flash, in the twinkling of an eye, at the seventh last trumpet.**

**Either immediately during the Millennial Reign of Christ in Heaven or at the Seventh Last Trumpet to be sounded from Heaven, those whom God chooses among faithful Jews and faithful Christians will participate in the FIRSTFRUITS RESURRECTION, reigning with Christ in Heaven. Until that seventh last trumpet has sounded, we will be raptured through ‘death.’**

## **THE 7 SEALS, 7 TRUMPETS, AND 7 BOWLS**

**Our THREE VIEWS of PRE-TRIB, MID-TRIB, OR POST-TRIB RAPTURE are all dependent on how we view the 7 Seals (Revelation 6-8), 7 Trumpets (Revelation 8-11), and 7 Bowls (Revelation 16), and how we connect these events with Daniel’s prophecies of the rise of the Seventy “Sevens” of the beast (Daniel 9:20-27). For more on Daniel’s “7 years” see CHAPTER 17: THE ABOMINATION THAT CAUSES DESOLATION.**

**Do the three sevens of the 7 Seals, the 7 trumpets, & the 7 bowls, all tell the same exact story with different symbols, collectively mirroring each other within the same time frame of 7 years as they all happen simultaneously, or should we separate them as TWO or THREE SEPARATE CHRONOLOGICAL events spaced out over the 7-year period or series of seven ages which Daniel spoke of?**

**I don't think that the entire Book of Revelation should be looked upon chronologically, as they have been laid out. I believe certain chapters can be woven into the text of other chapters, happening at the same time that another event is unfolding.**

**There is a general agreement among prophecy scholars that there will only be a 7-year Tribulation, defined as 7 final years of life on earth to inherit the 7 trumpets and 7 bowls of God's Wrath upon the devil's world. Although there is no time frame for the tribulation given, it is clear that the Empire of the Beast had already been set up BEFORE THE TRIBULATION Trumpets sounded and the 7 bowls were poured out. Although he rules for only 42 months (Revelation 13) it is uncertain how long his empire had taken to be set up.**

**Now we could say that each 'seven' is actually a period of time, not relative to seven actual years, but seven stages of time. How we view the Revelation greatly depends on whether we believe that the 'seven' of Daniel is 7 literal years, or if the 'seven' would metaphorically refer to a certain period of time, not necessarily just 7 literal years. We are also bound to a 3 ½ year period of 1,260 days in Revelation 11 when the two witnesses arise and 1,290 days (and 1,335 days) in Daniel 12.**

**The reason why the scholars correlate the 7 trumpets and 7 bowls with the 7 last years of THE GREAT TRIBULATION is found in Daniel's 70<sup>th</sup> week.**

**"Therefore when you see the 'abomination of desolation,' spoken of by Daniel the prophet, standing in the holy place" (whoever reads, let him understand), "then let those who are in Judea flee to the mountains." Matt 24:15-16 (NKJV)**

**What is THE ABOMINATION THAT CAUSES DESOLATION, spoken of through the prophet Daniel?**

**Daniel 9:27 – "He will confirm a covenant with many for one 'seven.' In the middle of the 'seven' he will put an end to sacrifice and offering. And on a wing of the temple he will set up an abomination**

**that causes desolation, until the end that is decreed is poured out on him.” This ‘seven’ is assumed to be the LAST SEVEN YEARS of life on Earth, however, could this ‘seven’ be considered ‘seven hundred years’ or ‘seven stages of time’, not necessarily just seven literal years only? This thought is shot down. But if the ‘seven’ is not seven epochs, but only 7 years, then the scholarly conclusion that there will be 7 last years is final and we can squeeze the 7 trumpets and 7 bowls into this particular time frame.**

**According to Daniel, the destiny of ‘the abomination that causes desolation’ is certain.**

**Daniel 11:45 says: “He will pitch his tents between the seas at the beautiful holy mountain. Yet, HE WILL COME TO HIS END, and no one will help him.”**

**There will be a historical beast (Revelation 13: The Beast Out of the Sea) and a modern Beast (The Beast out of the Earth). The Beast Out of the Sea rules for only 42 months. However, the amount of time that the Beast Out of the Earth rules is UNKNOWN.**

**That is correct. Our Revelation 13 Beast Out of the Sea only rules for 42 months and suffers a fatal wound that is healed. He is given a voice to speak so that all that refuse to worship his image are killed. It is UNKNOWN how long the Beast Out of the Earth rules with his delusion that he is god.**

**It is UNKNOWN how long the seven trumpets will sound for or how long it will take for the 7 bowls to be poured out.**

**The modern beast out of the Earth will give praise and worship of the first historical beast whose fatal wound is healed. He was wounded by the sword and yet lives, perhaps indicating he will be wounded in war, yet live. The wound is believed to be fatal, yet he is revived and the whole world is forced to accept his name and worship him.**

**For example, if the beast were to come out of the Roman Empire, the historical beast of the Caesars could be worshipped in the future modern ruler of the European Economic Union. The beast would be same Empire throughout time, which would explain how the Millennium saints would be resurrected after having been slain by the beast for refusing to accept his image or worship him, an act that Christians sacrificed themselves for during the first 300 years of Christianity spreading throughout the Roman Empire. These 300 years worth of martyrs who were persecuted and slain for their faith would rule with Jesus in Heaven until the devil would be released in Revelation 20.**

**During this time, this age of the beast, the false prophet, and the devil's rise, more Christians would be executed for their faith, which would span all throughout history up until the intervention of God's Wrath in the 7 bowls of the 7 last plagues which will complete God's Wrath upon the devil's dominion on earth.**

**In Revelation, the whole world honors the beast out of the earth as he gives breath and life to an image of a god (the beast out of the sea) who now is not god either on the Temple Mount or in the Masonic Temple In Jerusalem (which would not require the building of a Third Temple since a Masonic Lodge is treated as a Temple of King Solomon as defined by Albert Pike's Morals & Dogma.**

**Once again, in Revelation 13 there is a description of two different beasts: The Beast Out of the Sea and the Beast out of the Earth. Revelation 13:5-6 says – “The beast was given a mouth to exercise his authority for 42 months. He opened his mouth to blaspheme God, and to slander his name and his dwelling place and those who live in heaven.” Is this 42 months to be taken literally as 3 ½ years or should we conclude this as 42 independent moons, not necessarily within 42 consecutive months. Scholars all agree that the reign of the beast out of the sea will only be 3 ½ years. If his**

**reign is only 3 ½ years, then is this only BEFORE the 7 trumpets are sounded or BEFORE the seven bowls are poured out?**

**In Revelation 16 we discover that the 5<sup>th</sup> angel pours out his bowl on the Throne of the Beast so that his kingdom is plunged into darkness. So we learn that the Empire of the Beast will suffer the wrath of God Almighty. Everyone has crammed these prophecies into only 7 years, with good logical reasons.**

**However, we are puzzled by what happens to the first beast out of the sea, because a second beast, a beast out of the earth arises to exercise all the authority of the first beast on his behalf. The whole earth worships the beast out of the sea and the second beast orders the Global Community to set up an image of the first beast and cause all who refuse to bow to the image to be killed. The mark of his name is forced upon the global financial system so that we are dead without it. Since the first beast rules for only 42 months, it is assumed that the beast out of the earth rules for the last 3 ½ years, during which time the last 7 plagues are poured out upon the throne of the beast so that his kingdom is plunged into darkness (Revelation 16:10-11).**

**Daniel 7 described the character of this beast in Daniel 7:11 & 25 which says – “Then I continued to watch because of the BOASTFUL words the horn was speaking. I kept looking until the beast was slain and its body destroyed and thrown into the blazing fire....He will speak against the Most High and oppress his saints and try to change the set times and the laws. The saints will be handed over to him for a time, times, and half a time.” Once again, “a time, times, and half a time” are assumed to be a 42 month, 3 ½ year period, of 1,260 to 1,290 days, equivalent to 3 ½ literal years. Why the Bible doesn’t just say 3 ½ years, instead of dividing the time into days, weeks, or months or ‘a time, times and half a time’?**

**Daniel 12:11-13 – “From the time that the daily sacrifice is abolished and the abomination that causes desolation is set up, there will be**



**1,290 days. Blessed is the one who waits for and reaches the end of the 1,335 days.”**

**So are these “DAYS” literally days or are the “DAYS” figurative of “YEARS”?**

**2 Peter 3:8 says – “But do not forget this one thing, dear friends. With the Lord A DAY is LIKE A THOUSAND YEARS and a thousand years ARE LIKE A DAY.”**

**To God, a day is like a thousand years. A thousand years are like a day. If a thousand years are like a day and there are 1,260 days, 1,290 days and 1,335 days, then could this period span for 3,000 years? In other words, 3 ½ years, 42 months, 1,260 days could be 3,500 years? The scholars say, “No.” But could we conclude a “Maybe”?**

**Why don’t any of the verses just say 3 ½ years, rather than expressing periods of time in riddles?**

**Our views on the Pre-Trib Rapture versus the Mid Tribulation Rapture versus the Post-Tribulation Rapture depend greatly on whether we view the 7 trumpets happening before the 7 bowls are poured out, or whether the 7 trumpets and 7 bowls are both interlocked and interconnected as the same story told differently concerning God’s 7-year wrath on earth. Or what we could do is separate the 7 trumpets & 7 bowls from the 7 seals, treating the 7 seals independently from the 7 trumpets and 7 bowls.**

**The 7 trumpets and 7 bowls nowhere mention that the wrath of God will last only 7 years. Our Revelation verses are interlocked with Daniel’s prophesy and Revelation 11 “THE TWO WITNESSES.”**

**I just throw up my hands in the air and say, “Who cares?” Let’s just stick to the basics for now and not get so technical over trivial matters. However, the Book of Revelation is not a trivial book, nor is anything to be taken lightly, especially when we have all concluded that the world is in for huge turmoil in the last days.**

**7 literal years does work in our intellectual curiosity, however, is it really going to be that simple? The same plagues that fell upon ancient Egypt will fall upon the whole world within a short period of 7 years? The seven seals could very well happen in seven epochs of time as no time frame was given for the 7 seals. The 6<sup>th</sup> Seal, 6<sup>th</sup> Trumpet, and 6<sup>th</sup> Bowl all have common characteristics and could very well be squeezed into seven literal years.**

**Let's just assume that the world will experience a last seven years FOR SURE. There will literally be seven last years of life on earth and we have been given a peep show into the future events of the last and final days of life on earth. The devastation to come brings us into a state of hopelessness and anxiety as we are madly drunk with despair in our anticipation of the end of the world, but we are all given an everlasting hope that even though the whole world is going to be destroyed, that we will inherit Eternal Life when we reject the world and hold on to what Jesus said and did. We do have a living hope through the Resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead and into an inheritance that can never perish, spoil or fade, kept in Heaven for us (1 Peter 1).**

**We are also assured that there will be a Second Coming of Jesus Christ and if we have survived the last 7 years of life on earth, the rest of us who are alive and believe in Jesus during those last times, up until the very LAST DAY, will be RAPTURED at the Second Coming and meet the Lord and His First Resurrection saints in the air. We are also given the hope of Revelation 21 and 22 of a New Heaven, a New Earth and a New Jerusalem where God shall rule in the Name of Jesus forever.**

**So as we are disappointed that the Earth will be destroyed, we are hopeful that we will join God in His Paradise someday when the nightmare of the devil's reign is over.**

**For the greatest book about HEAVEN you will ever read, I highly recommend the book by Randy Alcorn entitled: HEAVEN. Although**

**the whole world will fall apart around us, we have a lot to look forward to with the statement Jesus made: I AM COMING SOON!**

## **CHAPTER 3**

### **YOUR PERSONAL DEATH AND RESURRECTION - DEFINING 'THE GREAT TRIBULATION' BEFORE THE RAPTURE OF JESUS CHRIST'S SECOND COMING**

#### **THE TRIBULATION: WHAT TO EXPECT IN THE LAST DAYS**

**According to Jesus in Matthew 24 the signs of the last days are as follows:**

- 1. The birth pains of famines and earthquakes in various places.**

**If FAMINES and EARTHQUAKES in "VARIOUS" places are the BEGINNING of the birth pains, a lot of modern scholars are agreed that we are in those birth pains today. This means that the news will get WORSE and never BETTER. It's like an economist who writes, "America's best days are ahead!" Uhm. So long as MONEY and TAXATION exist and the beast reigns, no, America's WORST days are ahead, in addition to the rest of the world who HATES Israel's God.**

- 2. The servants of the God of Israel will be persecuted and slaughtered.**

**Today, the persecution and slaughter has not ended. With belief in a false god named Allah and a false prophet named Muhammad and an unholy book that is Satanically inspired with lies upon lies, the people brainwashed by this evil religion will not stop until everyone is either dead or becomes slime aka: Muslim.**

- 3. Many will turn away from the Judeo-Christian faith betraying and hating each other.**

**Here in America, we are BETRAYED and HATED. In other countries, Christians and Jews are also BETRAYED and HATED. Even the so called: TOLERANT DEMOCRATIC LEFT betrays and hates Christians and Jews every day, especially in corporate America.**

**4. False prophets, like Muhammad, appear to deceive many.**

**From the false god of Islam to the false god of Mormonism, there are many false prophets who have risen up to create new religions that Earth's Creator never approved of, inspired, or advocated. Just as during the age of Israel, Israel was destroyed by the worship of false gods, so is modern society being destroyed by false prophets leading people astray from ABSOLUTE TRUTH.**

**5. The love of most grows cold because of the increase of wickedness.**

**I can honestly confess that my own love has grown cold because of the increase of wickedness. You can't trust employers. You can't trust people you go to Church with. You can't trust neighbors. You can't trust your intelligence agencies. You can't trust law enforcement. You can't trust ANYONE! Put no trust in relatives or friends, especially when you are financially broke. Nobody gives a DAMN about you when you FAIL to achieve financial success and you never know who your TRUE FAMILY is until you have no money. From that point, only in GOD can you trust. It's amazing to see how relatives can betray your trust by neglecting your grandmother, your parents and the people you love. Undoubtedly, such people are curse with the utmost curses and causes your love to grow cold to the point of wanting them to die. I struggled for many years with ANGER towards evil people who say and do evil things, but Jesus always warns us to PRAY for our enemies, which is the hardest teaching of all for**

**some of us who HATE our enemies more than our enemies HATE us! I HATE EVIL people. You can give the most sincerest prayers for their salvation, but unfortunately, wicked people sometimes cannot be saved, as is their choice. You can only choose to ask for GOD'S FORGIVENESS first and if an enemy approaches you with that same attitude of wanting forgiveness, sincerely, then, you FORGIVE THEM. But sometimes LETTING GO of ANGER towards people who refuse to humble themselves can only come from letting our love for GOD always be warm and hot, but never cold. Why be as cold as our enemies who are God haters? It took me a long time to overcome being cold.**

**6. The gospel is preached in the whole world to all nations.**

**We now live in the age where the GOSPEL has been preached to all nations and all nations have that ability to ask:**

- 1. WHAT IS IN THE BIBLE?**
- 2. WHO WAS OR IS THE GOD OF ISRAEL?**
- 3. WHO WAS OR IS OR IS TO COME AS "YESHUA MASCHIACH?"  
AKA: JESUS CHRIST?**
- 4. IS THE BIBLE TRUE OR NOT TRUE?**
- 5. WHAT IS 'THE TRUTH?'**
- 6. IS JESUS THE ONLY WAY TO THE GOD OF ISRAEL FOR GENTILE SINNERS?**
- 7. AM I A SINNER NEEDING FORGIVENESS?**
- 8. HAVE I SINNED AGAINST GOD?**
- 9. CAN I COME TO A KNOWLEDGE OF THE TRUTH AND BE SAVED?**

**IN America, ALL AMERICANS are without excuse because we all have access to studying different religions, seeking answers, and then responding to what the Bible calls us to respond to in our quest. We, who are "educated" should always be curious to ask questions and seek answers when it comes to the Bible. I myself have never doubted the AUTHORITY**

**and ACCURACY of the 66 books of the bible, even though I have correctly challenged some of the interpretations and translations made by other men along the way. The GOSPEL has been preached through missionaries throughout the world and we are truly in the age Jesus spoke of, as the GOSPEL has historically and presently gone out to the whole world!**

**7. The abomination that causes desolation is set up and the Jewish and Christian saints are persecuted. Jerusalem is surrounded by the world armies.**

**Since the time of the writing of Matthew 24, we can calculate how many world armies surrounded Jerusalem:**

<b>1. BABYLONIANS (NEBUCHADNEZZAR)</b>	<b>587 B.C.</b>
<b>2. PERSIANS (CYRUS)</b>	<b>539 B.C.</b>
<b>3. GREEKS (ALEXANDER)</b>	<b>323 B.C.</b>
<b>4. SYRIAN GREEKS (ANTIOCHUS IV)</b>	<b>167 B.C.</b>
<b>5. ROMANS (CAESAR)</b>	<b>63 B.C.</b>
<b>6. ROMANS (ITALY)</b>	<b>70 A.D.</b>
<b>7. ROMANS (ITALY)</b>	<b>135 A.D.</b>
<b>8. BYZANTINES (CONSTANTINE)</b>	<b>324-629 A.D.</b>
<b>9. MUSLIM ARABS (SAUDI ARABIA)</b>	<b>638 A.D.</b>
<b>10. SYRIAN MUSLIMS (DAMASCUS)</b>	<b>661 A.D.</b>
<b>11. ABBASID MUSLIMS (BAGHDAD)</b>	<b>750 A.D.</b>
<b>12. EGYPTIAN MAMLUK DYNASTIES</b>	<b>878 A.D.</b>
<b>13. EUROPEAN CRUSADERS (CHRISTIANS)</b>	<b>1099 A.D.</b>
<b>14. SALADIN (SULTAN OF EGYPT &amp; SYRIA)</b>	<b>1187 A.D.</b>
<b>15. KHAREZMIAN TARTARS (SIBERIANS &amp; MONGOLIANS)</b>	<b>1244 A.D.</b>
<b>16. MAMLUKS (EGYPT)</b>	<b>1250-1517 A.D.</b>



<b>17. OTTOMAN TURKS (TURKEY-ASIA MINOR)</b>	<b>1517-1917 A.D.</b>
<b>18. MUHAMMAD ALI (EGYPT)</b>	<b>1831 A.D.</b>
<b>19. OTTOMAN TURKS (TURKEY)</b>	<b>1840 A.D.</b>
<b>20. BRITISH CONQUEST (BRITAIN)</b>	<b>1917 A.D.</b>
<b>21. JORDAN (EAST JERUSALEM)</b>	<b>1948-1949 A.D.</b>
<b>22. PALESTINE NATIONAL AUTHORITY</b>	<b>1964 A.D. – Present</b>
<b>23. PLO &amp; THE GLOBAL ECONOMIC COMMUNITY</b>	<b>2000 A.D. – Present</b>
<b>24. BARACK HUSSEIN OBAMA</b>	<b>2008-2012</b>
<b>25. IRANIAN AYATOLLAHS/AHMADINJIHAD</b>	<b>Carter – 2012</b>

**The GLOBAL ARMIES have surrounded Jerusalem, growing RICH from her excessive luxuries. Now that ISRAEL has been brought to their own land the world armies continue their harassment of the Israeli people in their own homeland. Iran has threatened to wipe out Israel while Obama took no action, allowing the Iranian dictator to walk in and out of the UNITED NATIONS building in New York City. As to whether there will be a final last days desolation of Israel remains to be seen as a HUGE DISASTER, UNPRECEDENTED that will bring the world's response recorded in Revelation 17, 18, & 19.**

**The CURRENT ABOMINATION THAT CAUSES DESOLATION, which has been on God's Mountain since 666 A.D. is the Name of "Allah" and his false prophet "Muhammad" under the Dome of the Rock on the Temple Mount. ISRAEL has been unable to remove this abomination of desolation for FEAR of the Islamic uprising. As the false god and false prophet are**

worshiped by over a billion deceived Muslims who are ready to murder and kill and oppress for their false religion, this false god has caused MUCH DESOLATION, in addition to the false gods of the FREEMASONIC worship, which surfaced throughout Europe and America. The BLASPHEMOUS names of FREEMASONRY being worshiped by the New Age Democrats preaching 'religious tolerance' of false gods, false prophets and any religion that doesn't come from Israel's God, combined with the false god Allah and the false prophet Muhammad has caused MUCH DESOLATION throughout the world, not just physically, but spiritually too.

**22. Times are dreadful for pregnant women and nursing mothers.**

With CHINESE COMMUNISTS murdering unborn female babies and the communist pant suit queens of baby killings such as Hillary Clinton, Nancy Pelosi, and their various Hollywood gay women, it is truly DREADFUL for humane pregnant women and nursing mothers to reproduce healthy children in a healthy father and mother environment. With MONEY AND TAXATION harassing and threatening every couple seeking marriage, marriage has become a burden too many fathers are willing to ditch due to the inability of being a good prisoner obeying the prison wardens while financially broke. As pregnant women and nursing mothers are DITCHED, they in turn, sometimes ditch their babies too, sometimes even killing them off. With the advocates of "FAMILY PLANNING" rejoicing at the murder and slaughter of American babies and women having no hope to survive and support themselves in a financially evil system of banks and taxation manipulators, these are truly TERRIBLE TIMES for pregnant women and nursing mothers – who have FEAR when they have no money and men have to go running scared knowing they can't pay for 20 years of financial hell to support such a decision. I can PROUDLY announce that I have never gotten a woman pregnant and do not EVER ANTICIPATE as a financially broke man to ever get married or encourage marriage, as I am now MARRIED TO HEAVEN rather than to a woman.

- 23. False prophets and Messiahs appear to lead the whole world astray from the Truth.**

**From Romney's false prophet to Obama's Islamic false prophet, from the false prophet Rick Warren to the false prophet Joel Osteen, from the false prophet called: THE POPE to the false prophets of ANY WORLD RELIGION that holds hands and sings Kumbaya around pagan campfires, most Christians do not feel ONE with all these MONEY worshipers.**

- 24. The sun darkens, the moon does not give its light, the stars will fall from the sky, the heavenly bodies will be shaken.**

**We have YET to experience this phase.**

- 25. The sign of the Son of Man will appear in the sky and all the nations of the earth will mourn.**

**This will be THE SECOND COMING. There are NOT TWO RAPTURES! There is ONLY ONE RAPTURE – the Second Coming.**

- 26. The SEVENTH LAST TRUMPET SOUNDS and the rapture of God's People from earth happens as the universe rolls up like a scroll. There was THE FIRST RESURRECTION of the Millennial Reign of Jesus Christ in Heaven and then the RESURRECTION of THE SEVENTH TRUMPET.**

**1Co 15:51 Listen, I tell you a mystery: <sup>d</sup> We will not all sleep, <sup>e</sup> but we will all be changed <sup>f</sup> —**

**1Co 15:52 in a flash, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trumpet. For the trumpet will sound,<sup>g</sup> the dead<sup>h</sup> will be raised imperishable, and we will be changed.**

## **The Seventh Trumpet as “THE LAST TRUMPET?”**

**Rev 11:15 The seventh angel sounded his trumpet,<sup>z</sup> and there were loud voices<sup>a</sup> in heaven, which said: “The kingdom of the world has become the kingdom of our Lord and of his Christ,<sup>b</sup> and he will reign for ever and ever.”<sup>c</sup>**

**Rev 11:16 And the twenty-four elders,<sup>d</sup> who were seated on their thrones before God, fell on their faces<sup>e</sup> and worshiped God,**

**Rev 11:17 saying: “We give thanks<sup>f</sup> to you, Lord God Almighty,<sup>g</sup> the One who is and who was,<sup>h</sup> because you have taken your great power and have begun to reign.”<sup>i</sup>**

**Rev 11:18 The nations were angry;<sup>j</sup> and your wrath has come. The time has come for judging the dead,<sup>k</sup> and for rewarding your servants the prophets<sup>l</sup> and your saints and those who reverence your name, both small and great<sup>m</sup> — and for destroying those who destroy the earth.”**

**Rev 11:19 Then God’s temple<sup>n</sup> in heaven was opened, and within his temple was seen the ark of his covenant.<sup>o</sup> And there came flashes of lightning, rumblings, peals of thunder,<sup>p</sup> an earthquake and a great hailstorm.<sup>q</sup> \_**

**We are CONSIDERING that since the first six trumpets have sounded with God’s wrath on the Earth, to be combined with some of the six seals, that a mid-tribulation RESURRECTION has occurred. If GOD “BRINGS WITH JESUS THOSE WHO HAVE DIED IN HIM” during the SECOND COMING, this means, in combination with the millennium saints who participated in the FIRST RESURRECTION, that a SEVENTH LAST TRUMPET resurrection has**

occurred. We are NOT clear as to whether the seventh trumpet has blasted at the same time the seventh bowl was poured out. Because if the SEVEN TRUMPETS do not occur at the same moments that the SEVEN BOWLS are poured out and we are to take the TRUMPETS at face CHRONOLOGICAL VALUE as occurring BEFORE the seven bowls as separate events in a separate time, then the SEVENTH LAST TRUMPET is a mid-tribulation RESURRECTION. Although some view the SEVENTH TRUMPET as a mid-tribulation rapture of God's saints from the Earth, it is clear that the GRAND CLIMACTIC CONCLUSION of the SECOND COMING has not occurred yet with the seventh last trumpet.

**1Th 4:16** For the Lord himself will come down from heaven,<sup>y</sup> with a loud command, with the voice of the archangel<sup>z</sup> and with the trumpet call of God,<sup>a</sup> and the dead in Christ will rise first.<sup>b</sup>

Scholars have argued and debated for many years whether Jesus will come down at the Seventh Trumpet or just before the seventh bowl. What we do know is that when Jesus Christ raptures last days believers from the earth, the earth that Satan rules with his armies will be destroyed:

**2Th 2:8** And then the lawless one will be revealed,<sup>s</sup> whom the Lord Jesus will overthrow with the breath of his mouth<sup>t</sup> and destroy by the **splendor of his coming.**<sup>u</sup>

**1Th 4:17** After that, we who are still alive and are left<sup>c</sup> **will be caught up together with them in the clouds**<sup>d</sup> to meet the Lord in the air. And so we will be with the Lord<sup>e</sup> forever.

**When people face the trials of the last days they will:**

- A. Not repent and harden their hearts (Revelation 9:20-21)**
- B. Grow cold in their love (Matt. 24:12)**
- C. Worship the spirit of Satan (the dragon), worship the beast out of the sea, listen to the false prophet, and accept the image of the beast as a mark on their foreheads and hands.**
- D. They will believe in the powerful delusion & the lies (2 Thess. 2:9-12)**
- E. They will curse the god of heaven (Rev. 16:11) & not repent of murder, theft, sexual immorality, magic arts, or demon worship (Rev. 9:20-21).**

**The following passages are prophecies from the Bible about how the end of the world will come:**

- 1. "I watched as he opened the sixth seal. THERE WAS A GREAT EARTHQUAKE. The sun turned black like sackcloth made of goat hair, the whole moon turned blood red, and the stars in the sky fell to earth, as late figs drop from a fig tree when shaken by a strong wind. The sky receded like a scroll, rolling up, and every mountain and island was removed from its place (Revelation 6:12-14)."**
- 2. "There will be signs in the sun, moon and stars. On the earth, nations will be in anguish and perplexity at the roaring and tossing of the sea. Men will faint from terror, apprehensive of what is coming on the world, for the heavenly bodies will be shaken. AT THAT TIME they will see the Son of Man coming in a cloud with power and great glory. WHEN THESE THINGS BEGIN TO TAKE PLACE, STAND UP and lift up your heads, because your redemption is drawing near." (Luke 21:25-28)**
- 3. "Then I saw a great white throne and him who was seated on it. Earth and sky fled from his presence, and there was no place for them (Revelation 20:11)."**

4. **"Then there came flashes of lightning, rumblings, peals of thunder AND A SEVERE EARTHQUAKE. No earthquake like it has ever occurred since man has been on earth so tremendous was the quake. THE GREAT CITY split into three parts, AND THE CITIES OF THE NATIONS COLLAPSED. EVERY ISLAND FLED AWAY AND THE MOUNTAINS COULD NOT BE FOUND (Rev. 16:18-20)."**
5. **"But the day of the Lord will come like a thief. The heavens will disappear with a roar; the elements will be destroyed by fire, and the earth and everything in it will be laid bare. That day will bring about the destruction of the heavens by fire, and the elements will melt in the heat. But in keeping with his promise we are looking forward to a new heaven and a new earth, the home of righteousness (2 Peter 3:10-13)."**
6. **"Men will flee to caves in the rocks and to holes in the ground from dread of the Lord and the splendor of his majesty when he rises to shake the earth. They will flee to caverns in the rocks and to the overhanging crags from dread of the Lord and the splendor of his majesty when he rises to shake the earth (Isaiah 2:19 & 21)."**
7. **"Then the kings of the earth, the princes, the generals, the rich, the mighty, and every slave and free man hid in caves and among the rocks of the mountains. They called to the mountains and the rocks, 'Fall on us and hide us from the face of him who sits on the throne and from the wrath of the Lamb! For the great day of their wrath has come, and who can stand?' (Revelation 6:15-16)"**
8. **"This is what the Lord Almighty says: 'In a little while I will once more shake the heavens and the earth, the sea and the dry land. I will shake all nations, and the desired of the nations will come, and I will fill this house with glory, says the Lord Almighty.'" (Haggai 2:6-7)"**
9. **"The great day of the Lord is near – near and coming quickly. Listen! The cry on the day of the Lord will be bitter, the shouting of the warrior there. That day will be a day of wrath, a day of distress and anguish, a day of trouble and ruin, a day of darkness and gloom, a day of clouds and blackness, a day of trumpet and battle cry against the corner towers. I will bring distress on the people and they will walk like blind men, because they have sinned against the Lord. Neither their silver nor their gold will be able to save them on the day of the Lord's wrath. In the fire of his jealousy the whole world will be consumed, for he will make a sudden end of all who live in the earth." (Zephaniah 1:14-18)"**

- 10. "I will sweep away everything from the face of the earth, declares the Lord. I will sweep away both men and animals; I will sweep away the birds of the air and the fish of the sea. The wicked will have only heaps of rubble when I cut off man from the face of the earth." (Zephaniah 1:2-3)**
- 11. "Sun and moon stood still in the heavens at the glint of your flying arrows, at the lightning of your flashing spear. In wrath you strode through the earth and in anger you threshed the nations. You came out to deliver your people, and to save your anointed one. You crushed the leader of the land of wickedness, you stripped him from head to foot." (Habakkuk 3:11-13)**
- 12. "Look! The Lord is coming from his dwelling place; he comes down and treads the high places of the earth. The mountains melt beneath him and the valleys split apart, like wax before the fire, like water rushing down a slope." (Micah 1:3-4)**
- 13. "Multitudes, multitudes in the valley of decision! For the day of the Lord is near in the valley of decision. The sun and moon will be darkened, and the stars no longer shine. The Lord will roar from Zion and thunder from Jerusalem; the earth and the sky will tremble. But the Lord will be a refuge for his people, a stronghold for the people of Israel." (Joel 3:14-16)**
- 14. "I will show wonders in the heavens and on the earth, blood and fire and billows of smoke. The sun will be turned to darkness and the moon to blood before the coming of the great and dreadful day of the Lord. And everyone who calls on the name of the Lord will be saved, for on Mount Zion and in Jerusalem there will be deliverance, as the Lord has said, among the survivors whom the Lord calls." (Joel 2:30-32)**
- 15. "Blow the trumpet in Zion; sound the alarm on my holy hill. Let all who live in the land tremble, for the day of the Lord is coming. It is close at hand – a day of darkness and gloom, a day of clouds and blackness. Like dawn spreading across the mountains a large and mighty army comes, such as never was of old nor ever will be in ages to come. Before them fire devours, behind them a flame blazes. Before them the earth shakes, the sky trembles, the sun and moon are darkened, and the stars no longer shine. The Lord thunders at the head of his army, his forces are beyond number, and mighty are those who obey his command. The day of the Lord is great; it is dreadful. Who can endure it?" (Joel 2:1-3 & 10-11)**
- 16. "See, the Lord is coming with fire, and his chariots are like a whirlwind; he will bring down his anger with fury, and his rebuke with flames of fire.**



**For with fire and with his sword the Lord will execute judgment upon all men, and many will be those slain by the Lord.” (Isaiah 66:15-16)**

- 17. “For a long time I have kept silent, I have been quiet and held myself back. But now, like a woman in childbirth, I cry out, I gasp and pant. I will lay waste the mountains and hills and dry up all their vegetation; I will turn rivers into islands and dry up the pools.” (Isaiah 42:14-15)**
- 18. “All the stars of the heavens will be dissolved and the sky rolled up like a scroll; all the starry host will fall like withered leaves from the vine, like shriveled figs from the fig tree.” (Isaiah 34:4)**
- 19. “Suddenly, in an instant the Lord Almighty will come with thunder and earthquake and great noise, with windstorm and tempest and flames of a devouring fire.” (Isaiah 29:5-6)**
- 20. “The floodgates of the heavens are opened, the foundations of the earth shake. The earth is broken up, the earth is split asunder, the earth is thoroughly shaken. The earth reels like a drunkard, it sways like a hut in the wind; so heavy upon it is the guilt of its rebellion that it falls – never to rise again.” (Isaiah 24:18-20).**
- 21. “See, the day of the Lord is coming – a cruel day, with wrath and fierce anger—to make the land desolate and destroy the sinners within it. The stars of heaven and their constellations will not show their light. I will punish the world for its evil, the wicked for their sins. I will put an end to the arrogance of the haughty and will humble the pride of the ruthless. I will make man scarcer than pure gold, more rare than the gold of Ophir. Therefore I will make the heavens tremble; and the earth will shake from its place at the wrath of the Lord Almighty, in the day of his burning anger.” (Isaiah 13:9-13).**

**There are some significant similarities that should be recognized when we observe the seals, the trumpets, and the bowls together as either the same events written differently, or three separate phases.**

**Revelation 9:13-21 describes the 6<sup>th</sup> trumpet; Revelation 16:12-16 describes the 6<sup>th</sup> bowl; and Revelation 6:12-17 describes the 6<sup>th</sup> Seal. These all highlight the end of the world within different chapters and blend together to form the same message. The 6 Seals, 6 trumpets, and 6 bowls may not be things that occur in separate stages. Most scholars look at them as three separate stages of the tribulation.**

**6 seals plus 6 trumpets plus 6 bowls equals the wrath of God completed against the beast, the false prophet, and against God's Adversary in the last days. All three sixes might be describing the same event in different ways with more or less details and John might have been seeing the same event repeating itself with different details added or subtracted.**

**Let's compare the seals, the trumpets, and the bowls:**

**"It said to the 6<sup>th</sup> angel who had the trumpet, 'Release the four angels who are bound at the great river Euphrates'." (Rev. 9:14)**

**"The 6<sup>th</sup> angel poured out his bowl on the great river Euphrates and its water was dried up to prepare the way for the kings FROM THE EAST." (Rev. 16:12)**

**"And the four angels who had been kept ready were released to kill a third of mankind. The number of mounted troops was 200 million. I heard their number." (Rev. 9:15-16)**

**"Then they gathered the kings together to the place that in Hebrew is called Armageddon." (Rev. 16:16)**

**The strange part of Revelation 9:14-16 is that as soon as these 4 angels are recorded as being kept ready for a certain period of time to kill a third of mankind, the 4 angels suddenly vanish into a number of mounted troops numbering 200 million and John heard the number of troops gathered together in this huge military.**

**Geographically speaking, the Euphrates River runs straight through modern Iraq and Syria. A huge military gathering together across Iraq and Syria involves 'the kings from the east,' perhaps the Middle East after the Euphrates River is dried up.**

**Could the Persian Gulf Wars of 1991 and 2003 have fulfilled this or do we have to blow up Iraq off the face of the earth for this prophesy to be fulfilled?**

**It sounds like American troops and the new Iraqi government may experience the unleashing of a Weapon of Mass Destruction, which might cause Israel to use their SAMSON OPTION.**

**The 6<sup>th</sup> bowl of God's Wrath is poured by the 6<sup>th</sup> angel of Rev. 16:12. The spirits of demons perform miraculous signs, as in the KEY OF SOLOMON, and just as the angel who appeared to Muhammad did, and the kings of the whole world, influenced by these spirits, gather together for the battle of**

**Armageddon. An event causes the kings from the east to form together for a great battle against Israel during the last days and in the process the Euphrates River is dried up.**

**If the Euphrates River literally dries up one of several things could cause this: A severe famine. Nuclear bombs from the U.S. and Israel and the Nations of Europe wiping Iraq off the face of the earth and the Muslims in the Middle East in the surrounding nations retaliate in an all out bloodbath war. We could interpret the Persian Gulf War of 1991, which dried up Iraq with sanctions which caused the people to suffer and starve. Perhaps in retaliation for the United States Global Occupation of Arab lands, a weapon of mass destruction will be released so that the Euphrates River dries up, an action causing the Eastern kingdoms to gather together for the final world war.**

**The first five bowls of Revelation 16 indicate that the beast had already risen up and is finally suffering God's Wrath. We go back further to Revelation 14:9-11 which says – "A third angel followed them and said in a loud voice: 'If anyone worships the beast and his image and receives his mark on the forehead or on the hand, he, too, will drink the wine of God's fury, which has been poured full strength into the cup of his wrath. He will be tormented with burning sulfur in the presence of the holy angels and of the Lamb. There is no rest day or night for those who worship the beast and his image, or for anyone who receives the mark of his name.'"**

**Before Chapter 12 in Revelation, the seven seals brought the end of the world. However, the six trumpets also bring the end of the world. It appears that Revelation repeats the same story three times with different details and different descriptions, but they all conclude how the end of the world will come about and it will begin with the Middle East.**

**The 6<sup>th</sup> Seal of Revelation 6:12-14 might actually begin with the first trumpet of Revelation 8:7 and the first bowl of Revelation 16:2. Revelation 8 & 9 either connect with Revelation 16 and are the same message written differently, or the 7 trumpets happen before the 7 plagues which complete the wrath of God.**

**If we compare the 7 trumpets with the 7 bowls, there is only slight differences in the wording. The sixth trumpet of the four angels being released could be the first four angelic trumpets sounded and the first four bowls of the wrath of God poured out simultaneously. For example:**

**“The second angel sounded his trumpet, and something like a huge mountain all ablaze was thrown INTO THE SEA. A third of the sea turned into blood, a third of the living creatures in the sea died, and a third of the ships were destroyed.” (Rev. 8:8-9)**

**“The second angel poured out his bowl ON THE SEA, and it turned into blood like that of a dead man, and every living thing in the sea died.” (Revelation 16:3)**

**“The third angel sounded his trumpet, and a great star, blazing like a torch, fell from the sky on a third of the rivers and on a third of the springs of water – the name of the star is Wormwood. A third of the waters turned bitter.” (Rev. 8:10-11)**

**“The third angel poured out his bowl on the rivers and springs of water, and they became blood.” (Rev. 16:4)**

**“The fourth angel sounded his trumpet, and a third of the sun was struck, a third of the moon, and a third of the stars, so that a third of them turned dark. A third of the day was without light and also a third of the night.” (Revelation 8:12)**

**“The fourth angel poured out his bowl on the sun, and the sun was given power to scorch people with fire. They were seared by the intense heat and they cursed the name of God, who had control over these plagues, but they refused to repent and glorify him.” (Revelation 16:8)**

**The fifth trumpet brings the darkening of the sun and sky from smoke out of the abyss from which people are tortured by locusts that emanate from the smoke, while the fifth bowl pours out on the throne of the beast whose kingdom is plunged into total darkness and men gnaw their tongues in agony because of their pains and sores. The seven trumpets and seven bowls are the period in which, “Men will faint from terror, apprehensive of what is coming on the world.”**

**As for the 5<sup>th</sup> trumpet and the 5<sup>th</sup> bowl, there have been several interpretations for what these verses could mean.**

**What are the locusts of the 5<sup>th</sup> trumpet? Are they literally huge insects the size of cars? Are they an alien culture that will war against the Starship Troopers? Are they simply little locusts of a new breed? Are they an army of peoples from a certain nation? There is a possibility that these locusts might neither be locusts in the form of insects, nor an army of people, but a series of microscopic parasites that will feed on human flesh in the form of a virus.**

**These locusts could be an incurable virus lasting five months. People will either die or not die from this locust virus. This virus could spread worldwide or it may be quarantined in the Middle East for the worshiper of Allah.**

**“The fifth angel poured out his bowl on the throne of the beast and his kingdom was plunged into darkness.” (Rev. 16:10)**

**“When he opened the Abyss, smoke rose from it like the smoke of a gigantic furnace. The sun and sky were darkened by the smoke from the Abyss.” (Rev. 9:2-3)**

**Notice the parallels?**

**Revelation 16:10 says – “Men gnawed their tongues in agony.”**

**Revelation 9:5 says – ‘And the agony they suffered was like that of the sting of a scorpion when it strikes a man.’**

**These locusts will feed on human flesh after arising from a great smoke in the Middle East. They will feed on human flesh rather than on the land and they will completely spread across the kingdom of the beast and the false prophet as a new form of germ warfare. These locusts (or parasites that sting human flesh) will cause the men of the empire to gnaw their tongues in agony and because of their pains and sores they will curse the name of the God of Israel.**

**If these locusts are really microscopic parasites, then the reason for their description in Revelation 9:7-10 becomes evidently clear. These locusts are never mentioned in size, but only in likeness, so if the Starship Trooper invasion theory can be tossed, then their size could be microscopic. The parasites would be prepared for battle against human flesh as they are airborne from the darkening sun and sky, which are darkened by a certain smoke that will be the source of the living parasites. Perhaps smoke from active volcanoes could trigger this massive plague upon human flesh since the locusts come from the abyss – a bottomless pit either located under the earth or in outer space. These locusts wear crowns of gold because their authority over man’s flesh will be victorious. These parasites, whether they’re microscopic organisms that can’t be killed or whether they’re literally the size of locusts, they shall trample the flesh of human kind. If their faces resemble human faces it could be possible that this flesh eating bacteria could spread to human faces which will all ‘gnaw their tongues in agony.’ They are a human disease infesting human flesh. Just like the organism in the movie **OUTBREAK** starring Dustin Hoffman, these strands of locusts could be a new virus that will destroy many people. There could be**

**accusations among the nations as to who triggers this plague and the inhabitants of the earth could be deceived into believing that Israel had launched a bomb of germ warfare. This would bring the 200 million troops from the east into a great battle against Israel. So many people will be tortured by this terrible plague, Israel may be the scapegoat of blame among the nations if she detonates one of her germ warfare bombs.**

**The locusts could also be nuclear warheads that create particles of harmful radiation that eats away at the flesh of their enemies who will gather their armies together against them. Perhaps we could include germ warfare in this prophesy? The bodies of the locusts will be strong like iron that can't be broken by any remedy and these parasites will spread like an invading army on the kingdom of the beast. Then the 6<sup>th</sup> trumpet and the 6<sup>th</sup> bowl have a motive for rising up against Israel to surround her in order to destroy her. The leader of this terrible army will be the adversary of God's People. "But fire came down from heaven and devoured them. And the devil, who deceived them, was thrown into the lake of burning sulfur where the beast and the false prophet had been thrown." (Rev. 20:9-10)**

**The outbreak of locusts will cause severe agony like the sting of a scorpion, but this sting will be incurable and chronic, and will last 5 months. These parasites will have tails and stings like scorpions and they will cause an outbreak of sores and pains. These locusts will eat the flesh of kings, generals, mighty men and small men, horses & their riders, and the flesh of all people. The sting of death these locusts cause will be a slow death.**

**The king who rules over the people infected by the outbreak of locusts will be the angel of the Abyss whose name in Hebrew is Abaddon and in Greek Apollyon and in English SATAN. Even though this plague strikes the Middle East, people will still not repent of their sins.**

**The hard-heartedness of Pharoah Ramses, king of Egypt, will be the same hard heartedness of mankind in the final last days. People will refuse to recognize the mystery of God, except of course, the elect, who are still alive and are left until the coming of the Lord. The hard-heartedness of Pharoah and his officials during Moses' ministry is the very same hardness of heart that will transpire in the final last days.**

**People will shut their eyes and ears to John's Revelation and will scoff at the remaining Christians and Jews of the world for believing that the disasters which have yet to occur are of God. Deception will reign superior as either false or true accusations are hurled against Israel and the armies gather together to plot her destruction. When the elect, God's chosen people**

**who have the spiritual seal of His Name and the Name of His Chosen Messiah written on their hearts and minds, attempt to explain that the Book of Revelation is unfolding, people will scoff at them and disregard their prophetic voices of doom. Powerful delusions will deceive earth's inhabitants into accepting, approving, or joining the forces that plot to surround Israel. The Satan, the beast, and the false prophet will be successful until the time of wrath is completed. When the time of wrath is completed, they will have been destroyed by fire as well as all those nations who plotted against Israel and her chosen children.**

**There are some astounding similarities between the history of Exodus and the future of Revelation:**

**Exodus 7:14-24 is about a plague of blood.**

**Revelation 8:8 and 16:3-4 is about a plague of blood.**

**Exodus 9:8-12 is about a plague of boils.**

**Revelation 16:2 is a plague of painful sores.**

**Exodus 9:23-26 is a plague of hail, fire, & blood.**

**Revelation 8:7 is a plague of hail, fire & blood.**

**Exodus 10:21-29 is a plague of darkness.**

**Revelation 16:10-11 is a plague of darkness.**

**Exodus 10:1-19 is a plague of locusts.**

**Revelation 9:1-10 is a plague of locusts.**

**The Revelation plagues mirror the plagues that were sent against Egypt during God's Deliverance of Israel from slavery.**

**The very same kinds of plagues that struck Israel's adversaries in Egypt so long ago, will strike the inhabitants of the entire earth during the last days on a global scale. The hard heart of Pharoah is a perfect description of the hard hearts of the whole world community during the final end – the hour of trial that is coming to test those who live on the earth. Those who call upon the name of the Lord, the God of Israel, during those days will be saved. The same plagues that struck Israel's enemies at about 1446 B.C. will strike the whole world when the final enemies of Israel try to take their stand against the Lord's anointed ones.**

**The six trumpets and the six bowls could come in a variety of forms: Meteors, comets, erupting volcanoes, nuclear bombs, tidal waves, earthquakes, tornadoes, thunderstorms, plagues, cosmic shifting, germ warfare, etc.**

**In conclusion, as the words of 2 Peter 3:11-12 says – “Since everything will be destroyed in this way, what kind of people ought you to be? You ought to live holy and godly lives as you look forward to the day of God and speed its coming.”**

## **THE 144,000 AND THE TRIBULATION SAINTS BETWEEN THE 6<sup>TH</sup> & 7<sup>TH</sup> SEALS**

**One reason for believing that the 7 trumpets do not get blasted chronologically after the 7<sup>th</sup> Seal has been broken is because of the 144,000 Jews who are sealed, and the tribulation saints who are resurrected between the 6<sup>th</sup> Seal and the 7<sup>th</sup> Seal. I believe that the 7 Seals of Revelation Chapters 6 and 7 conclude the end of the world. I believe we can separate the 7 Seals from the 7 trumpets as a mirror. There are three sevens – 7 Seals + 7 trumpets + 7 bowls. They are a three-dimensional mirror of each other, telling the same exact story in 3 different ways. The reason for believing this is found in Revelation 7:14 where the multitudes in white robes standing before the throne and in front of the Lamb are described as: “They WHO HAVE COME OUT OF THE GREAT TRIBULATION.”**

**We have learned that “THE GREAT TRIBULATION” hasn’t occurred until the 7 bowls of God’s Wrath. Also, we had concluded the end of the world with the opening of the 6<sup>th</sup> Seal, which mirrors the 6<sup>th</sup> bowl almost word for word:**

**Let’s look at the 6<sup>th</sup> Seal and the 7<sup>th</sup> bowl once again, side by side:**

**Revelation 6:12-14 – “I watched as he opened the 6<sup>th</sup> Seal There was a great earthquake. The sun turned black like sackcloth made of goat hair [GOODBYE MASONIC GOD!], the whole moon turned blood red, and the stars in the sky fell to earth...The sky receded like a scroll rolling up, and every mountain and island was removed from its place.”**

**Revelation 16:17-21 says – “The seventh angel poured out his bowl into the air and out of the temple came a loud voice from the throne saying, “It is finished!” Then there came flashes of lightning, rumblings, peals of thunder**



**and a severe earthquake. No earthquake like it has ever occurred since man has been on the earth, so tremendous was the quake...The cities of the nations collapsed....Every island fled away and the mountains could not be found. From the sky huge hailstones of about a hundred pounds each fell upon men....”**

**See the similarities? This completely connects with Matthew 24 and Luke 21 accounts of the signs in the sun, moon and stars and Acts 2:20 account of the cosmic signs that happen BEFORE THE COMING OF THE GREAT AND GLORIOUS DAY OF THE LORD.**

**Luke 21 confirms that “MEN WILL FAINT FROM TERROR APPREHENSIVE OF WHAT IS COMING ON THE WORLD FOR THE HEAVENLY BODIES WILL BE SHAKEN.”**

**The 6<sup>th</sup> Seal also shows the reaction of the world leaders to these signs in the sky: “The kings of the earth, the princes, the generals, the rich, the mighty, and every slave and free man hid in caves and among the rocks of the mountains. They called to the mountains and to the rocks, “FALL ON US AND HIDE US FROM THE FACE OF HIM WHO SITS ON THE THRONE and from the wrath of the Lamb! For the great day of their wrath has come, and who can stand?”**

**Revelation 1:7 shows us the reaction of the nations, “Look, he is coming with the clouds, and every eye will see him, even those who pierced him, and ALL THE PEOPLES OF THE EARTH WILL MOURN BECAUSE OF HIM.”**

**We must also understand that the FIRST SIX TRUMPETS AND FIRST SIX BOWLS of God’s Wrath could all happen within the margin of the 6<sup>th</sup> Seal. In other words, it could take the whole 7 years for the 6<sup>th</sup> Seal to be completed. Before we arrive at the 7<sup>th</sup> bowl, the first six trumpets will already have been blasted and the first 6 bowls will have been poured out.**

**Therefore, the signs in the skies and upon the earth, could happen within a 7-year time frame. This will be the ultimate Judgment and Wrath against those who have worshipped and tolerated the false god who has stood on the Temple Mount. Everyone who has accepted the name of the GOD-BEAST in Jerusalem is going to anticipate terror, fear, and dread when the Lord rises to shake the earth and destroy the kingdom of the beast and all those who accepted his name in their foreheads, their minds, their hearts and with the strength of their hands.**

**Therefore, for the 144,00 to be sealed between the 6<sup>th</sup> Seal and the 7<sup>th</sup> Seal, could mean one of several things:**

- 1. The 144,000 are sealed by God, not after, but before the 6<sup>th</sup> Seal, even though they come in after the 6<sup>th</sup> Seal.**
- 2. THE TRIBULATION SAINTS had already been resurrected BEFORE THE 7<sup>TH</sup> Seal and had to have come out of the TRIBULATION of the 6<sup>th</sup> Seal. So these saints had to have died somewhere in the 6 trumpets or the 6 bowls, which would all happen within the judgment of the 6<sup>th</sup> Seal.**
- 3. The 144,000 Jews are sealed upon the earth as those who will die at the wrath of God but be resurrected immediately into heaven.**
- 4. The 144,000 Jews are resurrected into heaven with the tribulation saints after the 7 trumpets, in either MID-TRIB or POST-TRIB.**

**The evidence that the 144,000 Jews are sealed upon the earth before the 6 trumpets have sounded is found in Revelation 7:2-3 which says –“The angel came from the east calling out in a loud voice to the angels who had been power to harm the land and the sea: ‘Do not harm the land or the sea or the trees UNTIL we put a seal on the foreheads of the servants of our God.’”**

**It is within the first four trumpets that we see the first four angels harm the land and the sea and the trees by striking a third of everything down. So these are people who are going to die in the 7 trumpet blasts and come OUT OF THE GREAT TRIBULATION. They who HAVE COME OUT OF THE GREAT TRIBULATION, could be those MILLENNIUM SAINTS recorded in Revelation 20:4-6, resurrected in MID-TRIB AT THE 7<sup>TH</sup> TRUMPET BLAST.**

**Therefore, in the 30 minute period of silence in heaven after the 7<sup>th</sup> Seal is broken, we are reflecting on the future saints who are about to die. These 144,000 Jews and the countless multitudes in white robes who are about to die and be resurrected during the tribulation of the beast’s downfall, we have already noted in the 5<sup>th</sup> Seal that there were saints who had been killed who are told to wait a little bit longer until the number of their fellow servants and brothers WHO WERE TO BE KILLED AS THEY HAD BEEN was completed. We can clearly identify that several believers will come out of the great tribulation and even 144,000 Israelites from the 12 tribes of Israel will be given the SEAL OF GOD, before the first 4 angels of the 7 trumpets begin to harm the land, the sea and the trees.**

**A break in the trumpets, a physical distinction is made between the 4<sup>th</sup> angel with the 4<sup>th</sup> trumpet and the 5<sup>th</sup> angel with the fifth trumpet in Revelation 8:13 – “I heard an eagle that was flying in midair call out in a loud voice: ‘Woe! Woe! Woe to the inhabitants of the earth, because of the**

**trumpet blasts about to be sounded by the other three angels!” Here we find that the first 4 angels of the first 4 trumpets had harmed the land, the sea, and the trees and the Earth was about to be doomed by the last three trumpets.**

**Therefore, to interpret the 144,000 and the MULTITUDE WHO CAME OUT OF THE GREAT TRIBULATION correctly, we need to resolve that these events are not in chronological order, as we should assume since these symbolic dreams would have double-triple-hidden meanings, working like trigonometry or a 3-dimensional mirror. In Revelation 7:1 and 7:9 we read the words: “AFTER THIS” which may not mean that these events happen RIGHT AFTER THIS, but that after John saw the previous things he saw these events which might not be in a timely chronological order.**

**I would conclude that the 7 trumpets and 7 bowls would all be included within Matthew 24 and Luke 21, as well as Acts 2:20 and Revelation 6:12-17. All of these happen at the same time and cannot be treated as separate events.**

**The first six trumpets could sound at the same time the 7 bowls are poured out and they both could happen within the 6<sup>th</sup> Seal! Or, the first six trumpets could sound within the first 3 ½ years of the tribulation and the 7 bowls within the last 3 ½ years of the tribulation.**

**Now if we are going to assume anything as being PRE-TRIB, then we could assume that the Kingdom of the Beast was set up BEFORE THE WRATH OF GOD HAS BEEN POURED OUT.**

**Now the reason why we should separate the 7 trumpets from the 7 bowls is because the world is not destroyed completely by the first six trumpets.**

**Revelation 9:20-21 says – “THE REST OF MANKIND THAT WERE NOT KILLED BY THESE PLAGUES STILL DID NOT REPENT OF THE WORK OF THEIR HANDS.”**

**Despite a third of the world being destroyed, THE WORLD IS STILL NOT REPENTING, therefore, we can assume that the 7 bowls are the completion of God’s Wrath, due to the unrepentant world practicing an INTER-FAITH pagan worship. We also find that the two witnesses are killed before the 7<sup>th</sup> trumpet has sounded. So as the Gentiles trample on the Holy City for 1,260 days, this 3 ½ years that God’s two witnesses prophesy is the period of the first six trumpets and in MID-TRIB, the beast whose kingdom has already been established, attacks them, overpowers them and kills them. We know**

**that THE BEAST DOES NOT APPEAR UNTIL REVELATION 13, 16, 17, 18, & 19. So these Chapters had to have occurred before and during the REIGN of the beast.**

**In Revelation 11:12 after the two witnesses were killed and resurrected, "THEIR ENEMIES LOOKED ON."**

**The reaction of the world to these events is rather puzzling. It can only mean that people will be so deluded, that the VISIBLE SIGNS THEY ARE WITNESSING OVER THE COURSE OF TIME are probably explained as NATURAL PHENOMENON. It is also clear that WAR IS WAGED AGAINST THE LAMB as described in Revelation 13. So a real spirit war against Israel, the God of Israel and Jesus Christ is waged with a spirit of lawlessness and anarchy such as the world has never known. People will NOT REPENT, despite what happens as the world is being destroyed. The psychological profile of the world after THE TWO TOWERS FELL in September 11, 2001, was not one of repentance but of the kind of insanity that echoes Revelation 9:20-21.**

**I believe that Revelation 12, 13, 17, 18, 19, and 20 will happen BEFORE and DURING the GREAT TRIBULATION of the 7 trumpets and 7 bowls of God's Wrath. The victory for the saints is RESURRECTION before and during the Tribulation and a RAPTURE at the SECOND COMING, after the cosmos are shaken up. Yes, the REMAINING CHRISTIANS AND JEWS will be RAPTURED while their enemies shall surely BE LEFT BEHIND and this is why the beast's last pathetic attempt to hurt and oppress God's Children will fail, because they will overcome him by the blood of the Lamb and the Words of their testimony. "EVERYONE WHO CALLS ON THE NAME OF THE LORD WILL BE SAVED."**

## **THE TWENTY-FOUR THRONES OF ELDERS – Revelation Chapter 4**

**In Revelation 4, John was invited to visit Heaven with an imagery that resembled Jacob's dream of "The Gate/Stairway/Ladder to Heaven" in Genesis 28:10-19.**

**Revelation 4:2-4, 10-11 says - "There before me was a throne in heaven with someone sitting on it [JESUS]....Surrounding the throne were twenty-four other thrones, and seated on them were twenty-four elders. They were dressed in white and had crowns of gold on their heads...The twenty-four elders fell down before him who sits on the throne, and worship him who lives forever and ever. They lay their crowns before the throne and say,**

**"You are worthy, our Lord and God,  
to receive glory and honor and power,  
for you created all things,  
and by your will they were created  
and have their being."**

**Who are these 24-elders?**

**We can be certain of who 12 of these elders are, according to what Jesus said**

**in Matthew 19:28-29.**

**28 And Jesus replied, "When I, the Messiah, shall sit upon my glorious throne in the Kingdom, you my disciples shall certainly sit on twelve thrones judging the twelve tribes of Israel.**

**Matt 19:28 (Living)**

**When did Jesus sit upon his glorious throne in Heaven?**

**Acts 1:9-11 says – "After he spoke to the disciples, Jesus was taken up (RAPTURED) before their very eyes, and a cloud hid him from their sight. The disciples were looking intently up into the sky as he was going, when suddenly two men dressed in white stood beside them. "Men of Galilee," they said, "why do you stand here looking into the sky? This same Jesus,**

**who has been taken from you into heaven, will come back in the same way you have seen him go into heaven.”**

**The next appearance of Jesus can be witnessed through Stephen's eyes in Acts 7:55-56 – “Stephen, full of the Holy Spirit, looked up to heaven and saw the glory of God, and Jesus standing at the right hand of God. “Look!” Stephen said, “I see heaven open and the Son of Man standing at the right hand of God!” In verse 59, as the Jews were stoning him, Stephen prayed, “Lord JESUS, receive my spirit...Lord do not hold this sin against them.”**

**Jesus clearly flew back into heaven and Stephen was the next person to see Jesus sit enthroned in Heaven AT the RIGHT hand of God. The next person after Stephen to see Jesus was Saul in Acts 9:1-11. “As Paul neared Damascus on his journey, suddenly a light from heaven flashed around him....’I am Jesus whom you are persecuting....”**

**From this point we don't see Jesus appear again until the Book of Revelation unfolds. Revelation 1 shows Jesus sitting enthroned in Heaven.**

**When Jesus told his disciples that once he sat down at the right hand of God, they too would sit on Thrones of Judgment, I have no problems with believing that the Millennial Reign of Christ began in Heaven during John's generation. John clearly saw 24 thrones set up next to Jesus, and therefore, we can assume that by the time John saw these visions, the twelve disciples had died on Earth already and were immediately resurrected into Heaven.**

**This idea could be problematic, but if Jesus died and rose again only 3 days later, then perhaps he resurrected His disciples immediately as well. Perhaps the other twelve seats, were the twelve sons of Jacob who started the birth of the twelve tribes of Israel.**

**The facts are: During the lifetime of his disciples, Jesus returned to the Throne of God in Heaven. He was seen immediately after His resurrection for a 40-day period on earth and then he flew into Heaven. From this point we can assume that in Heaven, Jesus began His new rule in Heaven at the Right Hand of God. When Stephen prayed to Jesus to receive his spirit, it is possible that Stephen's spirit could have been immediately accepted into heaven.**

**Therefore, when John entered Heaven during his generation, the twenty-four thrones had already been established. Unless, John was entering into the more distant future, long after his generation, perhaps on Judgment Day? We haven't arrived at Judgment Day yet, so what John sees**

**after Revelation 4, must have been during the future days of life on Earth and the Millennial Reign of Christ in Heaven occurring as the symbolic events of the earth unfolded.**

**In Revelation 4, the seven seals had not been introduced yet, nor opened yet, so whatever time frame John entered Heaven, was before the TRIBULATION SEALS were unsealed by Jesus.**

**After John had seen the twenty-four thrones next to God's Throne, Revelation 4:5 says – "From the throne came flashes of lightning, rumblings and peals of thunder..."**

**It is in Revelation 5 that we can possibly see the fulfillment of Daniel 7:9-10 which says –"THRONES WERE SET IN PLACE, and the Ancient of Days took his seat." This is what Stephen had seen, the Ancient of Days on his seat. John sees in Revelation 1:13-14 – "Someone like a son of man dressed in a robe reaching down to his feet. His head and hair were white like wool, as white as snow, and his eyes were like blazing fire." Daniel saw similar attributes in Daniel 7:9- "His clothing was as white as snow; the hair of his head was white like wool. His throne was flaming with fire, and its wheels all ablaze. A river of fire was flowing, coming out from before him. Thousands upon thousands attended him, ten thousand times ten thousand stood before him. The court was seated, and the books were opened."**

**The next event, after seeing Jesus being white like wool, John also saw thousands upon thousands attending Jesus and ten thousand times 10 thousand standing before him.**

**"Then I looked, and I heard the voice of many angels around the throne, the living creatures, and the elders; and the number of them was ten thousand times ten thousand, and thousands of thousands,**

**12 saying with a loud voice: "Worthy is the Lamb who was slain To receive power and riches and wisdom, And strength and honor and glory and blessing!"**

**13 And every creature which is in heaven and on the earth and under the earth and such as are in the sea, and all that are in them, I heard saying: "Blessing and honor and glory and power *Be* to Him who sits on the throne, And to the Lamb, forever and ever!"**

**14 Then the four living creatures said, "Amen!" And the twenty-four elders fell down and worshiped Him who lives forever and ever. Rev 5:11-14 (NKJV)**

**10,000 multiplied by 10,000 equals 100,000 people and thousands upon thousands MIGHT have been 44,000. So what Daniel had seen could have been the same event John saw. Immediately after the 6 seals of Revelation 6 had been opened, John saw 144,000 Jews from the 12 tribes of Israel given the Seal of God and after this seal is placed on the 144,000, John's vision is expanded to include those countless multitudes who came out of the great tribulation of the six seals.**

**The court of Heaven that John had seen in Revelation 4 was clearly seated, the 24-thrones had already been set in place, and books were opened. This first book, in Revelation 5 was the scroll of the seven seals of God's Judgment on Earth's inhabitants, the unsealing of a document showing the TRIBULATIONS of the epoch periods for the last days of life on earth.**

**John witnessed that the COURT and THE THRONES had already been set in place before and during the Tribulation of the Seven Seals.**

**The evidence that the elders and the ten thousand times ten thousand in Revelation were set up BEFORE the unsealing of the seven seals, that they all had already been resurrected into Heaven before the first SEAL of God's Judgment was opened by Jesus:**

**After the 6<sup>th</sup> Seal has been opened to destroy the entire world, we discover 144,000 Jews given the Seal of God between the 6<sup>th</sup> and 7<sup>th</sup> Seal. We also see countless multitudes standing in heaven just before the 7<sup>th</sup> Seal is opened.**

**"8 Now when Jesus had taken the scroll, the four living creatures and the twenty-four elders fell down before the Lamb, each having a harp, and golden bowls full of incense, which are the prayers of the saints.**

**9 And they sang a new song, saying: "You are worthy to take the scroll, And to open its seals; For You were slain, And have redeemed us to God by Your blood Out of every tribe and tongue and people and nation, 10 And have made us kings and priests to our God; And we shall reign on the earth." Rev 5:8-10 (NKJV)**

**The last sentence – "You have made them to be a kingdom and priests to serve our God and they will reign on the earth," could mean that people from every tribe and language and nation would reign with Christ on the earth as the Ministry of the Gospel spread through the Disciples of Jesus. Or, this could mean a more distant victory, when all of God's Children would reign on the New Earth after the Judgment was completed. However, the**



**only people to be reigning with Christ in their hearts on the earth, were the disciples of the Book of Acts and the New Testament saints spanning throughout all generations.**

**John sees that each elder in Heaven was holding a harp and they were holding golden bowls full of incense, which were the prayers of the saints.**

**John could not have been in the Throne Room on Judgment Day, because Judgment Day would occur after the 6 Seals had been opened.**

**So he wasn't in that future yet. However, he would witness the unsealing of the seven seals, the blowing of the seven trumpets and the outpouring of the seven bowls. He would witness the whole drama of what he wrote down.**

**He saw these things first and afterwards wrote them down, so we must ask:**

- 1. Was John in Heaven during the 1<sup>st</sup> Century A.D.?**
- 2. Was John in Heaven, just before the 7-LAST YEARS TRIBULATION?**
- 3. Was John in Heaven, during the 7-LAST YEARS TRIBULATION?**
- 4. Was John in Heaven, after the 7-LAST YEARS TRIBULATION?**
- 5. Did God allow John to travel through time in his 1<sup>st</sup> Century Body?**
- 6. Was the physical body of John on Earth or in Heaven?**
- 7. Did John receive this Revelation through dreams? This explanation sounds more logical. This was a REVELATION given to John by the Power of the Holy Spirit while his body was asleep on earth and his spirit was dreaming..**

**Each prophet was always given a Revelation of the future in their dreams and visions, but they never physically left earth. Elijah and Enoch left the Earth physically in a physical rapture in which they were taken up to Heaven without dying, however, most of the prophets such as Ezekiel and Daniel were still on Earth while receiving dream revelations from God on Earth.**

**Nobody knows how the God of Israel could carry people away into the future within their dreams. The whole phenomenon of seeing the future through dreams and visions is still an unexplained mystery. In fact, the scientific knowledge for how God did anything in the Bible is still in the realms of the unknown.**

**The Book of Revelation, as John wrote it, could prove that time travel is possible, much like an H.G. Wells novel, only the Divine Source John tapped into was the Creator of the universe who appeared to John as, "THE**

**ALPHA AND THE OMEGA, THE BEGINNING AND THE ENDING.” Whether John traveled through time like H.G. Wells is as mysterious as the man Paul talked about in 2 Corinthians 12.**

**The only real logical explanation is that John traveled into the future through dreams and visions, much like the Prophet Daniel did.**

**I know that I, myself, have the Gift of Prophecy, seeing future events before they happen, but I can’t explain HOW they happen. My body has always been here on earth while fast asleep, but the spirit inside of my mind has always been carried away in the Spirit to distant places in the future and when I wake up, remembering the dream, I know that someday these symbolic representations have yet to come true and will come true, but I have no interpretation for what I am seeing until after the event has taken place.**

**I believe that Revelation was meant to work the same way: We won’t know what the symbols mean until we are actually there.**

**Acts 2:17-21 says –**

**“In the last days, God says,**

**I will pour out my spirit on all people.**

**Your sons and daughters will prophesy**

**Your young men will see visions,**

**Your old men will dream dreams.**

**Even on my servants, both men and women,**

**I will pour out my Spirit in those days,**

**And they will prophesy.**

**I will show wonders in the heavens above**

**And signs on the earth below,**

**Blood and fire and billows of smoke.**

**The sun will be turned to darkness**

**And the moon to blood**

**BEFORE THE COMING OF THE GREAT AND GLORIOUS**

## **DAY OF THE LORD.**

**And everyone who calls on the Name of the Lord**

**Will be saved.”**

**NOTICE THE KEY WORDS: BEFORE THE COMING OF THE GREAT AND GLORIOUS DAY OF THE LORD? Matthew 24 confirms Acts 2:20 account of what signs would take place BEFORE THE RAPTURE OF THE SECOND COMING.**

**As for John, he fulfilled these verses as Jesus spoke to him through his dreams and visions, representing the firstfruit of those of us who will be granted the Spiritual Gift of Prophecy.**

**John describes himself in Revelaton 4:1 as being IN THE SPIRIT, so we can know for certain, that John’s body was asleep on earth, but his soul, carried by God’s Holy Spirit, was carried into Heaven, where the future was revealed to him in symbols. When Stephen cried out to Jesus for Jesus to receive his spirit, we can assume that Jesus could have resurrected him in Heaven with a new body for his spiritual body. 1 Corinthians 15 talks about natural bodies and spiritual bodies and how each body is different.**

**Even the Apostle Paul in 2 Corinthians 14:2-4 commented on the uncertainty of John’s rapture into heaven. His comments really seem to apply to John here when he writes, “I know a man in Christ who fourteen years ago was caught up to the third heaven. Whether it was in the body or out of the body I do not know—GOD KNOWS. And I know that this man—whether in the body or apart from the body I do not know, but God knows—was caught up to paradise. He heard inexpressible things, things that man is not permitted to tell.”**

**I believe John was in the Spirit, out of the body, so that he could be in different phases of the Revelation without actually being there. Almost everything is written down in symbols, exactly as how John saw them, so it’s possible that only GOD THE FATHER IN JESUS’ NAME could interpret the symbols He gave John, so that prophecy would become another sign of God’s Mysterious and Awesome Glory. It is glorious that God would comfort mankind and terrify mankind with such images as Revelation reveals, but he gave us tomorrow’s newspaper, not to frighten us, but to simply inform us of what is going to happen on earth and what His response is going to be when they do happen.**

**Isaiah 6, in his prophesy, stated, “IN THE YEAR that King Uzziah died, I saw the Lord seated on a throne, high and exalted, and the train of his robe filled the temple. Above him were seraphs, each with six wings: With two wings they covered their faces, with two they covered their feet, and with two they were flying. And they were calling to one another:**

**“HOLY, HOLY, HOLY, is the Lord Almighty,  
the whole earth is full of his glory.”**

**John, in Revelation 4:4-8, saw and heard the same words recited from the four living creatures who day and night never stopped saying:**

**“HOLY, HOLY, HOLY,  
is the Lord God Almighty,  
who was, and is, and is to come.”**

**The indication of the four living creatures singing “day and night” non-stop, is an indication that they are ruling with Christ in Heaven. Isaiah’s vision saw the God of Israel in Heaven around 740 – 681 B.C., while John saw the Lord Jesus sitting on God’s Throne in the 1<sup>st</sup> Century A.D. Both men, were carried in their spirits into the Throne Room of God during their generation and from that Throne Room, they saw visions of the distant future, beyond their own generations.**

## **WHY THE PRE-TRIBULATION RAPTURE VIEW IS BIBLICALLY INCORRECT**

**“I will show wonders in the heavens and on the earth, blood and fire and billows of smoke. The sun will be turned to darkness and the moon to blood before the coming of the great and dreadful day of the Lord. And everyone who calls on the name of the Lord will be saved, for on Mount Zion and in Jerusalem there will be deliverance, as the Lord has said, among the survivors whom the Lord calls.” (Joel 2:30-32)**

**AMONG THE SURVIVORS WHOM THE LORD CALLS!**

**The sun will be turned to darkness and the moon to blood BEFORE the coming of the great and dreadful day of the Lord. This means that we might have to witness the fourth and fifth and sixth bowl.**

**Revelation 16:8 says – “The fourth angel poured out his bowl on the sun, and the sun was given power to SCORCH PEOPLE WITH FIRE. They were SEARED BY THE INTENSE HEAT and they cursed the God of Heaven who had control over these plagues.”**

**In Revelation 7:14 – 15 we find, “These are they WHO HAVE COME OUT OF THE GREAT TRIBULATION.” One of the signs that they went through during the tribulation would have to have been the fourth bowl and a description is given of the type of suffering they endured during the tribulation, “THE SUN WILL NOT BEAT UPON THEM, NOR ANY SCORCHING HEAT.” These saints had died during the tribulation and were resurrected in Heaven after “Washing their robes and making them white in the blood of the Lamb.”**

**Indeed the third angel of Revelation 14:11 – 12 says – “There is no rest day or night for those who worship the beast and his image, or for anyone who receives the mark of his name...This calls for patient ENDURANCE ON THE PART OF THE SAINTS who obey God’s commandments and remain faithful to Jesus. Then I heard a voice from heaven say, “BLESSED ARE THE DEAD WHO DIE IN THE LORD FROM NOW ON.” “Yes,” says the Spirit, “they will rest from their labor for their deeds will follow them.”**

**Another sign that the Tribulation saints had to go through was the fifth bowl of Revelation 16:10 - “The throne of the beast was plunged into darkness.” Matthew 24:29 says – “The sun will be darkened and the moon will not give its light; the stars will fall from the sky and the heavenly bodies will be shaken.”**

**The six trumpets herald how a “third of the sun, moon and stars are struck so that a third of the day is without light and a third of the night is also without light.**

**The Masonic Sun/Moon God shall be stamped out by the Power of God over His Creation.**

**The weeds and the wheat shall grow together, live together, and die together until these things happen and Luke 21 says, “When these things BEGIN to take place, stand up and lift up your heads for your redemption is drawing near.”**

**Hopefully this chapter makes it abundantly clear that Christians and Jews will be SURVIVORS in the last days until the Rapture of the Second Coming. Many religious leaders will be stunned as they watch the destruction of God's Creation happen supernaturally by God's Divine Power. Earth and sky shall flee from God's Presence as He moves in quickly to take charge and end the devil's dominion over His Creation forever and ever. Amen.**

**In Chapters 3 and 4 we discussed the Millennium and the 7<sup>th</sup> Last Trumpet. Let's do a quick recap of the Biblical evidence that the Millennial Reign of Christ resurrected the martyrs BEFORE the rapture of Jesus Christ's Second Coming::**

- 1. Revelation 6:9 – 11 says – “When he opened the fifth seal, I saw UNDER THE ALTAR the souls of those who had been slain because of the word of God and the testimony they had maintained. They called out in a loud voice, “How long, Sovereign Lord, Holy and True, until you judge the inhabitants of the Earth and avenge our blood?” Then each of them was given a white robe, and they were told to WAIT A LITTLE LONGER, UNTIL THE NUMBER OF THEIR FELLOW SERVANTS AND BROTHERS WHO WERE TO BE KILLED AS THEY HAD BEEN WAS COMPLETED.”**
- 2. Revelation 16:7 – “And I heard THE ALTAR respond: ‘Yes, Lord God Almighty, true and just are your judgments.’ [Here we read that the saints of the 5<sup>th</sup> Seal are witnessing the judgment day of the inhabitants of the earth and God avenging their blood.**
- 3. Revelation 20:4-6 says – “I saw thrones on which were seated those who had been given authority to judge. And I saw the souls of those who had been beheaded because of their testimony for Jesus and because of the word of God. They had not worshiped the beast or his image and had not received his mark IN their foreheads or IN their hands. They came to life and reigned with Christ a thousand years. [The rest of the dead did not come to life until the thousand years were ended.] This is the FIRST RESURRECTION. BLESSED and HOLY are those who have part in the FIRST RESURRECTION. The second death has no power over them, but they will be priests of God and of Christ and will reign with him for a thousand years.”**
- 4. Revelation 7:9 & 14 says – “I looked and there before me was a great multitude that no one could count from EVERY nation, tribe, people and language, standing before the throne in front of the Lamb...THESE ARE THEY WHO HAVE COME OUT OF THE GREAT TRIBULATION; THEY**

**HAVE WASHED THEIR ROBES AND MADE THEM WHITE IN THE BLOOD OF THE LAMB.”**

5. Revelation 13:10 – “If ANYONE is to go into captivity, into captivity he will go. IF ANYONE is to be killed with the sword with the sword he will be killed. THIS CALLS FOR PATIENT ENDURANCE AND FAITHFULNESS ON THE PART OF THE SAINTS.”
6. Revelation 14:12-13 – “This calls for PATIENT ENDURANCE ON THE PART OF THE SAINTS WHO OBEY GOD’S COMMANDMENTS AND REMAIN FAITHFUL TO JESUS. Then I heard a voice from heaven say, ‘Write: BLESSED ARE THE DEAD WHO DIE IN THE LORD FROM NOW ON.’ Yes, says the Spirit, ‘they will rest from their labor, for their deeds will follow them.’”
7. Revelation 2:1 says – “Be faithful, EVEN TO THE POINT OF DEATH and I will give you the crown of life.”
8. Matthew 24:13 – “But HE WHO STANDS FIRM TO THE END will be saved.”
9. Revelation 11:13 says – “At that very hour there was a severe earthquake and a tenth of the city collapsed. 7,000 people were killed in the earthquake, AND THE SURVIVORS WERE TERRIFIED AND GAVE GLORY TO GOD.”
10. Acts 2:20-21 – “The sun will be turned to darkness and the moon to blood BEFORE THE COMING OF THE GREAT AND GLORIOUS DAY OF THE LORD. And everyone who calls on the name of the Lord will be saved.”
11. Joel 2:31 – 32 says – “The sun will be turned to darkness and the moon to blood BEFORE the coming of the great and dreadful day of the Lord. And everyone who calls on the name of the Lord will be saved, for on Mount Zion and in Jerusalem there will be DELIVERANCE AMONG THE SURVIVORS WHOM THE LORD CALLS, as the Lord has said.”
12. John 6:39-40 – “And this is the will of him who sent me, that I shall lose none of all that he has given me, BUT RAISE THEM UP AT THE LAST DAY. AND I WILL RAISE HIM UP AT THE LAST DAY.”
13. Daniel 12:13 – “You will rest, and then AT THE END OF THE DAYS YOU WILL RISE to receive your allotted inheritance.”
14. John 6:54 – “Whoever eats my flesh and drinks my blood has eternal life, AND I WILL RAISE HIM UP AT THE LAST DAY.”
15. Luke 21:26-28 & 34-36 says – “Men will faint from terror, apprehensive of what is coming on the world, for the heavenly bodies will be shaken...WHEN THESE THINGS BEGIN TO TAKE PLACE, STAND

**UP AND LIFT UP YOUR HEADS because your redemption is drawing near.”**

- 16. Revelation 12:17 – “Then the dragon was enraged at the woman and went off to make war against the rest of her offspring – THOSE WHO OBEY GOD’S COMMANDMENTS AND REMAIN FAITHFUL TO JESUS.”**
- 17. Revelation 12:11 – “They overcame him by the blood of the Lamb and by the word of their testimony. THEY DID NOT LOVE THEIR LIVES SO MUCH AS TO SHRINK FROM DEATH.”**
- 18. 1 Thessalonians 4:13-17 says – “Brothers, we don’t want you to be ignorant about those who fall asleep (die), or to grieve like the rest of men, who have no hope. We believe that Jesus died and rose again and so we believe that God will bring with Jesus those who have fallen asleep (died) in him. According to the Lord’s own word, we tell you that WE WHO ARE STILL ALIVE, WHO ARE LEFT TILL THE COMING OF THE LORD, will certainly not precede (go ahead of) those who have fallen asleep (died). For the Lord Himself will come down from heaven, with a loud command, with the voice of the archangel AND WITH THE TRUMPET CALL OF GOD, and the dead in Christ will rise first. After that, WE WHO ARE STILL ALIVE AND ARE LEFT WILL BE CAUGHT UP TOGETHER WITH THEM IN THE CLOUDS TO MEET THE LORD IN THE AIR. And so we will be with the Lord forever.”**
- 19. 1Corinthians 15:51-52 says – “Listen, I tell you a mystery: We will not all fall asleep (die), but we will all be changed – in a flash, in the twinkling of an eye, AT THE LAST TRUMPET. FOR THE TRUMPET WILL SOUND, THE DEAD WILL BE RAISED IMPERISHABLE, AND WE WILL BE CHANGED.”**
- 20. Revelation 16:15 – “Behold, I come like a thief. Blessed is he who stays awake and keeps his clothes with him, so that he may not go naked and be shamefully exposed.”**

**Does this sound like believers are not going through the Tribulation?**

**No.**

**Do you read anywhere that there are two raptures? No.**

**Do you read any evidence of a pre-tribulation rapture? No.**

**What we do read is the RESURRECTION of martyrs who were slain for their faith and are ruling with Jesus in Heaven. We are reading not only about martyrs who were slain for their faith, we are also witnessing the resurrection of ALL BELIEVERS who DIED in Christ.**



**Yet the fine sounding arguments for a Pre-Tribulation rapture prevail, no matter how many times you quote these verses to them.**

**In my opinion, based on the above evidence, BELIEVERS are going to be slain for their Faith in the last days and die until Jesus returns like lightning that flashes from east to west.**

**Many Christian religious leaders have made the mistake of telling their congregations that they will never have to see the tribulation or have to worry about going through it, which of course, is a potentially bad ideal that has lead both strong and weak Christians astray from reality of what the Scriptures have been teaching us. The pre-tribulation rapture theory can be described as nothing more than a spin on words, a reading between the Scriptural lines to create a fictitious fantasy that sounds comforting to an unprepared generation.**

**Church leaders are not only NOT preaching about Bible Prophecy but they are teaching the WRONG IDEAS about prophecy when they finally do express prophecy thoughts. I remember attending a Calvary Chapel service in New York City and the Pastor just ignorantly quoted what he learned from somebody else, IN SEMINARY, without having an original thought of his own on the subject. In fact, Calvary Chapel, like Baptists, Evangelicals, and other Mainstream groups all hold to the pre-tribulation rapture theory. Pastors usually preach, "Whether the rapture happens before or after the tribulation doesn't matter. What matters is lifestyle and relationships and we should worry about the rest later when it comes."**

**They are as about prepared as the government officials who handled Hurricane Katrina 2005.**

**Shouldn't we prepare for the possibility that there may never be a pre-tribulation rapture according to Tim LaHaye's LEFT BEHIND series?**

**And just what will Believers who aren't slain by the BEAST FINANCIAL SYSTEM going to do in order to SURVIVE? There is not a single textbook that I have seen that is preparing "THE CHURCH" for a POST-TRIBULATION rapture. For whatever reason the other views have either been hushed, or they are just simply ignored as the opinions of a heretical lunatic fringe. Educated men make the assumption that although other believers hold onto AMILLENNIAL or Post-tribulation rapture views, only the pre-tribulation view makes sense to them and they are CONVINCED that their viewpoint is the correct one.**

**Supposing the PRE-TRIB VIEW IS ALTOGETHER WRONG? Have we really done anything to prepare for this possibility? No, because we are too busy entertaining ourselves with drugs, movies, ball games, building houses, getting married, having children, going to College, and thinking about how to save ourselves in a savage, wicked world.**

**At the very end of THE AUTHORIZED LEFT BEHIND HANDBOOK, Tim LaHaye concludes his interview by listing his leisurely activities. He is the father of four grown children and grandfather of nine.**

**Tim LaHaye concludes THE AUTHORIZED LEFT BEHIND HANDBOOK with his leisurely activities:**

- 1. SNOW SKIING**
- 2. WATERSKIING**
- 3. GOLFING**
- 4. WATERSKIING**
- 5. MOTORCYCLING**
- 6. GOLFING**
- 7. JOGGING**
- 8. VACATIONING**
- 9. FAMILY**

**This is how Tim LaHaye ends his interview.**

**I'm not one to talk. From the ages of 24 to 29 I attended rave parties and got drunk and stoned and had lots of sex with beautiful women.**

**However, my ending is not so glamorous. I work 2 jobs; take care of two crippled adults; I help the poor and the needy by volunteering at centers for helping the homeless. My own leisurely activities include working out at the gym, reading, writing, and that's it. I no longer have an active dating life. I'm still an unmarried man who is unknown and quite rather destitute.**

**So when you compare Tim LaHaye with me, who are you going to listen to?**

**Will you listen to the man who went to College and has an image of the perfect lifestyle, or will you listen to a man who has the image of an imperfect lifestyle? Who has God always favored throughout history? Those who have global attention or those who are despised and forgotten?**

**I do not need to compare myself with the lists of accomplishments of other pastors, teachers, writers, scholars, or theologians, because God also chooses men without status, title, position, power, or the pride of a**

**College education. For all I know, College has produced educated idiots and the Bible is clear that the wisdom of man is foolishness in God's sight.**

**We are too busy in the BEAST SYSTEM already, surrendering to "HARD WORK" with no real rest day or night, in order to fill up our lives with material comforts, pleasures, etc. There is no rest day or night for those who worship the beast economic system.**

**I was guilty of such pursuits myself, becoming drunk on the maddening wine of Jerusalem's adulteries, prostituting myself before carnal pleasures. It took the Power of the Holy Spirit of God in Jesus' Name to wake me up from my slumber and when I woke up, I found the rest of the world asleep, unprepared, and in BIG trouble.**

**Yes, we are truly weak, vulnerable, helpless and trapped by the BEAST ECONOMIC SYSTEM and THE ONLY WAY TO BE FREE of such a cruel, merciless, barbaric and primitive ECONOMIC SYSTEM that exists today is to surrender to Jesus' Name and give up on the pursuits of the flesh and the material world.**

**The Homeless people that Hollywood scoffed at in countless films holding up cardboard signs proclaiming, "THE END IS NEAR" is a more fitting scenario to describe those of us who are going to inherit Salvation in the last days and HOW we are going to inherit it. If you rebel against the GLOBAL ECONOMIC BEAST then you will end up basically a street person on the brink of death every day until you suffer starvation and disease.**

**Nobody in the Churches or among Theologians will teach you that in order to SUFFER FOR JESUS' NAME you will have to GIVE UP EVERYTHING, including your houses, your cars, your careers, your money, EVERYTHING, in order to be TRULY SAVED.**

**Jesus told us in Matthew 24 that no one who is on the roof of their house should go down to take anything out of their houses during the time of unparalleled wrath upon the earth.**

**Nobody will ever teach you that the PATH TO HOLINESS, RIGHTEOUSNESS and TRUTH will lead to HOMELESSNESS and POVERTY, but IT'S ALL TRUE AND IT'S ALL BIBLICAL!**

**Shouldn't we leave some options in our thinking open to better arm ourselves with the spiritual armor of God?**

**If these are the last days of life on earth, as most scholars agree, then we are going through the tribulation now, part of the first 3 ½ years, and if**

**we are not going through the tribulation now, then we will soon be struggling to survive through it – and it will be dirty, bloody, & chaotic for everyone, Christian or not.**

**We think of the six trumpets as something we will hear on Earth. But we will not hear the angels sound the trumpets. We know that TRUMPETS are loud and so the wrath of the first 6 trumpets will be very loud and very devastating.**

**What we will witness on Earth is a third of everything being destroyed.**

**We will not see angels pouring out bowls on the earth in the last days, but will see the cosmic signs of Matthew 24 and Luke 21 unfolding, during which time we will stand up to lift up our heads since our redemption is drawing near.**

**The only way we will be delivered from ‘the hour of trial that is coming to test those who live on the earth,’ is through death. Indeed, many of the Apostles who lived when Jesus was on Earth and all the saints throughout history who have died, will be delivered from the last days tribulations, because they will be alive with Christ, ruling in Heaven with Him. Some of these saints who are resurrected in Heaven will have to wait until the number of their fellow brothers & sisters who are to be killed as they were, will be completed.**

**Jesus will raise some of us from the dead immediately into Heaven during His Millennial reign, otherwise, there will be some of us who are LEFT BEHIND alive upon the earth during the last days.**

**Those who refuse to accept the beast and his name and image will be killed and at the Seventh Trumpet they shall be raised from the dead to witness God’s Speedy Judgment upon the Earth.**

**I have written this book with the anticipation that PRE-TRIBULATIONIST views are wrong and I am drawing a diagram for the LAST DAYS BELIEVERS who may find the whole Tim LaHaye diagram a myth, a mirage, and an inaccurate interpretation of the Biblical facts.**

**If a Christian does die, before or during the tribulation, then they will be with the Lord either immediately, or at the seventh last trumpet as a participant in the FIRST RESURRECTION.**

**The Believers who get raptured through death, before and during the tribulation, will not have to worry about the tribulation, because they’ll be**

with Jesus in Heaven, but for the Christians and Jews who are standing alive during the last days of life on earth, they will have to go through this great hour of trial. Those who are reigning with Jesus in Heaven have been spared and saved from the hour of trial during the seven last years of life on earth, but on earth, there will be many of us who will be alive, experiencing the six trumpets and six bowls of the tribulation..

**Luke 21:34-36 confirms: “Be careful, or your hearts will be weighed down with wasting by misuse, drunkenness, and the anxieties of life, and that day will close on you unexpectedly like a trap. For it will come upon all those who live on the face of the whole earth.” So EVERYBODY is going to go through the tribulation. Why would Jesus warn us to be careful about our hearts being weighed down with drunkenness and the anxieties of life, if we were going to be raptured BEFORE the tribulation?**

**Jesus made it very clear that the ANXIETIES OF LIFE will CLOSE ON US UNEXPECTEDLY LIKE A TRAP. IT WILL COME UPON EVERYONE! When you study the modern economy, the anxieties of life closed in on the whole world like a trap. Trouble has come upon EVERYONE.**

**Before the Rapture occurs there will be certain signs that Christ’s return to Earth is imminent.**

**Acts 2:20 says – “The sun will be turned to darkness and the moon to blood BEFORE THE COMING OF THE GREAT AND GLORIOUS DAY OF THE LORD.”**

**Isaiah 24:1-3 says – “See, the Lord is going to lay waste the earth and devastate it; he will ruin its face and scatter its inhabitants—it will be the same for PRIEST as for people, for master as for servant, for mistress as for maid, for seller as for buyer, for borrower as for lender, for debtor as for creditor. The earth will be completely laid waste and totally plundered. The Lord has spoken this word.”**

**Notice how this prophesy in Isaiah 24 says that it will be the same FOR PRIEST as for PEOPLE. Many PRE-TRIB evangelists and preachers follow suite with the Tim LaHaye diagram without question and don’t think they will be “LEFT BEHIND”, however, if God is going to lay waste the entire world during the Tribulation hour, then it is going to be the same FOR PRIESTS AS FOR PEOPLE.**

**We are all going to be made equal in the end, but it will not be through a GLOBAL UNITY but through a GLOBAL MELTDOWN.**

**Luke 17:32-37 (KJV) says –“Remember Lot’s wife. Whosoever shall seek to save his life shall lose it; and whosoever shall lose his life shall preserve it. I tell you, in that night there shall be two people in one bed; the one shall be taken, and the other shall be left. Two women shall be grinding together; the one shall be taken and the other left. Two men shall be in the field; the one shall be taken, and the other left. And they answered and said unto him, Where, Lord? And he said unto them, Wheresoever the body is, thither will the eagles be gathered together.” The NIV says that ,”Wherever there is a dead body there the vultures will gather.”**

**Many scholars, such as the Jack Van Imp Ministries, have proclaimed that these verses are referring to the sudden physical vanishing of millions of Christians, but this is simply a fictitious fairytale emanating from human opinion. Plus, I would not trust anybody that has a “Christian” program on Paul Crouch’s TRINITY BROADCASTING NETWORK (except maybe Zola Levitt, Hal Lindsey, & Charles Stanley.)**

**Tim LaHaye, co-author of LEFT BEHIND jumped on the band wagon and also adopted this viewpoint, which is leaving true Believers unprepared for the reality that their whole scenario will be a myth as Acts 2:20 and Matthew 24:28-30 says.**

**Do these verses in Luke 17:32-37 mention Christians at all? Does the Bible really tell us that two “Christian” people will be in one bed, one body will vanish and one will be left behind? No.**

**“Educated” men are reading words into the text that do not exist.**

**When men interpret Bible verses they interpret what they think a verse means and most of the time, many verses can be taken literally, but when it comes to prophesy, it’s anyone’s un-educated guess as to how to translate the Bible properly within the context of historical and current realities and we absolutely should not read only ONE DIAGRAM for interpreting Bible Prophecy, but must consider all angles closely and carefully.**

**Luke 17:20-37 only mentions people, in general, all over the world.**

**The key words are, “Two men” and “Two women.” “One out of two men” and “One out of two women” will be taken, not one out of two Christian men or one out of two Christian women.**

**“One will be taken and the other left” is an indication that, “Two people will be in one bed; one will die and the other shall be left alive on earth. Two women will be working together and one will die and the other will be alive**

**on earth. Two men will be working together and one man will die while the other man is alive.**

**The word “taken” is not rapture though physical vanishing, but being “taken” through physical death and our evidence is found in the statement Jesus Himself made: “Where there is a dead body, there the vultures will gather”. Go to any graveyard.**

**When my best friend’s mother died of cancer, her clothes and material possessions were left behind. She vanished through death.**

**This phrase indicates death, not rapture. There will be a dead body on earth for vultures to feed upon. If the body had vanished there would be no dead body to lie around as food for the vultures.**

**For example, my Uncle was in bed one day and died from a heart attack, leaving my Aunt behind on earth. He was delivered, through death, from the painful trials of life, while his wife was LEFT BEHIND to deal with the trials and tribulations of every day life. One person was in bed and was taken and the other left behind.**

**There will be no special favors given to those who are Christians during the last days. It will be the same for priest as for people according to Isaiah 24:1, until the SECOND COMING. Acts 2:20-21 clearly says—“The sun will be turned to darkness and the moon to blood BEFORE the coming of the great and glorious day of the Lord. AND EVERYONE WHO CALLS ON THE NAME OF THE LORD WILL BE SAVED.”**

**If Christians weren’t on Earth during the tribulation when the sun and moon and stars are afflicted, there would be nobody to call on the Name of the Lord, but the Pre-Trib argument is that some people who weren’t Christians before the tribulation will become Christians during the Tribulation because of the signaled event of millions of people suddenly vanishing from the earth, a science-fiction fairytale that is not preparing us for the true reality the Bible gives the last days saints.**

**This explanation that ALL TRUE CHRISTIANS WILL VANISH FROM THE EARTH and then more people will become Christians after the VANISHING of the Christians, sounds like a good idea, quite logical and intelligent.**

**Then scholars go on to conclude that the Second Coming can be separated from the PRE-TRIB Rapture.**

**However, there is only ONE RAPTURE, and this is will become the RAPTURE OF THE SECOND COMING. Faithful Jewish Elect and Christian Elect who are alive upon the earth during this time will look forward to being redeemed as they see the signs in the sun, moon and stars.**

**Luke 21:25-28 says – “There will be signs in the sun, moon and stars. On the earth, nations will be in anguish and perplexity at the roaring and tossing of the sea. Men will faint from terror, apprehensive of what is coming on the world, for the heavenly bodies will be shaken. AT THAT TIME they will see the Son of Man coming in a cloud with power and great glory. When these things BEGIN TO TAKE PLACE, STAND UP AND LIFT UP YOUR HEADS FOR YOUR REDEMPTION IS DRAWING NEAR.” This settles all arguments that BELIEVERS will be standing up for the great rapture of Christ’s Second Coming, which is going to come LIKE A THIEF IN THE NIGHT, unexpectedly.**

**We will join those who had sat upon thrones in Heaven all throughout history as well as those who will be resurrected at the LAST TRUMPET. We will meet them in the air after the signs in the sky have taken place.**

**We also know that the empire of the devil’s anti-christ will be destroyed.**

**Believers shall vanish through DEATH, which means an immediate resurrection into Heaven or a resurrection at the LAST DAY, with the final trumpet blast.**

**Just as Peter, James, John, and the other disciples DIED IN CHRIST, so will present and future believers die in Christ, until the Second Coming. If the apostles who followed Jesus suffered and died before they left the world, can we last days believers expect to escape all that is about to happen? No.**

**Revelation 16:15 confirms this reality.**

**Everyone will equally have the same experiences as our NEW AGE ONE WORLD GOVERNMENT is destroyed by the coming of Earth’s True Messiah – Jesus Christ – the name that is above all names for God.**

**It is arrogant, and inaccurate of Christian scholars to conclude that THE FIRST RESURRECTION and THE FIFTH SEAL only involves “Christian Believers”. I was rather disappointed with JESUS FREAKS: REVOLUTIONARIES for not including JEWISH MARTYRS who suffered and died for their faith BEFORE Jesus came the first time. JEWISH MARTYRS will also be included in the Resurrection.**



**We must always include the Faithful Believers in the Jewish Nation of Israel who believe in the God of Israel and hold to Faith in the Coming of their Messiah. Their Messiah is our Messiah and our Messiah is their Messiah – Jesus/Yeshua.**

**Yeshua is the Hebrew name for Jesus and Jesus is the English name for Yeshua.**

**To assume an anti-Jewish posture goes against Scriptures, for Jewish Believers in the God of Israel will be marked, sealed and saved, not just on the condition that they come to Jesus, but on the basis of God's Calling and Election for them according to what Romans 9-11 teaches.**

**Revelation 7:1-8 teaches that 144,000 FROM ALL THE TRIBES OF ISRAEL are given a SEAL in their foreheads before the angels harm the grass, the land, and the sea. This does not say 144,000 Jews who became Christians will be given this seal.**

**The Christian Church by no means replaces Ethnic, Jewish Israel, nor does ethnic Jewish Israel get exclusive Salvation as God's EXCLUSIVE chosen people.**

**The Prophets of Israel never saw Jesus in their lifetime, but they DIED having Faith in the God of Israel that the Messiah would come to proclaim Justice to ALL NATIONS.**

**The FIFTH SEAL and THE FIRST RESURRECTION will also involve Jewish saints who are faithful to the God of Israel, in addition to Christian saints, for the blood of Jesus does not just cover BELIEVERS from the time He came until Earth is gone, but BELIEVERS BEFORE Jesus came too. The history BEFORE Jesus is covered through His Blood just as much as the History AFTER Jesus was on earth.**

**For Modern Israel, I personally believe that this same kind of Faith exists today among Jewish Elect, because although they haven't really seen Jesus, they will one day see Him, their long-awaited Messiah on the Day of Judgment and since Jewish sin has been forgiven on account of His Name, the Book of Romans is very clear that ALL ISRAEL will be saved, in addition to the Churches of Christian Believers, for God's Gifts and His Calling cannot be revoked.**

**As an example, Gershon Salomon of the Temple Mount Faithful Movement, is covered in the Blood of the Lamb, Jesus Christ, even though he hasn't accepted the God of Israel in Jesus' Name, for he died believing in the**

**God of Israel and the hope of the Coming Messiah just as much as every Christian throughout the past two thousand years.**

**Spiritually, many Jews, such as Zola Levitt, will accept Jesus as the Messiah because they learned that the God of Israel was and is the Messiah in Jesus' Name. My view is extremely unpopular and scorned in traditional Mainstream "Christian" thinking, however, I am convinced that Faithful Jew and Faithful Gentile Christian shall stand forever and live together forever because of Christ's love for ALL OF US.**

**Being Jewish does not save Israel any more than being a "Christian" saves Christians, for we will all perish at death and our bodies will expire. Jesus Christ will resurrect us and determine by His own Justice who will inherit Eternal Life among Jews and Christians and who will not. As for the pagan world, well, God is their Judge and Messiah too.**

**Jesus said in John 5:25 – I tell you THE TRUTH, a time is coming and HAS NOW COME when the dead will hear the voice of the Son of God and those who hear will live."**

**Revelation 7:1-8 clearly shows us that 144,000 faithful Jews will be sealed by God. Christian and Jewish saints who died, believing in the God of Israel as their Messiah will awaken and be given the rights of Eternal Life by His Command.**

**The harmony between Jews and Gentile followers of Jesus can be seen with the adornment of God's Holy City, the New Jerusalem in Revelation 21 and 22.**

**ELIJAH, MOSES, ENOCH, EZEKIEL, DANIEL, and all the righteous men of Israel whom God promised would rule with Him in Heaven were excellent examples of this reality. During the times of the Prophets of Israel and Judah, Jesus had not suffered and died on the Cross yet, but they died with Faith that the Messiah was coming to deliver Israel. That same Faith exists among Jews who don't know Jesus today. Someday, Jesus will reveal Himself to ALL ISRAEL and to ALL NATIONS.**

**"EVERY EYE SHALL SEE HIM, EVEN THOSE WHO PIERCED HIM..."  
(Revelation 1)**

**What names does God inscribe on the Gates of the New Jerusalem? Revelation 21:12 says—"On the gates were written the names of the twelve tribes of Israel."**

**Are the names of the twelve tribes of Israel written on any Christian Churches today? No. Why not? Why will you never see the Names of the Twelve Tribes of Israel written on Christian Churches or Christian minds? Because REPLACEMENT THEOLOGY has always taught Christian Pharisees to separate themselves from Jewish Pharisees and they have never been able to see eye to eye due to MAN'S INTERPRETATION of Israel's Place in Biblical History and Eternity.**

**I am not talking about Masonic Jews or secular Jews, who are excluded from God's covenant. I am speaking of FAITHFUL ISRAEL as a FAITHFUL NATION. The TEMPLE MOUNT FAITHFUL MOVEMENT of Gershon Salomon could include such faithful Jewish remnants saved by the GRACE of God in Jesus' Name..**

**According to Romans and Revelation, Israel's Place is in the New Jerusalem where God will rule in Jesus' Name forever and the Names of the Twelve Tribes shall be on the Gates of the New Holy City forever.**

**We, as Gentile sinners, are also grafted into the camp of Israel as well, and our New Jerusalem shall consist of Angels, Jews, and Gentiles from EVERY TRIBE, PEOPLE, LANGUAGE AND NATION.**

**We know that the whole pagan world is cursed and damned for not responding to the Gospel of Jesus Christ with humbleness, repentance and Truth.**

**Christians ALL BELIEVE IN JOHN 14 that quite clearly says that Jesus is the ONLY WAY TO GOD. If you reject Jesus you are rejecting God, therefore you don't know God because Jesus was and is God. However, I believe that the Faithful Jews who are just like Saul was before he became Paul, will have an opportunity to see Jesus as He was and is and is to come as and realize their own spiritual enslavement and blindness.**

**The faithful Jews under Babylon, Greece, Syria, Egypt, and Roman rule who were executed will take part as the FIRSTFRUITS of THE FIRST RESURRECTION, in addition to the followers of Jesus who remained solid in their belief that Jesus was and is the Messiah. They will sit on thrones judging the earth's inhabitants. The faithful Jewish elect who died believing in the Messiah, before the Messiah came [since the God of Israel was their Messiah] will also rule with God.**

**The Christians refused to obey many of the Roman laws, particularly that of emperor worship. Roman officials looked upon Christians as enemies of the Roman Empire. Beginning with Nero, Christians were crucified, thrown**

**to wild beasts and mad dogs in the arenas; or they were either burned alive or beheaded. There have been significant persecutions and executions of Jewish and Christian saints throughout history.**

**Even Catholics were guilty of massive genocide against innocent men.**

**As to whether the Knights Templars were guilty or not, did not justify the Catholic persecution of some of the greatest heroes of the Crusades.**

**The first great persecution of Israel was by Egypt for 430 years until God appointed Moses to deliver them.**

**The next great national persecution of Israel was by the Assyrian and Babylonian invasion of Israel; the next invasion of Israel was Greece; the next was the Roman Empire; then the Byzantines; then the Islamic empires arose; the next great persecution was Nazi Germany; and the modern movement is presently the Global New Age Movement allied with pagan religions such as Islam.**

**We have the Catholic persecutions of the Knights Templars.**

**When given a choice of choosing Islam or death, many Christians and Jews chose death rather than following what they knew was a false prophet teaching the false doctrine of a false god who now is not 'God.' Even those Christians who rejected the Catholic Church as being a "Christian" institution were put to death by Catholics. Historically we could never equate Catholicism with Christians or Christianity. After reading Dave Hunt's book: A WOMAN RIDES THE BEAST, there should be no doubt about the Catholic genocide of innocent people.**

**In Chapter 17: Blood of The Martyrs of Dave Hunt's book he writes:**

**"Failure to give who wholehearted allegiance to the pope was considered treason against the state punishable by death. Here was the basis for slaughtering millions. As Islam would a few centuries later, a paganized Christianity was imposed upon the entire populace of Europe under the threat of torture and death...Pope Innocent III murdered far more Christians in one afternoon than any emperor did in his entire reign...We must rank the Inquisition, along with the wars and persecutions of our time, as among the darkest blots on the record of mankind, revealing a ferocity unknown in any beast...These were real people: mothers, fathers, brothers, sisters, sons, and daughters—all with hopes and**

**dreams, with passions and feelings, and many with a faith that could not be broken by torture or fire. Remember that this terror, this evil of such proportions that it is unimaginable today, was carried on for CENTURIES in the Name of Christ by the command of those who claimed to be the vicars of Christ. They are still honored with that title by the Catholic Church, which has never admitted that the Inquisitions were wrong...The victims of the Inquisition exceeded by hundreds of thousands the number of Christians and Jews who had suffered under pagan Roman emperors...The truth is that Roman Catholicism did not represent Christ and was not his Church. For at least A THOUSAND YEARS before the Reformation the true church was composed of multitudes of simple Christians who were not part of the Roman System."**

**In the last days, the same will be true of all "State sponsored Churches."**

**Only simple Christians will represent Jesus on earth; not MAINSTREAM establishments which are governed by money, banks & the comforts of materialism.**

**The Christians and Jews living under the cruel oppression of these barbaric empires suffered and still suffer death at the hands of their enemies and the major point that I want to stress in this chapter is that Christians living during the last days will get no special treatment over the millions of Christians who have died throughout history from the times of Christ through our modern times.**

**And some of the greatest persecutions will come from our LOCAL CHURCHES no matter what denomination you choose.**

**Judgment does not begin with the unbelievers.**

**Judgment begins with the family of God!**

**1 Peter 4:17 – "For it is time for judgment to begin with the family of God; and if it begins with us, what will the outcome be for those who do not obey the gospel of God?"**

**In Revelation, the martyrs of the 5<sup>th</sup> Seal include the Jews and Christians who died in the Assyrian Empire, the Babylonian Empire, the Greek Empire, the Roman Empire, and the Islamic Empires during years of barbaric oppression. These martyrs include every faithful Christian or Jew**

**God has chosen who has ever lived or died before and after Christ ascended into heaven.**

**What about the resurrection of the rest of the dead, who did not die as martyrs?**

**What is to become of the billions of people who died and did not participate in the FIRST RESURRECTION OF THE MILLENNIUM OR THE LAST TRUMPET?**

**Napoleon, emperor of France died in 1821 A.D. Today, this year, Napoleon is neither in heaven, nor in the lake of fire yet. Today Napoleon is dead. He is nowhere. However, to Napoleon, he lost his breath of life in 1821 A.D., but in a flash, in the twinkling of an eye, he has appeared before Christ's White Throne Judgment Seat in the future. He blinked his eyes, flinched, and now he is in our future. It is clear that we shall all rise together.**

**Although, we COULD analyze through the RICH MAN AND LAZARUS parable Jesus told, that some people go to HELL immediately and some people go to Heaven IMMEDIATELY. While reigning with Jesus in comfort in HEAVEN the rich man descended to a place of total torment, given a body that can experience thirst and heat that cannot be comforted. Men like Hitler would certainly have gone to the place of torment immediately, as well as any unmerciful murderer.**

**The very hairs of our head are all numbered by God and we will not fall to the ground apart from His Will (Matthew 10:30).**

**When we ourselves die we will instantly lose our breath of Life.**

**As soon as our eyes blink off into death, our new eyes are immediately opened at the resurrection, which will occur as earth and sky flee before God. Earth's last day has not yet occurred, so we will remain dead until the final end if we don't participate in the Resurrection of the martyrs of the 5<sup>th</sup> Seal and/or the FIRST RESURRECTION.**

**When you are MARTYRED for the NAME OF JESUS, I do believe that your sins are forgiven and you may very well be chosen to immediately rule with Jesus in Heaven. Even if you aren't a martyr or killed by the devil and His advocates, Jesus can INDISCRIMINATELY decide who gets to rule with Him in Heaven until His Second Coming.**

**Unless God chooses us to participate in the first resurrection of the many who have not accepted the mark of Islam or the many other beasts of deception, we will remain dead until the last adversary of God's people is thrown into the lake of fire, where Allah and the false prophet Muhammad have already been thrown – IF they ever existed. Since Allah was never a god and Muhammad might have never actually existed as a person, it would mean that the BEAST of their lying rulers would be tossed into the lake of fire for eternal punishment, along with the devil who deceived them with the lies that Islam caused in its path of global destruction.**

**According to 1 Corinthians 15:51-52, 1 Thessalonians 4:13-17, and Revelation 11:15-19, the last trumpet, which is the 7<sup>th</sup> trumpet, will not sound until the Heavenly Bodies are shaken and the stars in the sky fall to earth with the first six trumpet blasts and the first six bowls of God's wrath.**

**Ezekiel 37:11-13 says – “Son of man, these bones ARE THE WHOLE HOUSE OF ISRAEL. They say, ‘Our bones are dried up and our hope is gone; we are cut off.’ Therefore, prophesy and say to them: ‘This is what the Sovereign Lord says: ‘O my people, I AM GOING TO OPEN YOUR GRAVES AND BRING YOU UP FROM THEM: I will bring you back to the land of Israel. Then you, my people, will know that I am the Lord, WHEN I OPEN YOUR GRAVES AND BRING YOU UP FROM THEM.”’**

**Although Israel has been brought back to their own land on this earth, these verses are pointing to the moment when the whole house of Israel will be gathered together in the New Heavenly Jerusalem where they shall see God face to face. God will resurrect all the Jews who have ever lived or died, with or without hope and they will see the Glory of their King. Those who have believed in the Messiah, Jesus, will also participate in the New Jerusalem of Revelation 21 & 22.**

**Revelation 3:10 says – “Since you have kept my command to endure patiently, I will also keep you from the hour of trial that is going to COME UPON THE WHOLE WORLD to test those who live on the earth.”**

**Jesus said in Mark 13:32 – “NO ONE knows about that day or hour, not even the angels in heaven, nor the Son, but only the Father. Be on guard! Be alert! You do not know when that time will come.”**

**Jesus never implied that nobody can interpret the signs of His Second Coming, or that nobody could possibly interpret the Book of Revelation, because a time is surely coming when, “The kings of the earth, the princes, the generals, the rich, the mighty, and every slave and free man hid in caves**

**and among the rocks of the mountains. They called to the mountains and the rocks, “Fall on us, and hide us from the face of him who sits on the throne and from the wrath of the Lamb! For the great day of their wrath has come, and who can stand?”**

**The words are closed up and sealed UNTIL the time of the end. At the time of the end, people will either glorify God or curse God.**

**For those Christians in the 1<sup>st</sup> few centuries, Jesus coming unexpectedly was DEATH. In fact, DEATH has come unexpectedly upon everyone since 33 A.D. when Jesus ascended to Heaven.**

**From the 1<sup>st</sup> Century A.D. until now, nobody has ever known about the days of the man of lawlessness or the beast and the words are closed up and sealed UNTIL the time of the end. At the time of the end, the man of lawlessness will be revealed.**

**Do you ever feel like the Bible studies on Revelation Prophecy are all just one big mirage?**

**At the times of the end, the words shall be unsealed. Despite what the Mormons might teach, Jesus never returned during the many generations that have existed since he spoke the words of the Gospel, however, they died with the hope of the resurrection of their own bodies.**

**The time lapse for the dead believers who didn’t rule in the millennium with the martyrs, between the moment they died and the future resurrection is the blink of an eye. 1 Corinthians 15:51 – “We will not all die, but we will all be changed—in a flash, in the BLINK OF AN EYE, AT THE LAST TRUMPET. For the trumpet will sound and we will be raised imperishable.”**

**All people throughout history were unaware of when the time of the end would come, so for them, death was unexpected, coming like a thief in the night to rob them of their material bodies on a material earth and they will unexpectedly be resurrected IN THE BLINK OF AN EYE before the Judgment Seat of Christ to face Judgment for the deeds done while in the earthly body (2 Corinthians 5:10).**

**Jesus never said that we couldn’t understand when or how He is coming, approximately, because He has informed us exactly WHEN and HOW He’s Coming and what SIGNS in the sky to look out for signaling the Rapture of His Second Coming.**



**Jesus simply stated that nobody knows about the times of the end, in his generation or the generations before the last generation.**

**Daniel 12:10 says – “None of the wicked will understand, but those who are wise will understand.” This includes you, me, and all the great believers, even those who hold to the pre-trib view will understand.**

**The last generation, Generation “Z” of Earth’s inhabitants will know that God’s Wrath has come upon the whole world and that His coming is near and at the door.**

**In terms of a human calendar date, nobody knows about when the man of lawlessness will arise or who he will be from which empire, but a time is coming when he shall be revealed and those who are wise enough to reject him and the mark he CAUSES us to accept will know that the end is at hand, especially during Armageddon.**

**For many Christians and Jews alike, the Messiah coming like a thief in the night will be the blink of death. The end will come like a flood and many people will abandon the faith of Christianity during the last days to follow the pride of the economic beast.**

**God will have control over the plagues that will destroy human life on earth, but instead of repenting, earth’s inhabitants will curse the name of God – curse JESUS!. Christ’s return is going to unexpectedly come when THESE THINGS BEGIN TO TAKE PLACE:: “the sun will be darkened, and the moon will not give its light, the stars will fall from the sky, and the heavenly bodies will be shaken.”**

**Jesus explained that IMMEDIATELY after the distress of the days when Jerusalem is trampled on by the Gentiles and the times of the Gentiles are fulfilled, and the ‘abomination that causes desolation’ is set up by the man of lawlessness who will be revealed in the Holy Places of Jerusalem, the sun, moon, stars and planets will all be shaken.**

**“On the earth, nations will be in anguish and perplexity at the roaring and tossing of the sea. Men will faint from terror APPREHENSIVE OF WHAT IS COMING ON THE WORLD, for the heavenly bodies will be shaken. AT THAT TIME [AFTER the sun is darkened, the moon turns blood red, and the stars fall (because of a universal earthquake caused by the third heaven, the invisible dimension where God dwells currently, opens up), the Messiah, the Son of Man, will appear in the clouds of the sky with power and great glory. Jesus, speaking through the disciples of the past speaks to the disciples of Christ in the future, says “WHEN THESE THINGS BEGIN TO TAKE PLACE,**

**stand up and lift up your heads, because your redemption is drawing near.”  
(Luke 21:25-28)**

**Ezekiel 38:18-23 says – “When Gog attacks the land of Israel my hot anger will be aroused, declares the Sovereign Lord. In my zeal and FIERY WRATH I declare that AT THAT TIME THERE SHALL BE A GREAT EARTHQUAKE IN THE LAND OF ISRAEL. The fish of the sea, the birds of the air, the beast of the field, every creature that moves along the ground, AND ALL THE PEOPLE ON THE FACE OF THE EARTH WILL TREMBLE AT MY PRESENCE. THE MOUNTAINS WILL BE OVERTURNED, THE CLIFFS WILL CRUMBLE, AND EVERY WALL WILL FALL TO THE GROUND.”**

**Revelation 11:13 says – “At that very hour there was a severe earthquake and a tenth of the city collapsed. 7,000 people were killed in the earthquake.” Revelation 16:18-20 says – “Then there came flashes of lightning, rumblings, peals of thunder and a severe earthquake. NO EARTHQUAKE LIKE IT HAS EVER OCCURRED SINCE MAN HAS BEEN ON EARTH, so tremendous was the quake. THE GREAT CITY SPLIT INTO 3 PARTS, AND THE CITIES OF THE NATIONS COLLAPSED. EVERY ISLAND FLED AWAY AND THE MOUNTAINS COULD NOT BE FOUND.”**

### **Samson Option: Israel's Plan to Prevent Mass Destruction Attacks**

***David Eberhart***

***Tuesday, Oct. 16, 2001***

**<http://www.newsmax.com/archives/articles/2001/10/15/112430.shtml>**

**With American bombing raids into Afghanistan and a tough President Bush intimating more of the same for other terrorist-harboring nations, experts and armchair war-watchers are inserting nuclear powerhouse Israel into the calculus of potential Armageddon in the Middle East.**

**Adding yet other variables, a defiant Saddam Hussein issued an ominous warning in late August, just weeks before the terror attacks on New York City and the Pentagon: "The battle [against the U.S.] continues on the economic, political and military fields. We are convinced we will be victorious."**

**All that the saber-rattling Iraqi dictator left out of this latest diatribe was a bold repeat of his 1991 pre-Desert Storm boast that if America attacked, the first to feel his wrath in the "mother of all battles" would be Israel.**

**After decades of living among hostile neighbors, Israel has yet to be attacked by an enemy using nuclear, chemical or biological weapons. One reason may be the horrific plan some claim Israel drew up to prevent such an attack. The plan was called the Samson Option. An astute investigative journalist and student of history chalked a dramatic potential solution to the volatile equation on the blackboard - a decade ago.**

**"Should war break out in the Middle East again and should the Syrians and the Egyptians break through again as they did in 1973 [Yom Kippur War], or should any Arab nation fire missiles again at Israel, as Iraq did [in the 1991 Gulf War], a nuclear escalation, once unthinkable except as a last resort, would now be a strong possibility."**

**Pulitzer Prize-winning author ("My Lai 4") Seymour M. Hersh made this hypothesis in his 1991 best seller "The Samson Option."**

**Captured and cruelly maimed, the book's biblical namesake uttered the ultimate fighting words, "Let my soul die with the Philistines."**

**That said, the divinely empowered Samson pushed apart the temple pillars - collapsing the roof and killing himself as well as his enemies.**

**In his exposé of Israel's clandestine nuclear arsenal, Hersh suggested that in the early days (late 1960s) of crude big-flash-and-bang nukes, one defensive option to counter an attack on Israel with weapons of mass destruction was for the beleaguered nation to mimic Samson and grimly trade holocaust for holocaust.**

**Hersh's 1991 prognostication of a "strong possibility" of the use by Israel of nuclear weapons rested on his knowledge that by the mid-1980s, Israeli technicians at the super-secret Dimona nuclear plant had produced hundreds of low-yield neutron warheads capable of**

**destroying large numbers of enemy troops with minimal property damage.**

**Israel's ability to use nukes tactically and surgically, however, has evolved a great deal since the Samson option was still realistically an option.**

### **Israel's Military Might**

**In 1997, Jane's Intelligence Weekly examined satellite photographs of what it described as an Israeli military base at Kfar Zechariah, concluding academically, "Israel's nuclear arsenal is larger than many estimates."**

**According to Jane's, the site was said to house about 50 Jericho-2 missiles, believed to have a maximum range of about 3,000 miles with a warhead of about 2,200 pounds.**

**According to the report, the installation contained nuclear bombs, configured for dropping from bombers.**

**Furthermore, five bunkers at the site were cited as capable of safeguarding 150 weapons.**

**"This ... supports indications that the Israeli arsenal may contain as many as 400 nuclear weapons with a total combined yield of 50 megatons," the report concluded.**

**In 1998 the New York Times reported a Rand Corp. study commissioned by the Pentagon that opined Israel had enough plutonium to make 70 nuclear weapons.**

**More light was shed on the issue in February of last year when the Israeli Knesset (parliament) held the first public discussion on the country's nuclear arms program.**

**Issam Mahoul, an Arab Israeli MP and member of the Hadash (Communist) Party, petitioned that country's Supreme Court to force the government to permit a parliamentary debate on the forbidden subject.**

**The upshot of this bold and generally unpopular tactic was an unprecedented televised session of the Knesset at which Mahoul stated that, according to experts' estimates, Israel had stockpiled huge numbers of nuclear warheads.**

**This had increased to what he described as the "insane amount of 200-300." The weapons had been developed with the help of the South African apartheid regime.**

**Working up a head of rhetorical steam, Mahoul grandly alleged that three new German-built submarines just purchased by Israel were to be fitted with nuclear weapons.**

**Their stated purpose, he said, was "to cruise deep in the sea and constitute a second strike force in the event that Israel is attacked with nuclear weapons."**

**Mahoul also announced what was hardly a news bulletin - Israel was producing "biological warfare" weapons at the government's Biological Institute in Ness Ziona.**

**The obstreperous MP concluded that the government's official policy of "nuclear ambiguity" was the height of self-delusion. "All the world knows that Israel is a vast warehouse of atomic, biological and chemical weapons that serves as an anchor for the Middle East arms race," he said.**

**Despite the bristling inventory of nukes, the Israelis have a laudable history of restraint in brandishing, much less using, these most destructive of all weapons of mass destruction.**

**In fact, for most of the latter half of the 20th century, the Israeli Bomb remained invisible and unacknowledged. Israel's official position was to neither confirm nor deny its nuclear status, only pledging on the record "not to be the first to introduce nuclear weapons to the Middle East."**

**A Show of Restraint**

**According to Hersh, the best example of Israeli restraint in the face of great provocation came during the Gulf War.**

**On the second day of the American invasion, Saddam Hussein fired eight Scud missiles at noncombatant Israel. Two of the conventionally armed missiles landed on Tel Aviv. Then Prime Minister Yitzhak Shamir responded by ordering mobile missile launchers armed with nuclear weapons moved into the open and deployed facing Iraq.**

**The Samsonesque strongman of the Middle East had stirred - and the world held its breath.**

**Promising Patriot missile batteries and loads of future aid, the United States pressured Israel to keep cool. After all, the allied coalition included a number of Arab nations, and the U.S. feared that dramatic Israeli retaliation could fragment the fragile alliance.**

**By the end of the Gulf War, Israel had dutifully absorbed 26 Scuds - none armed with biological or chemical weapons.**

**And therein lies the rub. What if the missiles had featured biochemical agent warheads?**

**Israel's prime ministers have plenary jurisdiction over their country's nuclear activities.**

**The refrain used consistently by the Israeli leaders has been and remains an unqualified: "Israel reserves the right to retaliate if attacked."**

**Traditionally, Israeli leaders have pigeonholed nuclear weapons as a psychological insurance policy for unthinkable contingencies, under the heading of "last resort."**

**The hope of those in the inner sanctums of national security is that the exigencies of America's New War send no such unthinkable contingencies in the direction of America's quiet ally.**

**Hebrews 12:26-27 says – “At that time God’s voice shook the earth, but now he has promised, ‘Once more I will shake not only the earth but also the heavens.’ The words ‘once more’ indicate the removing of what can be shaken—that is, created things—so that what cannot be shaken may remain. In conclusion, death is certain, but there is hope beyond death that will not disappoint us and although the whole world will spin out of control because of its own sins, which are not God’s fault, God is still in control. “Our God is a consuming fire!”**

### **WHAT DOES IT ALL MEAN IN THE END?**

**You can receive the Gift of the God of Israel’s Salvation by believing in Him as your one and only Savior. The God of Israel is the One and Only Messiah and this God came from His Throne in Heaven and appeared to us on Earth in the human form and Name of Jesus. That is why Jesus is God.**

**The God of Israel carried the crucified Body and Name of Jesus back to His own Right Hand in Heaven to provide us with a Spiritual Body through Whom we could become ‘born again.’**

**If we believe in Jesus as the God of Israel’s Lamb, the slain Lamb whose blood covers over our sins and allows death to pass over us, then we can be saved. By believing in Jesus as the Lamb of God we can be saved. We can be saved by having a relationship with the God of Israel by the Power of His Holy Spirit expressed to us in the Name of Jesus. His Love in the Name of Jesus, connects us with Himself, makes us a participant of His Eternal Kingdom. If you haven’t accepted Jesus as your Savior, you can do so now. Loving Jesus and loving others also means repenting of our sins and obeying God’s Commands as expressed in Scriptures.**

**No matter what we might agree or disagree with when it comes to THE RAPTURE, THE TRIBULATION, THE RESURRECTION, etc., the God of Israel is coming to Earth very soon in the Name of Jesus and we must get ready to meet our Maker—the Creator and Author of Life.**

**Our Creator chose Jesus to become the Savior of the world. Jesus sits on God’s Throne as the God of Israel and if we accept the**

**Gospel Truth and believe in the testimony that is written, then we can die to our present selves accepting the Eternal Life that can be ours through the Name of Jesus.**

**Through Jesus, death will pass over us. If we reject Jesus, we will remain in our sins and in death without hope and without any genuine connection with the One True God—the God of Israel. If we accept Jesus as our Savior, we will unquestionably inherit Eternal Life.**

**I, Dr. Fox, have been ‘born again’ baptized into the Name of Jesus for the forgiveness of my sins. I have been connected with God by the Power of the Holy Spirit and through the testimony of His Words. I cannot earn my way into Heaven. I do not deserve to go to Heaven and I have no righteous works through the practice of religious rules, regulations, or traditions that have gained me access into the Kingdom of God. I have been a sinner and will be a sinner until I die. I will hopefully have REPENTED of the major sins before I die and GOD shall be my exclusive judge and nobody else.**

**It is by Grace through Faith that I have entered God’s Kingdom, not through good deeds or self-efforts. I am not a good person and being a ‘good person’ does not automatically resurrect me from the dead. If there is not even ONE righteous person on earth, who am I to say that my righteousness makes me worthy of entering Heaven forever? No. Only by accepting the Grace of Jesus Christ in my heart do I become saved.**

**Jesus will not judge me by my job, my career, my car, my house, my bank account, or my lack of having these material things, but I am judged by my deeds and who I am and what my response to Jesus was and is. How I responded to Jesus’ calling is how I will be judged.**

**Out of respect to the God of Israel, I obey His Commands, but obeying His commands are only a part of my Salvation. I obey the Gospel because He loves me and I have accepted His Grace, Mercy, and Love, which I don’t deserve by Law, since I am an unclean sinner.**

**Jesus is the one sacrifice of atonement whose blood covers my sins so that death can pass over me. Jesus is the Third Temple, the curtain through the Most Holy Place, the Gate called the Way, the**



**Truth, and the Life, by which I can enter God's Kingdom with confidence and with freedom. No one can take away my Salvation because God loves me and whether I partake in the First Resurrection or the Second Resurrection doesn't matter to me: As long as I get to live forever in the Kingdom of my Father that's all I care about. As long as I am written in the Lamb's Book of Life, that's all that matters to me.**

**By the Grace of God Almighty I am saved. What about you? Will you accept the Gift of God's Grace before the coming destruction that will soon arrive because of human choice?**

**The direction of the world community in its pagan hierarchy is the full acceptance of the devil and his anti-christ messiah, so our only response to this is to give up all worldly ambitions and attachments and live as FREE agents for the Coming Kingdom of Jesus.**

**God does not take pleasure in the death of anyone and He only allows death because He will resurrect everyone. 1 Corinthians 15:51 assures us: "WE WILL NOT ALL DIE."**

**God did not want the Book of Revelation to happen.**

**Human choice would worship Satan, the beast and the false prophet. Human choice would attack God's people Israel and oppress His people with great injury. Prophecy was never a revelation of what God wanted to happen, but a revelation of what He knew would happen as a result of human choice and how He will respond to these events as He appears with His Final Word expressed in the slain body of the Lamb.**

**What about you? Where do you think you fit in? If this all just sounds too confusing then a simple guideline you can follow, which can assure you of your Salvation is by believing in Jesus as being the God of Israel, the Messiah, Who broke His body to save you from death and the sting of death which is sin.**

**God wants to raise you from the dead and He has chosen you to carry the life, death, and resurrection of Christ's Body within yourself, so that you can become 'born again' into a Kingdom that is not of this world, which will soon pass away.**

**By believing in the God of Israel through the Name of His Chosen Messiah, Jesus, the slain Lamb of God, you can receive forgiveness for your sins and enter Eternal Life as you accept God's Grace, Mercy and Love.**

**The Book of Revelation is not just given to men like Tim LaHaye who have several degrees and get mass media attention with the million-dollar approval margins. The Book of Revelation is given to ALL BELIEVERS – from the least person to the greatest person. This is why I have chosen to put a \$0.00 price tag on my research. If I have solved some of the greatest mysteries of the Book of Revelation, then I would be wrong to boast that my knowledge and access to information belongs exclusively to me. I cannot put a COPYRIGHT, A PATTON, AN AUTHOR NAME BY, OR OWNERSHIP over the Bible or over the Book of Revelation. That is why I stated in my book title: ALL RIGHTS RESERVED TO JESUS CHRIST.**

**It was not DOCTOR Michael Sunstar who interpreted prophecy on your intellectual behalf.**

**Revelation 19:10 – “For the testimony of Jesus is the spirit of prophecy.”**

**How can I put a price on these writings and call them my own?**

**I cannot do what Tim LaHaye has done and serve MONEY rather than serving God.**

**His books are about TWENTY TO THIRTY DOLLARS per book!**

**He has earned millions.**

**I have earned ZERO.**

**How have I profited from the Bible?**

**I haven't. Zondervan publishes many Bibles at an expensive price and I have bought many of their Bibles, sometimes almost paying \$100.00 for one Bible! But the WORDS OF GOD are FREE and as people of FREEDOM we are no longer slaves of the devil's MONEY.**

**My writings are FREE.**

**Why?**

**Because I want to serve Jesus rather than MONEY. I don't wish my work to be pimped out at a price. When I was a young man I wanted to put a price on my work and I published my work at a price to my own demise. You just can't put a price on this kind of an education! It's priceless.**

**The Book of Revelation doesn't belong JUST TO Sunstar.**

**The Book of Revelation is to be revealed to EVERY BELIEVER! You can be uneducated and understand what many educated men cannot! Historically and Biblically, God has usually always used the weak and insignificant people of the world to shame the strong and so-called 'WISE ONES' of the world. (1 Corinthians 1:20-31).**

**So I basically have nothing to boast about. I get nothing out of this study other than REVELATION to me personally and to you globally.**

**I am more than a conqueror through Him who loves me and has saved me by His blood so that death can pass over me. (Romans 8:28)**

**What do I have to boast about? That I have REVEALED THE SYMBOLS OF REVELATION, THE GREATEST DISCOVERY OF 2,000 YEARS in a manner that makes more sense than Tim LaHaye has with his fiction books?**

**No, the greatest discovery is that Jesus is THE WAY, THE TRUTH and THE LIFE.**

**I don't want to dangle my College degree or media attention in your face to make you think I am something that I'm not. I don't have a picture perfect life. I am a poor, sinful man that most people just ignore and I kind of like it that way and I know God prefers His true servants to live this way.**

**No status. No position. No media attention. No pat on the back. No College degree to boast about. No wife and children to hang up as trophies. No Church building constructed. No re-write of the entire Bible with my name on it. No price tag put on me or my work.**

**Just simply an unschooled, ordinary man, like Peter and John who stood before the Sanhedrin to give testimony to THE TRUTH.**

**To gain assurance of your personal salvation you can be baptized into the Name of Jesus as Messiah for the forgiveness of your sins RIGHT NOW and you will receive the Gift of God's Holy Spirit Who is the Spiritual Counselor guiding you into all Truth which comes from the God of Israel.**

**The victories are certain for those who live and die believing in Jesus Christ.**

**Romans 8:18-20 says—"I consider that our present sufferings are not worth comparing with the glory that will be revealed in us."**

**1 Corinthians 15:56-57 says—"The sting of death is sin, and the power of sin is the law. But thanks be to God! He gives us victory through our Lord Jesus Messiah."**

**How can you be assured that you will personally be saved for Eternal Life?**

**Romans 9:9 says—"That if you confess with your mouth, 'Jesus is God,' and believe in your heart that the God of Israel raised His Body from the dead, you will be saved."**

**Jesus said in John 5:24—"I tell you the truth, whoever hears my word and believes him who sent me has Eternal Life and will not be condemned."**

**John 3:36 says—"Whoever believes in the Son (Jesus as the Messiah) has Eternal life, but whoever rejects the Son will not see life, for God's Wrath remains on him."**

**John 6:39-40 says—"And this is the will of him who sent me, that I shall lose none of all that he has given me, but raise them up AT THE LAST DAY. For my Father's Will is that everyone who looks to the Son and believes in him shall have Eternal Life, and I WILL RAISE HIM UP AT THE LAST DAY."**

**John 6:51 & 54 says—"I am the living bread that came down from heaven. If anyone eats of this bread, he will live forever. This bread is**

**my flesh, which I will give for the life of the world. Whoever eats my flesh and drinks my blood has eternal life, and I will raise him up AT THE LAST DAY.”**

**John 8:36 says—“So if the Son sets you free, you will be freed indeed.”**

**John 8:51 says—“I tell you the truth, if anyone keeps my word, he will never see death.”**

**John 10:27-28 says—“My sheep listen to my voice; I know them, and they follow me. I give them Eternal Life, and they shall never perish; no one can snatch them out of my hand.”**

**John 10:25 says—“I am the resurrection and the life. He who believes in me will live, even though he dies; and whoever lives and believes in me will never die. DO YOU BELIEVE THIS?”**

## **YOUR DEATH AND YOUR RESURRECTION**

**Isaiah 26:13-14 says – “O’ Lord, our God, other lords besides you have ruled over us, but your name alone do we honor. THEY ARE NOW DEAD, THEY LIVE NO MORE; THOSE DEPARTED SPIRITS DO NOT RISE.”**

**Isaiah 26:19 says – “But your dead will live; THEIR BODIES WILL RISE. You who dwell in the dust, wake up and shout for joy. Your dew is like the dew of the morning; THE EARTH WILL GIVE BIRTH TO HER DEAD.”**

**Acts 13:36-37 says – “For when David had served God’s purpose in his generation, HE FELL ASLEEP; he was buried with his fathers AND HIS BODY DECAYED. But the one whom God raised from the dead did not see decay.”**

**John 11:11-14 says – “After Jesus had said this, he went on to tell them, ‘Our friend Lazarus has fallen asleep; but I am going there to wake him up.’**

**“His disciples replied, ‘Lord, if he sleeps, he will get better.’ Jesus **HAD BEEN SPEAKING OF HIS DEATH**, but his disciples thought he meant natural sleep.**

**“So he told them plainly, ‘**LAZARUS IS DEAD**, and for your sake I am glad I was not there, so that you may believe.’”**

**John 11:21-25 says – “ ‘Lord,’ Martha said to Jesus, ‘if you had been here, my brother would not have died. But I know that even now God will give you whatever you ask.’**

**“Jesus said to her, ‘Your brother will rise again.’**

**“Martha answered, ‘**I KNOW HE WILL RISE AGAIN IN THE RESURRECTION AT THE LAST DAY.**’**

**“Jesus said to her, ‘I am the resurrection and the life. He who believes in me will live, even though he dies; and whoever lives and**

**believes in me will never die. Do you believe this?’” At Will, the Voice of God could raise the dead, not just AT THE LAST DAY, according to the Word of the Lord, but at anytime. Anyone whom God would call out of the grave could be raised at anytime throughout history.**

**These verses tell a powerful message that the majority of the dead will not rise until THE LAST DAY/THE DAY OF THE LORD. These verses also tell us that God could raise any dead person back to life at any time up until the LAST DAY.**

**Martha, in her response to Jesus, acknowledged something that Jesus had taught her, which is that ‘the dead will rise again in the resurrection – AT THE LAST DAY.’**

**DEATH is definitely a bad thing.**

**When my dad had his stroke that left his whole RIGHT side paralyzed, and his car accident left the whole RIGHT side of his car smashed in, it was rather devastating to see my father crippled, helpless, and turned over to a Hospital with crazies and loonies. My mother eventually was afflicted with a coronary condition, very rare. My grandmother’s RIGHT foot eventually got afflicted so that she had to have a major operation since no circulation was getting to her foot. She died quickly and unexpectedly. Jesus came for her like a thief in the night. I had planned on my grandma being around for at least one more year, but I suppose the Lord had different plans.**

**What did this mean? Death was coming to my loved ones. I had somewhat of a preparation from the time I started writing this book that some serious things were going to go down in my future and bad things would start to happen, but nothing prepared me to see the suffering and misery of my loved ones. I had a dream 10 years before my grandma’s death that Ronald Reagan was digging a grave and she was beside him, and sure enough it became a reality. On the same week Reagan died, my grandma died.**

**But are Reagan and my grandma really dead? Should I even say that my grandma is “DEAD?” I don’t think I should ever say my grandma died or is dead. I should never think that my relatives were putting the Bible with her in her coffin, for our God is not the God of**

**Death but Eternal Life, and I happen to have that assurance that my grandma is with God in Heaven.**

**My life was not traditionally easy but unconventionally complicated as I had no ambitions to pursue going into debt for my Pastoral license and becoming a prisoner to the bank, preaching the Gospel of Student Loan and depending on the System for Salvation. Needless to say, my education was far greater than I could have ever imagined and my grandma contributed greatly to my education in what Freedom and Salvation are all about.**

**Would she want my mother and I to sit around falling apart over her departure from Earth? No. She would want us to be strong and courageous. Yes, it's okay to cry, to weep, to experience deep and heavy emotion. One of the emotions I suffered from was from RAGE and ANGER over how my relatives treated my grandmother during her last days on Earth and how they treated my parents with their "FREE ADVICE" all those years. But LETTING GO is part of DEATH. My grandma would want me to forgive my relatives, to love them, to pray for them and not to take out a shotgun and kill them all. I handed my shotgun to God and perhaps this was His answer. God is Sovereign and Eternal and I completely trust in Him. I loved my grandma deeply and will greatly miss her as I am LEFT BEHIND on this earth, seeing her body VANISH in the RAPTURE of DEATH. The kind of theology in this book greatly helped to spiritually prepare for the worst, even though I hoped for the best and this was God's Goal in giving us the Scriptures: TO GIVE US COMFORT, HOPE, INSPIRATION and a REASON to LIVE, to SURVIVE. Jesus promised us Resurrection and since my Grandma believed in Jesus I am confident she has Eternal Life and the devil had no victory in her death. Jesus had victory in her Salvation and I must place my Faith and Confidence in Him forever.**

**DEVASTATING. JUST DEVASTATING. When it happens to other people you somewhat grieve for them and their loss, offering all the positive thinking you can muster so they don't have to cry or suffer from emotions that leads to their downfall. But death usually does not hit home UNTIL DEATH HITS HOME. When it happens to your loved one, your whole world is turned upside down and there is really nobody who understands the memories you have, how much you felt for that**



**person, or what goes on in your head over the loss. Vulnerable, helpless, and unable to change the situation, you have become numbed and jaded, not knowing how to continue on in this stupid planet without that special someone who has been a part of you and your life. NOT ALL THE BIBLE STUDY in the world really prepares you for the harsh reality of losing a loved one.**

**There are really only two paths to follow when someone you love dies: One is that you become unglued, fall apart and let the darkness inside of you win. Or, you can listen to the Gospel of Jesus Christ and discover strength, salvation, and hope. Jesus came to offer us hope and that is all we have in the end, is the hope that our end is not the end. In Revelation 21 and 22, you could paraphrase, "IT IS DONE!" or "IT IS FINISHED" with THE END. When Jesus says, THE END, oh what a great time that will be for all the saints who will celebrate together in Eternal Paradise.**

**DEATH and SUFFERING have become the two most terrible tools used by people who hate God and choose not to believe in Him, however, I have realized, personally, that the Creator of the Universe is the AUTHOR of LIFE and not DEATH. My next loved ones are going to eventually be raptured through death, vanish, and I will be LEFT BEHIND on this earth full of chaos, corruption, and misery, ruin and desolation, unless of course, God decides to take my soul early. I do hope so. I really don't care to live too much longer. The only reason I am alive is because of Jesus and He is my motivation for living another day.**

**It is my conviction that DEATH is one kind of RAPTURE for each one of us and I believe that it is this kind of Rapture that will occur until Jesus returns in the context of Matthew 24 & Luke 21. I have always held this view and am experiencing it today. My best friend's mother died in 2004. My grandma died in 2004 on the same week Reagan died. DEATH was everywhere, all around me, even when I worked at a Hospital and witnessed some deaths of people's mothers.**

**When we reach past 30, we feel a physical change of life in our bodies. We are decaying, growing older and experiencing great physical complications not ever knowing when our time is coming. We**

**know it's coming but we simply don't KNOW about the unseen BEYOND after the moment of our suffering and death is completed. Perhaps God makes us all equal in saving the best for last, making the GRAND FINALE something to look forward to, not to scare us or hurt us, but so that we can enter His Kingdom just a little bit more grateful than we would if we had grown up like Lucifer did before he fell.**

**The meaning and purpose of life is to know Jesus Christ as God, with us becoming lesser and him becoming greater.**

**The fact about death and how to cope with it is that we cannot change it, cannot stop it, and absolutely cannot do anything but surrender to it. My mother was hoping that the PRE-TRIB view was the right view and when I saw her faith, her hope and her love, I figured that it was good for her to have such a hope, of averting the absolute suffering, ruin, and misery that will come upon the world in its final days. Then again, having the wrong theology can be just as devastating to your comfort zone as the Truth is. I suppose PRE-TRIBBERS are given the PRE-TRIB RAPTURE scenario because it's a less painful, more convenient way of coping with life and death. Well, today, I have my tribulation and it's rough and tough. But I trust that Jesus is Coming Again Soon and He's coming for me, because I believe in Romans 10:9, John 14, and basically every God-inspired word of the Bible. So I must take this FAITH and be sure of what I hope for and certain of what I do not see.**

**I want to be delivered from death and suffering myself and with each day my mortality rate increases, while my longing to go to Heaven increases. It is my belief that DEATH is not as bad as we're making it out to be, when we're saved. When we're saved, DEATH may only last within the blink of an eye and within a blink WE SHALL ALL APPEAR TOGETHER AT THE LAST DAY. Jesus promised that within the twinkling of an eye, we shall be resurrected at the end of time and come with Jesus to gather the rest of His saints that are remaining on earth at His Second Coming.**

**The 5<sup>th</sup> Seal and the Thousand Years written about in Revelation play a key significant role in how many doctrines are formulated concerning 'the rapture' of God's people. Many Church denominations**

**believe that the so-called 'rapture' of Christians (and Christians only of course), will occur BEFORE the rise of the beast (the anti-Christ).**

**Scholars have also attached the term "anti-Christ" to 'the beast' of Revelation Scriptures. The term "anti-Christ" comes from 1 John 2:18 which says—"Dear children, this is the last hour; and as you have heard that the antichrist is coming, even now many antichrists have come. This is how we know it is the last hour." 1 John 2:22 says—"Who is the liar? It is the man who denies that Jesus is the Messiah. Such a man is the antichrist—he denies the Father and the Son." 1 John 4:3 says—"But every spirit that does not acknowledge Jesus is not from God. This is the spirit of the antichrist, which you have heard is coming and even now is already in the world." 2 John 1:7 says—"Many deceivers, who do not acknowledge Jesus Messiah as coming in the flesh, have gone out into the world. Any such person is the deceiver and the antichrist."**

**Some schools of thought have predicted that THE RAPTURE will occur before the 'anti-christ' beast arises—the one who stands in the Third Temple proclaimed to be the Messiah.**

**Some schools of thought have predicted that THE RAPTURE will occur during the rise of the 'anti-christ' beast.**

**Other schools of thought, agree with me, that THE RAPTURE will occur after the 'anti-christ' beast has arisen.**

**As we emphasized previously, the PRE-TRIBULATION RAPTURE viewpoint involves millions of "Christian" people vanishing mysteriously from earth, BEFORE the signs in the sun, moon and stars.**

**This is a viewpoint that can be excluded unanimously on a Biblical level.**

**THE RAPTURE, according to the movie, 'LEFT BEHIND' which played in movie theaters in February 2001, involves millions of Christians suddenly vanishing from the earth and all non-Christians are 'left behind' on earth. RAPTURE means, 'caught up' and refers to Jesus gathering Christians into heaven BEFORE the tribulation of the last days.**

**The HOLY SPIRIT has convinced me, according to the Scriptures, that THE RAPTURE, will occur at the SECOND COMING OF CHRIST as Jesus stated in Matthew 24.**

**No, millions of people are not just going to suddenly vanish from the earth mysteriously in some sort of invisible rapture as many Christian seminaries and pulpits have convinced us to believe in order to evade reality and fear. Although the invisible soul could immediately be taken into Heaven to reign with Christ if it is God's Will—death is a kind of invisible rapture because no one knows how the soul gets transferred from the earthly body to another body in Heaven by God.**

**Yes, Jewish and Christian saints who are given the SEAL OF GOD in the LAST DAYS will be caught up together with the Heavenly saints who were already resurrected during the Millennial reign of Christ, but as soon as God gathers His Jewish and Christian elect from the four corners of the world, the whole world will be destroyed.**

**According to the Scriptures of Christ's very words, millions of people will vanish THROUGH DEATH before the Second Coming of Christ. A lot of religious people within many denominations throughout this century have been unprepared for the reality that most people on earth will die before Jesus returns – whether they are a Christian or not. To make the statement that Christians will never have to go through the great tribulation of the last days will deceive many people into falling away from God's Kingdom, leaving Christian saints unprepared for the reality that some of us will die and some of us will be 'LEFT BEHIND' as our loved ones are taken from us through death.**

**Millions of physical bodies will not suddenly disappear at one time as the Van Imp Ministries have misled us into believing, but people will vanish randomly, through death. There will be a 'rapture' and the Bible is clear about that. I am not denying that the Rapture will take place. I am only clarifying that THE RAPTURE will occur only once—after the wrath of God has been completed on earth and the signs in the sun, moon, and stars have been completed.**

**We cannot deny that the rapture will happen. We must merely understand in the proper context of when and how it will happen, not in the form of a calendar date, but in the form of Scriptures that support a post-tribulation rapture—a rapture that will occur AFTER the great tribulation.**

**Jesus said in John 5:25—“I tell you the truth, a time is coming AND HAS NOW COME when the dead will hear the voice of the Son of God and those who hear will live.”**

**Jesus said that a time HAS NOW COME when the dead would hear his voice.**

**What examples can give us a clear picture that Jesus was raising the dead during and after His Ministry?**

**Matthew 9:23-24 says—“When Jesus entered the ruler’s house and saw the flute players and the noisy crowd, he said, ‘Go away. The girl is NOT DEAD, but asleep.’ But they laughed at him. After the crowd had been put outside, he went in and took the girl by the hand, and she got up.” Luke 8:54-55 says—“Jesus took her by the hand and said, ‘My child, get up!’ Her spirit returned and at once she stood up. Then Jesus told them to give her something to eat.”**

**When Jesus spoke to this young girl’s lifeless body, she came back to life after ‘falling asleep.’ Jesus didn’t refer to dead people as being dead, but referred to death as a ‘sleep.’ Jesus said in John 11:11, before he had raised Lazarus from death about four days after he had died, “Our friend Lazarus has fallen asleep; but I am going there to wake him up.” His disciples thought he was referring to natural sleep and so Jesus confirmed what he meant by Lazarus ‘falling asleep’ by saying in John 11:14-15—“Lazarus is dead, and for your sake I am glad I was not there, so that you may believe.”**

**Luke 7:11-12 says—“Soon afterward, Jesus went to a town called Nain, and his disciples and a large crowd went along with him. As he approached the town gate, a dead person was being carried out—the only son of his mother, and she was a widow. And a large crowd from the town was with her. When the Lord saw her, his heart went out to her and he said, ‘Don’t cry.’ Then he went up and touched the coffin,**

**and those carrying it stood still. He said, ‘Young man, I say to you, get up!’ The dead man sat up and began to talk, and Jesus gave him back to his mother.” At Will, at anytime, God proved that He could raise the dead. We know of three separate Gospel accounts of when the dead heard the voice of Jesus and awakened from their ‘sleep’ or rather, ‘death.’**

**Moses and Elijah were both seen by the disciples in Matthew 17:3—“Just then there appeared before them Moses and Elijah, talking with Jesus.”**

**We know from 2 Kings 2 that Elijah was taken up to Heaven without dying and became a representative for the Jewish and Christian saints living on earth during the last days who will be caught up into Heaven at Christ’s Second Coming without having to die. Of course, Moses may not have died or been buried as no one ever found the grave of Moses (Deuteronomy 24:5). We could argue that even if Moses died, God instantly resurrected him taking him into heaven. Jude 9 says—“Even the archangel Michael, when he was disputing with the devil about the body of Moses, did not dare to bring a slanderous accusation against him.” Whatever dispute took place between Michael and the devil is a mystery, but we do know that both Moses and Elijah appeared to talk to Jesus while he was here on earth.**

**Enoch was another man who was taken out of this world without having to die. Jude 14-15 says—“Enoch, the seventh from Adam, prophesied about these men: ‘See, the Lord is coming with thousands upon thousands of his holy ones to judge everyone, and to convict all the ungodly of all the ungodly acts they have done in the ungodly way, and of all the harsh words ungodly sinners have spoken against him.”**

**Revelation 7:13-14 says—“Then one of the elders asked me, ‘These in white robes—who are they, and where did they come from?’ I answered, ‘Sir, you know.’ And he said, ‘These are they who have come out of the GREAT TRIBULATION; they have washed their robes and made them white in the blood of the Lamb.”**

**John 5:28-29 says—“Do not be amazed, for A TIME IS COMING when ALL who are in their graves will hear his voice and come out.”**

**Therefore, our evidence is mentioned four times in the Gospels that Jesus raised the dead while he was alive and that He raised the dead after he died. After Jesus came back to life himself we read another instance when someone died and God had granted Paul the ability to bring someone back to life. Acts 20:9-12 says—“Seated in a window was a young man named Eutychus, who was sinking into a deep sleep as Paul talked on and on. When he was sound asleep, he fell to the ground from the third story AND WAS PICKED UP DEAD. Paul went down, threw himself on the young man and put his arms around him. ‘Don’t be alarmed,’ he said. ‘He’s alive.’ Then he went upstairs again and broke bread and ate. After talking until daylight, he left. The people took the young man home alive and were greatly comforted.”**

**The disciples of Christ asked Jesus in Matthew 24:3 – “What will be the sign of your coming and of the end of the age?” Jesus responded to them, not with just one sign, but several signs for His future disciples to look out for.**

**Matthew 24:4-31 says – “Watch out that no one deceives you. For many will come in my name claiming, ‘I am the Christ,’ and will deceive many. You will hear of wars and rumors of wars, but see to it that you are not alarmed. Such things must happen, but the end is still to come. Nation will rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom. There will be famines and earthquakes in various places. All these are the beginning of birth pains.**

**“Then you will be handed over to be persecuted and put to death, and you will be hated by all nations because of me. At that time many will turn away from the faith and will betray and hate each other, and many false prophets will appear and deceive many people. Because of the increase of wickedness, the love of most will grow cold, but he who stands firm to the end will be saved. And this gospel of the kingdom will be preached in the whole world as a testimony to all nations, and then the end will come.**

**“So when you see standing in the holy place ‘the abomination that causes desolation,’ spoken of through the prophet Daniel—let the reader understand—then let those who are in Judea flee to the**

**mountains. Let no one on the roof of his house go down to take anything out of the house. Let no one in the field go back to get his cloak. How dreadful it will be in those days for pregnant women and nursing mothers! Pray that your flight will not take place in winter or on the Sabbath. For then there will be great distress, unequaled from the beginning of the world until now—and never to be equaled again. If those days had not been cut short, no one would survive, but for the sake of the elect those days will be shortened. At that time if anyone says to you, ‘Look, here is the Messiah!’ or ‘There he is!’ do not believe it. For false Messiahs and false prophets will appear and perform great signs and miracles to deceive even the elect—if that were possible. See, I have told you ahead of time.**

**“So if anyone tells you, ‘There he is, out in the desert,’ do not go out; or, ‘Here he is, in the inner rooms,’ do not believe it. For as lightning that comes from the east is visible even in the west, so will be the coming of the Son of Man. Wherever there is a carcass, there the vultures will gather.**

**“Immediately after the distress of those days**

**‘the sun will be darkened**

**and the moon will not give its light;**

**the stars will fall from the sky,**

**and the heavenly bodies will be shaken.’**

**“At that time the sign of the Son of Man will appear in the sky, and all the nations of the earth will mourn. They will see the Son of Man coming on the clouds of the sky, with power and great glory. And he will send his angels with a loud trumpet call, and they will gather his elect from the four winds, from one end of the heavens to the other.”**

**Although it may appear that Jesus was just speaking to those who were with him at the moment when he said these words of Matthew 24, Mark 13, and Luke 21, he was also speaking to the future**



**disciples of all generations, including to the generation of the last days. Jesus knew that His words were going to be preached in the whole world as he said, “And this gospel of the kingdom will be preached in the whole world as a testimony to all nations, and then the end will come.” (Matthew 24:14).**

**We know that Christ’s predictions about false prophets, false messiahs, and false ‘gods’ have been already fulfilled on numerous occasions throughout history like Muhammad, Joseph Smith, Jim Jones, David Koresh, and Mr. Applegate of the Heaven’s Gate cult. His prophecies concerning famines and earthquakes, wars and pestilences in various places seem pretty general & broad considering that they have always occurred throughout history, even before Christ.**

**The tone of voice in Matthew 24 which Jesus speaks in these prophecies that have been so common throughout history, is that these things will happen more frequently on a global basis during the last days of life on earth before His second coming.**

**In the last days, when the ‘abomination that causes desolation’ is standing in the Holy Place where it does not belong, like Allah and Muhammad, then universal disasters will come with unpredictable outcomes. What has always happened throughout the span of history will be worse and more frequent than ever during the last days – and much more devastating.**

**Matthew 24:22 says – “If those days had not been cut short, no one would survive, but for the sake of the elect those days will be shortened.” There will be so much disaster & distress that God will have to step in and cut the last days short, because no one would survive otherwise. We must prepare ourselves in the Spirit of God, for death and destruction because whether we like it or not, the earth will be destroyed and there will be terrible disasters before Christ returns to earth.**

**Jesus told his disciples that they would be handed over to be persecuted and put to death and that they would be hated by all nations because of Jesus. Well, those disciples who were with Jesus when He said these words were factually persecuted and put to death by their enemies.**

**The disciples who heard the voice of Jesus faced their own last days in the final moments before they died cruel deaths. Death was their end. Since Jesus was the resurrection and the life, his disciples never really died.**

**Jesus did not return during their lifetimes, but before they died in Christ, they fully put their hope and faith in His promise of the Resurrection. The question is: Did those disciples, as well as every holy disciple thereafter, get resurrected into heaven immediately after they died? Are they in the Kingdom of God now? Perhaps. Anything is possible with God and we should not confine our thinking to some kind of chronological order.**

**Since we have never been to heaven, we cannot even Biblically offer the answer to this question with 100% confidence. Only God knows. However, we can offer some strong answers that sound logical according to the Scriptures as to what will happen to us personally when we die.**

**This is what the study of Eschatology (end-time studies) is supposed to trigger—a thoughtful dialogue to interpret what it is we are reading in the statements of the Bible prophets.**

**Hebrews 9:7 says – “It is appointed for a man to die once and after that to face judgment.”**

**2 Corinthians 5:10 says – “For we must all appear before the Judgment Seat of Christ, that each one may receive what is due him for the things done while in the body, whether good or bad.”**

**John 5:22 says – “God judges no one but has entrusted all judgment to the Messiah, that all may honor the Messiah just as they honor God. He who does not honor the Son does not honor God, who sent him.”**

**Jesus said that because of the increase of wickedness in the last days before His Return, the love of most would grow cold. “BUT HE WHO STANDS FIRM TO THE END WILL BE SAVED.”**

**Paul in 2 Timothy 3:1-5 describes this increase of wickedness:**

**“This know also, that in the last days perilous times shall come. For men shall be lovers of their own selves, covetous, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy, without natural affection, trucebreakers, false accusers, incontinent, fierce, despisers of those that are good. Traitors, heady, high-minded, lovers of pleasures more than lovers of God; having a form of godliness, but denying the power thereof: from such turn away.”**

**Those terrible times are here today and will not get any better. People will be talking a lot about ‘Peace and Safety’ and negotiations will be launched for world peace as they are presently. Peace and safety will be talked about in an age when there can be no Peace and safety.**

## **THE BOOK OF LIFE – IS YOUR NAME WRITTEN THERE?**

**Here is a list of Biblical references detailing the Book of Life:**

- 1. Exodus 32:32-33 – “ ‘But now, please forgive their sin – but if not, then blot me out of THE BOOK YOU HAVE WRITTEN.’ The Lord replied to Moses, ‘Whoever has sinned against me I will blot out of MY BOOK.’**
- 2. Daniel 7:10 – “The court was seated and BOOKS WERE OPENED.”**
- 3. Daniel 12:1 – “But at that time—everyone whose name is found WRITTEN IN THE BOOK—will be delivered.”**
- 4. Revelation 17:8 – “The inhabitants of the earth whose names have not been WRITTEN IN THE BOOK OF LIFE FROM THE CREATION OF THE WORLD will be astonished when they see the beast, because he once was, now is not and yet will come.”**
- 5. Revelation 20:12 & 15 – “And I saw the dead, great and small, standing before the throne, AND BOOKS WERE OPENED. Another book was opened, WHICH IS THE BOOK OF LIFE. The dead were judged according to what they had done AS RECORDED IN THE**

**BOOKS. If anyone's name was not found written IN THE BOOK OF LIFE, he was thrown into the lake of fire."**

- 6. Revelation 3:5 – "He who overcomes will, like them, be dressed in white. I will never blot out his name from the BOOK OF LIFE, but will acknowledge his name before my Father and His Angels."**
- 7. Revelation 21:27 – "Nothing impure will ever enter it, nor will anyone who does what is shameful or deceitful, but only those whose names ARE WRITTEN IN THE LAMB'S BOOK OF LIFE."**
- 8. Revelation 13:8 – "All inhabitants of the earth will worship the beast – all whose names have not been WRITTEN IN THE BOOK OF LIFE belonging to the Lamb that was slain from the creation of the world."**
- 9. Psalm 139:16 – "All the days ordained for me were WRITTEN IN YOUR BOOK before one of them came to be."**
- 10. Philippians 4:3 – "Yes, and I ask you, loyal yokefellow, help these women who have contended at my side in the cause of the gospel, along with Clement and the rest of my fellow workers, WHOSE NAMES ARE IN THE BOOK OF LIFE."**
- 11. Malachi 3:16 – "Then those who feared the Lord talked with each other, and the Lord listened and heard. A SCROLL OF REMEMBRANCE WAS WRITTEN IN HIS PRESENCE concerning those who feared the Lord and honored his name."**
- 12. Psalm 69:28 – "May they be BLOTTED OUT OF THE BOOK OF LIFE and not be listed with the righteous."**
- 13. Hebrews 12:22-28 – "But you have come to Mount Zion, to the heavenly Jerusalem, the city of the living God. You have come to thousands upon thousands of angels in joyful assembly, to the church of the firstborn WHOSE NAMES ARE WRITTEN IN HEAVEN."**

**This "Book Of Life" is what makes us either shudder with fear or become inspired with hope because this book written in Heaven pretty much determines whether we will live forever with God or be damned with Satan and his fallen angels forever.**

**These passages about the Book of Life, indicate that God has recorded every life of every human being. Every single physical cell of every human body, is written in Heaven. It is a detailed book better than DNA sequencing or cloning! Not even the many names of God recited from THE KEY OF SOLOMON can compare with the names that are written in God's Book of Life and will God call out your name and speak you into existence or will the absence of your name upon His lips turn you into a Babe of the Abyss, as Aleister Crowley will one day discover as he disappears into the place he desired to go to.**

**Matthew 18:10-11 says—"See that you do not look down on one of these little ones. For I tell you that their angels in heaven always see the face of my Father in heaven."**

**None of the dead shall be forgotten by God, not even the many millions of babies and children who have died. The Way we can be assured that our names are written in the Book Of Life, is by believing in God's finished work in Christ and going to God through the Name of Jesus, in Faith and in action, accepting His Love, Grace, and Mercy, which will triumph on Judgment Day.**

**Not every religious path leads to God, nor does everyone who says, LORD, LORD, get entrance into Heaven. According to John 10 and John 14:6, Jesus is the ONLY GATE, THE ONLY PATH TO HEAVEN. Following any other version of "GOD" leads straight to Satan and to follow any other light than the LIGHT OF THE WORLD WHO IS JESUS, is to travel towards the lake of fire.**

**The tunnel of light for Masons and New Agers is the lake of fire prepared for Lucifer and his angels, but ALL WHO INVOKE THE NAME OF JESUS AS SINCERE BELIEVERS, will be saved for Eternal Life and the whole Book of John gives each one of us an assurance that we have received Eternal Life in His Name if we just believe and never give up that belief.**

**BUDDHA leads to the lake of fire. The Hindu gods lead to the lake of fire. Allah leads to Satan and not to God. Every religious path in the world leads to certain death spiritually, physically, and infinitely and for any person who desires to be written in the Book of Life must come to God through Jesus first and anyone, after reading or studying**

**the Bible who rejects Jesus as being the only Way to God, will not make it. That is the Truth plain and simple.**

**Perhaps there are a few Chinese people in Tibet or a few Russians in Siberia or a few Muslims in Iraq who never heard about the true Jesus who might receive mercy on the Day of Judgment because they didn't have a chance due to the Satanic oppression in their countries.**

**We don't know what God's Plan will be for those who don't know about Jesus. We can hope and pray that He will have mercy on the majority of souls who never had a chance to know Him better by reading the pages of the Holy Bible.**

**We only know for certain that arrogant Scientologists, New Agers, Atheists, Witches, Satanists, Buddhists, and anyone else who has had a chance to receive Jesus as Savior and Lord, but rejects His Name, will themselves be rejected, because they have brought judgments upon themselves by judging God and rejecting His Command in Jesus' Name. Also, those who would follow the New Age Jesus rather than the Biblical Jesus are in for a big surprise as well, when they discover that the other religious paths they are mixing together with their generic god and their generic Jesus lead straight to the devil, the archenemy of the True God.**

**If we are not written upon the mind and heart of the God of Israel in His Book of Life, then we shall be thrown into the second death – the lake of fire. Jesus will have the final word over who gets eternal punishment and who receives Eternal Life.**

**By accepting Christ as our Savior and obeying His Will by loving others with the Truth of His Name as the Source of our goodness, we can be assured Salvation if we believe, no matter what our sins have been, provided that we confess our sins honestly and do the best we can to change, turn around (repent). The Holy Spirit will eventually counsel us to move in the direction He wants as he grooms the True Christians for Holiness, Righteousness, and Truth, chiseling out the rough edges, to make us smooth edges for the CAPSTONE of His Temple in Jesus.**

**1 Corinthians 15:52-55 says—“For the trumpet (SEVENTH LAST TRUMPET) will sound, the dead will be raised imperishable, and we will be changed. For the perishable must clothe itself with the imperishable, and the mortal with immortality, then the saying that is written will come true: ‘Death has been swallowed up in victory.’ ‘Where, O death, is your victory? Where, O death, is your sting?’”**

## **HELL, HADES, THE LAKE OF FIRE**

**“Don’t be afraid. I AM THE FIRST AND THE LAST. I am the Living One; I was dead, and behold I am alive forever and ever. AND I HOLD THE KEYS OF DEATH AND HADES.” (Rev. 1:17-18)**

**“The sea gave up the dead that were in it, AND DEATH AND HADES gave up the dead that were in them, and each person was judged according to what he had done. THEN DEATH AND HADES were thrown into the lake of fire. THE LAKE OF FIRE IS THE SECOND DEATH. If anyone’s name was not found written in THE BOOK OF LIFE, he was thrown into THE LAKE OF FIRE.” (Rev. 20:13-15)**

**For those who have not and will not participate in the FIRST RESURRECTION, they will participate in the GENERAL RESURRECTION of Judgment Day (Revelation 20).**

**Whether our names are written in the Book Of Life or not will determine our Eternal destiny.**

**As of today’s date, only those who have partaken in the first resurrection according to Revelation 20:4-6 are alive in heaven. The rest of the dead will not come to life until Earth and sky flee before the Second Coming of the Messiah. There are believers who will be raised immediately into Heaven and believers who will be raised at the SEVENTH LAST TRUMPET.**

**What about the rest of the dead who don’t rule with Christ in Heaven or get resurrected at the SEVENTH LAST TRUMPET?**

**On today’s calendar date, the rest of the dead, who have not shared in the first resurrection or are not in the realm of Hades, have decayed in the graves into which they were buried. We don’t have to question where people like Aleister Crowley, John Lennon, Albert Pike, Anton LaVey, Gerald Gardner, Adam Weishaupt, Bill & Hillary Clinton, Ted Turner, Darwin, the Tibetan Masters, Alice Bailey, O.J. Simpson or Madonna will end up. They may have gotten away with murder and corruption for Satan’s glory in this life, but in the Judgment to come,**



**they have bowed down before the one they served and are going to get what they deserved.**

**They truly sold their souls to the devil for the pleasures and glories of this life, forsaking Jesus and Eternity for the empty promises of the devil, which will lead the whole nation of hell, with all its lies, blasphemies, corruptions, and gods straight to the lake of fire, the final judgment of all God's avowed enemies.**

**2 Thessalonians 1:6-10 says – “God is just: He will pay back trouble to those who trouble you and give relief to you who are troubled, and to us as well. This will happen when the Lord Jesus is revealed from heaven in blazing fire with his powerful angels. He will punish those who do not know God and do not obey the gospel of our Lord Jesus. They will be punished with everlasting destruction and shut out from the presence of the Lord and from the majesty of his power on the day he comes to be glorified in his holy people and to be marveled at among all those who have believed. This includes you, because you believed our testimony to you.”**

**God has a record of every strand of hair that fell to the ground from each individual. As Matthew 10:30 says – “And even the very hairs of your head are all numbered. So don't be afraid.”**

**For those of us who didn't get the privilege or the honor of participating in the FIRST RESURRECTION, or the LAST TRUMPET RESURRECTION, we will either stand on the LEFT with the goats of HELL or stand on the RIGHT with the WHITE SHEEP of Heaven at the GREAT WHITE THRONE JUDGMENT DAY of Revelation 20..**

**What is the difference between 'hell' and 'the lake of fire'?**

**The Greek word for hell is 'gehenna,' which derives its name from a deep ravine south of Jerusalem. Hell is a reference to the “Valley of (the sons of) Hinnom.” The Hebrew word for hell is ge hinnom. During the reigns of Ahaz and Manasseh, Kings of Judah, human sacrifices to the Ammonite god Molech were offered there in the Valley of Hinnom. Josiah desecrated the valley because of the pagan worship there. It later became a metaphor for the place of final punishment. So the term hell will only exist in one form – THE LAKE OF FIRE, which**

**represents the final place of punishment—the second death (Revelation 20).**

**Hell comes from a place that once existed on earth, in Palestine, and was used as a metaphor for the final punishment of God's Adversaries who would burn up forever in the lake of fire. In other words, they won't be alive to experience the fire, but will die a second death in the lake of fire. The lake of fire is called, 'the second death.'**

**As Revelation 20:14 says – “Then death and Hades were thrown into the lake of fire. THE LAKE OF FIRE IS THE SECOND DEATH.”**

**God's enemies will be resurrected also on the Day of Judgment. Their punishment will be to die a second time as the justice of God is finally poured out and the innocent victims of the evil ones are forever relieved of those who tormented them. All whom God, not men or women, condemns as evil, will be thrown into the final punishment of the lake of fire. The lake of fire consumes the beast and the false prophet, and Satan shall be cast into the eternal damnation of this lake of fire, as well as all who have ever risen up under the power of his unholy spirit. The lake of fire will be the destiny of those who aren't written in God's Book of Life.**

**Hades, would therefore, represent the great prison where Satan and his angels have been incarcerated by God. It could also include those who were not resurrected into Heaven immediately, but resurrected and assigned to Satan's prison until the Coming Judgment.**

**What is Hades? Hades is not hell or the lake of fire. Hades is this: Jude 1:6 – “And the angels who did not keep their positions of authority but abandoned their own home – these he has kept in darkness, bound with everlasting chains for judgment on the great Day.” Hades is the realm where God has incarcerated the angels who did not keep their positions of authority with Him. It is unclear whether Hades and the Abyss are the same prison or realm where the demons have been sentenced to or whether they are two different realms. Hades might also be figurative of the abyss, the realm of the fallen angels, the demons, whose spirits rule the air of the earth. They are locked up and held for Judgment on the Great Day of the Lord. Hades is a prison reserved for Satan, his followers, and the other**

**angels who rebelled against God's Will. This might also be the realm of the dead who died in the Flood of Genesis 6 or anyone else who was killed by Divine punishment.**

**Luke 8:30-31 says – “Jesus asked him, ‘What is your name?’ ‘Legion,’ he replied, because many demons had gone into him. And they begged him repeatedly not to order them to go into the Abyss.”**

**2 Peter 2:4 says – “For if God did not spare angels when they sinned, but sent them to hell, putting them into gloomy dungeons to be held for judgment...he will not spare you either.”**

**Hades is not the final punishment for the angels, but the prison where they await their final judgment. Hades is also mentioned in 1 Peter 3:18-19 which says – “For Christ died for sins once for all, the righteous for the unrighteous, to bring you to God. He was put to death in the body but made alive by the Spirit, through whom also he went and preached to the SPIRITS IN PRISON who disobeyed long ago in the days of Noah while the ark was being built.”**

**This PRISON is called, “Hades” and even those who suffered divine judgment and were put to death by God might have been resurrected into this realm, without a physical form, to co-exist with the fallen angels until Judgment Day. Christ had spoken to ‘spirits in prison’ and if He preached to them, then only God knows what their final Judgment will be.**

**Since the devil and those who are His advocates have rejected and renounced their Creator, their Creator will not allow them to retain the physical identities he once gave to them and these SPIRITS in prison shall be locked up until the time of THE GOD OF ISRAEL'S NEW WORLD ORDER, when the first earth is destroyed, Hell, Hades, The Devil and Demons are all thrown into the lake of fire.**

**Therefore, hell, ge hinnom, the valley of the sons of Hinnom, is figurative of the place of final punishment. The place of final punishment is the lake of fire - the second death. If anyone's name is not found written in the Creator's Book of Life they shall be tossed into the lake of fire.**

## The Coming of the Lord

**1Th 4:13** Brothers, we do not want you to be ignorant <sup>r</sup> about those who fall asleep, <sup>s</sup> or to **grieve like the rest** of men, who have no hope. <sup>t</sup>

**1Th 4:14** We believe that Jesus died and rose again <sup>u</sup> and so we believe that God will bring with Jesus those who have fallen asleep in him. <sup>v</sup>

**1Th 4:15** According to the Lord's own word, we tell you that we who are still alive, who are left till the coming of the Lord, <sup>w</sup> will certainly not precede those who have fallen asleep. <sup>x</sup>

**1Th 4:16** For the Lord himself will come down from heaven, <sup>y</sup> with a loud command, with the voice of the archangel <sup>z</sup> and with the trumpet call of God, <sup>a</sup> and the dead in Christ will rise first. <sup>b</sup>

**1Th 4:17** After that, we who are still alive and are left <sup>c</sup> will be caught up together with them in the clouds <sup>d</sup> to meet the Lord in the air. And so we will be with the Lord <sup>e</sup> forever.

**1Th 4:18** Therefore encourage each other <sup>f</sup> with these words. \_

**First, my grandfather died.**

**Then, an uncle died.**

**After him, my grandma, my dad's mother died.**

**My grandma died.**

**My 20 year old pet, a cat died.**

**My dad died in 2012.**

**Some people view me as a pessimist or view me as one who has a 'negative' attitude.**

**But my fellow believers, who know me, know me as an OPTIMIST with the best POSITIVE attitude TOWARD Heaven and God I can have as a mortal sinner.**

**Having a 'good' attitude about Heaven has produced the following response in me:**

**Jn 16:20** I tell you the truth, you will weep and mourn <sup>k</sup> while the world rejoices. You will grieve, but your grief will turn to joy. <sup>l</sup>

**Jn 16:21** A woman giving birth to a child has pain <sup>m</sup> because her time has come; but when her baby is born she forgets the anguish because of her joy that a child is born into the world.

**Jn 16:22** So with you: Now is your time of grief, <sup>n</sup> but I will see you again <sup>o</sup> and you will rejoice, and no one will take away your joy. <sup>p</sup>

**Jn 16:23 In that day <sup>q</sup> you will no longer ask me anything. I tell you the truth, my Father will give you whatever you ask in my name. <sup>r</sup>**

**Jn 16:24 Until now you have not asked for anything in my name. Ask and you will receive, <sup>s</sup> and your joy will be complete. <sup>t</sup>**

**I feel that way today.**

**Hollyweird continues to rejoice over wickedness, while I weep and mourn over the world's many losses, including my own.**

**It is neither myself, nor God who has a 'negative' attitude.**

**It is the world and its MONEY SYSTEMS which are NEGATIVE to God's Children, who are HEIRS of FREEDOM in the Kingdom of Heaven, where MONEY and TAXES do not exist.**

**The BURDENS of MONEY systems have really stressed everybody out no matter how doped out people put themselves through to try to ignore their own addictions to the slavery MONEY produces.**

**No, not everyone who EARNS money or pays taxes is evil.**

**No, not everyone who EARNS financial WEALTH through the various money systems throughout the world are evil.**

**If we condemned EVERYONE for using money, the whole world would be condemned. Then again, I kind of wonder over this thought: Is THE WHOLE WORLD CONDEMNED?**

**If so, WHY are we ALL condemned?**

**WHY do we ALL have to die before being resurrected?**

**While during the last days of life on earth, men like Stossel advocate homosexuality, prostitution, and worshipping the wealthy by selling lemonade as conservative money preacher: DAVE RAMSEY teaches 'economic responsibility', liberal money worshipers continue their ignorance of the financial facts that plague all of humanity's children with a form of slavery that matches 20<sup>th</sup> century slavery.**

**WHY sometimes remains unanswered, and humanity, for lack of SEEKING GOD'S KINGDOM, will become dumbed down with an 'ignorance is bliss' attitude and develop a spirit of blankness, dumbness, and utter contempt for all that GOD calls HOLY versus unholy.**

**Sometimes, I myself allowed myself to do what King Solomon did, and test FOLLY and MADNESS arriving at the same conclusion he did that WISDOM and KNOWLEDGE are better than ignorance, folly, madness, and stupidity. Yes, sometimes INTELLIGENT people whom**

**God blesses with INTELLIGENCE enjoys becoming stupid for awhile because SMART people usually SUFFER more than dumb people do.**

**As part of my folly side in coping with my dad's departure, I had strong drinks here and there in order to relieve the stress of listening to the broken record of women grieving over and over and over again. It is true that sometimes, men and women grieve differently over the departure of our loved ones and our PATIENCE will be SEVERELY tested as MEN. We men don't like DRAMA QUEENS.**

**Unbelievers who worship the universe as one big cosmic fart are still awaiting their alien saviors to take them to their cosmic gas universe which has more intelligent life than earth does, but usually don't have ANY HOPE beyond 'leaving things to the universe,' and who cares?**

**Some unbelievers get suicidal!**

**I have a believing Aunt who almost took a shotgun to herself when her husband died.**

**I've met many people who spend a whole lot of grieving over the loss of a spouse, the loss of a child, the loss of a parent – and try different methods to overcome their grief and some people just never snap out of their grief. Some people end up TOTALLY ALONE and can't take being ALONE WITH GOD.**

**Lk 21:33 Heaven and earth will pass away, but my words will never pass away.<sup>h</sup>**

**Lk 21:34 "Be careful, or your hearts will be weighed down with dissipation, drunkenness and the anxieties of life,<sup>i</sup> and that day will close on you unexpectedly<sup>j</sup> like a trap.**

**Lk 21:35 For it will come upon all those who live on the face of the whole earth.**

**Lk 21:36 Be always on the watch, and pray<sup>k</sup> that you may be able to escape all that is about to happen, and that you may be able to stand before the Son of Man."**

**Yes, DRUNKENNESS and THE ANXIETIES OF LIFE fell upon me, like any other male sinner. If you live without a spouse, you might masturbate WAY TOO MUCH to alleviate yourself with images of the opposite sex – with someone like MICHELLE FIELDS of the DAILY CALLER who arouses your sexual appetite whenever you see just one inch of her smooth and curvy and beautiful flesh! Yep. LUST IS A KILLER!**

**You will struggle with the images that late night CINEMAX shows and ENJOY SEEING NAKED CHICKS!**

**You will ENJOY the feelings that come with DRINKING various tasty alcoholic beverages!**

**You will ENJOY being stupid sometimes.**

**However, none of this will replace that EMPTINESS you feel inside that only GOD'S SPIRIT can fill.**

**Eventually, you don't want to turn on late night CINEMAX and have images of a naked Michelle Fields as your last masturbation moment for the week.**

**You may STOP getting drunk.**

**You may not enjoy being STUPID anymore and actually FOLLOW JESUS through OBEDIENCE TO HIS WILL.**

**JESUS doesn't want us to remain weak for a long time and to be strong – eventually. He gives us the GIFT OF TIME to become STRONGER instead of weaker. Our response of FAITH during our personal times of testing is to:**

- 1. OVERCOME THE WORLD**
- 2. OVERCOME YOURSELF AND YOUR OWN SIN**
- 3. OVERCOME WEAKNESSES SPIRITUALLY**

**Sometimes I resort to watching movies, listening to music, and trying not to think about anything because sometimes, I myself, just "CAN'T HANDLE THE TRUTH!"**

**Most people are WEAK and the apostle Paul stated:**

**2Co 11:29 Who is weak, and I do not feel weak?<sup>j</sup> Who is led into sin,<sup>k</sup> and I do not inwardly burn?**

**2Co 11:30 If I must boast, I will boast<sup>l</sup> of the things that **show my weakness.**<sup>m</sup>**

**2Co 12:10 That is why, for Christ's sake, I delight<sup>k</sup> in weaknesses, in insults, in hardships,<sup>l</sup> in persecutions,<sup>m</sup> in difficulties. For **when I am weak,** then I am strong.<sup>n</sup>**

**I can honestly say, that through the POWER of God's Words, I never doubted God or questioned God. I trusted in His Words that my**

**grandmothers and my dad would see the face of Jesus and He would decide their Eternity as well as mine.**

**Why do I need to grieve like a person without hope when I have placed my FULL HOPE AND CONFIDENCE in God's Promises, no matter what my own sins or the sins of others have been?**

**I will also not spend too much time patting myself on the back and telling the world, "I'M A "GOOD" PERSON!"**

**Mt 19:16 Now a man came up to Jesus and asked, "Teacher, what good thing must I do to get eternal life<sup>e</sup>?"<sup>f</sup>**

**Mt 19:17 "Why do you ask me about what is good?" Jesus replied. "There is only One who is good. If you want to enter life, obey the commandments."<sup>g</sup>**

**Mt 19:18 "Which ones?" the man inquired. Jesus replied, " 'Do not murder, do not commit adultery,<sup>h</sup> do not steal, do not give false testimony,**

**Mt 19:19 honor your father and mother,'<sup>82 i</sup> and 'love your neighbor as yourself.'<sup>83 j</sup>**

**Mt 19:20 "All these I have kept," the young man said. "What do I still lack?"**

**Mt 19:21 Jesus answered, "If you want to be perfect,<sup>k</sup> go, sell your possessions and give to the poor,<sup>l</sup> and you will have treasure in heaven.<sup>m</sup> Then come, follow me."**

**Only GOD IS GOOD.**

**We all deserve to die and go to hell.**

**GOD forgave us through the crucified body of the LAMB He died in and gave us THE BLESSED HOPE of the RESURRECTION which we can CONFIDENTLY CLAIM for our souls by BELIEVING!**



## No One Is Righteous

Ro 3:9 **What shall we conclude then? Are we any better<sup>9</sup> ?<sup>n</sup> Not at all! We have already made the charge that Jews and Gentiles alike are all under sin.<sup>o</sup>**

Ro 3:10 **As it is written: “There is no one righteous, not even one;**

Ro 3:11 **there is **no one who** understands, **no one who** seeks God.**

Ro 3:12 **All have turned away, they have together become worthless;**

**there is **no one who** does good, not even one.”<sup>10 p</sup>**

Ro 3:13 **“Their throats are open graves; their tongues practice deceit.”<sup>11 q</sup>**

**“The poison of vipers is on their lips.”<sup>12 r</sup>**

Ro 3:14 **“Their mouths are full of cursing and bitterness.”<sup>13 s</sup>**

Ro 3:15 **“Their feet are swift to shed blood;**

Ro 3:16 **ruin and misery mark their ways,**

Ro 3:17 **and the way of peace they do not know.”<sup>14 t</sup>**

Ro 3:18 **“There is no fear of God before their eyes.”<sup>15 u</sup>**

Ro 3:19 **Now we know that whatever the law says,<sup>v</sup> it says to those who are under the law,<sup>w</sup> so that every mouth may be silenced<sup>x</sup> and the whole world held accountable to God.<sup>y</sup>**

Ro 3:20 **Therefore no one will be declared righteous in his sight by observing the law;<sup>z</sup> rather, through the law we become conscious of sin.<sup>a</sup> \_**

**Preachers usually try to manipulate the emotions of their congregations or try to get an “Aha! Gotcha!” over confessed sins, trying to make people feel guilty and ashamed to the point of being disqualified from having a ministry or even speaking in church.**

**But there is NOT ONE GOOD PREACHER ON EARTH! NOT ONE! NOBODY IS ‘GOOD’ or a “GOOD PERSON” except GOD ALONE.**

**As surely we are all made equals through DEATH and DYING and being MORTAL, so we are all made equal over the fact that ONLY GOD ALONE IS GOOD – while the rest of us are not ‘GOOD’ by HOLY definition.**

Mk 1:14 **After John<sup>r</sup> was put in prison, Jesus went into Galilee,<sup>s</sup> proclaiming the **good** news of God.<sup>t</sup>**

Mk 1:15 **“The time has come,”<sup>u</sup> he said. “The kingdom of God is near. Repent and believe<sup>v</sup> the good news!”<sup>w</sup>**

**HEAVEN is not bad news but GOOD NEWS!**

**The BIBLE IS THE GOOD NEWSPAPER!**

**While BAD REPORTS will continue to fill our earthly news papers and news casts, THE GOOD NEWS is that Jesus is ALIVE, RULING IN HEAVEN and HE IS COMING SOON!**

**During my short time on earth, I spent plenty of time reading and studying the Bible, reading and studying lots of books, asking lots of questions and seeking lots of answers. THE BIBLE, I'm a believer, contains ALL OF LIFE'S ANSWERS! ALL OF THEM!**

**I can testify truthfully that I'm not always a strong warrior, but WEAK.**

**But when we are WEAK, then we are strong!**

**And my enemies have no: AHA! GOTCHA! Because even my own folly and madness serves a useful purpose.**

**After I lost my dad, I lost my job and my house. Faced with unemployment and a barrage of nasty problems initiated by the devil's advocates, and nobody giving a darn whether I lived or died, I faced GOD ALMIGHTY alone. And that was FINE WITH ME.**

**I was ANGRY. But not with God.**

**I was ANGRY with Satan first!**

**I was then ANGRY with his advocates.**

**I was then ANGRY with unrelative relatives.**

**I was then ANGRY with BAD EMPLOYERS guilty of shameful and criminal acts against their own employees.**

**I was then ANGRY with EVIL POLITICIANS leading all the way up to this new monkey god that Americans worshiped from 2008 – 2012.**

**RIGHTEOUS INDIGNATION over injustice is okay, so long as we don't carry out acts of aggression, violence and murder, which are against God's Will.**

**It's okay to use force only to protect the innocent, but never to be used as an offense, with the exception of DEFENSE of the innocent. Sometimes we get so angry we want to confront and enemy and beat the crap out of them! We HATE EVIL AND STUPID PEOPLE!**

**But when we learn to take the log out of our own eyes, we must acknowledge the many moments when we have been EVIL and STUPID, since only GOD ALONE IS GOOD.**

**You sometimes have to have guilt, shame, and regret to get your focus on how GOD views you through HIS SPIRIT rather than doing a self critique through your own flesh.**

**You ALWAYS must turn to the God of Israel through the Name of Jesus Christ [Yeshua Mashiach]. You have to confess, renounce, and repent of your sins and bring your anxieties to the Lord.**

**DEATH and SUFFERING are REALITY on earth.**

**Life is not always like a HOLLYWOOD MOVIE.**

**Real life is HARSH and without mercy in a sinful, fallen world where everybody is out for themselves and screw the rest.**

**You might be shocked that I never questioned God or had some fallen angel moment where I had such a rebellion against God that I went renegade and then suddenly had this huge transformation.**

**In reality, I questioned HUMAN BEINGS; I questioned WORLD LEADERS; I questioned the MONEY SYSTEM; I questioned the TAX SYSTEM; I questioned un-relative relatives who are haters of God; I questioned HATERS of me; I questioned PEOPLE more than God.**

**God was and is NOT TO BLAME for death or suffering in this world. If ANYONE in the universe was to blame, it would be THE ENEMY OF GOD and his advocates who cause suffering, death, and anxiety.**

**I ALWAYS believed in the RESURRECTION of Jesus Christ and always will, no matter what other people's sins are or what my own sins have been. I'm A BELIEVER!**

**I might drink and cuss like a sailor sometimes, but I still LOVE GOD and LOVE THE BIBLE and remain FAITHFUL to His promises, even if my life was ruined by 'humanity.'**

**Most people BLAME GOD instead of themselves or other people.**

**In my life, I NEVER BLAMED GOD.**

**I would blame myself, the devil, or other people before looking in God's direction for blame.**

**Who is to blame for HOW my life went sour?**

**First you start with your own mirror reflection.**

**<sup>1Co 13:11</sup> When I was a child, I talked like a child, I thought like a child, I reasoned like a child. When I became a man, I put childish ways <sup>h</sup> behind me.**

**<sup>1Co 13:12</sup> Now we see but a **poor reflection** as in a mirror; <sup>i</sup> then we shall see face to face. <sup>j</sup> Now I know in part; then I shall know fully, even as I am fully known. <sup>k</sup>**

**1Co 13:13 And now these three remain: faith, hope and love. <sup>l</sup> But the greatest of these is love. <sup>m</sup>**

**Then we have to BLAME SATAN, because he inspires HATE, SIN, DISOBEDIENCE, and every problem earth has.**

**Then, the people who choose to listen to Satan rather than God are responsible for the world's ills.**

**When I am done blaming myself or the devil or other people, all I have in the CONCLUSION OF LIFE is: JESUS IS GOD! I'm not god nor a god. I don't want to sit on the throne and rule the universe. I don't care to be a slave or spend my time worrying about MONEY and THE SYSTEM.**

**I'm a BELIEVER in FREEDOM as Jesus Christ taught FREEDOM and for this volume I will focus on the differences between the FREEDOM HEAVEN offers versus the slavery earth is under and point the finger at the CHIEF CAUSES of Earth's problems.**

## **CHAPTER 4**

### **THE POETRY OF ROBIN FOX: WILL MARRIED COUPLES BE REUNITED IN PARADISE?**

**My dad just died in 2012 leaving behind a mourning wife who has placed her CONFIDENCE and HOPE that one day she will be reunited in Paradise with her departed loved one. She is, today, dying and I must care for her with much grief, anxiety, and torment.**

**I was HAPPY I wrote this poetry book because it EXPRESSES HOW I thought about Heaven as a teenager and young adult. Being older and wiser, I have come to the possible conclusion that HEAVEN may not be like I imagined: HEAVEN WILL BE FAR BETTER THAN WHATEVER MY IMAGINATION CAN PRODUCE!**

**If I never got married in this world, perhaps one of my Heavenly Rewards would be to meet a beautiful companion who resembles MICHELLE FIELDS from the Daily Caller in a PERFECT HEAVEN!**

**Even if I met the woman of my dreams on earth, I wouldn't want to get married because I would rather be a slave to Christ than to a system that keeps you a slave to a woman.**

**In this world, God did not allow me to meet someone like Michelle Fields. My soul can be FREED from the worldly concerns that are occupied with women and what women want and need. Believe me, I watched my parents go through a lifetime of hell and I wouldn't doom their grandchildren or my own children to such a life. I'm just striving to FREE MYSELF from this prison at 40 and am really serious about just being single and freed from the cares and worries that marriage to a woman comes with. I would rather hold onto my dreams and present my case to God. MY REWARD in Heaven will be to see my parents young, healed, and Eternal, while standing in Heaven will be a beautiful woman like Michelle Fields waiting for me.**

**SUNSTAR AND MOONCHILD was a short poetic love story I wrote in my teenage days about a man and a woman coming together in**

**Paradise to share a romance, a romance that I would only be able to capture in short relationships ending with sadness. This book also represented my DREAMS OF PARADISE.**

**Sharing PARADISE with one beautiful woman FOREVER was how I viewed HEAVEN. It is not a fantasy to wish or imagine that someday, all married couples who lost a spouse in this messed up world, will one day be resurrected and enjoy ETERNITY together.**

**All the SINGLE FOLKS who never got married or had a chance to enjoy a good marriage on earth, may very well have an ETERNAL COMPANION of the opposite sex waiting for them in Eternity. We will discuss the theology of MARRIAGE versus NON-MARRIAGE in the next chapter.**

**SUNSTAR AND MOONCHILD is a short love story, which describes how I feel about romance, marriage, sex, relationships and love between men and women and presents the POSSIBILITY that in PARADISE we will have an Eternal companion that is flawlessly perfect in every way. This chapter defines the beauty and the art of love, which takes place between a newlywed man and woman who love each other in the bonds of ETERNAL MATRIMONY.**

**This chapter is my POETRY which describes how I view HEAVEN and the following chapter will go over Biblically, where I might be wrong in my fantasy world.**

## **SUNSTAR AND MOONCHILD: A COUPLE RE-UNITED IN HEAVEN**

**MOONCHILD flew among the scattered silver thunderclouds of a new world gracefully swaying the silkient feathers of her stork-like wings in slow rhythmic patterns. The procession of her long white dress dangled within the breeze of her flight like a flock of seagulls in motion and it hugged every sharp curve of her flawless feminine figure like gossamer wrapped around a rare diamond. Her long hair winnowed in all directions like the wild flames of a fiery ocean as the heavenly winds that colored her pale cheeks with the redness of a rose sailed through every flowing strand. Her humble countenance was smooth and sculptured like a cameo portrait while the ivory color of her perfect skin was like a white lily reflecting the purity of the sun.**

**She silently drifted through the clouds in a stream of light. Her radiant body, filled with the energy of God's Light, was as fair as the moon, causing halos of rainbows to emerge among the misty curtains of the luminous sky. Her innocent eyes sparkled like stars as they captured the light of her glowing wings, and the dazzling jewels of her necklaces, earrings, and bracelets glistened with colors of the lighted mountains.**

**The beautiful God-inspired land below her was carpeted with countless Redwood trees and the ground was sheltered by the immense thickness of the branches. The trees of the enchanted Redwood forests stood at about seven miles high and one-quarter of a mile thick, and flocks of birds of every namable and unnamable kind nested and flew among the branches. To her left, towards the east of the Redwood Pines, were high mountains made of pure diamonds. Countless spectrums filled the ether and the forests with all the primary colors of the rainbow. The diamond mountains were about ten miles high and every boulder had been carved out of diamonds by the Wisdom and Power of their Creator. Thousands of waterfalls flowed down many facets of the steep slopes, and trees of many different kinds grew out of the diamonds. The diamond mountains extended many miles toward the north, south, and east, while the Redwood**

**pin**es filled the whole western horizon. **MOONCHILD** smiled as her eagle-like vision captured the indescribable beauty of this new world she had traveled into.

**As MOONCHILD descended upon the diamond mountains, the luminescence of her feminine body dazzled with specks of shining silver like glittering stars and when the diamonds captured the light of her being, billions of new rainbows emerged from the mountainsides and caused every drop of water within the waterfalls to glisten like falling jewels. A flock of doves flew past her as a gust of wind encompassed her body and carried her wings above the Redwood trees. The fresh scent of the Redwood pines filled her expanding lungs as tiny flashes of light blinked on and off with her passing. While she gazed upon the colorful beauty of the countless rainbows, she noticed in the distance, one spectrum that appeared to be different than all the other spectrums. The other rainbows varied in size, but this one rainbow was larger than the other rainbows and she began to wonder what was causing this one unique rainbow to be different from all the others. As she approached the rainbow she noticed that it was created from the heavy mists of ten waterfalls that poured into many different pools down the steep slopes of the diamonds. The rainbow arched downward through the thick branches of the Redwood trees and touched what appeared to be a gold rock resting at the waterfalls' end. As MOONCHILD encircled the rainbow hue, she could not see the rainbow's end because the branches of the Redwood trees blocked her vision of the ground below. She noticed a sparkling flash of gold that sat in the middle of a great pool of water where the ten waterfalls met together about seven miles straight down. The immense hue glowed with gold and diamond specks of dust, which resembled snow when it glistens and hundreds of tiny glowing fireflies flashed back and forth among cooing doves. MOONCHILD entered the rainbow and descended with the arch through the singing branches of the CLUB G-SPOT Redwoods feeling the power of the wind brushing against her fair cheeks.**

**\***

**SUNSTAR sat upon a large rock made of pure gold that rested between two rushing rivers. The two rivers flowed from the thundering**



**collisions of ten waterfalls that cleansed his soul with their purifying sound. One river flowed south and one flowed west. To his left, the enchanted Redwood forests glowed with the colors of Paradise, while to his right was the wall of a great diamond mountain overflowing with crystalline waterfalls that crowned his head with many rainbows. Winds that were filled with the pleasing scent of fresh Redwood pine caressed his winged-brown hair and the white-feathers of his wings which draped over the sides of the rock of gold like silk curtains over a window that veil a picture between the outside and the inside of human vision so complex yet simple. He closed his dreaming eyes to hear the music of the waters pour into his hovering soul. After becoming one with the glory of God's Creations, SUNSTAR prayed with the voiceless thoughts of his inspired mind.**

**He said, "How long as a mortal did I silently sleep beneath the darkness of each cold and lonely night dreaming of the dawn of her warm splendor to shine down upon me as the moon awakens the firefly? Every time I thought of her long hair blowing like flames fanned by the wind and every time I thought of her glorious smile while feeling the heat of her iridescent eyes shining through the windows of my soul, I would feel a jagged knife pierce my burning heart, trying to slay my hopes with its poisonous blade of doubt. O' Creator of male and female: Where O' where is the dream of my dreams and the spirit of my human flesh whom my lonely soul has longed to embrace in this majestic Paradise? Where is the bride of my human desires? Where is the sacred muse of my spiritual and physical desires who stands among the angels to give me words of comfort, support, and encouragement?"**

**When he opened his emerald green eyes, SUNSTAR saw thousands of rainbows emerging from the mountainside and surrounding him. A flash of lightning struck the ground to his left and when he turned his head his jaded pupils widened. There, on the edge of the riverbank, stood the woman of his dreams – one of the most beautiful women among the daughters of God. Her long ash brown hair with streaks of flaming red, sable, and blond, along with her creamy white skin dressed in a long silky-laced gown, brought chills of excitement that rolled up and down his trembling spine like an earthquake. With one glance of her innocent glowing eyes, her beauty**

**instantly captivated him, and the jewels of her necklaces and bracelets cast a gleam in his lustrous eyes. Her face, her skin, her hair, and her form was perfect, more beautiful than SUNSTAR could ever dare to imagine, and more lovely than any reality he could ever hope to see.**

**MOONCHILD stood motionless with anticipation as she stared upon SUNSTAR's leather-bound stomach and his smooth satin-toned skin. His long winged brown hair glided with the waves of the wind like the feathers of a hawk. His hands were like scepters of gold and his strong arms were like the legs of a lion. The power of a bear was in his muscular chest while the marble pillars of his masculine legs stood firm like the legs of a panther. His lips were moist with the dew of the heavens that poured its thunder through the waterfalls and his white wings shined with the brilliance of an aurora. His sand-colored flesh was tightly sealed like a row of shields and his countenance was sculptured like a heroic statue commemorating the face of a victorious warrior. His eyes were humble and filled with love and admiration. She could sense the pain of loneliness that imprisoned his past life and she was ready to unshackle him from the chains that bound his earthly body. She was ready to give and receive pleasure with this man who stood like a fallen warrior whose heart was slain by her beauty.**

**SUNSTAR spread his white feathery wings and captured a gust of wind as he leaped off the rock of gold and landed in the middle of the river while the waters quickly receded down to his ankles. As if it were a land of empathy absorbing their emotions, the waterfalls instantly became downpours of lava, the Redwood trees lit up like blazing torches, and the fallen logs became bonfires as a firestorm instantly swept through the forests.**

**When he gazed into the mirrors of her soul through the windows of his, they cast his reflection among the exploding embers of the Redwood trees which lit up like fireworks. Their hands reached out touching palm to palm and then linked together like chains as their fingers became entwined in a wreath of perspiring flesh. The firestorm surrounded them and consumed their clothing without touching their burning flesh, until they were stripped naked like the fiery trees that**

**surrounded them. With the forceful hurricane of his arms SUNSTAR swept MOONCHILD off the weak foundations of her soft feet and took her breath away with his passionate heartbeat.**

**He bathed his hands with the waterfall of her hair, as his fingers became a powerful wind to grasp their roots and pull her thoughts out of her head and into the sky where the clouds billowed weightlessly. He pulled her bowed neck backward and drank savagely from the fountain of her lips. Her heart fluttered like a flock of butterflies beneath the stampede of wild stallions within his.**

**Like two storm clouds that thunder after they collide and produce lightning when they blend, so did the friction of these two heavenly bodies rub together and melt with a thundering pant and hot white flashes of energy. Their cleansing kisses were like fire and ice that burned their hearts and chilled their bodies; and as their impulses erupted like an exploding volcano, they poured the lava of love's fire down each other's throats. Currents of white lightning surrounded them as they felt their erotic energy surging through the fiery blood of their trembling veins. As SUNSTAR moved over her and into her, they moaned and groaned with the howling winds that fanned the flames within their hair, and they tossed back and forth like the waves of a stormy sea.**

**His resilient fingers slid up and down her waxed skin stroking her as he would stroke the feathers of a bird. As his strong hands caressed the silk petals of her heaving body, the musical strings of their tightening muscles vibrated in sync like the strings of a guitar; and her whole trembling body quivered with rhythms that made him dance across her excited flesh. His rousing touches struck the right chords of her motionless soul so that she could feel the music of love within the passion of his careful caress.**

**SUNSTAR wrapped his wings around her like a stimulated flower that encloses its petals to receive the honey of a bee. MOONCHILD's wings expanded and then lit up like blazing torches as the firestorm ignited them without harming or consuming their shining white feathers. Her breasts became firm and his stomach tightened, as they became one flesh, one soul, and one motion. They were so intoxicated**

**with the wine of sensual desire and closeness that gentleness changed into savagery and when they had reached the dramatic climax of their erotic sensations, a cold chill rolled up and down their arched spines with powerful tremors that caused flashes of lightning to emanate from their burning flesh. Within moments, their savage movements subsided before a civil calmness.**

**The firestorm became a blizzard, the burning trees froze and became towers of icebergs, the lava became ice, and the ground of ashes on the forest floor became snowflakes. The wings of their lungs inhaled the hurricanes of their whimpering groans until they breathlessly gasped for air. Like a sword removed from its sheath the sharp pangs that pierced their flesh with a thunderclap was dislodged as they quickly refrained from their erotic rendezvous. The ice quickly melted into rivers, the waterfalls resumed their course, the Redwood trees returned to their natural splendor, and billions of rainbows once again filled the golden forests. SUNSTAR unwrapped his wings from his attractive bride feeling the essence of poetry as he took the lace of her silk hands into the leather of his.**

**They walked naked hand-in-hand without shame or guilt through the enchanted forest, as Adam and Eve did in the first paradise. As husband and wife united by unceremonial love, they walked hand-in-hand smiling at the beautiful glory of God's Creation and enjoying the freedom of the wind blowing through their nakedness. They felt the fresh earth beneath their feet and a new earth at their fingertips. Silently they walked, meditating upon their brief erotic encounter, until they stopped at a certain place to gaze romantically into the sparkling crystals of their eyes to see each other's reflection. With voices of poetic love, SUNSTAR and MOONCHILD spoke:**

## **SUNSTAR**

**Your breasts are softer than the pillows I slept upon in every moonlit night I dreamed of you. Whenever I shall rest my face upon your feathery bosom, I shall wrap your silkient body over mine knowing that your sheen skin, which is like a smooth sheet of satin, will blanket me with warmth and comfort.**

**Your eyes are eagles where I explore the freedom of my soul becoming one with the wind in its ascension towards the cloud of its dreams; your hands are like the feathers of a dove where peace can be grasped in a fluttering whisper that enfolds my breath; our arms are lilies entwined, modified petals that wrap around each other; your mouth is a cup that my lips embrace as they pour the fire of the sun into my burning heart; your legs are like the necks of swans that glide above the waters gracefully; your thighs are like the wings of flamingos; with your smile you capture the winds of my ghostly body; your sculptured hips are slow and methodical like stalking cheetahs moving swiftly through the wild jungle of my mind; your eyebrows are ravens' wings that capture the gentle winds of your fragrant breath.**

## **MOONCHILD**

**Your lips are seashells revealing the oyster of your tongue, which unveils the pearls of your teeth and you crown my neck with the necklace of your smile. Kiss me my handsome lover, as heaven kisses the flowers with tears of mourning dew. Seal your enrapturing lips over mine, for the wine of your kiss shall intoxicate my mind with wonderful emotions that ascend to the highest worlds. Let my pulsating body be the fertile soil where you plant the growing seed of your affectionate caress and make my heart blossom like a stimulated flower who opens her petals to receive the warmth of the sun. Let the winds of your sighs carry the fragrance of my perfume. Let my lungs expand with the scent of your masculine cologne.**

## **SUNSTAR**

**Awaken my princess to a world of the dream warrior where your soul mirrors the visions that your moonlit eyes capture within the shadow of my earth. You are like a unicorn among donkeys; a flower among a field of weeds; an angel amidst a crowd of demons. Your skin is of the purest gold, rare and valuable and my soul is refined with your priceless purity. You have been my dream of Paradise as my earthly body was surrounded by the nightmares of hell. Let the skies of our freedom be the ceiling; let the Sun be our lamp; let the green grass be our bed; and let the wind be our breath of life; and let the trees be our paper where we carve out the blood of our hearts with piercing arrows of love that crucify our flesh and cast our enslaved souls free upon the path of the singing birds.**

## **MOONCHILD**

**Fair am I like the silk petals of a rose red with the blood of your heart perfumed with my fragrance. I am a gentle spiral light glowing with the luminescence of angels whose bodies have the fire of God inside of them, and you, my lover, are the rainbow which emanates from the ghost of my being. The daughters of the first earth were veiled with black curtains over their faceless eyes, for their jade pupils were blind to your radiance, which reflects the power of the sun and the splendor of the stars. As a Daughter of God, I am unveiled before you in beautiful nakedness, as He naturally designed, and there shall be no more walls or curtains to separate us – for we are eternally clothed in unapparelled love. Come let me be weak beneath your strength.**

## **SUNSTAR**

**My senses are heightened and refined as my fingers reach out to touch you, absorb you into the fire of my burning heart. As my affectionate hands firmly clasp the wine goblet of your neck, I fervently drink from the gold of your sensual lips and the silver of your silent tongue. Your passionate kiss is like the sparkling waters of an**

**oasis in a waterless desert and as a mortal nomad I died of thirst since you were only a mirage, but now my thirst is quenched and I am refreshed as I bathe my lips with the fountain of water in your kiss. Your hair is like a waterfall pouring down the ivory slope of your smooth back and your sapphire eyes are like the aqua-blue waters of a lagoon. Your mouth is like a singing river that washes my body clean as you pour out your soothing love upon me. Through your purifying kisses, moist with the dew of the heavens, I can taste the springs of the deepness of life that flows from within the core of your heart. Your heart is the well of my soul where I make my wish upon a star shining within the fiery sun that clothes God Who is the Source of our Light.**

## **MOONCHILD**

**My lover's fingers are like a necklace of gold around my neck as he kisses my fair cheeks like the sun kisses the moon with its rays. His stern countenance rests between my aroused breasts like a portrait in a locket; I feel warm flesh next to my fluttering heart whose butterfly wings breathe the scented breeze of his cologne. Come my lover, bury your face between my aroused breasts as you would bury your face between two flourishing flowers which tremble before a strong wind. My nipples are firm and hard as your fingertips glide down my back like ripples move a calm pool when disturbed by a falling stone. Fill your strong hands with my weak flesh, for my skin is soft, smooth, and fragrant like a white lily capturing the purity of the sunlight and I want your soothing masculine fingers to slide along my heaving body to feel moved within your touch. I want to be caressed as the petals of a rose are caressed and I want my hair to be combed like the mane of a warrior's horse is combed. I want my lover to feel my love for him and to experience pleasure within the sugar of my lips and the spice of my skin.**

## **SUNSTAR**

**Beloved, let me drink the milk of your breasts, for they color my teeth white like pearls and polish the ribs from which your frame was taken by the Creator's Will. How beautiful you are crowned like a princess on her wedding day. I love you with the body of my soul and with the soul of my body. The blue within your eyes reflects the colors of the skies and the wings of my soul sail upon their freedom as a hawk glides upon the sky. Breathe my sighs, for they are fragrant with your perfume!**

## **MOONCHILD**

**You are my warrior. Conquer me with the shining sword of your flesh and use my body as its sheath. Let the silk garment of my skin cover your nakedness and wear my love as your armor. You are my prince and I am your princess. Wear me as your crown of splendor and let my fingers be the royal rings wrapped around the scepters of your hands. Let me be the jewel that casts the brightest sparkle in your penetrating eyes. Caress my legs as you would stroke the feathers of a bird so gently felt. My thighs are like the wings of an excited bird expanding to feel the touch of the hurricanes within your hands, which sweep me off my feet and carry me away to distant horizons.**

## **SUNSTAR**

**Your body is Earth; your voice is Wind; your soul is Fire; your passion is Water. You carry within you the four elements of the life of my soul. The substance of your perfect being unravels the flowers and brings forth the rainbows that encompass the clouds of my soul. Like the Earth, my beloved is adorned with every precious jewel. Your eyes are sapphires engraved in pearls and their pupils are jades. Your painted lips are rubies, your skin is jasper, your teeth are white crystals, your hands are ivory. Your feminine curves are like the facets of a diamond cut sharp. Your womb is the fertile soil where I can plant my seeds and watch them grow as you water them. Your voice is a wind that carries the wings of my soul to distant places and**



**it nests in the singing branches of the forests and applauds with the clapping hands of the seas. Your soul is a fire consuming my flesh until I am like a melting candle burning beneath the flame of your desire. May your passion cleanse me with hands bathed in olive oil. May your nakedness cover my skin with its softness, that the hardness of my tense flesh may be comforted as the waterfalls of your love pour over my naked body as the rain opens a closed flower.**

## **MOONCHILD**

**Let the earth of your heavenly body be the firm foundation to support the temple of my soul which is filled with the Light of God and of angels. May your feet be like the roots of a tree clinging deep into the soil of my ankles and may the branches of your arms spread out over me so that I can rest in peace beneath the shade of your being. My lover is a fruitful tree that is pleasing to my eyes and as I eat his flesh the fruit of his body is good and desirable - as the Creator ordained him. I place my moist lips upon the apple of my eye and as I sink my teeth into him to taste of his sweetness, my eyes are opened to the beauty of our nakedness, for his blood flows through my veins to make my heart beat with the essence of life. As I pierce the bark of his flesh with the sharp nails of my fingertips, I taste the sap of his heart becoming intoxicated by the wine of his flesh and blood which has strong roots that cling to fertile soil. My love is aroused and awakened, and my desire is for the husband of my dreams who rules over me through love.**

**Let your fingertips slide across the mountains of my breasts and dance across the hills of my hips. Let the vessels of your hands sail upon the ocean of my back and let them glide down the rivers of my legs so that the mists of my soul can ascend into the spacious firmament as your melting touch creates its steam. My body is trembling with a violent earthquake as you erupt like a volcano and rise with a consuming fire that pours into me. The fire flows down the island of my body into the ocean of my soul where the ghost of my being becomes a mist that blends with the clouds and makes the wind a visible sea. Be a powerful wind my lover, and sweep my weak body**

**off the small foundations of my sand-colored feet with the strong hurricane of your enrapturing arms. Take my breath into the sky as you inhale the perfume of my sighs with the wings of your enlightened heart and carry me away with your exhaling sigh of relief. May your manhood dominate my womanhood with strength that supports my weakness.**

## **SUNSTAR**

**The sands of time buried me in the dusts of the four winds and a turban of lifeless darkness enshrouded my mind with the canopy of night. Yet, the winter of death has melted away and the storms that stripped this tree naked have dissipated. Now, flowers appear on a new earth and the lamp of my body is rekindled by one sparkle from your innocent eyes.**

## **MOONCHILD**

**You, my lover, have the strength of a lion in your arms and you pace with a lion's stride as your firm chest projects confidence. The flowing mane of your winged brown hair is soft like cotton, yet its crown is golden like the sun's rays that shine like the fingertips of God, the pillars of power that support our souls. You are a white panther who paces swiftly and quickly through the wild jungle of my emotions. Let me be your prey as you sink the sharp fangs of your teeth into my tender flesh, for I desire to satisfy the hunger of my predator. Let my mouth be the cup from which you drink your wine and become intoxicated; let my breasts become the milk, which you fervently sip; and may my flesh be the water, which quenches your thirst.**

**I want you to hold me with savage desire and I want my wrists to be pinned to the ground and shackled by your hands, that I might become the prisoner of your love. I want you to hold me tight as gravity holds the moon to the earth and the earth to the sun. I am breathless and I want to lie silently beneath you as your slain victim as my blood pours through your veins into your heart to make it**

**pulsate faster. Love is savage and wild, gentle and free and so are my feelings for you my love. I am your prisoner bound by your love and gagged by your lips. Chain me to yourself and never let go, for I am your missing link between dreams and reality. Pull me close to you and let your manhood dominate my womanhood. Fill your hands with my breasts and my legs that you may feel the motion of my heart throbbing and perspiring as it is excited to feel the touch of your blood within it.**

## **SUNSTAR**

**Your tears are crowns that are best seen after they fall, for they arise to become the mists of your soul. Let me taste the salt of the earth within your soul, as a hovering seagull would drink the waters of the sea, for your joyful tears are the seasoning that brings health to my bones. Let me taste the sugar of your teeth and the honey of your tongue and the spice of your lips. Let the white powder of your spiced skin appease my burning lips as I affectionately kiss you one hundred times in ten different places as the footsteps of a caterpillar dance upon the earth excitedly. I want to inhale the fragrance of roses between the silk cushions of your nurturing breasts and may the warmth between your slender legs be perfumed like a pink rose. Your hips are like the two halves of a pear; may my arms be their branches and my fingers the vines that support them. O' sweet cheetah whose glowing body is candled by the moon and is ignited by moonlight, I want to feel your paws upon my back and I want to feel your warm breath run through my hair like a wind from a fiery furnace. Dear child who walks upon the moon with the winged feet of an angel, how halos of rainbow hues crown you with the Celestial Glory of the dazzling stars! How your eyes capture the sparkle of a jewel and the light of the moon!**

## **MOONCHILD**

**May my lovers tears become sparkling rings around my fingers as I wipe them away with the handkerchief of my hands. May the warm sands of my flesh pour through your timeless hands as you grip the soft earth of my body. Let us blow away the storm clouds with our wings and let the light of our love blaze with the sun's fire so that the darkness of emptiness within the blind universe of our hearts can be consumed forever!**

## **SUNSTAR**

**Without your eyes I cannot see and without your ears I cannot hear; without your feet I cannot walk and without your legs I cannot dance. With your laughter I can smile and with your smile I can laugh. Without your lips I am not kissed and without your fingertips I am not touched. I am frameless without your soul and I have no soul without your frame. Your bones support my flesh and your flesh supports my bones. You are the rib that encloses my heart and you are the blood which flows through my veins. Without your light I am in darkness and without your beauty I am surrounded by ugliness.**

**When my dream of you vanished like a mist, the nightmare of my own reality awakened. I am loveless without your love and passionless without your affection. I cannot be a fulfilled husband without my wife's fulfillment and I cannot be a lover without my beloved. You are my pleasure; apart from you I am in pain. You are my joy; apart from you I dwell in sadness. With you by my side I am filled with pride. I am insane without your sanity and I am in hell without the heaven of you. I cannot be a king without my queen, nor can I be a prince without my princess. You are the crown of gold that I wear upon my mind and your sculptured body is a priceless jewel that casts a gleam in my eyes. You cause me to breathe the fragrances of the flowers and the scents of the trees. You bring me feelings of comfort and ease and you lighten my heavy burdens. You are my bed of comfort upon which my body rests; your breasts are the cushions for my head and your skin is the blanket to keep me warm. Without your heat, I am cold.**

## **MOONCHILD**

**When your voice speaks I am speechless and when your tongue is silent my words support you. Without the shelter of your arms, I am homeless. Without your strength, I am weak and without your help, I am helpless. Without my man, I am not a fulfilled woman, and without the fulfillment of his love, I am loveless. Together we are two, but alone we are one, yet when our two bodies join together we become as one. Without you to lead, I cannot follow, and without your motion, I am motionless. I am dependent and not independent and I dare not make a choice without the choice of my husband's will. Without my shield I am unprotected and without my sword my sheath is empty and I cannot win the battlefield of life without my knight in shining armor to fight for me. My husband is my master and I am his servant and I follow him as he follows God. He stands behind God; therefore, I stand beside Him. By the Creator's Will, my lover is the greater light and I am the lesser light, just as the sun is more brilliant than the moon. I place my lover first and myself last, for he is male and I am female. May I never raise my neck above my shoulders, for in humbleness, quietness, and stillness is rest for the spirit of womankind. I shall submit to the strength of my lover's sheltering arms, which weaken me as he tightly embraces me. Yes, I shall submit to my lover as the angels submit to God, as the horse submits to its rider, and as the dog its master. As the female lioness in heat bows before her male partner in heat, I will let my body bend and bow before my lover who shall dominate me with the power of his love. Our bodies shall be entwined like a wreath of leaves and our hair shall blend together as we sleep side-by-side on a bed made of silk.**

## **SUNSTAR**

**You are a daughter of God, a sacred muse who has ignited my dreams with the spiritual torch of her lighted fingertips as the flickering candlelight sparkles in glazed eyes. When I am with you, Paradise is complete, for you are the other half who makes me whole.**

**I will hold you tight with an iron grip as a king grips his royal scepter  
and I will love you with a powerful love forever.**

### **MOONCHILD**

**I am like a flowering plant and my soul is firmly rooted in the earth of your heavenly body. My hands are leaves and my arms are their stems and between my thighs is a receptacle; my legs are their sepals expanding to reveal the silk petals, which unravel the ovule that supports my pollinated stigma. My stigma has gathered the nectar of your kisses and the pollen of your breath; and the seeds of your love for me have sprouted and grown within me. May the kisses of your tears be the rain that washes the soil of my body and tightens the roots, which cling to you. May your love for me unfold as the flower between my legs blossoms to greet the heat of the sunrise you shine down upon me.**

### **SUNSTAR**

**An earthquake rolls up my spine and makes my heart tremble. When our fleshly plates shift against each other, my body erupts like an exploding volcano, and as I pour the lava of love's fire down your arched throat with an all consuming kiss, the rod of lightning which firmly strikes the fertile ground of my being through the heavenly clouds of your soul, tenderizes my frozen heart and sets it sizzling over hot flames to make my blood move with furious passion that resembles the rivers of fire that flow beneath the earth. Ripples of water are caused by a touch of your fingertips and as you gaze into the calm pools of my eyes, your reflection looks back upon you. Come my beloved, let us fly like the birds and the bees and the butterflies with gentle wings, among the trees, across the skies, and throughout the flower meadows. Let us inhale the pollen in the winds of our breath which we sip as we kiss the skies of our boundless freedom.**

**\***

**\***

**\***

**MOONCHILD stood quietly in a calm lake with the glistening waters covering her legs like a dress. SUNSTAR walked weightlessly upon the surface of the lake towards his bride and when her limp hand reached out for his strong hand, he pulled her up out of the water and firmly embraced her so that her arched, naked body warmly rubbed against his. A tropical wind stroked their feathers as their aroused naked bodies entwined and their white wings were illuminated with pure energy. MOONCHILD wrapped her wings around SUNSTAR's torso and SUNSTAR expanded his wings to capture the winds that blew their long hair in all directions. The fragrance of her scented hair smelled like flowers as he inhaled its freshness and her soft cheeks touched his iron chest as she silently laid her head down to breathe the cologne of his smooth skin. After wrapping her smooth legs and her soft wings around SUNSTAR, he embraced her tightly to himself and swayed his long white wings to ascend above the lake into the skies. Like two playful birds, they intercoursed in mid-flight with moonlit wings that captured the hurricanes of the gusts which carried them. Strong gusts surrounded them instantaneously and carried them high above the Redwood forests. They flew freely through the scattered silver thunderclouds that were glowing with rainbows emanating from the diamond mountains. They became as light as the clouds, which the winds carried, and as their wings stopped swaying, they became one flesh in the skies. When they refrained, they expanded their luminescent wings while holding each other's trembling hands and flew together across the billowing clouds creating rays of light that sifted through the rainbow mists like the light of a star.**

**When they passed by the forests, they descended past a steep cliff where a vast ocean crashed against the rocks with thundering claps. The crystalline water of the aqua-blue ocean was transparent and shallow so that the white sands below could be seen. Schools of whales, dolphins, and fish of every namable kind filled the waters and thousands of seagulls and pelicans floated upon the waters and flew together in flocks in the spacious skies. The tropical winds filled their lungs with various scents and caressed the feathers of their sailing wings, which glided gracefully across the waves of the celestial firmament. It was a beautiful feeling to fly like the birds, a sensation they had only dreamed about as mortals. Now they were immortal**

without the fear of death's gravity chaining them to the dust from which they came. Butterflies of excited wings filled their stomachs and a cold chill tingled up their spines as they firmly clasped each other's hand while flying together with absolute freedom. The feeling of flying rendered them speechless as they defied the earthly laws of gravity with ease and they smiled with a joy unlike they had ever known or felt. The power of God and of the angels was at their fingertips and their life forces were on fire with pure energy that caused their bodies to light up like two stars. What had once been an earthly dream was now a heavenly reality. They felt the essence of Paradise within each other's hands as they flew together, side-by-side, with no problems, no worries, no troubles, burdens, or responsibilities. They experienced no fear of anything, no sin, no guilt, no shame, no evil, no tragedy, and no ugliness. They could stare upon each other's flawless nakedness with pure eyes and gaze upon the wonders of God's Creation with holy spirits. They glided in the air with the seagulls in absolute freedom as they inhaled the sighs of the skies, which cleansed their expanding lungs like water.

In the distance, they beheld a series of small islands that were as green as emeralds surrounded by waters that had the unique color of turquoise. They saw waterfalls pouring into jungles and flocks of seagulls and doves, parrots and cockatoos, flying amidst the coconut trees and ferns. They descended upon a falling gust of wind and landed upon the white sands of an unblemished beach. The beauty of the island was unlike anything they had ever beheld and they cried out in laughter and joy as they realized it was all created for them to own and enjoy. This was their inheritance in the kingdom of heaven.

\*

\*

\*

## **MOONCHILD**

We have arrived! Embrace me my husband, for the breath of your life makes my heart pulsate faster and the fire of your flesh makes me hotter than an exploding ember. You are my husband and I am your wife; let us enjoy our marriage peacefully in the perfect world of this perfect place that we never enjoyed as mortals. Our winged feet are



**the first footsteps to touch these white sands, which fell through time to fill our Eternity. May we enjoy our nakedness before each other as we feel the essence of Paradise in our companionship.**

## **SUNSTAR**

**Let me run my washed hands over your cream-colored flesh and let the seashells of your lips echo the voices of the ocean. I shall color the feathers of your dovely wings with rainbows which emanate from the blazing suns of my fiery eyes. The gentle radiance of my body is a blazing torch that glows for you and the purifying fire of my illuminated soul is a solar flare that reaches the earth of your heavenly body with an all-consuming kiss. Let my passion be like the waves, which caress the sand as I hover over you, and let my voice be like the wind that kisses the flowers with a breath-taking sigh.**

## **MOONCHILD**

**My love, you are a blazing fire, a warm, bright, devouring element, illuminating the dark places of my soul with light and filling the empty places of my heart with your blood. Your celestial light emanates warmth to my pale countenance like the sun makes the face of the moon full when it shines with a bright glow. You are SUNSTAR, a lambent flame who crowns the heavens of my mind with the same circle of light that surrounds God's Throne wherein I experience the purity of peace. You are a morning star reflecting the energy of a sun, and you have ignited a spark inside of me. You wear a crown of flames surrounded by a halo of rainbows and golden candle-wax polishes your strong, unblemished skin with a luminescence that enlightens my soul with a soft and gentle gleam. When darkness veils one side of me, you light up the other side so that I have balance between light and darkness, good and evil. When I turn my face towards you I am full and complete with the purity of your light which fills the hills and the valleys of my body. I hover around you in breathless space magnetically drawn to the power that surrounds you. I love you.**

## **SUNSTAR**

**And I love you. I am a bright flame ignited by the hands of God and the solar flares of my arms extend to offer you their warmth. You reflect my light as I hold onto yours with waves of energy that burn with love. Your hair is a waterfall of fire gliding down the smooth slopes of your back while the ivory pillars of your long legs reveal wild jungle ferns that fan my hot breath; for my blood flows like lava beneath you. You cause the continents of the earth to tremble and break apart as your soul hovers in the heavens to show the earth your beauty which is crowned by the glowing Hands of God. Be the soft bed of my affection as I wrap the silk blankets of my flesh over you to comfort you and give you rest. Let the streams of your hair move back and forth with the waves of the ocean as the wind of my breath caresses the ripples of their moonlit tides. Let the foam of your kisses sink into the white sands of my flesh which is sprinkled with specks of stardust that dazzles like lightning and causes the crystalline snow to melt into sparkling water that pours replenishing rivers of life into the drifting sea of my soul. Do not wear nor create a mask to hide the natural beauty of your face, for the Artist's Hand has already painted your eyelashes with the feathers of a crow and your cheeks with the silkience of a dove's wings. You do not need to paint your face to make up for what is not naturally beautiful, for you are a woman whom God has blessed with a natural splendor that is more lovely than anything else in all Creation. You are the perfect stroke of the Artist's brush and the flawless vision of the all-seeing Eye.**

## **MOONCHILD**

**Your hair is a horse's mane brushing the wind and your footsteps are stealthy like the panthers. Bring to me the honey of the bees and the pollen of the flowers and the sap of the trees with your everlasting kiss. Be the air which fills my lungs to make my heart beat faster and my throat gasp with a sigh. I am like a valley and you are like a mountain and I rest beneath the solid rock of your towering body. I am your lighted shadow following you wherever you stand. If you turn**

**your face to the sun, I shall faithfully walk behind you. If you turn your hard back to the sun I shall stand in front of you to offer you my warmth; and if only one side of you is lighted by the sun, then I shall walk beside you to light up your other half. Your chest is a solid rock that supports the waterfalls of tears pouring down my pale cheeks as my eyes drink the rain of the salted oceans that create the mists of your soul when they evaporate.**

## **SUNSTAR**

**I am a ship who has traveled long and far in a never-ending ocean of loneliness. Now, the telescopes of my searching eyes have beheld the beautiful island of your body. Your breath has put the wind in my sails and your waters have become my anchor to still my wandering body. You are the peaceful, quiet place that I can call home and you are the priceless treasure that I can value more highly than any jewel. You are my bones and I am your flesh, and we support each other with one Spirit. Come my bride, let us embrace Paradise in the closeness of each other's arms and let us enjoy this incredible freedom of solitude. I have traveled long and far in the oceans of sorrow, filled with my tears, to reach you O' island of my joy. The fruitful land of your tropical body shall be pleasing to my six senses.**

## **MOONCHILD**

**You are my pleasure, my happiness, my song of Love. You are my husband, my knight, my prince, and my hero. I shall be your wife, your maiden, your princess, your heroine. Be strong so that I can be weak and let me be weak so that you may be strong. You are above me and I am below you as the land is below the sky, and the sand is below the ocean, and the plants are beneath the shades of the trees. You are my master and I am your slave and I shall be a faithful servant to you as Sarah was to Abraham, as all the wives of the Kings of the earth were. I will place you first and myself last and I will respect your manhood with my womanhood. You are the head and I am the tail and you are the greater while I am the lesser - never shall I be your equal.**

**I honor you above myself and I do not desire to stand in front of you, above you, or beside you, but behind you. No, I am not equal in height or width, for your frame is bigger than my frame and you are stronger than I am, both in body and in spirit, as the Creator ordained it. Yet, I shall move from behind you to stand beside you to hold your hand, not to lead you, but to follow you. I hold your right hand with my left hand that I may support your footsteps in whatever path or direction they choose to travel. My choice is to support your choice and my decision is to follow your decision. I would rather be dependent upon you than independent apart from you. I would rather be with you, than by myself, alone. I will not detour your will in my direction, but in love, respect, and faithfulness I will submit to your direction, as the four winds submit to the invisible forces of the skies which move them. I will obey my husband because my husband obeys God and like a child who listens to her parents, or a soldier hearkens to his commanding officer, or a dog submits to her leash, or a horse follows its reins, so will I listen, submit to, and follow my lover in quietness and in trust. I will fulfill your fantasies my lover, and I will not make you chase after the wind when you fancy my perfume. Let me be your pleasure and your delight and dominate me with your superior love and passion. I want to be your Paradise and I want you to smile and sigh whenever you adore my beauty. I will love and respect my handsome husband who shelters me with his strong arms and provides food for me with his stronger body. With his passionate hands he builds the house of my affection and waters the garden of my womb. I am his and he is mine and we are each other's possession for no one else to touch. I want to be your possession and I want to be the greatest gift and treasure that God could bestow upon you. Instead of speaking I shall be mute and when you move I shall stand still. I will let the man speak and the woman be silent, for this is the Will of God. I am a woman and you are a man – let that be the difference between us to be respected in their proper ordination. I do not need perfume, for my breath is scented with your cologne. I do not need clothes for your flesh is my clothing. I do not need jewels for your eyes are the objects that cast a gleam in my teeth as they smile. I don't need anything material, for I have your soul. For why should I clothe my body with raiment that is like a mask covering and hiding the face, when I can stand or sit before my love naked. We wore clothing to hide our flaws and to hide**

**the beauty of ourselves from those who would laugh at us in their ugliness, but who can smile or laugh at perfection? I shall never be bitter, for you are my sweetness and I shall never be colorless, for you are the colors of my rainbow. I shall not cry, for you make me laugh. I shall not displease you, for I exist to please you. My world, my universe, my body, and my breath is centered on God, but you stand close to that center as we worship Him together, knowing that it is He Who has made us male and female, forever enriching our blessed souls with the bond of Eternal Oneness. Do not give me water, for you quench my thirst, and do not give me food, for you satisfy my hunger. Let me become the animal that you hunt and let my body become the provision which you consume with the pleasure of a satisfied sigh. You are what I need and you are what I want and apart from you I need nothing and want nothing. You are my house, my home, my nest, my settlement. You and I are like two islands of Paradise connected by shifting plates that rub together and produce earthquakes. May we tremble together as our shifting bodies blend together into one beautiful mountain of fire.**

## **SUNSTAR**

**The kaleidoscope of our love alters the colorlessness of our emotional tempests into a full spectrum of rotating light which causes our thoughts to spin in dizzying circles. Seagulls and eagles glide in circles, dogs and cats chase their tails in circles, time once moved around in circles, and the music of the universe turns in circles. The ring around Saturn once resembled the same pattern, as the belt that surrounded your waist, as the belt that surrounded the Milky Way galaxy, as the ring upon your finger, as the necklace around your neck. Like children on a merry-go-round, the tide of the planets whirled around, faster than the speed of sound. The whirling wheels are in motion for the four living creatures: the lion, the ox, the eagle, and the human race, are all clothed with the wings of the heavens; and we ascend with them to meet our Maker who has robed our nakedness with His Eternal Light. With no beginning and no end, the circle of our love infinitely bends and blends into a kaleidoscope of rainbows that arch down from heaven into our foreheads. We joyfully ascend**

**towards the Throne with the breath of God lifting the wings of our lungs which move our hearts with flocks of seagulls.**

## **MOONCHILD**

**Here we are among the worlds of Paradise in the Kingdom of Heaven reunited as husband and wife, as lover and beloved, as dream and reality intercoured. We are young, wild, and free like the rainbow winged parrots and the dancing stallions. There is nothing to contaminate or pollute or harm this holy hill we stand upon. My lover's fingers are rings around my fingers and his hands are necklaces around my neck. His tears which fall like the raindrops whenever he looks upon me are my crown which washes my hair and cleanses my mind.**

## **SUNSTAR**

**The nightmare is over and the dream has come to pass. Our inner most longings and desires, thoughts and attitudes, dreams and visions, are here and now fulfilled like the promise of a new tomorrow arising with the dawn of a new sun. Our closed eyes have opened, we are sleepers who have awakened, and our untouched flesh has been touched. Our dry lips have been bathed with the waters of our kisses and our withering skin has been replenished with the youth of our massaging hands anointed with the oil of sensual pleasure and desire. Our stilled blood now flows swiftly and our rhythm less hearts now dance to the beat of life. The dirt has been washed from our skin and now we are cleansed as we bathe each other. We are immortal and forever young! You are my angel of ministering love in a sea of Paradise who flies throughout the skies of my mind and your halo crowns my mind and your light surrounds my soul with the radiance of your youth, a child who imagines and dreams in reality and believes that all things that are considered impossible are made possible. You**

**are smooth and gentle like the silk-petals of the flowers that support your weightless feet, sandaled with the smoothness of the fertile soil that sparkles with the minerals of my life. Free me from the chains of gravity that have pulled me down to prevent me from ascending into the clouds of heaven where your soul floats in a deep sea of never-ending blue behind your eyes which circumference my world. Bring to me the flight of the butterflies and the doves with the glowing wings of your spirit. Carry the moon under your dress and the sun in your hair. Let the stars ring your fingers and let your eyes sparkle with the fire of lightning. You are the thunder of the clouds within my soul and you cause the earth of my heavenly body to tremble at your presence. Come fill me with energy and awaken me from my slumber, for I am ready to be raptured into the Paradise where you dwell with the substance of dreams.**

## **SUNSTAR**

**Dear child of the moon who once ignited my dreams with the fire of the sun as I slept in darkness: Let us walk silently hand-in-hand through enchanted Redwood forests, feeling the fresh soil between our toes and a cool breeze blowing past our naked bodies. You are my flower that I hold to my face, breathe and exhale with sighs of relief as I inhale your perfume.**

## **MOONCHILD**

**Dear child of the sun who once lit up my days with his warmth, you pierce my stomach with pangs of hunger and you make my heart bleed through your sharp arrows of love. Would you have still loved me if I had been as ugly as a vulture who feeds upon dead flesh that withers in the womb of the abyss? For when I dreamed of you my reality was feeding upon dead flesh.**

## **SUNSTAR**

**You, my beloved, were the vulture who consumed my flesh as I died, therefore, though you may not have been as attractive as the perfect birds who gave me the breath of life with the motion of their wings, I would have loved you with my eternal soul rather than with my decaying body, which was caught in the spider web of death. Here in Heaven, there are no more webs of death to get caught up in nor are there black widows who will poison me.**

## **MOONCHILD**

**Was I a black widow upon the old earth? If so, I would have spread my black threads of death to entrap you. Yes, I was a black widow who weaved her web around her male lovers and gave them a kiss of death before I consumed their flesh.**

## **SUNSTAR**

**I was not a knight in shining armor riding upon a white horse. I was a white mouse and you were a pussycat who smashed me into the soil with her merciless paw. I would not have tolerated being of mice and man while standing in your presence, so I shapeshifted my soul into a wolf and howled at you as you laughed at me with the smile of the sun.**

## **MOONCHILD**

**Yes, men were truly dogs, for they had nothing better to do than growl at us pussycats. I was a dragon and you were an abominable snowman. Had we crossed the ancient paths, you would have sent out a blizzard over me and shackled my feet with frozen lakes. An iceberg would have entombed me. The ice would have melted, for I would have breathed fire upon you lighting up the white hair of your body**



**with flames of fury. You would have breathed a blizzard towards the fires emanating from my mouth and because the forceful hurricanes of your freezing breath would have been stronger than the flames behind my burning tongue, you would have extinguished the fires of my tongue. My body would have become frigid like an iceberg, for you would have surrounded me with the blizzard of your abominable heart. Men were abominable in their coldness as they tanned their flesh with snow. All that I could have done as a woman was to fight ice with fire and all I would have had as a dragon-lady, was the flames of fire within my mouth to keep me warm as the snowmen would try to coldly blow me away with the blizzards of their frozen hearts. Yet, my lover is not like the snowmen of the arctic circle of the old earth, nor is he abominable, for his heart is fire and his flesh is warm, for he allows my breath to enter his nostrils and expand his lungs.**

## **SUNSTAR**

**Indeed, you would have become a bee offering me honey and then stinging me. I wanted nectar and to be pollinated with a kiss from your honeyed lips, but you would have stung me with a poison of bitterness worse than death. You would have altered into a red rose with many thorns to pierce my hands. Jesus was the Rose Who bore the most thorns and humanity could not grasp Him without their flesh being pierced. The thornless Rose of Sharon bore our thorns in His Body beneath the dark shadows of a Tree and wore them as a crown to glorify His Name. Jesus was the Rose Who bore the most thorns, yet, when humanity tried to grasp His Beauty, they cried out in crucifying pain and they cursed the Rose instead of the thorns, for they expected to grasp the Beauty of this Rose without feeling any pain. Aye, Jesus bore the sting of our pain in His Body and the blood of our human flesh stained the silk petals of His cheeks and pierced the fragrance of His blossoming Hands. Those hands were unfolded to all who would reach out to breathe. Our Savior became a bloody rose wearing a crown of thorns to pierce our flesh and ignite flames within our souls.**

## **MOONCHILD**

**In our human selves, we were crawling as caterpillars until we were wrapped in the cocoon of death. After the cocoon of death enshrouded our caterpillar flesh, we were resurrected as butterflies. Now, instead of cringing amidst the shadows of the many trees producing the fruit of evil and wearing their leaves as our covering, we now fly with the freedom that causes them to sing.**

## **SUNSTAR**

**I am a caterpillar and you are a butterfly. Let the hurricane of your silent wings cause my heart to flutter with a thousand footsteps. Let the silk colors of your body bring the petals of a flower to my newborn eyes, for the cocoon of death has passed and now our wings touch like the clouds of the Heavenly Skies. We were mortal caterpillars, but we have shapeshifted into resurrected butterflies and the Creator's Hands fashioned this miraculous wonder! Yes, our earthly selves were caterpillars, but now that the cocoon of death has enshrouded them, we have become resurrected butterflies gliding above the flowers of Heaven.**

## **MOONCHILD**

**When my soul was a prisoner of the earth within my human flesh, I heard a wise owl once say to those who followed their manimal instincts:**

**Woe to you squirrels who have an abundance of acorns stored up in your dwellings, but have nothing to give to your poor fellow squirrels who are out in the snow starving to death!**

**Woe to you swine who trample the Pearl Gates of Heaven with your fat feet, for that butcher called Satan has his ax sharpened to cut you up into tiny pieces of meat that will be thrown into his boiling kettle, then chewed up and spit out. It is hopeless, for it is in your filthy natures to wallow in the mud.**

**Woe to you giraffes who walk along with outstretched necks thinking that your heads are high above the rest; and you shy ostriches had better quit burying your heads in the sand, for your Maker has given you long necks to enable you to hold your heads up high with confidence.**

**Woe to you lions who crouch in your large dens thinking that you're the kings of the jungle of life, when you are but mice with growling stomachs worried about how many pieces of cheese you have stored up for the coming winter when you become as old as the dinosaurs.**

**Woe to you parasites who live at the expense of others without making any useful returns. You vampire leeches! You suckle the lifeblood of others just to feed your own!**

**Woe to you octopuses who wrap your tentacles around every fish of the sea to pollute them with your oil. Woe to you woodpeckers who cut down the trees!**

**Woe to you kangaroos who pounce upon the innocent in your kangaroo courts, for in the morning justice will be demanded by your Creator and He will hold you accountable and declare you guilty!**

**Woe to you sheep who wander away from your Shepherd, for the wolves are hungry and are waiting to have you for dinner!**

**You foxes no longer have your holes and you birds of the air have no more nests, for the sons of men have a place to lay their heads down. Yes, the feathers of you birds are plucked in order that human heads filled with greed and selfishness may sleep upon the dream of your clouds where your wings once soared. You foxes no longer need to fear the dogs who mutilate your flesh, for it is their demonic trainers who invent ways of capturing and killing you for your skin.**

**Why do you crocodiles have nothing better to do than to snap your big mouths off at others? And you foolish hyenas ought to laugh at yourselves. But blessed are the whales who carry their crosses as their flesh is crucified by wicked poachers, for their blood is the oil that keeps our lamps burning. Blessed are the roosters that crow, for they awaken those who have fallen asleep. Blessed are the cooing**

**doves, for they bring a message of Peace and reveal the color of the lilies at funerals in their celestial bodies, and capture the light of the sun in their wings! Blessed are the mighty eagles for they carry the freedom of the skies within their wings. After coming out of their shells, man was a snail who pursued the green leaf while leaving a glittering silver trail of slime behind him.**

**My lover is not among those who follow their manimal instincts, for he walks among the Angels who sing the poetic songs of love and breathe the open air.**

## **SUNSTAR**

**As I once felt the thunder of my heart beating wildly with the drums of clashing clouds, and as I unfolded my feathery touch upon these strings of white lightning which surged through my Inner Harp, I hovered aimlessly alone in my hanging garden of melancholy tempests of emotion. While waterfalls of tears coursed down my shaded complexion like showers of falling stars that cling to the abstract face of the grim reaping night, I waited impatiently for this storm of lamentation of dissipate, so that I might behold the glory of your moonlight shining down upon me.**

**Whenever my free spirit glided upon the Celestial Winds of Paradise in God's House of Dreams, my silk-feathered wings began to burn away, and in a blazing trail of fire I descended towards the earth like a comet, only to be consumed with the ashes of a mortal world. With the sad eyes of the weeping skies I cried aloud with the howling wolves whose mournful ballads echoed the whispering voices of the disenchanted spirits whose decaying fleshly bodies restlessly wandered as dust in the four winds of the heavens. Yet, the deeper I fell into the abyss of sorrow, the higher I began to ascend into the enlightening skies of an eagle's freedom, for you were the lightning of my thunder - the pure energy who ignited my frameless soul ablaze with flames brighter than the fires of the phoenix sunlight.**

## **MOONCHILD**

**Mother Earth became like her Sister Venus, a barren, desolate woman with deserts for a womb and wastelands for a body. Her hills and her valleys which were once like healthy breasts producing milk for her children, became withered by a plague of cancer because of the artificial implants surgically inlaid to deface her natural God-blessed beauty. The children of Mother Dust became Druids who worshipped their tree god called 'Money.' They were corporate snakes who slithered around in their money trees (which were erected as skyscraper tombs) and while playing with flutes of deception, they lured those who hid their souls in baskets into the hypnotic trance of their musical tongues, which dripped with honeyed poison. Her statutes of liberty were carved up into a concrete statue of melting ice that was being chiseled into heaps of broken rubble by the pickax held in Satan's fiery hands. Their serpent tongues were shovels digging up dirt for deeper graves and like the gophers they enjoyed digging holes for themselves until they descended so deep that they could never climb out. Their breath of death so cold and black as night blew through the frigid realms of that decaying universe and clung its icy talons tight upon that snow-laden world. These spiders wove their threads beneath the vision of the female black widow and as her venom filled the worldwide web that they diligently spun, she slayed her victims in the net of her deceit. Though her many lovers caressed her spinster hand and grasped her smooth nylon legs, she killed them with her poisonous fangs, for she is the blackest of all lonely widows.**

## **SUNSTAR**

**Woman was not independent of man, nor was man independent of woman. As the moon could not shine without the glory of the sun, so womankind could not shine radiantly without the embrace of mankind around her. The sun could not govern the earth without the moon's presence, for the moon lit up the dark half of a world that the sun in all of its splendor could not look upon except through her eyes; so it was and is with man and woman. The weaker light should not have envied the greater light, nor should the greater light have**

**boasted of his own great power over the weaker light – for both created an equal balance in their control over the earth and both played a separate role that was equally important for earth’s survival. The weaker light should not have rebelled against the greater light, for during her red period she chose to try to remove the sun from his ordained position in the heavens, but she only burned herself and blushed with shameless indignation beneath his fiery wrath. The greater light should not have used the power of his rays as whips to flog the battered countenance of the lesser light, for her bowed head was sad enough, and she could not tolerate being burned by the heat of her husband. Like the sun and moon, man and woman shared an invisible bond of Oneness and like the sun and moon, man’s power was destined to fade to darkness and woman’s glory was destined to bleed and wither with shame before the consuming Light of their Creator. Man and woman disobeyed the laws which gravitated their earthly bodies and their impact upon the world was the same as the sun and moon breaking away from their positions – Earth’s children were destroyed.**

**In the beginning, after the end of earth’s predestined future, God brought forth the New Heavens and the New Earth. Now the old earth became desolate and empty, darkness was over the surface of its depths and heights, and the spirit of Satan hovered over its bloody waters and nuclear winter skies.**

**And God said, “Let there be Eternal Light!” and there was Eternal Light. Never again will the knight of darkness spread his black cloak over the heavens, for God has separated those who dwelled in His Light from those who dwelled in the darkness. God has called those who have lived in His Light ‘the children of light,’ while those who have dwelled in the darkness He has called ‘the children of the night.’ And there was much mourning until the evening on that Day of Judgment – the Last Day.**

**Listen to an account of my existence in the first heaven and the first earth before they passed away:**

**About 6,110 years after the Lord God had made the first earth and the first heaven – and every shrub of His fields were disappearing**

**from the earth and every plant of His fields were withering away, for the Lord God had sent plenty of rain on the earth but there were too many men and women overworking the ground and concrete smothered the whole surface of the ground – the Lord God formed a new man through His Holy Spirit and breathed into his mind the Hope of a new life, and the new man was born again. Now the Lord God had planted a garden in the West, in California (but mankind had converted it into a desert wasteland); and there he raised the new man He had formed. And the Lord God, Who had made all kinds of trees grow out of the ground – trees that were once pleasing to the eyes and good for food—was scoffed at and rejected by the people who lived there.**

**The Lord God took the new man and placed him in the Desert of the Serpent to work hard in it and to take care of the mentally ill people living in it. And the Lord God commanded the new man, “You are free to eat from the One Tree in the Gardens of my Holy Spirit; but you must not eat from the many trees which produce the fruit of evil, for when you partake of them, you will surely die.”**

**The Lord God said, “It is not good for this new man to be alone within his thoughts since he is one who burns with passion. I will allow him to have for himself a spiritual helper suitable for him.”**

**Now the Lord God had genetically cloned many female beasts in His Fields and they were physically as beautiful as the doves of the air; but their bitter, angry faces resembled the grim faces of dying animals and their preying eyes were hungry for both genders of flesh.**

**But for SUNSTAR, there was no suitable helper to be found. So the Lord God allowed the new man to fall into a deep sleep; and while he was sleeping, God took one of the cells of His brain and from out of that cage of bones surrounding his lonely heart, God fashioned a woman with one of the dream ribs beneath his skull.**

**The new man said,**

**“This is now Dream of my dreams**

**and spirit of my flesh;**

**She shall be called ‘MOONCHILD’**

**for she was taken out of SUNSTAR.”**

**At the end of my fantasy, there came a dream, and you, O’ child of the moon, approached me from the shadows of oblivion. When I saw you I wanted to reach out and embrace you with a kiss and physically unite with you. I said, “MOONCHILD, is that you?” You replied, “Yes, it’s me.” When I motioned towards you, however, you held out in your hands a venomous snake that hissed and snapped its fangs at me while whipping its tail from left to right. You said, “Be careful! Its bite is dangerous!” The closer I motioned towards you, the more violent the serpent became. Suddenly, the snake jumped out of your hands and began to chase after me as I turned to flee from it. It almost bit my heel until the vision switched and I began chasing after the snake. The serpent slithered away into some steel pipes and made the pipes rattle as it quickly moved through them above my head. When I turned around I saw you standing behind me. I instantly embraced you and kissed you, but as I did this, the snake rattled the pipes harder as its body grew larger. Suddenly, the pipes above us bursted and a flood of venom poured on top of us.**

**When I had awakened from this strange vision of the night, I realized that deception lay in the hands of my beloved, MOONCHILD. I knew that I could not embrace you without first being bit with the poisonous fangs of death. Upon the old earth, you were a mist who appeared for a brief while in my youth, to light up my dreams, but then you vanished with the ghosts of the clouds.**

**The snake is gone now and the bride of death has passed into oblivion, and now that I have embraced life, death, and resurrection in the arms of my beloved I can now rest in peace under God.**



## **GOD**

**SUNSTAR, I am the Creator and I have made the world of your mind as the spirit of your soul. Be like a bird sailing in an ocean of freedom with sunlit wings. Baptize the mists of your mind with rainbows and let it be a colorful cloud that hovers weightlessly with thoughts and dreams. Be free and be happy and enjoy my Power within you. My Will is to give you free will and you can create, imagine, and dream, as I create, imagine, and dream. Be born again and look upon the world of your soul with your inner eyes. Be your own artist and paint your own pictures, for the spirit of the created shall inherit the Creator's Spirit and as I have created many worlds, so may you now create a world of your own. Whatever you dream or imagine can become reality, therefore, create substance within your dreams and enjoy a new heaven within a new earth which I have given you to keep forever as your eternal inheritance. The time of judgment and condemnation is over, now dwell with me in peace where there is no sin, no tragedy, no death, and no conflict. Be the man you have always wanted to be and enjoy Paradise with the woman of your dreams.**

## **SUNSTAR**

**I consume the fruit of Eternal Life and I am born again in flesh without flesh. I have awakened. From the empty darkness comes a light. Who am I? What am I? What is this beautiful arrangement that I see? How did I get here? Look at the colors of the sky and the land! How can I understand color or know what it means other than it is lovely? I am able to think, can I speak? Yes, I can speak and the sound of my voice emanates from within thoughts awakened inside of me that were not conscious a moment ago. I can understand my own language within my formless thoughts. I am new. I feel. I breathe. I live. I could not see or feel anything before this moment. How is it that I can see now? What are these feelings & sensations that I am experiencing? Existence from non-existence, something that comes from nothing. How do I understand something from out of nothing? My form. My form is something new. How did it come about and why? I look at my**

form and it is lighted by a bright object shining down on me from this wide expanse above me. What is that bright light beyond those silver mists which float in the expanse? It feels warm on my form. I would like to go up and touch that warmth and get a closer view of it. I am leaping but I cannot ascend to where I want to go. I am pulled right back down to the place from which I just leaped. My feet feel the softness of sand and the sand is also warmed by this round fire in the sky. I understand myself within myself. How? I can think and speak a new language and comprehend the beauty that I see around me. I am in awe of what I am seeing and feeling. All is new. I am new.

Amazing! An emotion is causing me to feel good. I think I am feeling good. I am laughing. Yes, I feel joy, a sensation of comfort and ease. What peace! What perfection! Should I attempt to move or just stand here? I will make a motion with my form and turn my back to the bright light that surrounds me. I have turned around. I see my form on the ground but it is dark. I can see my own form extended by the light, but on the ground my form is void, empty and dark. Why does the light cast my form to the ground with such darkness? I will move to the right and to the left. Wait. The darkness surrounding my form does not leave me. I will turn and move away quickly from it. My legs are moving quickly and I am looking behind me to see if the darkness follows me. The darkness of my own form is still following me and I cannot escape it no matter which direction I move quickly to on this warm sand that moves between my toes and flicks it everywhere. I feel an invisible force press against my flesh as my legs quickly move. I breathe out the same forces that press against my skin. I feel a pounding in my flesh. What is that pounding against my flesh within me? I must stop and be motionless. I have turned around and have not escaped the darkness of my form that surrounds my form on the ground. The light above and behind me causes this darkness to surround me. I see that my feet have caused the sand to sink in its own shape. The sand carries the form of every movement that my feet have made. My footsteps are the only footsteps on the sand. There are no other footsteps but mine. The sand is smooth and clear. No other footstep has blemished this infinite earth except mine. I have caused the sand to sink with the heaviness of my form. Can I float with those mists that float in the expanse so that my feet no longer cause the land to sink with my movement? But the mists also cover

**the land with darkness as the light shines behind their shapeless forms. The mists do not have any form. I have a different form. The light seems to carry the darkness of both forms that it touches. The light causes both of our forms to be dark upon the land. I peer into the horizons in every direction seeing waves float upward from the unblemished ground. Who am I and how did I get here? My eyes are blinded by a light. What is this light that is brighter than the light in the expanse?**

## **GOD**

**I am the Creator who has made all that you see and feel. What is beneath your feet is the first element through which you were designed by my own thoughts. Come follow me and I will lead you into the Paradise where you will live forever.**

## **SUNSTAR**

**Who is this great entity who stands before me with such a great voice? I will let the sound that comes from my thoughts be silent and I will follow my Creator. Why and for what purpose has my Creator made me? His flesh is covered and mine is uncovered. Why is this so? I have the same likeness and form as my own Creator only without a covering over my form. Why is his form covered and mine uncovered? Two flashes of light strike the ground. Look, two more figures with the likeness and image of my own form and they appear walking silently with us. Who are they? Why are they here?**

## **GOD**

**SUNSTAR, I can read your thoughts which are awakened with many curiosities. These two who have your form and likeness are angels. I and they are of the same ground. You are not of the same ground as they nor I. I have created you out of a different ground than they. Who are they? The higher ground where they come from is Heaven and I**

**am their Creator and their ruler. They obey everything that I command them to do and they dwell where I dwell. I dwell in an invisible place beyond the ground from which I created you and beyond the sky and the light you have seen with your first sight. That light in the sky is called the sun and it rests beyond the expanse I have called, "sky." You are of this 'earth' beneath your feet. We are not of this earth beneath your feet. You are created from the dust of the ground called, 'Earth.' We come from beyond the elements that you see and feel within your flesh. I have prepared a special place for you and when you arrive at the place where I will take you, you will live there and never leave it. This place I have prepared for you is for you and you only. I am giving it to you for your own pleasure. Everything inside of it and outside of it will be solely yours. Even though I have made all that you are seeing and are about to see I am going to let you have it for yourself. Whatever you call everything upon the earth, that will be its name forever. You are going to be the prince and ruler of this earth from which I created you. I have created you in this desert outside of the place where you will live, where no shrub has yet appeared and there has been no water to make the desert grow, because this barren desert is the first place from which man has come into being. Remember this place from which you first appeared into your inheritance, for there will come a moment when you will realize why you first opened your eyes in a barren wilderness. I am God. You are to respect and revere me with the life I have given you and you will be commanded to do exactly what I tell you to do. You will follow us in silence and when I have taken you to the place where you will dwell we will leave you and return to the place beyond earth and sky where we have come from. You will enjoy the elements from which I have created you. My first command to you is for you to follow us in silence until we arrive at the place where you will dwell in forever.**

## **SUNSTAR**

**I am following my Creator to an unknown place. How my Creator has made me alive I do not know. What I do know is that I walk with Him in His own image and likeness. He has shared who He is with me and where He has come from. I am following these three beings who are**

not the same as I towards a place that is being given to me. God has made everything and He is giving everything to me. Why is He giving everything to me? Why am I born into existence to inherit everything that I am seeing and feeling? I came from this ground beneath my feet and my feet cause the ground to sink in their own form. God's feet are causing the earth to sink also. I am walking behind His footsteps feeling the same place where He walks. I am fortunate. I have must have God's merit and favor to deserve such an existence as this as we walk together. He casts no darkness though. He is lighted with the glory of the sun. He has no darkness following Him and neither do His companions. Why does the darkness follow me and not them? They cause the earth to sink as I do. Why is my flesh not lighted like theirs or covered like theirs? Why am I created of this world and they are created of a place that is not of this world. I am suppose to learn something from this desert but what am I to learn from it? The sand holds the light of the sky and my Creator in their countless specks. Our bodies do not hover like the mists or the light in the expanse but are held by the ground from which God has made me. The warmth of the light is felt on my flesh. These steps we are taking are steps that have never been taken before and we are traveling to a place where no one in our likeness has ever seen or been to before me. God is good and this earth from which He made me is good. I feel pleasure within me. If such beauty can be felt within a place that has been called barren by God, then I wonder what beauty exists in a place that is considered filled by God. Where are we going? How long will it be before we get there? We are traveling long and far from the place of my awakening and still I do not see the place that God has promised to me. We keep moving and moving without stopping. Where are they leading me to? I wonder what lies beyond this barren place. What is that in the distance? I see something. We are moving closer towards a place that fills the barrenness of this desert with something other than sand. What? I have fallen to the ground from whence I came. One of my feet tripped over the other and I have fallen onto the sand. I am looking up astonished that I have fallen to feel the earth beneath me with such force. Where is God? Where are the angels? They have left me alone! I have fallen and I am alone. I must use the strength of my form to get up by myself. I look to the east and I look to the west of where I have fallen and the sand remains unblemished except for

**the trail of footsteps behind me. And the darkness of my form is still beneath me to follow me. Where did God and His Angels vanish to? How could they be here one moment and gone the next? Where are they and how did they leave me so quickly without leaving a trail for me to follow? I am standing up on my own. I wish my Creator was here to pick me up from where I fell so hard. The place of my first awakening is far behind me now. I look forward and see a new horizon unlike I have ever seen before. My thoughts are weary with the barrenness of this sand from which I came. I will walk towards that place, for God has led me far enough towards the place where I must dwell. I will move closer. Look at how green the horizon is. I see movement beneath the blue expanse on the land. I must leave my trail behind me and fill my eyes with a new vision of a place that covers the barrenness of the desert. Perhaps there I can escape the darkness that follows my form. Perhaps there I can find a place to rest from the warmth of the light that surrounds me. There is color there. I see blue in the sky. I see green in that place. I am beginning to understand color. I hear a loud noise that moves over there. In the desert there was silence and all I could hear was an invisible force blowing into my ears but now I can hear many sounds pouring into my mind. God has given me life and breath so that I can see, hear, smell, taste, touch, and feel something beyond these senses. What is this place? The shrubs are too thick and I can find no path to enter into this green place. God, I need your help in finding my way into this place that has loud noises. These sounds please my ears and this place satisfies my eyes. What is it to be called?**

**I have seen an opening in the thickets. The barren desert is behind me now. The trail of my first awakening is far behind me. I am walking along a path into a garden of magnificent colors. God has brought me to this place. There is beauty here. With my new eyes and my new heart I see and breathe flowers, trees, and shrubs and all is beautiful perfection around me. I see rainbows falling from the sky below the clouds. The trees are green and the sky is blue and I comprehend color within this Garden. I see birds, animals, and reptiles. My Creator has created Paradise, for me to live in. This takes my breath and carries it away into the invisible wind that moves my inner form towards the clouds.**

**I cannot see my thoughts. I hear them but not in my ears. My thoughts are one with what I see and my soul becomes what I feel when I look at Eden. Which direction should I go? What should I do in Eden? What is the meaning of this paradise that I behold? I am here according to my Creator's command but I don't know why and for what purpose. I will walk along this river towards the opposite direction that it flows. The river has a sound that pours into my soul. The flowing water covers my soul as it covers these rocks.**

## **GOD**

**I am here but you cannot see me. You can hear my voice without seeing my form. From now on I will speak into your ears without physical form and my invisible presence will become only visible to the soul within your mind. You will inhabit this Garden called Paradise. You are free to travel as far as where the four rivers flow. You may eat the fruit of any tree or shrub in the garden and you are free to give names to every living thing that I have created. You will tend to this garden and with your hands you will gather its fruit to eat and its seeds to plant. You will enjoy all the pleasures that this paradise I have given you has to offer. You will take care of your Garden and as I will cause water to pour down from the sky this garden will expand and you will shape it while it grows. You may eat from any tree in the garden; but you must not eat from the tree that is in the middle of the garden, for when you eat of this tree you will die. The tree has the knowledge of good and evil and you may not eat of it.**

## **SUNSTAR**

**Look, I see birds of all kinds. Their feathers make the sky move and my heart flutters within their motion. A butterfly glides around me with wings that are as the colors of the flowers in bloom. The Garden is alive with the illumination of the sun and I too am illuminated as I sit beneath the shade of a tree feeling the roots of my legs cling to the soil from which I rose. I am naked in Paradise like the animals and I**

**am sitting under this tree that I cannot eat from pondering the oneness that I feel with all Creation.**

**My eyes closed and I saw nothing. There was darkness as deep as the night beyond the sparkling white lights in the sky beyond the sky. When my eyes closed and looked within me I saw darkness within myself, much like the darkness that surrounds my form when the sun shines down upon it. Before I existed I felt nothing and was nothing and when I closed my eyes to the Garden of Eden I felt nothing and saw nothing again. I was unaware of the darkness while I was within the darkness inside of me. I experienced this when the sun was down and my body lay on the grassy ground. I have opened my eyes that once beheld sightless vision and the darkness is gone and the night which covered my form with a black robe has been lifted by the light of the sun which rises from the opposite horizon where it fell. I look up and see a form. The form cannot be seen because the sun is behind it and the light causes my eyes to be heavy so that I must put my hands in front of them. I am standing up in the place where my body lay in darkness and now light shines upon a new form. Their form is not like my form. It is not like my Creator's form or the form of the Angels. It is a different form. It also has the breath of life as I have the breath of life and it is standing in front of me motionless and silent just looking at me. The form is not flat like mine. It has curves and their hair is long. It has two soft projections emanating from its chest and its legs are smooth without hair. Between their legs there is a difference from that same area between my legs. The form is pleasing to my sight. What is it? Who is it?**

## **GOD**

**I have created this form as a suitable companion for you to enjoy Paradise with. I have created 'her' from a rib inside of your own body. From this rib I cloned the form and figure that you see standing before you. 'She' will be a helper to you as you tend to your Garden. There are differences between her form and your form, between her body and your body. However, she has the same likeness as you. She is not like the birds, the animals, the reptiles, and the creatures of the sea**



**which you have named. She is like you in her flesh. There are differences in her flesh for a reason and a purpose which will later be made known to you. For now, you are commanded to respect that difference and enjoy that difference. I have closed up the place from which I took your rib with new muscle that you may be forever reminded that she came from within your body. I am giving her to you as a companion to enjoy Paradise with, for I felt that it was not good for you to enjoy this Paradise alone, by yourself. She will follow you wherever you lead her and she will submit to whatever you command her to do in your Garden. She is your possession and you are hers. You belong to each other and are of the same flesh. You both have the same likeness and image as us. You will love her and cherish her in your Garden, Your Garden will also be her Garden, and her Paradise will be your Paradise, though it is all mine.**

## **SUNSTAR**

**This is now bone of my bones and flesh of my flesh; she shall be called 'woman,' for she was taken out of man. There are physical differences between us which I now understand, however, her flesh is also uncovered as mine is uncovered and her form is pleasing to my eyes. I will take her hand into mine and lead her into this great Garden that God has given to us to enjoy together.**

## **MOONCHILD**

**I am a woman for I have been created from a man. He is the first and only man on this new earth. God created him from the ground beneath our feet and I was created from a rib inside of the man. How handsome is the man from which my figure has come. His body is firm and strong while mine is soft and gentle. His hair rests upon his shoulders while mine pours down my back behind me. His chest is tight and firm while mine is soft and delicate as the feathers of a pillow. My legs are smooth while his legs have hair. He has taken his strong hand into my weak hand and is guiding me somewhere through this beautiful Garden of my first awakening. Where is he leading me**

**with such strength and force? My lips are speechless and do not move as his does. Words that I understand with my thoughts come from sound that emanates out of his lips and pours into my ears with strong resonance. The sound of his voice is like the sound of a waterfall. I hear a thundering waterfall that shakes the motionless ground where my light footsteps walk. The strong fingers of his right hand are entwined with the weaker fingers of my left hand and it is pleasing to feel the firmness of his touch. He is leading me and guiding me towards an unknown place, but I will be silent without speech as he shows me a new earth where I did not exist a moment ago. I exist now to breathe, to see, to touch, to smell, and to feel and it is wonderful. I feel good. There is motion within my thoughts that sends a chill up my spine. I look at a river and the very same water that pours through Eden pours down my cheeks. An invisible force moves through the trees, the flowers, and the grass and my body moves with them as water flows out of my vision towards my steps. I think the motion of my thoughts is happy. I feel good beneath my figure. Where is SUNSTAR leading me?**

## **SUNSTAR**

**Come woman, let us sit together beside this trickling stream where the rocks will speak to us the songs of the clouds that float in the sky. What is a cloud? A cloud is like a thought that moves, a mist that has no form but carries the waters of the ocean as it floats without weight. When the ocean causes the mists to become heavy water falls out of the sky and makes Paradise grow, much like a thought that is so heavy that water pours out of our eyes. The rain that pours out of your eyes comes from a heavy thought dream that like a cloud floated in the sky and could not be pulled down by the earth, but the more waves of thoughts drifted into the mists of yours dreams, the more your eyes rained with the same salty water that falls from the ocean of the sky. Your thought dreams move like the clouds. They float for a brief moment and then become too heavy for the sky of your mind to contain and so your eyes pour out the heavy rain.**

## **MOONCHILD**

**The waters that fall out of my eyes pour out like these rivers to cover the firmness of your form as the river covers these rocks. My thoughts move swiftly as they glide over your hard, solid body which does not move like these waters move. Let the motion of my thoughts cover your firm body as this stream covers the rocks. Let me move you like invisible forces move the branches of the trees and the scent of the flowers. You are a handsome man and it is pleasing to look upon your form. My thoughts are like the ocean beyond Eden. They are filled with water and they rise like a mist to float in the sky. They become heavy and water comes pouring down on the earth of your body. May the waters that flow from my eyes be like the rain which falls from the sky. May they cause you open up like the flowers so that I can breathe the scent of your breath which my heart will carry with a sigh. Be like the light of the day and shine like the sun, for it is your light which reveals everything it touches. You cast a sparkle in my eyes as the sun casts a sparkle upon the moving waters. My heart is my soul and it carries the motion of your blood within it. You are the life force that moves my naked body as the wind moves the clouds after the rain has fallen as the tempest moves the tree that has no leaves.**

## **SUNSTAR**

**You are beautiful like a flower touched by a rainbow. You are soothing to my heartbeat like the wind which fills my lungs with the wings of Paradise. Like a flower you unfold to capture the light of the sun and you capture the light that surrounds my heart when my eyes glow with your reflection. We are dancing, moving in circles with the eagles and the birds whose motion moves the wings of our hearts into heaven so that we ascend above the clouds to touch the sun and feel its power glowing within us. We move silently through the jungle of our emotions wild and free. Where does the wind carry us but towards the invisible horizon that we cannot see. Let your long hair fall upon your breasts and flow down your back as the mane of a horse. I was black as night and now God has caused you to shine like a star in my cold**

**and lifeless universe. I was frozen like the snow until God sent your warm light to melt my hard exterior. How smooth is your neck and shoulders like a polished jasper stone and how silkient is your touch like the feathers of an eagle.**

## **MOONCHILD**

**Man is first and woman is second. Lead me and I will follow. Teach me and I will learn. Show me the path through the Garden of Paradise that I may eat its fruit and be pleased. Let me gaze upon you and be held in awe as the angels stare upon the face of God and are in awe.**

## **SUNSTAR**

**Your voice is soothing to my soul and its breath moves my heart a little faster. There is an innocence that resembles the cooing of the doves and the footsteps of a fawn as your gentle voice pours its thunder into my eyes and drenches the ground from where I came with tears. Romance is a waterfall pouring through my veins to cleanse my heart and bring the sea the songs of the tears that fall out of the sky when the rainbow of your soul stretches across the firmament of my mind. I love you like a bird loves its wings. I can leap off the highest mountaintop and sail upon the breeze of the free wind that carries the fragrance of the flowers into my unfolding lungs and how wonderful it is to sail upon the ocean of the skies within your eyes. You are my dream and I never want to wake up for you carry the clouds of my soul with your light so soft and fair as the moonbeams that crown my body with their halos. You are a halo that crowns me with glory and you are a jewel that casts a bright sparkle in my eyes whose pupils are filled with the color of the abyss when you are not there to dazzle within them. My hand is tight upon your loose hand which reaches out to grasp it with tenderness. You are a peaceful feeling that soothes my soul with every song of love that I want to hear and every beautiful painting that I have ever wanted to see. God has made you flawlessly beautiful and I admire the body of your soul. The earth of my body shakes like a leaf that falls from a strong tree and creates ripples upon**

**the still waters of a calm pool. I am a pool whose calm surface is moved by the reflection of your face. See how the ripples quake through my soul as you look through me to see yourself? Like heavenly bodies that revolve around the sun so do you carry my light as you revolve around me with one leg wrapped around mine. Let your long hair comb the wind and reveal its patterns and may you smile with lips moist with the honey of bees as you kiss me with your sweetness. In just one moment you show me the secrets and mysteries of the universe with just one glance so filled with love, passion, and feeling that I am inspired to dance and sing, to feel romance and all beautiful things. You show me what Paradise is in all of your beautiful colors painted within your eyes, your hair and your flower covered skin. When we unite I feel like a lion that dominates the lioness when they mate and I can feel the motion of all the wild animals in the jungles as we burn with the flames of instinctive passion. Unveil your nakedness for I wish to be unclothed when my eyes are clothed with your flawless beauty. Your silent hand touches my face like lightning that strikes the ground without noise after the thunder has made the ground of my being tremble. Come bury your soft face into my firm chest and let me comfort you with the blanket of my arms.**

## **MOONCHILD**

**When there is pressure as our two bodies rub and shift against each other a volcano erupts from within our hearts and causes us to tremble violently. There is a spark in the touch of your fingertip that ignites a flame in the candle wax of my melting flesh and as you hold me close like the sun holds the moon my face glows with your passionate heat. You crown me with a rainbow with the color of your eyes that glistens like the stars when you gaze upon me in love. Your love for me is a river of water that pours into the sea of my soul which rises like a mist and becomes a cloud to let loose the salty tears that fall out of my eyes when the sunlight of your fingers caress my levitating back. You cause me to thunder when we collide in the freedom of the sky where our thoughts billow weightlessly and silent lightning flashes through my veins as I feel your heart pounding within**

**the earth of my body. Your breath is a wind that carries the voice of my thoughts with rhythm that is like a musical note inspiring me to feel the poetry of who and what I am.**

## **SUNSTAR**

**We both were molded by the same hand and as my body rose from the elements of the earth's Creator, so did your body come from a special place close to my heart. When I listen to your footsteps it reminds me of the fluttering wings of the birds who carry within their flight the freedom of my soul. When I see your form, so uniquely different than mine, I am excited to know that you are a part of me, who I am and what I love within myself – the things that are sensitive, gentle, soft, humble, quiet, and peaceful, the attributes I lack in my male nature which is insensitive, rough, hard, prideful, loud, and war-like. You carry within your life pieces of my thoughts that sleep when the sun rises and thoughts that awaken when the night falls. As I hold your weak hand with my strong hand and we walk silently together side-by-side in this beautiful place I feel complete, for every animal has a mate, and now so do I. My hair is short, yours is long. My chest is firm while yours is soft. Your legs are smooth like ivory while mine are covered like the blades of grass that clothe the earth. My skin is dark while yours is fair like the night is robed in darkness and the day with light. You clothe my nakedness with a glow that the sun cannot create and not even a lily can capture the purity of your flawless skin.**

## **MOONCHILD**

**I love you like I love to breathe for you are the air from which I have taken my first breath. The impression of your footprint in the sand as I follow your lead sandals my feet. You shave my legs and comb my hair so that I am soft and fair like a dove. When you speak I become silent as a flower trembles before the thunder of a footstep. You are the first reflection of God and the Holy Angels and I am in awe of your comely features. Your skin is tightly sealed like the body of a snake and it is strong with the strength of a lion. You are superior to me and**

**I am inferior to you and like all things in Creation we are unequal. You are a man and I love your manhood. I love your leadership over my soul and my decision is to follow your decision. You enlighten the motion of my thoughts so that my eyes rain like the clouds. Your arms embrace me like the wind carrying me away to a distant horizon and your fingertips sail through my long hair with a scented breeze. It is because of your breath that I have life and from the body of a man a woman was created like a stream that comes rushing out of a hidden spring. You are above me and I am below you. You are in control and you help me to control myself. Lead me my master, for I am your slave as you are God's slave. Tell me what to do and how to do it for God has given you authority over me and I must submit to your will as you must submit to His Will. As all female animals, birds, reptiles, and creatures of the sea submit to their male partners when they burn with the heat of sexual need, so will I bend over and submit to my male lover who has a need that only I can fulfill. You depend upon me as a companion to both your body and your soul while I am dependent upon you for love and wisdom, strength and protection. I am yours to rule and to dominate so lead me through Paradise and instruct me to be the kind of companion that is pleasing to you. I care not if you please me, for I was created to please you, so show me how I can serve you and love you as you serve and love the earth that God has given you to rule.**

## **SUNSTAR**

**I hold your hand in mine as I would hold the feathers of a bird and your touch carries my soul away with the wind. I am in awe of your beauty as I am in awe of Paradise. In you I see the glory of God's Creation within a light that is brighter than the sun, softer than the beams of the moon, and more fragrant than the flowers. The first and last man and the first and last woman on the earth shall rejoice together as a result of our union. We have eaten from the tree of knowledge of good and evil, but the sting of death no longer pierces our flesh, and now we are born again with access to the Tree of Eternal Life. Come beloved, the flaming sword that blocked our path to Paradise is forever**

**extinguished so that we can once again enter into Eternity with hearts purified by the Creator's touch!**

**You long to make yourself sparkle with diamonds, but when you gaze upon your own beautiful reflection, whether it is within a calm pool, a silver mirror, or my eyes, you do not realize that you, in yourself, are a rare diamond whose surface is smooth, whose edges are cut sharp, whose heart causes a rainbow to sparkle in the clouds of my soul. You desire to wear a golden ring with glittering jewels, but I would prefer to wear your fingers around mine considering them to be the polished gold which enriches our souls with their melting touch. A necklace inlaid with the most valuable gems of the earth is not as resplendent as the bowed neck in prayer, and the glory of a crown placed upon your head is not as great as the soul of the mind which is crowned with a greater splendor.. The bracelets you might wear are not worthy of your wrists which bend like the neck of a swan.**

**My love, cast no reflection in the mirrors before your eyes when you step outside of yourself to look at yourself. Remain invisible like the wind which blows not in one direction. Isolate yourself without the walls, gates, bars, and boundaries that have imprisoned women within themselves. Be naked without shame or guilt and do not allow your flesh to be like its shadow which hides the light of your inner soul. I can stare upon your beauty with closed eyes and as I look inward at the darkness within me the light of your soul shines like a star in the abyss within the empty space of my mind. Your voice is heard through your silence and your silence has become a thunder that moves the soul of my heart with the hovering clouds. Your words have no voice and your voice has no words and when you are speechless, your quietness creates faith in the gentleness and humbleness of womankind. When I speak, my words become the earrings in your ears that sparkle.**

## **MOONCHILD**

**When you smile you reveal the joy that elevates your thoughts to the highest cloud of my mind and your spirit shines with elation like the brightest world in the universe. Our tongues blend with a stimulating**



**kiss which communicates the language of love and passion. Without eyes we cannot see, without ears we cannot hear, and without voices we cannot speak, therefore let us close our eyes and be sightless, let us be deaf and hear only the pounding of our hearts, and let us be silent as we hover together like the space between worlds.**

## **SUNSTAR**

**When I was mortal, I was born into death. From childhood and adulthood I lived a life of pleasure, comfort, and ease under roof of my father and mother. My physical body was chained by gravity, held down by the weight of the earth, but my spirit always flew with birds among the clouds. Though I was enslaved and held captive by human laws, traditions, customs, and religions, my soul loved God's Laws without tradition, or custom, or religion. I dreamed many dreams and saw many visions. I fantasized and imagined while accepting harsh reality for what harsh reality was. Many were those who chased after the wind, but I was a free spirit who traveled so fast that the wind chased after me.**

## **MOONCHILD**

**Let us worship our Maker in Spiritual Flesh, for the ghost of our minds must be cleansed by His Eternal Light, a never-ending wave of radiant water that baptizes us. The rivers of blood that pour through our veins are hot with steam that causes the sky to perspire as we evaporate with mist and the rain falls with our tears as we cry out in the storm of our emotions. God is our castle, the fortress made of solid rock that houses the temple of our souls. He is the foundation of the house of our flesh and the Form of our souls. Love is not God, God is Love. Passion is a physical expression of a spiritual love that longs to be one with the flesh that houses two souls. The soul within my flesh longs to become one with the soul inside of your flesh and when we mate like the animals do strength and weakness unite and create a new child that is neither strong nor weak, but both at the same time. Instinct clasps the hands of intellect linking together through a bond of reason**

**in which neither can live without the other for universal survival. Light and Darkness sit at the same together and while the Darkness cannot expose the Light, the Light exposes the Darkness for what it is and when the Light shakes hands with the Darkness, the Light shines in the Darkness without the darkness understanding it. The Darkness will never shake hands with the Light, but the Light will always extend the rays of its strong hands towards the Darkness to grasp it and be at peace within it and outside of it. Such is the Nature of God dying on the Cross so that our human sins could forever be forgiven and forgotten.**

**SUNSTAR and MOONCHILD took their diamond chalices filled with red wine, and with arms entwined, they drank their fill. They stared into the mirrors of each other's eyes, which cast their own reflections, and a sense of both joy and sorrow overwhelmed their hearts, for they knew what was ahead in their final destiny.**

**Rapturing her into his arms and bringing her body close to his, they danced a slow dance. With the Roman art of love, they kissed and caressed each other feeling oneness. Their burning bodies lit up like blazing torches and their clothing burned off their flesh until their nakedness was exposed. They came to a crystal palace carved out of a marble mountainside and when they walked inside they slowly danced into a bedroom across floors made of gold until their bodies sank into a large satin covered bed. They covered themselves with each other's flesh and they savagely intercoured like two lions in heat. They moaned and groaned with the thunder of the clouds and tossed back and forth with the roaring waves of the seas. Their bodies burned brighter and hotter than torches. Like stars exploding with intense energy, their trembling hearts burst out with furious passion and then became motionless. Their hot flesh rubbed together, smoke and clouds enveloped them, but while ignoring the clouds and the smoke with closed eyes that were open to inner sensations, they remained sexually intercoured into each other not wanting to let go. They were bound with luminous intensity, and aerodynamic forces filled the wings of their lungs so that their souls flew gracefully through the clouds of their dreams. They soon appeared on a beach where a winged unicorn stood over them as they embraced in the sand. They quickly refrained and bathed themselves in the saltless**

**waters of the aqua-blue ocean. After cleansing themselves thoroughly, they mounted the winged horse's back wearing the same clothing that they had worn during their first meeting in the Redwood forests. SUNSTAR gripped the unicorn's flowing silver mane while MOONCHILD slid her hands and arms around her husband's tightly sealed torso. The unicorn said, "The time has come to pass! Let us depart to your Eternal destiny."**

**SUNSTAR and MOONCHILD were flown into a forest that was a certain distance from the New Holy City on the New Earth. They were only a few miles away from the towering 1500-mile high walls of the New Jerusalem. They could see one of the Pearl Gates leading into the city with an angel standing at the gate. As they admired the indescribable beauty of the city walls, a figure like that of a man appeared standing before them dressed in a glowing white robe with a golden sash around his chest and a hood over his face. Only his mouth and neck could be seen. And he said, "Look behind you!"**

**When SUNSTAR and MOONCHILD turned around they saw a shining sword made of blue fire protruding out of a rock made of pure gold. The flaming sword stood upright in the gold rock. The flaming sword shapeshifted into a large tree and the rock of gold shapeshifted into an apple. The tree then changed into a wooden cross and the apple became a human heart. The human heart became a gold pyramid and the wooden cross became a silver lightning rod that created currents of energy in all directions.**

**The male figure said, "The meaning of these is simple. The flaming sword is the Holy Spirit and the golden stone represents the Earth. The flaming sword shapeshifting into a tree means that the Holy Spirit is the Tree of Life and the gold rock becoming an apple symbolizes the fruit that changed Adam and Eve's bodies. The tree of Life became the Cross upon which Jesus died and that Cross has been lodged into every human heart. The human heart is pierced by the cross, which is the Tree of Life and the Sword of the Holy Spirit. The pyramid of gold symbolizes the victory of mankind and womankind's triangle of Love. Both man and woman have stood at the bottom of both ends of the pyramid with Jesus on the top point. As they step upward towards the Cross of changes on the pyramid of love moving**

**closer towards each other, they eventually become One with Christ Whose Cross is the lightning rod which gives light and energy to the universe. Now you must partake of that Tree of Life, you and your bride, for you cannot enter the Gates of the New Jerusalem until the curse of the flesh has been taken away. Until you have consumed the water of life and used the leaves of the Tree of Life for your healing, you shall remain impure outside of the City gates. Remember what the True Messiah spoke unto you: ‘Blessed are those who wash their robes, that they may have the right to the tree of life and may go through the gates into the city.....I am the Root and the Offspring of David, and the bright Morning Star.’ You have one more decision to make before you enter Eternal Life. You can receive the Gift of the Morning Star or else be eternally cursed by the forbidden fruit which has brought death to your flesh. You cannot enter the Holy City unless you have been born again—through the water of the River of Life and through the Spirit of the Morning Star. The only Way to enter the Gates of the Holy City is for you to deny yourselves the sexual impulse you were born into and humble yourselves with the hearts of children. If you drink the water that Jesus offers you, you shall never thirst, and if you eat His flesh you will never hunger again. To inherit Eternal Life, you must let the Sword of the Cross pierce your hearts to let the blood of Jesus soil your robes. You must cover the shame of your nakedness with the Spiritual clothing that God has offered you. To become complete, you must free yourselves of the physical curse which has burned your sexual flesh with fire. You must die to your natural selves if you desire to be Spiritually born-again. When you are born again, through the water of the Spirit of Life, you shall become like the Angels in the third Heaven who are immortal in the purity of their Spiritual Bodies forever. If you want to be perfect and live forever, then you must rid yourselves of what is imperfect and temporary. God has allowed sensuality to exist for a short time, not for the purpose of pleasure, but for the purpose of reproduction, while the union between men and women is beyond the physical. You shall become as white as the virgin snow again and wear new robes which the Son of Man will provide you with to cover the instinct that causes your nakedness to lust for passion. You have only one choice: Live forever or die forever.”**

## **SUNSTAR**

**MOONCHILD, I dreamed many dreams as a prisoner of the earth within my flesh and I was held captive by your beauty. The soul within your eyes reveals an inner beauty that matches your physical perfection – the form of a woman. You are a reflection of everything beautiful that God has created. I see your form and your soul within the flowers, within the clouds, within the rainbow, and within all Creation. You were my comfort whenever I was in pain and you were my spiritual companion when I was alone and afraid. We have been joined at the loins but now we are untangled as the threads of a spider lose their hold upon the substance they cling to. Like the leaves of a tree in autumn, so has my earthly body fallen and broken on the ground withering away with the dust from which it came. The earth burned up like a scroll and now like a candle that has completely melted, my flesh is spent and sexual desire is no longer stirred. I must die to sexual bliss and enter into the freedom of my brother Angels who do not unite as men and women unite. I was once a caterpillar but now I must become a butterfly that I may soar with the eagles upon the winds that blow out of the mouth of God. My eyes once caressed your form but now they are closed to your nakedness as they look inward towards thoughts that are cleansed by the Mind of God. We are no longer dependent upon each other for sexual gratification for we are to become spiritual as we were when we were innocent children unaware of the roman art of love. You have made me smile. You have made me laugh. I have danced with your footsteps and floated with the ghost of your soul. I have run and played in heaven with you. I have kissed you and caressed you and held you romantically in my needy arms. You have satisfied me like the taste of wine and you have pleased me with the sound of your voice more soothing than the greatest love songs ever sung. You have brought me out of my own darkness into your light. You are soft and fragrant like the flowers as I breathe your being into the body of my soul. We have held hands and walked naked in Paradise. We have soared with the wings of doves and rode upon the backs of horses. We have swam upon the oceans of the skies. Kiss me with one last kiss. Hold me with your last embrace. All I ever wanted was you and all I ever needed was you. I**

**once could not imagine Paradise being complete without your beauty to light upon it. I have gotten what I wanted and needed and now I no longer need you, for God has opened up the dimensions of my mind so that I may be independent from you knowing no other love than His Love. God has no wife and I must become like God knowing the Love that is Higher than the love I have practiced with a woman. Flesh gave birth to your flesh and caused my flesh to burn but now that the burning has been extinguished, the Spirit has given birth to my spirit. We once, like Adam and Eve, exposed our nakedness before each other without blush nor shame, but now our nakedness is forever covered, our robes are washed and we may now enter the New Jerusalem in souls without bodies. The final resurrection must soon take place so that we might forever become undefiled as the angels who serve God. No longer shall I burn with passion. Why? Why is this sudden change within my human nature a star that must explode into comets that falter into an abyss of darkness where no light shines? Why must I fall like the stars and split apart like the mountains when my body is shaken?**

## **MOONCHILD**

**The women of the future were not like the women of the past, and as the ground changed from soft dirt to hard concrete so did women. The women of the future followed the Satanic flute which played the music of independence from God and man, while the women of the past followed the Holy Spirit of depending on both God and man. I have depended upon God and have found joy in depending on someone outside of my own mirror reflection. I have depended upon God for Life and for Love and by His Spirit I can also depend upon you for Life and for Love.**

## **SUNSTAR**

**Mankind was always miserable ever since he took the forbidden fruit that womankind offered him. The modern woman wore a snake for a necklace and spider webs supported their breasts attracting the flies**

**and the insects. Light closed women's eyes and the darkness opened them. Woman would have had me believe that her soul was as deep as space, but her soul was as shallow as a tiny puddle that a dog sneezes upon and the wind blows away. One might have looked upon her lovely form and see the glow of a rainbow but her graceful form had the appearance of sunlight that was robed with a distorted shadow which reflected its darkness when purified by fire. Her hips swayed with the motion of muddy water as she poured over the street gutters and filled the sewers with the stench of her mist which emptied the hearts of men with that same undesirable odor that caused the vulture to descend upon a dead carcass.**

**I was angry at the modern independent woman, like the tempest which thunders and makes the earth shake from its place. Eve offered me the fruit of her ungodly desire through her unfaithful, ungodly daughters, but I refused. I would rather do as the tempest does and send a flood to wash away all the flowers with their silk petals & hypnotic fragrances; I wanted to wash away the dirt that made them grow, for the flowers were as unattractive as the weeds and their fragrance choked me as the weeds choked the flowers that grew up in unfertile soil. Let me have an ugly gray stone, colorless & cold, rather than the heart of a modern woman, for to me both were and are the same. Women were meant to be companions of comfort and joy to men by the Creator's Will, but they cast no reflection in the mirrors of their souls for they were attracted to the unattractive flesh of self, the beauty of that which fades and is temporary. They were not comforting, nor were they pleasing to the modern man, for they were unsupportive like a broken, weak beam that supports the foundation of a mighty house and causes it to crash with time. Modern women were never satisfied, like destruction was and is not satisfied without destroying. Like music without notes, or words without meaning, was the mouth of a modern woman who spoke what was on the surface of their shallow minds. Their spirits were paranoid, shrieking like apparitions in a haunted house and whenever a man would enter they would scare them away. After finding themselves alone with their own mirror reflection, which cast no reflection they became frightened of the nothing they became. Cockroaches and worms filled their wombs and their fondled breasts withered and became as flat as the chests of**

**men. They cut off the long beautiful crown of hair that God gave them so that they could serve money rather than God and be servants of self rather than servants of men. Many were the men who destroyed the earth, but the women who devastated the earth were equal to men only in destruction.**

## **MOONCHILD**

**Men were like the pigs who wallow in the mud and enjoyed being dirty. Their teeth were the fangs of a vampire bat sinking into my bowed neck and drinking the blood of my heart. Men were like animals going into heat and they would go captivate the first female they could find and release all the duties of raising children to the female and then take off only to mate with some other female animals whenever he burned with passion between his loins. No male animal ever committed themselves to one female animal. Therefore, I should have had no complaints that man was no different than the animals, for I believe that female humans were the same as female animals and should have been content with their lot in life, for the male animals did what was in their nature and the female animals did what was in their nature and I believe that the Creator made human males and females the same way, each with their assigned roles. What distinguishes human beings from animals? Is it control over instincts or lack of control over instincts?**

## **SUNSTAR**

**Love is the instinct abiding in the unnatural realm of the spirit. Our love encircles us in a halo of energy and this bright flame that sparkles in our eyes and lights up our smiles pulls our thoughts and desires into the wind where we are carried away into the invisible waves of rhythm. You are my beloved and I am your lover. Our instinct to mate is the same as our instinct to bond ourselves to each other in eternal love where body and soul become One in a never-ending feeling. Animals cannot love in the way that I love you and like a lion dominates the lioness in the heat of natural desire, so will my love**



**forever dominate over you in the flesh of my spirit and the spirit of my flesh. Let me embrace you my love and hold you close to my pulsating heart where the rhythm of my life dances naked in amazed belief. Male and female have become one as we have connected our bodies and our minds with the warmth of young flesh and spirit. Let us fulfill this dream of our youth and smile with the satisfaction of knowing that we shall be together, forever in an Eternal Home that shall never be destroyed by mortal hands. We are immortal, you and I, holding hands in this Majestic Paradise created by the God of the universe. Dear child who lights up my dreams like the halo of the moon crowns the earth with its celestial haze, how I adore you! How I love your breasts, your thighs, your legs, and your hair. How I love your smile and your eyes and the soul of who you are. You are the essence of what woman is all about and I shall forever hold you and embrace you in my arms as the muse of my inspiration, joy, beauty, and love.**

**With dappled skies of sunlight**

**So fair**

**I embrace my mornings**

**With a silent prayer**

**God soothes our souls**

**And renews our grace**

**And slows our hearts**

**To a steady pace**

**For on the wings of time**

**We glide through our days**

**In a brief frenzy**

**Of work and play**

**Until the swirling mists**

**Of moonlight falls**

**On darkening forests**

**And empty halls**

**I am the dream master**

**On a white winged mare**

**Though light travel faster**

**My mind is a soothsayer**

**Riding through clouds**

**Without a care**

**And all too soon**

**My dreams are gone**

**Reality becomes a swoon**

**At the new light of dawn**

**The cycle of life is now complete**

**I am born anew**

**With immortal feet**

## **CHAPTER 5**

### **NO MARRIAGE IN HEAVEN – NO LONGER WILL THERE BE ANY CURSE!**

**This chapter will narrate THE CURSE as I have personally viewed it. Not only is SIN part of “THE CURSE,” there is also a curse within our flesh that will need healing and I think I can provide an adequate answer, different from what you are normally used to thinking about:**

**Rev 22:1.**

**Rev 22:1 Then the angel showed me the river<sup>u</sup> of the water of life,<sup>v</sup> as clear as crystal,<sup>w</sup> flowing<sup>x</sup> from the throne of God and of the Lamb  
Rev 22:2 down the middle of the great street of the city. On each side of the river stood the tree of life,<sup>y</sup> bearing twelve crops of fruit, yielding its fruit every month. And the leaves of the tree are for the healing of the nations.<sup>z</sup>**

**Rev 22:3 No longer will there **be any curse.**<sup>a</sup>**

### **WHAT WAS THE VERY FIRST “CURSE” IN THE BIBLE?**

**Genesis 3:14.**

**Ge 3:14 So the LORD God said to the serpent, “Because you have done this, “**Cursed<sup>y</sup>** are you above all the livestock and all the wild animals! You will crawl on your belly and you will eat dust<sup>z</sup> all the days of your life.**

**Ge 3:15 And I will put enmity between you and the woman, and between your offspring<sup>14 a</sup> and hers;<sup>b</sup> he will crush<sup>15</sup> your head,<sup>c</sup> and you will strike his heel.”**

**Ge 3:16 To the woman he said, “I will greatly increase your pains in childbearing; with pain you will give birth to children.<sup>d</sup> Your desire will be for your husband, and he will rule over you.<sup>e</sup> ”**

Ge 3:17 **To Adam he said, “Because you listened to your wife and ate from the tree about which I commanded you, ‘You must not eat of it,’<sup>f</sup> “Cursed<sup>g</sup> is the ground<sup>h</sup> because of you; through painful toil<sup>i</sup> you will eat of it all the days of your life.<sup>j</sup>**

Ge 3:18 **It will produce thorns and thistles<sup>k</sup> for you, and you will eat the plants of the field.<sup>l</sup>**

Ge 3:19 **By the sweat of your brow<sup>m</sup> you will eat your food<sup>n</sup> until you return to the ground, since from it you were taken; for dust you are and to dust you will return.”<sup>o</sup>**

Ge 3:20 **Adam<sup>16</sup> named his wife Eve,<sup>17 p</sup> because she would become the mother of all the living.**

Ge 3:21 **The LORD God made garments of skin for Adam and his wife and clothed them.<sup>q</sup>**

Ge 3:22 **And the LORD God said, “The man has now become like one of us,<sup>r</sup> knowing good and evil. He must not be allowed to reach out his hand and take also from the tree of life<sup>s</sup> and eat, and live forever.”**

Ge 3:23 **So the LORD God banished him from the Garden of Eden<sup>t</sup> to work the ground<sup>u</sup> from which he had been taken.**

Ge 3:24 **After he drove the man out, he placed on the east side<sup>18</sup> of the Garden of Eden<sup>v</sup> cherubim<sup>w</sup> and a flaming sword<sup>x</sup> flashing back and forth to guard the way to the tree of life.<sup>y</sup>**

## **NO MARRIAGE AT THE RESURRECTION FOR THE SPIRITS IN PRISON SET FREE**

**Matthew 22:23–30 says—“The Sadducees, who say there is no resurrection, came to Jesus with a question. ‘Teacher,’ they said, ‘Moses told us that if a man dies without having children, his brother must marry the widow and have children for him. Now there were seven brothers among us. The first one married and died, and since he had no children, he left his wife to his brother. The same thing happened to the second and third brother, right on down to the seventh. Finally, the woman died. Now then, at the resurrection, whose wife will she be of the seven, since all of them were married to her?’”**

**“Jesus replied, ‘You are in error because you do not know Scriptures or THE POWER OF GOD. AT THE RESURRECTION people will**

neither marry nor be given in marriage; **THEY WILL BE LIKE THE ANGELS IN HEAVEN...**”

What did Jesus mean when he said, “At the resurrection **PEOPLE WILL NEITHER MARRY NOR BE GIVEN IN MARRIAGE**—they will be like the Angels in Heaven?” Why will there be no marriage at the resurrection and what are the Angels in Heaven like? Why must we become like the Angels in Heaven and be forced by God to change from our human natures into the nature of His Holy Spirit? Our view of the True Heaven changes instantly when we take away sex and marriage. We can also invalidate the Islamic view of ‘Paradise’ simply by the Spirit of the One True God.

The angels in Heaven are not ghosts or phantoms made of mist, nor do they require wings to fly as Christian fantasies have painted for everybody. God’s Angels have physical bodies as we have physical bodies, but the chemistry of their natural bodies is different than the chemistry of our natural bodies. When we say that Angels are “spiritual” beings what we are really saying is that they are anti-sexual, anti-physical in their relationships with one another and they deal with each other on a purely mental level. Although the children of hell would like to experiment with alternative behaviors, attitudes, and lifestyles, God’s Kingdom has not allowed the Angelic Order to participate in the sexual union of physical bodies.

We as human beings have biological organs which function for the purpose of reproduction and not merely pleasure. A man and a woman require physical intercourse because their biological organs get aroused and their emotions stimulate their minds with the need for affection like flowers that have a need for the warmth of the sun if they are going to fully bloom. Men and women are physical and sexual in their relationships with one another just like the animals, birds, reptiles, and creatures of the sea;

Angels are not **SEXUAL** in any relations with anyone.

It has been assumed or said that **ANGELS** have no sexual organs and that the lower area is simply absent of either the male or the female organ as such organs are not required. If **ANGELS** are **SEXLESS** then they are neither male nor female.

Then again, the **BIBLICAL REALITY** defines angels as being “**MALE**” and as a “**BROTHERHOOD**.” It is quite possible that since angels are always treated by the Bible as being masculine, they may

**very well have a male organ that makes them ‘male.’ But they would simply not function as mortal males function nor require the same uses.**

**There is not ONE FEMALE ANGEL recorded in the Bible, with the exception of ONE METAPHOR in the Minor Prophets:**

**Zec 5:9 Then I looked up—and there before me were two women, with the wind in their wings! They had wings like those of a stork,<sup>x</sup> and they lifted up the basket between heaven and earth.**

**Zec 5:10 “Where are they taking the basket?” I asked the angel who was speaking to me.**

**Zec 5:11 He replied, “To the country of Babylonia<sup>10 y</sup> to build a house<sup>z</sup> for it. When it is ready, the basket will be set there in its place.”<sup>a</sup>**

**I believe that this was a dream analogy and not representative of female angels, as it is clear that ANGELS do not require wings to fly. When Jesus ascended to Heaven, he did not use wings to fly or defy the laws of gravity. In New Age bookstores, you will often ALWAYS see female angels in artistic expression, but Heaven may never have had FEMALE ANGELS. The context of Lucifer and the fallen angels was always portrayed Biblically as being masculine, although they might have all become gay, we don’t know. They are the biggest advocates of gay sex for whatever reason. Genesis 6 makes it clear that ANGELS left Heaven, married mortal women, and their DNA combined with female DNA reproduced GIANT children who grew up evil. These MALE ANGELS had to have the organ in order to pro-create. WOMEN on earth, therefore, would have been a new creation foreign to the BROTHERHOOD OF ANGELS who existed an undetermined amount in time with God in Heaven.**

**We will get more into these thoughts later.**

**We are sexual beings, but Angels are not sexual, and as far as relationships go, Love is shared on a purely non-physical, non-sexual level in Heaven.**

**In the mortal world on earth, unless a man and a woman are friends and have made the mental choice to only look upon each other as spiritual friends (or even if they are spiritual friends), there is a biological arousal that takes place in the chemistry of their natural**

**selves and both a man and a woman's desire is to unite physically, and bond sexually; because that is the way they function. This SEXUAL UNION between men and women was DESIGNED by the Creator for procreation, in addition to being pleasurable.**

**God's definition of marriage only recognizes marriage between men and women—and that is Holy Matrimony in the Eyes of God. The God of Creation created sex for men and women to enjoy on earth, but the Rules He applied to Earth's inhabitants do not necessarily apply to His established Order in Heaven as far as the issue of sex is concerned. We all know that God has no wife or any need or desire for one. I don't believe that ANGELS have wives either.**

**God's wife is His Church and He is Spiritually married to everyone with One HOLY Spirit. Angels also don't require physical unions with women as they are entirely 'spiritual', meaning, non-physical in their relations to each other and mortals.**

**It is TRUE that FEMALES will be resurrected and live forever in Heaven in harmony with men and angels.**

**I don't believe that angels are naked in Heaven.**

**I don't believe that there are any female angels in Heaven.**

**I don't believe that there are naked women in Heaven.**

**I do believe EVERYONE is fully clothed, even though clothes aren't really necessary.**

**I believe that MORTAL WOMEN will exist in Heaven, but not with wings.**

**Angels also would not require wings.**

**Whenever prophecy used wings, it was usually symbolic and not necessarily a reflection of angels or people who will inherit heaven.**

**The whole notion of angels or humans having wings in heaven was clearly adopted from both pagan and Catholic mythology, but not proven from Biblical reasoning.**

**Would we require wings to fly if Jesus didn't require them? In His Resurrection body we do not see any wings or evidence that the disciples saw wings on Jesus when He flew to Heaven.**

**We also NEVER see one angel recorded in the Bible, when they appeared on EARTH to people as having ANY WINGS! None.**

**And if there is a science that can defy the laws of gravity without machines or wings, then we most certainly will inherit this amazing ability to fly without wings!**



**As for men keeping their sexual organs, it is possible that men very well might keep their maleness, but in order to fly faster than the speed of light, you necessarily couldn't have these loose organs flapping around at supersonic speeds.**

**Could they shapeshift into reptile like shapes? God only knows.**

**It is also possible that MEN can be men without male organs and females can be females without female organs in the lower area. That whole area where our male and female sexual organs reside, might very well be sealed off in our new bodies.**

**If we are not going to require the release of bodily fluids or require sexual activities, there is no reason why we should retain such organs since neither reproduction nor relieving ourselves will be required in non-cursed bodies.**

**The Angels, however, have not been cursed by the forbidden fruit, which Adam and Eve ate and the very element of biological arousal that exists in human nature is simply non-existent in the Angelic natures. Human beings have not yet been resurrected with new flesh for the flesh that the human race experiences now is the design of their old human natures, but they have to be born again within new flesh, as caterpillars must come out of a cocoon and become butterflies. When humans suddenly become like the Angels in Heaven at the final resurrection, they will possess new bodies that do not function like their old human selves do. In other words, when they have eaten the fruit of Eternal life, they will become as they were when they were children and all mankind and womankind will become equal brothers and sisters again sharing the purity and the innocence they had when they were children. When they are born again at the final resurrection (born-again physically), when they partake of the Tree of Eternal Life, they will become as Adam and Eve were before they ate the forbidden fruit that caused them to cover themselves.**

**The human desires we have now in our sexuality will simply cease to exist. Men and women will no longer be married to each other sexually, but will be united on a purely Spiritual level. We will no longer be biological creatures who require passion or sexual intercourse, or pro-create, for we shall obtain a new form of pleasure and joy on an entirely spiritual level. The biological factors will be taken away, as it was when we became old and our**

**organs withered. There could be a period of time that God allows couples who were married on earth to enjoy each other physically for awhile, however, the Eternal State of our new bodies will not require sexual intercourse or pro-creation at all.**

**In our human selves, we cannot possibly imagine Paradise without Adam and Eve naked in paradise and would prefer the ultimate fantasy we have about Adam and Eve naked in the Garden of Eden to become our own personal reality in the future. An Islamic idea that has been attractive to men since it was first introduced was the thought that when obedient servants of God die, seventy virgin women will serve each man with grapes and fans as they lounge around on nice, soft, comfortable cushions, but this man-made idea of Heaven is simply another Islamic fantasy that will not come to pass. Most of us who are sexually active know the pleasure and the satisfaction that passion, intercourse, and kissing, brings us, and we dare not imagine Paradise without it, however, though we use our imagination to escape certain aspects of God's reality, the fact remains that the human race shall someday die to their present selves and become different than they are now. We would all like to share an Eden where men and women can experience the pleasure of intercourse without having children or being burdened with the responsibilities we faced as mortals, but such a fantasy has been refined with fire. Through the words of our ONE AND ONLY MESSIAH, Jesus that is, we shall become like the Angels in Heaven.**

**Why will marriage suddenly be nullified at the Tree of Eternal Life? Why will the nations be healed of their sexual flesh? Although the marriage covenant has worked for those who have obeyed God's Will, marriage was and is, like sex, a temporary covenant meant to perish with us in the grave. When we are resurrected by God and eat from the Tree of Eternal Life it is important for us to comprehend now that**

**we'll be under God's Government after our present flesh is spent and our days are all numbered. God is the One Who will resurrect us through His own power and He will redesign our present selves with new selves that will not experience death or pain ever again.**

**"In 1 Kings 11:1-3 says—"King Solomon, however, loved many foreign women besides Pharaoh's daughter...*HE HAD SEVEN HUNDRED WIVES* of royal birth and *THREE HUNDRED CONCUBINES*, and his**

wives led him astray.” Solomon had 700 wives despite the fact that they were of royal birth. Solomon, of course, was breaking the laws of God when he married so many women (In Deuteronomy 17:14-20 God commands Moses that the king of Israel is to have only one wife). The traditions of men made up the law that it was all right for one man to marry many women, but God’s Law only allowed one woman for every man including the king. Solomon, like every other king in the world, was disobeying the Law of the Lord to follow the traditions of men which took God’s Law and added onto it with what they considered “Godly” moral standards. True Christianity would never support the Mormon teachings that polygamy is justified because King David and King Solomon had several wives.

The fact that Solomon had 700 wives, all of whom he loved enough to be led away from God’s Laws, serves as an excellent illustration to make a certain point.

What is the point?

The point is, is that during our short lifetime on earth, each man has seen over 1,000 women that we would have taken to be our wives if we were in King Solomon’s position. Some of us single men have imagined being physically and spiritually and sexually united with over 1,000 different women in our lifetimes.

Even though single Christian men are not suppose to imagine things like this—they do, contrary to whether there is an admission of guilt or not. Of course, most of us modern men don’t have the privilege of being a great king or prince like Solomon was, but if we had been in Solomon’s position of power many of us would have probably also taken 1,000 women to be our wives if we had not learned or been raised with—one wife and companion only.

It is quite possible for any man to be physically, emotionally, and mentally attracted to thousands of women all over the Earth, simply because they love all beautiful women with both their body and my spirit. However, when it comes to God’s Law (one wife for every husband and one husband for every wife) and the Resurrection, would it be fair to those 1,000 women if God bound them all to one man for Eternity? Would God be wise in forcing these 1,000 resurrected women to be married forever to only one husband? If those women consented, maybe it would be morally correct, but if they all didn’t want to be

**married to one man, it would be quite unjust for God to force these 1,000 women to be married to them forever.**

**The question we must ask ourselves when thinking such thoughts is: “Would I personally want to share my wife with 700 other husbands?**

**What if my wife had 699 other husbands besides me?**

**Would I want to share her body, her lips, her soul, and her vagina with 699 other men?**

**No way! We would not be selfish for solely wanting our one wife for ourselves to be shared with no other. Even though we could picture ourselves on Fantasy Island married to 1,000 different women, we could never see ourselves bound to one woman with 999 other husbands. What if the woman of our dreams had 999 other men that she was attracted to physically and mentally? What if her body was shared with 999 other men? It is simply a repulsive thought! What if our wives wanted to be married to us and then also married to Arnold Swartznegger, Pierce Brosnan, Luke Perry, Fabio, Mel Gibson, Christian Slater, Brad Pitt, and other sex-gods of worship from the 20<sup>th</sup> Century? Shouldn’t most men consider that they would be on the sidelines of erotic desire for all eternity! The less attractive people would not be honored as much as the more attractive people would be. Even Jacob himself loved Rachel more than Leah because Rachel was far more beautiful and attractive. Who did God bless with children first? Beautiful Rachel or large-eyed Leah?**

**King David himself was married to four women, including Bathsheba. Let’s suppose for a moment that David, Bathsheba, and Uriah are resurrected together and are standing before God side-by-side. Now Uriah was Bathsheba’s husband *before* she was David’s husband. Would it be fair if God showed favoritism to David and said, “Sorry Uriah, David was a better husband to Bathsheba than you were, therefore, Bathsheba will be David’s husband for all Eternity!” Or, would it be just if God said, “Sorry David, Uriah was Bathsheba’s husband before you were, so I’ll hand her over to him for all Eternity!”**

**Even though David would probably be humble enough to let God hand Bathsheba over to Uriah since he murdered him, and even though David would probably submit to God’s decision, it would still be unfair because we haven’t considered Bathsheba’s feelings. Just wait until Uriah finds out about how he really died and who his wife was lying**

**with shortly after his death! King David not only lusted after Uriah's wife, but he murdered him by purposefully placing him in the worst part of the battlefield where death would be imminent. After plotting his death, David allowed Bathsheba time to mourn for her dead husband, then took her to be his own wife!**

**The only way David, Bathsheba, and Uriah could righteously dwell in the Kingdom of God together for all Eternity without jealousy, without animosity, without hurt feelings or tears or agony, is if God Himself freed them from their marriage vows and gave them new bodies without the biological needs they had while they were human.**

**Since death has already freed all three earthly bodies, it appears that a new Order will be enforced when they are resurrected. Sure, God could force Bathsheba to be married to either David or Uriah if He really wanted to and I'm sure that David, with the kind of heart he had here on earth, wouldn't mind if God returned Bathsheba to Uriah. As surely they were freed from each other through death, so will they be freed from each other at the resurrection—in the marital sense.**

**This doesn't mean that the three of them won't be together in Paradise, it's more a matter of how they will dwell together in the Kingdom of God. Biblically speaking, they will become brothers and sisters again and return to the way they were as children, innocent, and freed from the contamination of the biological curse that fell upon everyone's DNA Codes through Adam and Eve's disobedience.**

**The physical chemistries of Adam and Eve were changed by what was inside of the fruit so that they began to experience not only physical decay but sexual impulses that would reproduce children to carry the human torch of life on earth after their bodies died. It was God's Insurance Policy just in case His children chose to do the wrong thing. Sexuality was born out of one sin. God designed male and female bodies with the possibility that Adam and Eve would choose to do the wrong thing. God didn't want Adam and Eve to eat from the forbidden tree and gave them the choice to either obey Him or disobey Him. Just because they were created with a penis and a vagina in the very beginning doesn't mean that their sexual parts were actively engaged from the beginning. The evidence is to the contrary. They were born virgins.**

**They didn't have sex or have the desire for sex until after they ate the forbidden fruit which Satan had tempted them to eat.**

**God designed sexuality to be pleasurable only in a marriage commitment between a man and a woman. That one sin of doing something God told them not to do brought decay and death to Adam and Eve's human natures so that they became like the animals with that same basic instinct to become one flesh when the flesh burns with the heat of sexual need and desire. God foreknew that if Adam and Eve ate**

**the fruit He commanded them not to eat that their bodies would decay and die. So at the same moment that the virus within the fruit affected them, their biological organs were aroused so that they could become one flesh and produce offspring in their own likeness to take over the earth after they died. Since death came into life on earth, life needed to continue, so sexual intercourse was never created for mere pleasure or happiness, but for the reproduction of children. Adam and Eve have already been freed through death and they will be freed at the resurrection when they are once again allowed access to the Tree of Eternal Life. Their bodies will never experience decay again for, *"AT THE RESURRECTION, DAVID, URIA, AND BATHSHEBA, ADAM AND EVE, WILL NEITHER MARRY NOR BE GIVEN IN MARRIAGE; THEY WILL BE LIKE THE ANGELS IN HEAVEN."***

**If every man could have 700 wives and each of those 700 wives could have 700 husbands and each of those 700 husbands could have 700 wives then what we'd have is a global orgy! Everyone would be married to everyone which would make things unhealthy, perverted, and chaotic. What order could possibly be established?**

**Wouldn't there have to be a limit of how many people we can marry placed upon us? Of course, in a certain sense, through Christ, everyone will one day be married to everyone in a spiritual way without any sexual contact or desires interfering.**

**Any man could be physically, emotionally, and spiritually attracted to hundreds of thousands of women that meet their needs and desires. All throughout this earth throughout all the ages, there is within womankind, a beauty beyond the flesh that has attracted the souls of men, but the Law of God commands every man to be physically and spiritually married to only one woman, and every woman to be physically and spiritually connected with one man, even though men like Solomon could marry thousands of women with the same type of personalities and attractive qualities.**

**In the Light of Christ, a universal Truth is that any woman could love any man and any man could love any woman, spiritually, without unity of the flesh involved. True Love requires no physical, sexual contact whatsoever, and is a spiritual act expressed in a mental way. However, passionate desire, physical attraction, sexual need, want, or desire, is a biological (even mental) factor to be distinguished from True Love. 1 Corinthians 13:4-8 which describes what Love is. The Words of Christ in all four Gospels speaks to the human race of what True Love is. In the Spirit of Jesus, everyone could love everyone if pride, selfish ambition, sexual lust, and distrust were put to death.**

**When God became a man of mortal flesh and blood, a “Son of Man” through His physical representation (human like us), His Spiritual Love for women was different than that of other men. His Love for women was not physical, but Spiritual. He did not desire passion or intercourse from any woman, but only desired to express that Spiritual kind of Love which He fully demonstrated while He was here on Earth. God, in the Body of Jesus possessed no desire to fulfill any erotic fantasy or biological urge as other men did, but He only desired to fulfill a form of “God”-ly Love which was on a spiritual plane.**

**Even though there is a slight possibility that Jesus may have had experiences with the biological nature of man in the flesh of his human body, the records of life show that He was a man of self-control even though He was tempted in every way as we are. He knew and practiced only the Higher Love, which is a Spiritual Love and the Way in which He embraced women was much different than the way other men were embracing women. If we see the response of Christ when women approached Him, we see the Spirit of God totally at work in His Mercy, Forgiveness, and Spiritual Love. Jesus, although human, was men-tally (and perhaps even a little bit physically) like the Angels in Heaven. Even though He was a *little lower* than the Angels while He was a Son of Man, He was practicing the Higher Love of God which taught all Angels and humans the greatest Love of all—and He touched them through their hearts rather than through their bodies. Jesus had no girlfriends or wives and the mere need to have a woman as his companion was non-existent in His Soul.**

**When we are resurrected at the Tree of Eternal Life, we shall become as we were when we were children—innocent, pure, and submissive before God. The Love that a mother and father has towards**

**their children; the Love that a child has towards their parents; the Love that physical and spiritual brothers share with physical and spiritual sisters; the Love that a friend has for their friends; love for a neighbor or a stranger whom you don't know; all of this kind of Love is on a Spiritual/Mental Level with no physical desires or needs attached. This doesn't mean that friendly affection will cease to exist, for it is possible we might still be able to hug one another or kiss each other on the hand or cheek, but the sensual lip service we cherish now, in conclusion to Christ's ultimate statement, will disappear, intercourse will become obsolete, and the vows of Holy Matrimony will no longer be in effect. Something greater and Higher than what our human minds can presently grasp will be the inheritance of every human body whom God shall reserve for Eternal Life.**

**As we ponder about what no marriage at the final resurrection means, we come to some frightening conclusions that are repulsive and unthinkable to our human natures:**

**There will be no more adultery, no more lust, no more divorce, no sexual immorality, no more perversions, no more struggles with the sexual flesh, no more reproduction, no more nocturnal ejaculations or menstruation, no more burdens or headaches that come with marriage, no more arguing or quarreling, no more distrust or unfaithfulness, no more jealousy, no more worries about finances or supporting the family, no more sexual desires or compulsions, no more Roman-Love, no more boredom & repetition from the opposite sex; no more responsibilities which comes with marriage; and no more impurity, prostitution, pornography, or homosexuality.**

**The Marriage Covenant will simply cease to exist, for all men and all women will be baptized by the Higher Love of Christ and be Spiritually (rather than sexually) united with each other under God's Spiritual Leadership. There will be no more troubles, no more sacrifices to be made, no more burdens or worries to bear—for everyone will be born-again by the Spirit of the Living God.**

**An awareness of such things does produce a certain kind of death and sadness in the human heart and the ultimate reality of what Jesus said means that we must undergo death before we die. We as human**



**beings can't imagine Paradise without sex or passion from the other gender and the very implication that every married couple on Earth will be unmarried at the resurrection seems so negative to our human natures that we can't accept it nor handle it, because we are presently sexual creatures born for physical affections. Why did God give sex to us only to take it away from us? Why did God give us life only to let us suffer and die? All we know and see is this reality that we grew up with and we cannot presently see the answers to these questions since we are currently distracted by the lusts of our own human natures. If we know and understand that we all have to die and the rules will change after we die in the Earth, and if we know and understand that every single living cell within us is in our Creator's Hands, then we've got to grow up, mature, and progress in our thinking towards the next step of men-al evolution.**

**When we die, we die, and God will show no special favors to anyone. In order to understand anything about Faith, Hope, and Love, we must deny ourselves and die before we die if we can better understand God's Plan for the ultimate liberation of all mankind, womankind, and the Holy Angels.**

**Every song about sex and romance, passion, touching with kisses, hugs, caresses, will give way to a New Song—the Song of the 144,000 redeemed from the Earth who didn't defile themselves with women but followed the Messiah, which Revelation 14:3–5 talks about. Our old world and its whole way of living will fade away into the darkness of space and a bright new Morning Star will shine upon us and within us, the likes of which we have never dared to imagine, even in our wildest dreams or expectations.**

**Some who are slow to learn will not accept this ultimate reality until they face it at the final Resurrection, for they still are looking back as Lot's wife did. No fantasy produced by the human mind will be able to evade the Power of God in the Messiah, Jesus, and no reality on Earth will ever change the Spiritual Love He has for His physical creatures; the Spiritual Love which we can now inherit and practice and learn and know before we die. The Scriptures contain the words of the Living God Who died once but will never die again. As we open these Scriptures of God's Words we can discover the Truth about the New Jerusalem He has promised to give us.**

In Heaven, angels do not have sex with other entities. However, there was a time in human history, when angels looked into the earth from the dimensions of their observation and desired to marry human women.

Genesis 6:1–4 (NIV) says—“When men began to increase in number on the Earth and daughters were born to them, *THE SONS OF GOD* saw that the daughters of men were beautiful, and they married any of them they chose...The Nephilim were on the earth in those days—and also afterward—when the *SONS* of God went to the daughters of men and had children by them. They were the heroes of old, men of renown.”

Genesis 6:1–4 (KJV) says: “And it came to pass, when men began to multiply on the face of the earth, and daughters were born unto them, that *THE SONS OF GOD* saw the daughters of men that they were fair; and they took them wives of all which they chose...There were giants in the earth in those days and also after that, when *THE SONS OF GOD CAME* in unto the daughters of men, and they bare children unto them, the same became mighty men which were of old, men of renown.”

Genesis 6:1–4 (LIVING BIBLE PARAPHRASED VERSION) says—“Now a population explosion took place upon the earth. It was at this time when *BEINGS FROM THE SPIRIT WORLD* looked upon the beautiful earth women and took any they desired to be their wives....In those days, and even afterwards, when the evil *BEINGS FROM THE SPIRIT WORLD WERE SEXUALLY INVOLVED WITH HUMAN WOMEN*, their children became giants, of whom many legends are told.”

In the English version of the Hebrew Torah Genesis 6:1–4 says that “The *DIVINE BEINGS* saw the daughters of men.” If angels were and are sexless then how could they marry women and reproduce? This means that angels have the male organ, and therefore were capable of partaking the same substance that Adam and Eve ate which changed their bodies and made them sexually active.

‘*THE SONS OF GOD*,’ ‘*THE DIVINE BEINGS*,’ ‘*THE BEINGS FROM THE SPIRIT WORLD*’ spoken of in Genesis 6:1–4 were Angelic Beings from the Spiritual Kingdom of God; but whether they were Satan’s followers or more of God’s Loyal Sons, these Angels forfeited the brotherhood of their spiritual lives in Heaven to embrace the physical form of life. Logically speaking, there would have to be some serious

conclusions to be made if the people who wrote the Living Bible's Paraphrased Version are almost right on track in interpreting the Sons of God as Beings from the Spirit World.

Whether they were rebellious fallen angels or more of the Holy Angels who chose to leave heaven and come to earth we don't know. However, during their stay on earth, we do know that they had become sinful beings who produced sinful children. One of the reasons under God's Spirit for being convinced that the Sons of God were Angels can be found in 1 Peter 3:18–20 which says— ***"For Christ died for sins once for all, the righteous for the unrighteous, to bring you to God. He was put to death in the body but MADE ALIVE BY THE SPIRIT, THROUGH WHOM HE WENT AND PREACHED TO THE SPIRITS IN PRISON WHO DISOBEYED LONG AGO when God waited patiently in the days of Noah while the ark was being built."***

If, according to Scriptures, none of the dead shall rise until the second resurrection (and the second resurrection comes after the first resurrection of God's Saints) and the second resurrection hasn't occurred yet, then who are these spirits in prison and what does the Bible mean by "PRISON"? Some loyal or rebellious sons of God, divine beings, angels, fantasized about what it must have been like to intercourse with human women. Even though the human race once could not see God's Kingdom or the dimensions of His parallel universe, the angels within God's Kingdom could peer into earth's universe; and when a certain legion of the Angelic Host peered into our world and saw the daughters of men, they left their SPIRITUAL STATE OF MINDS with the longing to embrace the physiological state of minds which mankind was expressing in his sexuality.

The fact that the Angels are referred to as ***"THE SONS OF GOD"*** or ***"DIVINE BEINGS"*** has certain implications that cannot be logically altered: There were no DAUGHTERS of God in the Kingdom of God, but only SONS.

The daughters of men were a new Creation of God which the Angels had never witnessed before. It is also known that independently apart from the one-third of Satan's legion, more of God's Holy Ones "did not keep their positions of authority but abandoned their own home (JUDE 1:6)."

There were no "DAUGHTERS OF GOD" but only a brotherhood of "SONS" in God's Spiritual Kingdom. We have already concluded that

**Angels do possess physical bodies, like human beings have physical bodies, but the chemistry of their bodies is anti-biological whereas the chemistry of human nature is biological.**

**This is a completely un-Orthodox Christian viewpoint for the Orthodox viewpoint is that the human race is only created in God's Image Spiritually and not physically. However, God does have eyes, ears, a nose, a mouth, arms, legs, a chest and all the characteristics of a human form. This is an extremely unpopular viewpoint of God, but there are plenty of Scriptures in the Old Testament and New Testament that back these statements up. All we would need to do is read books like the Book of Ezekiel or Daniel to review the evidence of what kind of form they saw when God appeared to them.**

**The fact that the Angels are Spiritual only means that the Higher Love they express to each other is anti-physical and totally mental like the Love Christ expressed while He was here on Earth. The fact that Angels are referred to as "SONS" means that there were no angels with vaginas, therefore no daughters of God. God must have given all of his Angels the male organ that made them SONS and the Angels only had this organ for the relieving of liquids and solids which their bodies digested. If in Genesis 6 these Divine Beings were angels they had to have already had the male organ in order to marry and reproduce.**

**If mankind is created in God's physical image literally, and in the physical image of the Angels, in addition to being created in their image spiritually, then the Angels possessed this male organ solely for the purpose of relieving the fluids of their digestive tract.**

**Why are all of God's Angels 'Sons' and what makes them 'SONS'? To believe that Angels were and are sexless is a truth when it comes to their physical natures, for they were and are mentally Spiritual (rather than humanly physical) in their beings. Whether they have the male organ or nothing at all in that area is subjective to opinion. However, the necessity to reach out in a kiss, a caress, or a hug is unnecessary in the Angelic Order, for these are human affections, which the angelic brethren do not require. Of course, Satan has used these human impulses and exalted them to the highest important priority of the human psyche. Angels do weep, laugh, sing, smile, get angry and experience emotional thoughts, but they do not express their emotions with physical contact in the form of sexual inter-**

**course. Yet, just because they were and are sexless doesn't mean that the Angels don't have the organ which would make them male (SONS) in the human sense of the word.**

**If these SONS OF GOD in Genesis 6 were Angels who intercoursed with human women, they had to have had the male organ which made the reproduction of giants (the Nephilim) possible.**

**When they were immortal Angels, the Sons of God had the male organ solely for the purpose of relieving the fluids of their digestive systems. but before they married human women, they shared the same properties that were in the forbid-den fruit Adam and Eve ate in order to change their physical chemistries. Adam, when he was first created, had the male organ for reproduction, but like a child before puberty, this organ was sexually inactive, until he ate the fruit of the forbidden tree.**

**If the SONS OF GOD CAME to earth to marry the daughters of men and had children by them, then they would have had the male organ which made them "SONS" already, only these organs weren't sexually functional until they somehow triggered it by themselves. Since the Angelic Host were a Spiritual Brotherhood, they possessed no sexual desire, need, or want, that is, until they saw the daughters of men.**

**They triggered their sexually inoperative male organs so that they became biologically active. Can we exclude the possibility of Angels intercoursing with human women now? No. If Satan and his followers could wander away from God, then we know that more of God's Angels became unsubmitive to His Command for their Spiritual States of existence, left the Angelic Order and entered the mortal realms during Noah's generation. It could be the same now. It is possible that many angels have been allowed to walk upon this earth in mortal form without ever revealing their true identities, and, taking those identities with them to the grave prepared for them. God's Command for the Angelic Order was a Spiritual Brotherhood.**

**The Sons of God during Noah's time broke the Order of their Spiritual Brotherhood and entered the Earth with the intention of adopting Adam's fallen state of existence. The Sons of God were perfect in their Spiritual States of Mind, but when the temptation to leave that State of Mind became overwhelming, they left the Angelic Order to embrace the human order. Angel triggered their sexually**

**inoperative male organs with the same elements Adam and Eve ate in the forbidden fruit, and thus, they became sexually involved with human women.**

**The daughters of men were a new creation from God which the Sons of God had never seen before and we can conclude this to be true simply because of their response to the beauty that they, as angels, saw in mortal women. Angels will be judged by human beings someday as Paul said in 1 Corinthians 6:3 where he states, “Do you not know that we will judge angels?” The obedient and faithful angels were beings who were once and still are sexless within their physical natures (sexless in the active biological, reproductive sense), natures that had male organs by God’s Design, and among a legion of them, became sexually active. A legion of angels during Noah’s generation crossed over the dimensional barriers between both universes and decided to intercourse with the mortal daughters of men.**

**When the DNA of the Sons of God mixed with the DNA of the daughters of men, giants were born to them. ‘THE SONS OF GOD’ or ‘THE DIVINE BEINGS’ were angels and there was a sudden shift in the human DNA Code which produced giants instead of normal-sized children. Angels were sent on a mission to help out mankind because mankind was sinning, but when they came to earth they themselves sinned.**

**Angels were sent out on a mission to help humanity, but disobeyed God and blew their mission. It does not seem logical that God would allow such a thing to happen, His Angels marrying human women, intercoursing with them, and having children by them, but He allowed the heavenly visitors to enjoy the pleasures that men were experiencing under the marriage covenant. The inevitable result of the Angels abandoning their Spiritual Home with God to go into a world apart from Him meant the contamination and corruption of their pure spiritual bodies and the transition from immortality to mortality. When they became like men they were reduced to a lifespan of a hundred and twenty years.**

**Over the course of Noah’s generation, the children of the Sons of God and the daughters of men became so wicked that God had eventually decided to wipe them all out with a flood. God allowed the Angels to walk with mankind and womankind and live with them under**

**certain guidelines and rules and God allowed them to marry human women.**

**The Sons of God and their giant, heroic children, became corrupt and evil and God sent a virus to their bodies so that they would be allowed to live only for about 120 years. When children were born to these Sons of God and the DNA Code for human reproduction was slightly altered (due to the fact that the Angelic DNA was of a different genetic blueprint than mankind's DNA Code) *MANKIND*, as a whole, became so evil and perverse that God eventually had to wipe them out.**

**In the context of 1 Peter 3:18–20, Jesus was put to death in the human body. The physical body of Christ was crucified and put to death. Peter says that “He was made alive **BY THE SPIRIT THROUGH WHOM HE *WENT*** and preached to *‘THE SPIRITS IN PRISON.’*”**

**This ‘prison’ was the realm of Hades, Hell, the Abyss, where the legions of fallen angels were incarcerated by God’s Power and Authority.**

**The physical form of Jesus was resurrected to be Spiritual in an anti-biological sense. Through the Spirit, the fallen ones who disobeyed God before the flood, were preached to by the Spiritual Mind of Christ. The angels who desired human women and embraced the human biological order were taught the death of Christ and were taught to accept His death of human flesh into themselves. Jesus was born through a virgin and remained a virgin until death to show the kind of entity He was and is and always shall be forever.**

**Christ was born through A VIRGIN and was not reproduced in what was once considered a normal fashion. Jesus wasn’t just born by Joseph and SASHA intercourses, but by the Power of God.**

**The Power of God was able to somehow genetically engineer Joseph’s sperm so that SASHA’s egg would be fertilized (for Jesus was a Son of Man through both Joseph’s line and SASHA’s line (See Matthew 1:2–17 and Luke 3:23–38)).**

**The Body of Jesus was created by the Power of God in the womb of the Virgin named SASHA. Somehow, at some point, God’s Mind was incorporated into the brain cells of the new baby Jesus. There’s no human being or angel who can tell how God did this, but He transferred His own thoughts into the physical brain cells of this new human baby which He created by His own Knowledge and Power.**

**Did God possess two bodies at the same time?**

**If we have the right belief that the God of Israel became human, and through this human representation became the Savior of mankind with the Name of Jesus, then we would have to believe that God's Physical Entity dissolved from His Dimensions and physically absorbed into the womb of SASHA into earthly realms.**

**The Power of the God of Israel developed the human embryo of Jesus and did not enter until it was fully developed and the star which led the three wise men to the manger appeared.**

**Whatever time the God of Israel entered into this world when SASHA became pregnant, whether it was at the moment of conception, during the development process, or after the baby's embryo had fully developed and came out of the womb, somehow, at some point, God's Mind was integrated into the brain cells of the new baby Jesus.**

**There's no scientific analysis that I can think of as to how God physically entered into the earth. It is a great miracle born by the unseen Power of God.**

**"Luke 1:30-37 says—"But the Angel Gabriel said to her, 'Do not be afraid, SASHA, you have found favor with God. You will be with child and give birth to a son, and you are to give him the name Jesus. He will be great and will be called the Son of the Most High. The Lord God will give him the throne of his father David, and he will reign over the house of Jacob forever; his kingdom will never end.'" "How will this be,' SASHA asked the Angel, 'since I am a VIRGIN?'" "The Angel answered, '*THE HOLY SPIRIT* will come upon you, and *THE POWER OF THE MOST HIGH WILL OVERSHADOW YOU*. So the holy one to be born will be called *THE SON OF GOD....FOR NOTHING IS IMPOSSIBLE WITH GOD.*'"**

**Jesus wasn't born by normal human intercourse, but was created by the unknown Power of God. SASHA was a virgin when she conceived the body of Christ and she was a virgin when He was born and this plays a profound significance of the birth of our virgin Savior. Remember this: JESUS DIED A 33-YEAR-OLD VIRGIN!**

**Can we try to imagine 33 years of virginity! I had 23 years of virginity, meaning I had never had sexual intercourse with a woman, despite my sick fantasies.**



**Our Savior was a virgin born through a virgin because He possessed in His Soul, the Spirit of Holiness. Christ's virginity and SASHA's virginity plays a huge role in understanding the Love of God in all of its Goodness, Glory, and Power.**

**The SPIRITUAL LOVE OF GOD was revealed in the physical body of Jesus as He walked as a virgin for 33 years upon this Earth. It makes clear sense then, that when Christ preached to the spirits in prison He taught them the Love which was Eternal and He definitely revealed that the whole way of life in human sexuality was temporary and fading.**

**The kingdom of the Earth in its fallen sexual state would pass away before the Kingdom of God in its Spiritual State. The Spiritual Kingdom would be Eternal, but the sexual, biological kingdom triggered by the forbidden fruit eaten by Adam and Eve, would be temporary.**

**There will be no marriage at the resurrection because it will be God's Goal to make every human being that He redeems from the grave like the Angels in Heaven—God's Home.**

**The Angels in God's Heaven always have been, and forever will be Spiritual in their brotherhood and in their Love, and when the human race becomes like them, they shall also become Spiritual in their relationships with each other.**

**The need for biological stimulation or reproduction will simply cease to exist in our new resurrected bodies at the Tree of Eternal Life. It is quite difficult for us to try to imagine a universe without sex or passion because our human natures were so accustomed to that urge.**

**God's goal is to make the human race like the Angels in Heaven at the resurrection and to let them comprehend True Spiritual Love in the Light of Christ Whose Spiritual Kingdom will be Eternally blessed by the morning star of His Body—broken for all humanity.**

**When we better understand the reasons for Christ's Virginity and SASHA's Virginity, we will better understand the Spiritual Love He wants us to share with Him and with others. What is the meaning and purpose of life? To discover and experience the Spiritual Love of God and the unspiritual reality of Satan's desires and to bear the thorn of our flesh under the heavy weight of the Cross-which sets our souls free forever. Jesus may or may not have had biological struggles. The**

**divine records show that He was physically and mentally pure and self-controlled, despite the fact that He was tempted in every way as we are, yet He was without sin (Hebrews 4:15). It wasn't difficult for Jesus to overcome the human nature because the Spiritual Mind of God was in His mental visions, therefore, He could overcome the desires of the flesh more easily and readily than most of mankind.**

**Christ's goal and purpose was to re-unite mankind and womankind with the Spiritual Mind of God and to save them all through the death of His human flesh. Jesus knew what the Spiritual Kingdom, where He came from, was all about, and His focus was always on the position of the Spiritual Father to which He was raised. When He was resurrected, He was resurrected with a new physical body, but the nature of that body was Spiritual in Mind, as the Angels in Heaven were. The Lamb that was sacrificed outside of the Throne of God became the center of God's Throne. It is uncertain whether Christ's biological nature was active or not while He was here on earth growing up as a Son of Man. Yet, we do know that Christ's mentality was purely Spiritual in His physical self.**

**Does the Image of God end with Christ?**

**The Body of God is complete, eternal, and forever the FATHER FIGURE of the universe.**

**Our Savior had to show the spirits in prison and all mankind, who disobeyed their original order of Creation, what His Spiritual Kingdom was really all about. Christ's ministry of True Love was the Love Eternal. The temporary state of the human flesh, cursed and blessed as it was in its sexual drive, will pass away, and the Eternal State of the Angelic Bodies, in their Spiritual State of Mind, will be what both mankind and womankind has yet to inherit. There will be no more abortions, no more immorality, no more masturbation, no more ejaculations from the sexual organs, no more menstrual cycle, no more adultery, and no more struggles with sexuality. This is the next step for the physical and mental evolution of man and womankind under their Creator's natural design. They shall become like the Angels.**

**What the Sons of God could not understand as they were embracing human women was that the gratification which sex brings to the physical body was something temporary under the fallen, dying state of man. Mankind and womankind were given the special Gift of**

**Intercourse to reproduce children in their own likeness so that after they died, there would be more human beings to carry the torch of life on earth after they were gone. Despite the curse laid upon our flesh as a result of Adam and Eve's fall, the curse upon our flesh is a blessing in disguise because of God's Great Love and Mercy. God allowed human sexuality to exist, not for the purpose of pleasure, but for the purpose of reproduction, so that when their bodies died, they would be replaced by children born in their own likeness.**

**It is uncertain whether the Sons of God were placed into Hades before the Flood or whether they all physically died before and during the flood, but the Creator locked up these fallen spirits in prison until the Day of Judgment should arrive for all Angels and all humans whom He created for the purpose of His Eternal Glory.**

**Christ preached to the spirits in prison about being put to death in the body but being made alive by the Spirit. He wasn't made alive by anything but the Spirit of God Who raised the physical Body of Jesus to His own Throne to make Him King of kings and Lord of lords of both the Spiritual Kingdom of Heaven and the physical, sexual kingdom of earth. Pleasure is fleeting but Love is Eternal and the temporary pleasures in the temporary flesh will pass away before the Eternal Spiritual Kingdom of the Messiah.**

**Christ's Love, which is entirely Spiritual (Mental), is the Eternal Love which we all must learn and practice under the God of Israel. Jesus, while He was here on earth, and is presently at His own Home in Heaven, knew about a Higher Love which nobody else on earth under-stood.**

**Mankind and womankind understood ROMAN LOVE (Romance), but the Love which Jesus practiced and preached was simply unknown to both the religious and irreligious world.**

**The Love of man and woman was and is a temporary phase, but the Love of Christ was and is Eternal.**

**What is the destiny of mankind and womankind beyond the grave besides the Day of Judgment?**

**Genesis 3:22-24 says what their destiny is on Earth: "And the Lord God said, 'The man has now become like one of us, knowing good and evil. He must not be allowed to reach out his hand and take also from the *TREE OF LIFE* and eat, and *LIVE FOREVER*.' So the Lord God banished him from the Garden of Eden to work the ground from which**

he had been taken. After He drove the man out, He placed on the east side of the Garden of Eden cherubim and a flaming sword flashing back and forth to guard the way to ***THE TREE OF LIFE.***

When Adam and Eve disobeyed God, their bodies were cursed by the forbidden fruit through death and through instant puberty which changed the natural chemistry of their bodies. Because of their sin, they and the whole human race among other tribes created from the dust of the earth, were denied access to the fruit of Eternal Life. God originally created a tree on this Earth that produced minerals and elements that would have enabled their bodies to live and breathe forever. Presently, the mortal human race is still denied access to the Tree of Eternal Life, yet thanks to the Promise of the Resurrection, our damnation into the grave shall be temporary.

We shall surely die because of our fallen state of mind and body, but after our resurrection, when every hair in our head is numbered, when we are born-again into the Spiritual Kingdom of the Eternal God, our destiny is Revelation 22:1–3 which says: “Then the Angel showed me the river of the water of life, as clear as crystal, flowing from the throne of God and of the Lamb down the middle of the great street of the city. On each side of the river stood **THE TREE OF LIFE**, bearing twelve crops of fruit, yielding its fruit every month. And **THE LEAVES OF THE TREE ARE FOR THE HEALING OF THE NATIONS. NO LONGER WILL THERE BE ANY CURSE.**”

Revelation 22:14 says—“Blessed are those who wash their robes, that they may **HAVE THE RIGHT TO THE TREE OF LIFE** and may go through the gates into the city.”

Revelation 2:7 says—“To him who overcomes, I will give **THE RIGHT TO EAT FROM THE TREE OF LIFE WHICH IS IN THE PARADISE OF GOD.**”

Christ speaks of ***THE TREE OF LIFE*** as a right and not just a privilege for those He redeems from the grave to inherit Eternal Salvation. The Tree of Life is the destiny of the redeemed and the access that the human race is denied now will someday be passed over by the word of CHRIST. We will not bear the curse of the forbidden fruit in our bodies anymore on Resurrection Day, for all the nations will be healed by the leaves of the trees of life in God’s Paradise—which is not of this Earth.

Thus, 1 Corinthians 15: 42–57 makes clearer sense under the Spiritual Light of the Spiritual Messiah Who overcame the physical world of the flesh. It says: “The body that is sown is perishable, it is raised imperishable; it is sown in dishonor, it is raised in glory; it is sown in weakness, it is raised in power; it is sown *A NATURAL BODY*, it is raised *A SPIRI-TUAL BODY*....The spiritual did not come first, but the natural, and after that *THE SPIRITUAL*. The first man [Adam] was of the dust of the earth, the second man [Christ] from HEAVEN. As was the earthly man [Adam], so are those who are of the earth; and as is the man from heaven [Jesus], so also are those who are of heaven. And just as we have borne the likeness of the earthly man [Adam], so shall we bear the like-ness of the man from heaven [Jesus]. I declare to you, brothers, that *FLESH AND BLOOD CANNOT INHERIT* the kingdom of God, nor does the perishable inherit the imperishable. Listen, I tell you a mystery: We will not all sleep [die], but we will all be changed—in a flash, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trumpet. For the trumpet will sound, the dead will be raised imperishable, and we will be changed. For the perishable must clothe itself with the imperishable, and the mortal with immortality. When the perish-able has been clothed with the imperishable, and the mortal with immortality, then the saying that is written will come true: ‘Death has been swallowed up in victory! ‘Where O death, is your victory? Where O death, is your sting?’ The sting of death is sin, and the power of sin is the law. But thanks be to God! He gives us victory through our Lord Jesus Christ.”

The spirits in prison forfeited their immortality for what was mortal, yet, there’s no judging whether God will show mercy to them on the Day of Judgment or whether God has already had mercy on them after He preached to them in the Body of Christ. They could be damned for-ever with the fallen ones who dwell with Satan, but they might, if God grants them mercy, be released from their prison and allowed re-entry into His Kingdom; unless God chooses to throw them into the lake of fire with Satan and his followers.

Jesus always had been and always shall be a virgin. The Father Who designed the human flesh of Jesus and inserted His own thoughts into the Messiah’s brain cells, is a holy, virgin Soul whom we can understand only with our souls within our minds.

**If Revelation 14:3–5 can be taken literally and not figuratively, then truly the songs of the virgins shall become the new song of the future. Our destiny is to hear the song that only they can sing. Human beings are spirits held in the prison of sexual flesh, but in a sudden moment the burdens we bear in our biological natures will be obsolete and we shall sing a new song under the Spiritual Leadership of the Messiah Whose Eternal Love will reach out to many redeemed souls who will inherit new resurrected bodies. We shall have the right to the Tree of Life if God's Love, Mercy, and Grace baptizes us on the Day of Judgment. Presently, human beings are prisoners captivated by a world of flesh and blood, but when death and resurrection delivers us, a New Song will take over the airwaves as the Virgin Jesus returns on the thundering clouds of heaven. Every radio station around the world which has preached and exalted ROMAN LOVE (Romance), will be silenced and the new Song of the Lamb will be sung by both the Angelic Order and the Human Order (who will become like the Holy Angels in Heaven).**

**So we can forget about women feeding men grapes and fanning their faces as the false Islamic text teaches, for men and women will become equal entities with the angels of Heaven so that only Christ's Superiority over every soul remains.**

**2 Corinthians 5:1–5 says—"Now we know that if the earthly tent we live in IS DESTROYED, we have a building from God, not built by human hands. Meanwhile we groan, longing to be clothed with our heavenly dwelling, because WHEN WE ARE CLOTHED WE WILL *NOT BE FOUND NAKED*. For while we are in this tent, we groan and are burdened, because we do not wish to be unclothed but *TO BE CLOTHED* with our heavenly dwelling, SO THAT WHAT IS MORTAL *MAY BE SWALLOWED UP BY LIFE*. Now it is God who has made us for this very purpose and has given us the Spirit as a deposit, guaranteeing what is to come."**

**What is the final conclusion and how will we dwell forever in the New Jerusalem? The world of our human flesh in its present form is passing away. The Angelic Sons of God will someday share the Kingdom of their Father with the sons and daughters of mortal men. Someday soon, at the final resurrection, at the Tree of Eternal Life where we will one day stand, there will be female Daughters of God,**

**joining the fellowship of the Sons of God by the Spirit of Christ. Right now, this world is passing away. We already have a new body waiting for us in Heaven. Our souls must be releasing from these bodies we currently inhabit and be awakened in a new body that will never perish, decay, or experience suffering and death again. This is the joy of God's promise to those who love Him and even those that don't.**

**God's virgin truth will become superior above all other truths in the Spirit and not in the flesh of God.**

## **CHAPTER 6**

### **THE CURSE WARNING FOR NOT PROVIDING FOR YOUR RELATIVES AND IMMEDIATE FAMILY IN NEED – THE 20<sup>th</sup> & 21<sup>ST</sup> CENTURY RICH MAN VERSUS LAZARUS SYNDROME**

1. **1 John 3:17 – “If anyone has material possessions and sees his brother in need, but has no pity on him, how can the love of God be in him?”**
2. **James 2:5 – “Has not God chosen those who are poor in the eyes of the world to be rich in faith and to inherit the kingdom he promised?”**
3. **Luke 12:22-28 – “Do not worry about your life, what you will eat; or about your body, what you will wear. Life is more than food, and the body more than clothes. Consider the ravens: They do not sow or reap, they have no storeroom or barn; yet God feeds them. And how much more valuable you are than birds! Who of you by worrying can add a single hour to his life? Since you can’t do this very little thing, why do you worry about the rest? Consider how the lilies grow. They do no labor or spin. Yet I tell you that not even Solomon in all his splendor was dressed like one of these. Do not set your heart on what you will eat or drink; do not worry about it. For the pagan world runs after all such things, and your Father knows that you need them. But seek his kingdom and these things will be given to you as well. Do not be afraid, for God has been pleased to give you the Kingdom. Sell your possessions and give to the poor. Provide purses for yourselves that will not wear out, a treasure in heaven that will not be exhausted, where no thief comes near and no moth destroys. For where your treasure is, there your heart will be also.”**
4. **Romans 15:26 – “For Macedonia and Achaia were pleased to make a contribution for the poor among the saints in Jerusalem. They were pleased to do it, and indeed THEY OWE IT TO THEM. For if the Gentiles have shared in the Jews’ spiritual blessings, THEY OWE IT TO THE JEWS to share with them their material blessings.”**
5. **2 Corinthians 8:9 – “For you know the grace of our Lord Jesus Messiah, that though he was rich, yet for your sakes he became poor, so that you through his poverty might become rich.”**



6. **Galatians 2:10 – “All they asked was that we should continue to remember the poor, the very thing I was eager to do.”**
7. **Matthew 8:20 – “Foxes have holes and the birds of the air have nests, but the Son of Man has no place to lay his head.”**
8. **Matthew 5:3 – “Blessed are the poor in spirit.”**
9. **Isaiah 61:1 – “The Spirit of the Sovereign Lord is on me, because he has anointed me to preach good news to the poor. He has sent me to bind up the brokenhearted.”**
10. **Matthew 11:5 – “The good news is preached to the poor.”**
11. **Matthew 19:20-23 – “What do I still lack?” the young man asked. Jesus answered, “If you want to be perfect, go, sell your possessions and give to the poor, and you will have treasure in heaven. Then come, follow me.” When the young man heard this, he walked away sad because he had great wealth. Jesus said to his disciples, “I tell you the truth, it is hard for a rich man to enter the kingdom of heaven. Again I tell you, it is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle than it is for a rich man to enter the kingdom of God.”**
12. **Mark 12:42-43 – “A poor widow came and put in two very small copper coins, worth only a fraction of a penny. Calling his disciples to him, Jesus said, “I tell you the truth, this poor widow has put more into the treasury than all the others. They all gave out of their wealth; but she, out of her poverty, put in everything—all she had to live on.”**
13. **Luke 6:20 – “Blessed are you who are poor, for yours is the kingdom of heaven.”**
14. **Luke 6:35 – “Love your enemies, do good to them, and **lend to them without expecting to get anything back.** Then your reward will be great.”**
15. **Matthew 6:2 – “When you give to the needy, do not announce it with trumpets. Do not let your right hand know what your left hand is doing so that your giving may be in secret.”**
16. **Acts 9:36 – “In Joppa, there was a disciple named Tabitha who was always doing good and helping the poor.”**
17. **Acts 2:44-45 – “All the believers were together and had everything in common. Selling their possessions and goods, they gave to anyone as he had need.”**
18. **Luke 14:13 – “When you give a banquet, invite the poor, the crippled, the lame, the blind, and you will be blessed. Although they**

**cannot repay you, you will be repaid at the resurrection of the righteous.”**

- 19. Psalm 12:5 – “Because of the oppression of the weak and the groaning of the needy, I will now arise says the Lord. I will protect them from those who malign them.”**
- 20. Psalm 13:4 – “My enemy will say, ‘I have overcome him,’ and my foes will rejoice when I fall.’ But I trust in your unfailing love, my heart rejoices in your salvation.”**
- 21. Psalm 14:6 – “You evildoers frustrate the plans of the poor, but the Lord is their refuge.”**
- 22. Psalm 34:4-7 – “I sought the Lord and he answered me; he delivered me from all my fears. Those who look to him are radiant; their faces are never covered with shame. This poor man called, and the Lord heard him; he saved him from all his troubles. The angel of the Lord encamps around those who fear him.”**
- 23. Psalm 35:10 – “You rescue the poor from those too strong for them, the poor and needy from those who rob them.”**
- 24. Psalm 40:17 – “I am poor and needy; may the Lord think of me.”**
- 25. Psalm 68:10 – “From your bounty O God, you provided for the poor.”**
- 26. Psalm 82:3-4 – “Maintain the rights of the poor and oppressed. Rescue the weak and needy; deliver them from the hand of the wicked.”**
- 27. Psalm 112:9 – “He has scattered abroad his gifts to the poor.”**
- 28. Psalm 113:7 – “God raises the poor from the dust and lifts the needy from the ash heap. He seats them with princes, with the princes of their people.”**
- 29. Psalm 18:18 – “They confronted me in the day of my disaster, but the Lord was my support.”**
- 30. 1 Timothy 5:8 – “If anyone does not provide for his relatives and especially his immediate family, he has denied the faith and is worse than an unbeliever.”**
- 31. Ecclesiastes 1:2 & 14– “Meaningless! Meaningless! Utterly meaningless! Everything is meaningless! I have seen all things done under the sun; all of them are meaningless, a chasing after the wind.”**
- 32. Ecclesiastes 2:2 – “Laughter is foolish and what does pleasure accomplish?”**

- 33. Ecclesiastes 2:17 – “So I hated life, because the work that is done under the sun was grievous to me. All of it is meaningless, a chasing after the wind. I hated all things I had toiled for under the sun. My heart began to despair over all my toilsome labor under the sun. What does a man get for all the toil and anxious striving with which he labors under the sun? All his days his work is pain and grief; even at night his mind does not rest. This too is meaningless. A man can do nothing better than eat and drink and find satisfaction in his work. This too, I see is from the hand of God, for without him, who can find enjoyment?”**
- 34. Ecclesiastes 4:1 – “I saw the tears of the oppressed and they have no comforter; power was on the side of their oppressors—and they have no comforter.”**
- 35. Ecclesiastes 4:6 – “Better one handful with tranquility than two handfuls with toil and chasing after the wind.”**
- 36. Ecclesiastes 4:13 – “Better a poor but wise youth than an old but foolish king who no longer knows how to take warning.”**
- 37. Ecclesiastes 5:8-15 – “If you see the poor oppressed in a district, and justice and rights denied, do not be surprised at such things; for one official is eyed by a higher one and over them both are others higher still. The increase from the land is taken by all; the king himself profits from the fields. Whoever loves money never has money enough; whoever loves wealth is never satisfied with his income. This too is meaningless. Naked a man comes from his mother’s womb, and as he comes, so he departs. He takes nothing from his labor that he can carry in his hand.”**
- 38. Ecclesiastes 6:7-9 – “All man’s efforts are for his mouth, yet his appetite is never satisfied. What advantage does a wise man have over a fool? What does a poor man gain by knowing how to conduct himself before others?”**
- 39. Ecclesiastes 9:11—“The race is not to the swift or the battle to the strong, nor does food come to the wise or wealth to the brilliant or favor to the learned; but time and chance happen to them all.”**
- 40. Ecclesiastes 9:15—“Now there lived in that city a man poor but wise, and he saved the city by his wisdom. But nobody remembered that poor man. Wisdom is better than strength. But a poor man’s wisdom is despised and his words no longer heeded.”**

41. **Ecclesiastes 10:6 – “Fools are put in many high positions, while the rich occupy the low ones. I have seen slaves on horseback, while princes go on foot like slaves.”**
42. **Proverbs 13:7 – “One man pretends to be rich, yet has nothing; another pretends to be poor, yet has great wealth.”**
43. **Proverbs 13:8 – “A man’s riches may ransom his life, but a poor man hears no threat.”**
44. **Proverbs 14:31 – “He who oppresses the poor shows contempt for their Maker, but whoever is kind to the needy honors God.”**
45. **Proverbs 17:1 – “Better a dry crust with peace and quiet than a house full of feasting and strife.”**
46. **Proverbs 18:23 – “A poor man pleads for mercy, but a rich man answers harshly.”**
47. **Proverbs 19:1 – “Better a poor man whose walk is blameless than a fool whose lips are perverse.”**
48. **Proverbs 19:4 – “Wealth brings many friends, but a poor man’s friend deserts him.”**
49. **Proverbs 19:7 – “A poor man is shunned by all his relatives—how much more do his friends avoid him! Though he pursues them with pleading, they are nowhere to be found.”**
50. **Proverbs 19:17 – “He who is kind to the poor lends to the Lord, and he will reward him for what he has done.”**
51. **Proverbs 19:22 – “What a man desires is unfailing love; better to be poor than a liar.”**
52. **Proverbs 19:21—“Many are the plans in a man’s heart, but it is the Lord’s purpose that prevails.”**
53. **Proverbs 21:13 – “If a man shuts his ear to the cry of the poor, he too will cry out and not be answered.”**
54. **Proverbs 22:2—“Rich and poor have this in common: The Lord is Maker of them all.”**
55. **Proverbs 23:4-5—“Do not wear yourself out to get rich; have the wisdom to show restraint. Cast but a glance at riches and they are gone, for they will surely sprout wings and fly off to the sky like an eagle.”**
56. **Proverbs 23:6-7—“Do not eat the food of a stingy man, do not crave his delicacies; for he is the kind of man who is always thinking about the cost.”**

- 57. Deuteronomy 15:7—“If there is a poor man among your brothers in any of the towns of the land that the Lord your God is giving you, do not be hardhearted or tightfisted toward your poor brother. Rather be open-handed and freely lend him whatever he needs. Give generously to him and do so without a grudging heart; then because of this the Lord your God will bless you in all your work and everything you put your hand to. There will always be poor people in the land. Therefore I command you to be open-handed towards your brothers and toward the poor and needy in your land.”**
- 58. Deuteronomy 15:7 – “If there is a poor man among your brothers in any of the towns of the land that the Lord your God is giving you, do not be hardhearted or tightfisted toward your poor brother. Rather be open-handed and freely lend him whatever he needs. Give generously to him and do so without a grudging heart; then because of this the Lord your God will bless you in all your work and everything you put your hand to. There will always be poor people in the land. Therefore I command you to be open-handed toward your brothers and toward the poor and needy in your land.”**
- 59. Job 5:11-16 – “The lowly God sets on high, and those who mourn are lifted to safety. He saves the needy from the sword in their mouth; he saves them from the clutches of the powerful. So the poor have hope, and injustice shuts its mouth.”**
- 60. Romans 4:5-6 –“However, to the man who does not work, but trusts God who justifies the wicked, his faith is credited as righteousness. God credits righteousness apart from work.”**
- 61. 1 Corinthians 3:11-15 – “For no one can lay any foundation other than the one already laid, which is Jesus Messiah. If any man builds on this foundation using gold, silver, costly stones, wood, hay or straw, his work will be shown for what it is, because the Day will bring it to light. It will be revealed with fire and FIRE WILL TEST THE QUALITY OF EACH MAN’S WORK. If what he has built survives he will receive his reward. If it is burned up, he will suffer loss; he himself will be saved, but only as one escaping through the flames.”**
- 62. John 14:6 – “I am THE WAY, THE TRUTH, and THE LIFE. No one comes to God except through me. If you really knew me you would know God as well. From now on you do know him and have seen him.”**
- 63. John 10 – “I am THE GATE. Whoever enters through me will be saved.”**

64. **Matthew 6:19-24 –“Do not store up for yourselves treasures on earth, where moth and rust destroy and where thieves break in and steal. But store up for yourselves treasures in heaven. For where your treasure is there your heart will be also. YOU CANNOT SERVE BOTH GOD AND MONEY.”**
65. **1 Timothy 6:6-10 says–“But godliness with contentment is great gain. For we brought nothing into the world, and we can take nothing out of it. But if we have food and clothing we will be content with that. People who want to get rich fall into temptation and a trap and into many foolish and harmful desires that plunge men into ruin and destruction. For THE LOVE OF MONEY is a root of all kinds of evil. Some people, eager for money, have wandered from the faith and pierced themselves with many griefs.”**
66. **Ezekiel 28:1-5 – “In the pride of your heart you say, ‘I am a god; I sit on the throne of a god in the heart of the seas.’ But you are but men and women, and not a god, though you think you are as wise as a god. By your wisdom and understanding you have gained wealth for yourself and amassed gold and silver in your treasuries. By your great skill and trading you have increased your wealth and because of your wealth, your heart has grown proud.”**
67. **1 John 2:15-17 – “Do not love the world or anything in the world. If anyone loves the world, the love of the Father is not in him. For everything in the world—the cravings of sinful man, the lust of his eyes and the boasting of what he has and does—comes not from God but from the world. The world and its desires pass away, but the man who does the will of God lives forever.”**
68. **Matthew 4:2-4—“After fasting 40 days and 40 nights, Jesus was hungry. The tempter came to him and said, ‘If you are the Messiah of God, tell these stones to become bread.’ Jesus answered, ‘It is written: Man does not live on bread alone, but on every word that comes from the mouth of God.’”**
69. **John 6:35 – “Jesus said, ‘I am the bread of life. He who comes to me will never go hungry, and he who believes in me will never be thirsty.’”**
70. **Matthew 11:28-29 – “Come to me, all you who are weary and burdened, and I will give you rest. Take my yoke upon you and learn from me, for I am gentle and humble in heart, and you will find rest for your souls. For my yoke is easy and my burden is light.”**

71. **James 5:1-6 – “Now listen, you rich people, weep and wail because of the misery that is coming upon you. Your wealth has rotted and moths have eaten your clothes. Your gold and silver are corroded. Their corrosion will testify against you and eat your flesh like fire. You have hoarded wealth in the last days. Look! The wages you failed to pay the workmen who mowed your fields are crying out against you. The cries of the harvesters have reached the ears of the Lord Almighty. You have lived on earth in luxury and self-indulgence. You have fattened yourselves in the day of slaughter.”**
72. **Mark 9:49-50 –“Everyone will be salted with fire. Have salt in yourselves, and be at peace with each other.”**
73. **Matthew 10:39 –“Whoever finds his life will lose it and whoever loses his life for my sake will find it.”**
74. **Revelation 21:6—“To him who is thirsty I will give to drink WITHOUT COST from the spring of the water of life. He who overcomes will inherit all this, and I will be his God and he will be my son.”**
75. **Revelation 22:17—“Whoever is thirsty let him come; and whoever wishes, let him take the free gift of the water of life.”**

## **HEAR WHAT THE SPIRIT IS SAYING TO THE CHURCHES**

**As I have professed many times, I am non-partisan, neither a Republican nor a Democrat, nor a Conservative nor a liberal.**

**I'm a BELIEVER that JESUS IS GOD and such a belief requires that I not profess “membership,” or a ‘club church enrollment register,’ or any group name that has been established by money. I no longer attend church because I don't believe in money. I believe in FREEDOM as GOD CREATED IT and TAUGHT IT!**

**I have usually voted in favor of Social Conservatism because they have SOME faith and Biblical values and a love for patriotism and the more Biblical foundations of this country. I can't vote for FISCAL CONSERVATISM because they want to cut Social Security, Food Stamps, and many other entitlement programs that the poor, the**

**needy, the elderly, and the disabled depend on for surviving past the ridiculous costs imposed on them by HEALTH CARE manufacturers who can't produce their products and services for FREE.**

**Democrats understand that Republicans CAN'T WORK BY HONEST MATH and that it costs TRILLIONS of dollars to pay for all the programs required to pay for everyone. For even though the SELF-ACHIEVERS make great boasts that they 'did it all by themselves without any government help,' it really doesn't matter to God or to man that 'successful' people were successful at a lie called: MONEY.**

**MONEY IS A LIE. Whether you are rich or poor – you are a slave.**

**Since CAPITALISM like SOCIALISM became a FAILURE for many people who didn't become 'successful' and boast of the 1% culture, the blue dog democrats had to step up to care for American citizens. It's HOW democratic communists were able to persuade Americans is by holding health care hostage to the TAXATION system and allowed the CONSERVATIVE REPUBLICAN side to say, "You can't have your programs without INCOME TAXES and BUSINESS WORKERS!"**

**The arguments between both FISCAL CONSERVATIVES and FISCAL LIBERALS were BOTH justified, in addition to being frustrated.**

**I will now SHOW you my personal story.**

**As a teenage man, I wanted to be married, have a house and a piece of land I could call my own and not be harassed by the world.**

**PRICE OF EDUCATION: \$20,000.00 TO \$150,000.00**

**Money in my bank: \$0.00**

**STUDENT PELL GRANT: \$2,300.00**

**You have to be an elitist straight "A" student to get a scholarship approval from any university.**



**A socialist, secular public education was not interesting to me and because I wasn't interested in programs that left my Creator's words out of science, astronomy, math, history, current events, and book readings, I scored average grades in High School, Junior High, and Grammar School because I loved GOD and the Bible more than their teachings. I felt freer going to the park and studying the Bible, reading poetry, and writing down my dreams, imaginings, and thoughts, versus reading someone else's boring poetry, some else's un-enlightened religions, some else's dreams, imaginings, and thoughts.**

**PUBLIC EDUCATION sucked and felt more like a prison to be endured and gotten over with than something of value to want to be part of.**

**When I got to High School, the bankers controlled the costs of HOUSING and those costs were ridiculous.**

**I thought that it was stupid to charge people money for housing and education. I really never needed health care because I was in good health and never needed to go to a doctor or a dentist.**

**When you are young, you should enjoy your youth and freedom and not have to become a prisoner of 'hard work.'**

**When my dad became unemployed because of bad corporate politics, the only jobs I could get were minimum wages as a teenager. Back then, the minimum wages were only \$4.25 an hour.**

**But CONSERVATIVE FOX NEWS PUNDITS preached during the Obama administration that I was a real American during the 1990s and the 21<sup>st</sup> century because I WORKED hard! "Working a minimum wage job was better than GOVERNMENT DEPENDENCY."**

**Unfortunately, that argument FAILED for me and for my parents. It was BETTER for my parents and I to get entitlements because there were no jobs available to be hired for, as a lot of people would learn from the 1970s through 2012. For FORTY years, illegal immigrants,**

**foreigners becoming citizens BOUGHT AND PAID FOR by foreign governments giving our government extra revenue to “PAY FOR THEIR CITIZENSHIP,”; the ACLU politics; the NAACP politics; the gay and lesbian politics; the frivolous lawsuits filed against American companies; the SEC investigations bringing evidence of corporate fraud, racketeering, swindling, lying, cheating, and stealing; the political scandals within large and small businesses; the politics of health care as a corporate expense; the politics of competitive earnings between men and women, between minorities and whites; the illegal discrimination occurring between people of all races and both genders; all of this was a formula to create an unhealthy work force in which EVERYONE was FIRED, TERMINATED, LET GO OF, LAID OFF. Full time hours were cut to part time.**

**So the CONSERVATIVE ARGUMENT of “JOB CREATION” was a failure because whoever was boasting that they ‘created jobs’ were creating crappy jobs and firing all the good paying jobs so that CEOs and owners could make more money, cash in, cash out, fire everyone and go back to their fully paid off houses at the expense of all the slaves who labored to help make their businesses work.**

**\$4.25 an hour at 20 hours a week, did not pay for my dad’s rent, which my uncle demanded be \$1,300.00 a month after having raised it seven times over. My dad’s rent originally started out to be only \$325.00 a month, which my dad’s brother “BOB” promised never to raise when we moved into his apartment building. Well, “BOB” kept raising the rent every month. \$525.00 a month. \$750.00 a month. \$800.00 a month.**

**After my dad’s stroke he raised the rent to \$1,000.00 a month. Then \$1,100.00 a month. After my uncle sold the apartment building for over \$1 million and bought himself some new properties, the new apartment owner raised the rent on my disabled father to \$1,300.00 a month.**

**While UNCLE BOB disappeared to enjoy his apartment building earnings, my grandmother, mother, and father were left alone to pay their own rent and none of them were ‘working.’**

**Thanks to SOCIAL SECURITY RETIREMENT BENEFITS, my grandmother earned just enough to pay her own rent and help us with ours when rent was low.**

**When Bob raised his own mother’s rent and his own sister’s rent, my uncle gladly took his own mother’s social security checks to pay for her rent and ours.**

**To save himself some money and earn more money off his own mother’s apartment, my uncle chose to take away my dad’s den to build his own mother a smaller space to live in so he could earn \$740.00 more a month off his mother’s apartment, while still collecting his own mother’s social security checks and offering my mom and dad, a “BREAK” on their rent.**

**Bob often encouraged my grandma to leave my parents to go live with him, but my grandma chose to stick it out with my parents and care for her own daughter. She sacrificed herself for others.**

**And Bob came down one day and gnashed his teeth at my mother and asked, “HOW COULD YOU MAKE YOUR OWN MOTHER PAY RENT?”**

**Uh huh.**

**Oh the logic.**

**Due to ACLU politics of hiring anybody who wasn’t white or heterosexual or male or Christian or Republican, my dad would not make it in Los Angeles. As much as “diversity” was celebrated in Los Angeles and good Christian folks believed that “diversity” in RACE and SEX was in alignment with Biblical faith and reason, a lot of Christians saw through the facade that was the ACLU and that their agenda was not “RACIAL EQUALITY” or “DIVERSITY” but reverse discrimination,**

**lawsuits, bringing companies down, and exploiting non-whites, using their hatred and frustration towards whites to get revenge.**

**And while Republicans were arguing over how best to defend land borders, Asians were buying out companies, moving their families from other countries by plane, given visas and passports and citizenships because their governments gave them enough money to BUY their citizenship.**

**Really, BUYING U.S. CITIZENSHIP was a luxury only wealthy foreigners could BUY and many immigrants who were WEALTHY bought their way into America. 2,000 Islamic mosques got built in America because of oil and energy deals signed with Middle Eastern countries and they were all given FREE AMNESTY due to deals signed among world leaders, thus making arguments over how best to shut out illegal farm workers that FARMERS could take advantage of out of the “Mexican” border really seemed futile.**

**So by the time we get to 2012, Obama would simply grant AMNESTY to 11 million illegal immigrants welcoming ANYONE, even TERRORISTS to America!**

**And who got all the jobs during the 1970s, 1980s, 1990s, and the 21<sup>st</sup> Century?**

**Certainly not my dad.**

**When my dad had a severe stroke in the 1990s, he didn't have ANY MONEY to pay for health care.**

**Both SOCIAL SECURITY and MEDICARE had stepped up to provide all the hospitals and doctors and health care required to make my dad survive and live and breathe for about 15 years!**

**My dad would have to be hospitalized about 4 times and one of those visits was nearly half a million dollars!**

**Could ANY PRIVATE insurance plan have saved him? No.**

**When you have no money and are disabled and have no income, NOBODY can pay for it.**

**The GOVERNMENT did!**

**I have BOTH Republicans and DEMOCRATS to thank for allowing the private sectors to make decisions to save lives.**

**And during those 15 years I saw the whole health care system WORKING! It worked for my dad when he had nothing.**

**Sure, I would like to have seen my dad not to have to depend on COUNTY HEALTH CARE SERVICES, but he wasn't wealthy, not elite, and no doctors wanted MEDICARE patients except government sponsored programs.**

**If the same politics occurring today occurred after my dad's stroke, my dad would have died 15 years ago. Thanks to GOD ALMIGHTY and GOOD MEDICINE my dad SURVIVED just long enough for my mom and I to say all the things we wanted to say to him. We had all the last moments we could enjoy with him. I would say that my dad's survival was all GOD'S HANDS in combination with a lot of good people.**

**Good hospitals.**

**Good doctors.**

**Good nurses.**

**Very caring staff.**

**But during the Obama administration, all of that would vanish because of worrying about GETTING PAID, THE COSTS, THE TAXATION, the political upheavals, etc.**

**During the Obama regime, that quality care dissolved.**

**An Arab and a Chinese doctor cared very little about monitoring my dad's heart and doing regular check ups while my mom was distracted by his dementia condition and I was distracted by working three jobs and being too tired and stressed out.**

**As you all know, I've had a very interesting side hobby, but while having that side hobby, I was working 24/7.**

**WORKING.**

**I have, throughout my lifetime, worked over 200 jobs for 200 different companies.**

**By the time I entered the job market, there was no job market that was surviving budget cuts, layoffs, politics, etc. I had to work at whichever democratic company I could work for in order to get a salary and abide by all of these ridiculous impositions that forced me into a system I didn't believe in or want to be part of.**

**But when you have disabled parents, you are under duress, just like a military officer on a battlefield. You are there not because you want to be there, but because you have to be there – it's your duty to care for those entrusted to your care. I DID CHOOSE to be with my parents versus ditching them like everybody who EARNED their own money chose to do.**

**I loved my parents and chose to stick it out and go through this huge prison that the prison wardens of money imposed on everyone.**

**That's just the way CALIFORNIA JOBS worked for the working class. They DIDN'T WORK!**

**CALIFORNIA raised inflation. CALIFORNIA raised taxes. CALIFORNIA imposed rules and regulations on small businesses that caused a lot of businesses to close. And when businesses and employees get fired, and the prices of education and health care and taxes go up – bye, bye California!**

**Why?**

**Because when you have a lot of DISABLED PEOPLE who can't work anymore, the costs of entitlement programs skyrockets enough to bankrupt those incoming tax revenues, so as the population of disabled people like my dad increases, so does the costs and with higher costs comes higher taxes.**

**All the little people are just GRATEFUL to get help.**

**My parents and I were and are GRATEFUL for all the very helpful people who were heroes throughout this whole horrific experience.**

**I would witness all the fighting and turmoil between our Republican and Democratic leaders kind of caught between both worlds like a yo yo.**

**I saw BOTH sides of the argument being correct and both sides of the argument being incorrect and BRAINSTORMED: A NEW CONSTITUTION FOR A FREE SOCIETY as being a new solution to ENDING all arguments and fighting.**

**What if HEALTH CARE and HOUSING were FREE?**

**Did it make any good sense for Fox News to tell people, "GO OUT AND GET A JOB!" while unemployment lines were too numerous and every corporation was laying off in mass?**

**Did it make any good sense for Fox News to send Stossel out to pose as a homeless man begging for change and the only point was that a homeless man could 'work' if he 'really wanted to?' And then Stossel gets up and expresses his pride as a "Libertarian" that homosexuality, prostitution, and drug sales are okay? That would certainly be something that homosexuals, prostitutes, drug users and 'liberals' would want to hear! But Stossel gets a good paycheck.**

**It was so easy for Fox News, EARNING A GOOD PAYCHECK and having ACHIEVED SUCCESS AT EDUCATION, to frown upon and sport against people who don't "EARN" any money or have a successful education.**

**It's all too easy for people to JUDGE one another without understanding or knowing or EVEN EXPERIENCING what other people in other circumstances go through.**

**It's FAIR to say that COMPASSION, UNDERSTANDING, GOODNESS, and CHARITY are part of our AMERICAN SPIRIT. The HOLY SPIRIT wants us all to give, to share, to love, to show compassion and if evil people don't follow such a path, we are FIGHTERS!**

**I'm convinced that although most people at Fox News are compassionate and mean well and do their best to present a "FAIR AND BALANCED" perspective, both sides have a serious disconnect.**

**There is always a spirit of 'team' work when it comes to fun and games, entertainment and silly stuff. But there is always division when there are politics and religion and serious issues involved.**

**In California, when people aren't working and participating together in PARTYING, most people are cool, fun, funny, laid back, and peaceful.**

**But as soon as these same people are done partying and being entertained, their home and work lives are not peaceful, not cool, not fun, not laid back. The same people who hold hands and sing Kumbaya under the sparkly lights of their various entertainers will not be holding hands or being friendly in corporate America.**

**Sure, people are nice and smile at Church.**

**People are nice and smile when drunk and stoned [at least most people].**

**They might even be nice and smile at work – but a serious problem occurs in which the smiles and laughter fades and MONEY comes**



**between families and employees through a spirit of competition that is unhealthy versus healthy.**

**GREED. LYING. CHEATING. STEALING. CRIME. CURSING. SELLING DRUGS. FRAUD. RACKETEERING. "DIVERSITY" politics. LAWSUITS. FIGHTING. ARGUING. WRITE UPS. HUMAN RESOURCES BADGERING. INFIGHTING. OUTSOURCING. FIRING. LAYING OFF. VERBAL THREATS. BACKSTABBING.**

**All of these are what I saw among all these WONDERFUL JOBS that employers boast they created in California.**

**I have accrued over 20 years working experience in California and have obtained lots of skills and experience among all the jobs I got laid off and terminated from. Trust me when I tell you that it was THEM and not me.**

**At the same time I have witnessed and experienced the good, the bad, and the ugly of American capitalism and entitlement programs, I am also ANTI-MONEY and ANTI-TAXATION even though I am held hostage to them.**

**Am I a hypocrite for trying to survive and play by their rules which I don't believe were good or wholesome for me as an individual? No.**

**While being FORCED into MONEY and TAXATION as the primary methods of American survival, I can also be against MONEY AND TAXATION and try to provide a good basis for an argument against them.**

**I have lived on CREDIT and BORROWED MONEY while still maintaining that CREDIT and MONEY shouldn't exist to begin with.**

**Just like SLAVES could often not overcome their slave masters bound by a government held in slavery to human principles that never came from God, so are we ALL held hostage to MONEY and TAXATION.**

**It doesn't make us a communist or a socialist to reject capitalism.**

**Capitalism is also a philosophy that I disagree with as a CHRISTIAN.**

**To be honest, SOCIALISM was more helpful to my grandmother, my mother, and my father and to me than capitalism was.**

**How?**

**My dad and I weren't able to survive all the bad politics among these companies ruled by throne dwarves and stooges.**

**I worked 200 jobs folks! They were ALL FAILURES!**

**Every company I worked for was a complete FAILURE.**

**GREED is the best word to describe these companies.**

**But also the infiltration of bad omens occupying these jobs.**

**Now I will disclose to you what was occurring in California, as I worked VERY HARD, undercover, FOR YOUR BENEFIT!**

**This information will prove to be valuable to you so that you don't feel alone that you were somehow singled out by some grand conspiracy to get rid of you wherever you go.**

**Unless we get rid of MONEY and TAXATION and push for all of God's resources to be FREE, there will never be freedom.**

**TRUTH for today is that you can't depend on either CAPITALIST PHILOSOPHY or ENTITLEMENT PHILOSOPHY to save you.**

**Only JESUS CHRIST and HIS WORDS obeyed by "CIVILIZATION" can save the world and since the world rejects Jesus, the world itself will be destroyed by the enemies of Jesus Christ. DESTRUCTION is what God's enemies are SUCCESSFUL AT.**

**The world that WORSHIPS and FOLLOWS MONEY cannot be saved.**

**Only those who follow JESUS CHRIST by giving up EVERYTHING.**

**For my mom and dad I gave up everything.**

**Jesus Christ laid down HIS LIFE FOR US and we responded by turning down the world for HIM.**

**The KINGDOM OF JESUS CHRIST IS FREE.**

**Earth is now ruled by His Enemy and the ENEMIES of Freedom as Jesus Christ meant.**

**WHAT UNCLE BOB COULD HAVE DONE DIFFERENTLY IN “JESUS” NAME, BUT DIDN’T**

**With a Marine Corps. Background and a history as a BANK PRESIDENT, my uncle Bob embraced the money system, investing in Real Estate, marrying a woman from a wealthy family, and saving all the money for himself and his family he could in order to make his life work within the system SUCCESSFULLY.**

**In fact, one of my aunts and her husband also went to school, educated themselves, bought themselves a nice La Canada property for \$20,000.00 back in the 1970s and became SUCCESSFUL at their jobs.**

**Another uncle, a former Marine, also bought himself some property and became successful at making money.**

**I ALWAYS applauded the fact that SUCCESS within this system could be achieved by an educated class that could work their way up from the bottom and actually succeed at overcoming the financial numbers set against us.**

**This was the basic premise and philosophy of CONSERVATISM according to what Fox News’ ‘successful’ people preach and teach day after day in order to keep the financial slaves motivated to keep this illusion alive.**

**Perhaps you think I might be jealous or envious or hateful or don't like my aunts or uncles or Fox News 'because they were able to achieve success and I was not.'**

**No.**

**By no means am I jealous, envious, hateful, or resentful of ANYBODY'S success in the financial system.**

**If I had won the lottery and achieved financial freedom through winning a whole lot of money, I would also come to believe that our financial and capitalist system was the best system in the world! If I had a good, stable career, like a lot of hard working Fox News heroes have, I would come to believe that LIFE IS GOOD, THE MONEY SYSTEM IS GREAT, AND ALL IS WELL!**

**I was never afforded that luxury personally and actually continued to pray for the SUCCESS of Fox News heroes and their many esteemed constituents.**

**However, what I would have liked Bob, and the other siblings to do, when empowered with success and claiming at the same time they were 'cross bearing Christians' who were 'good people,' 'on their way to Heaven,' 'responsible,' 'successful,' and 'empowered,' is to handle their vulnerable and helpless mother, sister, brother differently.**

**If I were Bob, and my sister's husband couldn't find work due to the bad democratic 'diversity' politics of the times when the devil was empowered to take over American jobs to plant foreigners everywhere, is to NOT TAKE HIS DEN away from my dad and shove my grandmother into to save money.**

**I would NOT have charged my own mother rent or take her social security checks to pay for her rent while owning a 10 unit apartment building. I would not have charged my sister and brother and nephew rent. I would not have raised their rent 10 times over. And when I sold**

**the apartment buildings, I would not have allowed some stranger to raise the rent to \$1,300.00 a month on an elderly mother, a disabled brother, a suffering sister, or a low income nephew.**

**What I WOULD HAVE DONE DIFFERENTLY as an empowered Christian is sell that apartment building being rented out to weirdo strangers causing problems for my family, I would have bought them a new house and allow my mother and my sister and my brother and my nephew, ALL FOUR PEOPLE, to live on a piece of land and property they could call their own, RENT FREE.**

**I would also have asked how their transportation situation was and if there was anything more that I could do, especially when my wife came into \$6 million dollars at one point. But sorry, “She lost all that money in bad investments.”**

**Nope.**

**While my dad was out of work, he encouraged his mother to give up her nice sunny apartment space claiming, “I need to make \$740.00 a month more and think it’s best I turn Fox’s dad’s den into an apartment so I can save money and earn more money. You can continue to give me your Social Security checks to pay for your rent and my sister and brother’s rent and that will be most helpful to me.”**

**Did Bob have the RIGHT to do what he wanted with his own apartments while his own mother, sister, brother and nephew were disadvantaged?**

**Absolutely.**

**Could we expect someone who has NO CHRISTIAN VALUES whatsoever to do differently than catering to a selfish impulse?**

**Of course not.**

**And men like Stossel would have sided with my uncle, while at the same time preaching that homosexuality, prostitution, and drug use are “OKAY,” even though I follow a “moral code” in which I don’t participate in such activities as I want to be “responsible.”**

**1Ti 5:8.**

**1Ti 5:8 If anyone **does not provide** for his relatives, and especially for his immediate family, he has denied the faith and is worse than an unbeliever.**

**But no.**

**In the world of Stossel and my uncle Bob, you shouldn’t provide for your relatives, especially your immediately family. You can donate to charity as a tax write off, but you can be a man of faith and be a believer and ignore the needs of your immediate family and get away with it and still be ‘a good person.’**

**So be it.**

**The result?**

**My grandmother needed a hearing aid before she died.**

**“Son, I’m having trouble hearing. Can you help with a hearing aid?”**

**Bob, “No. Sorry. I’m broke.”**

**Other siblings, “We are on a tight budget. Sorry we can’t help.”**

**And after grandma died and her daughter needed help, the apartment building had been sold to a stranger who had raised the rent to \$1,300.00. Bob kindly gave his sister \$1,000.00 for one month of rent while depending on his nephew for the \$300.00 he didn’t have.**

**Bob’s sister and her disabled husband and nephew were left fending for themselves and had to move out of their lifelong home with only one other person who helped – a poor person who was not as wealthy.**

**For 8 years, Robin Fox would work 3 jobs in a different city to support his parents while nobody cared to lift a finger to help a family caught in a lot of suffering, misfortune and pain.**

**A 20 year old car was donated to the Fox family by a poor family member who was themselves poor, even though they lived in a big house in a rich neighborhood. You can be financially broke and live in a rich neighborhood when the social security earnings are low and the mortgages high.**

**With a sick daughter suffering from Fibromyalgia and a husband whose job had hours cuts and layoffs, they were a struggling family in need who stepped up for another disabled family, while the more affluent members didn't lift ONE FINGER to help.**

**The government, under a FANNIE MAE and FREDDIE MAC program was GENEROUS in granting a loan to pay a lot of money into a Mormon's pocket for a tin can mobile home that was situated on a Chinese owner's land.**

**Over the course of 9 years, the Chinese landlord raised the land rent from about \$500.00 a month to about \$750.00 a month on every sick and elderly person living in that park.**

**The Mormons were about to collect three times what the property had been worth.**

**The LOAN SHARKS stated that you had to live on the property for "X" amount of years before reselling it and then, after that amount of time you could sell the property and be debt free.**

**Well, after paying well over three times the amount the property was worth 9 years later, the property could not be sold at a market value that would pay the Mormons and the government back.**

**Due to a COMPUTER ERROR the IRS would come knocking.**

**Due to a 20 year old car in need of monthly repairs, Fox and his mom would go bankrupt.**

**An unstable job market would terminate about 10 jobs that Robin Fox worked at, in the midst of democratic chronies sabotaging every job Robin Fox held in that town.**

**In the midst of these USUAL PROBLEMS that most people went through, Robin Fox would have to be concerned about the new NSA, CIA, FBI culture coming in to spy on the old culture that Fox had supported and voted for and then watching such goons come onto his property while he was working real jobs and have them sabotage those jobs since Fox had been bold enough to step up against EVERY BAD LEADER in government there was.**

**And coupled with DEMOCRATIC employers who had the entire DNC come in and out of their doors while I was working would all too easy of a guarantee that I would soon come to be blacklisted as a hard target.**

**I saw them coming and accepted my own death.**

**My dad's death was TOUGH to take, but easy to predict considering that SLUM MONKEY TRILLIONAIRE OBAMA was destroying the health care system through his new communist plans.**

**I knew that my dad would die under the Obama regime and I shared no KINDRED spirit with Obama, even though a lot of this talk and politicking between RICH VERSUS POOR sounds appealing to what the itching ears want to hear.**

**For 8 years I played by the rules, worked 'real hard,' until my dad died and some democratic spies came to my place of employment to sabotage my job, coupled with dysfunctional management that was all too eager to terminate their employees.**



**While working on my writing endeavors, I shuffled three jobs at once, pondering, while working, what could be done better to FREE PEOPLE FROM SLAVERY TO MONEY AND TAXES.**

**While being a slave to debts, credit, borrowing, and money, I just felt trapped with no way out – like a prisoner in a cage with wardens armed with shotguns.**

**If you go up AGAINST THE SYSTEM while under the SYSTEM they will use the system to try to smack you down; humiliate you; embarrass you; hurt you; rather than uplift you, help you, elevate you, and be charitable to you.**

**Nobody cared whether we lived or died so long as MONEY and TAXES were paid.**

**I got a chance to meet a lot of elderly neighbors who were hurting and suffering as a result of MONEY and TAXES – and these strangers were kinder to my mom and I than anyone else.**

**I got a front row seat into our health care system from the bottom up.**

**During the Obama regime, that whole system took a nose dive straight into the gutter.**

**For the poor, the disabled, the elderly, and those seeking freedom at the bottom levels, who hadn't achieved "success according to Fox News," could not overcome all the financial numbers set up against their low incomes.**

**And it wasn't US who FAILED.**

**It was those who RAISED TAXES, RAISED INFLATION, RAISED MORTGAGE PRINCIPAL AND [EVEN LOWERING INTEREST WAS UNHELPFUL]; RAISED THE PRICES OF EVERYTHING ON EVERYONE EVERYWHERE at a time when all companies were firing, laying off, selling out, cashing out.**

**And CONSERVATIVE arguments were failing just as much as LIBERAL arguments, while the general population was feeling a HUGE DISCONNECT not just with their immediate families but with the Federal and State governments, with the private sectors of large and small businesses, with MONEY and WITH TAXATION.**

**My conclusion is that MONEY and TAXATION should never have existed for a FREE NATION.**

**And this American experiment will NEVER BE FREE, either under a conservative president, nor a liberal president, until MONEY and TAXATION are abolished.**

**I WARN ALL READERS that with the coming global destruction of all lands, a NEW FREE SYSTEM will have to be implemented to provide for the EMERGENCY NEEDS of all countries everywhere without BANKS, WITHOUT TAXATION, without MONEY being imposed in order to utilize earth's resources for healing and survival.**

**We need to THINK NEW about MONEY and TAXATION and get rid of it if we are going to be FREE and SURVIVE.**

**This has to be done without hurting the masses already hurt by the politics of MONEY and TAXATION and all the wars between conservatives and liberals that involve this FAILED philosophy, which is patterned after old money systems.**

**There is STILL a HUGE animosity occurring between those who achieved financial success versus those who did not and there tends to be NO UNDERSTANDING between both sides of the argument.**

**I was rather disgusted and appalled with Fox News during 2012 over how they insulted the poor and the needy with ELITIST mindsets.**

**Joking about people who were living with their parents; joking about homeless people and clumping them together with Occupy Wall Street; joking about people who lived in RV or Mobile Home parks; telling the**

unemployed to go out and get a job during an economic catastrophe in which everyone is firing and very few are hiring; insulting the disabled and the elderly who depend on entitlement programs to survive this HOAX, THIS SCAM called: THE FINANCIAL SYSTEM by making them feel guilty for accepting government assistance.

I think a lot of poor, disabled, elderly people were GRATEFUL to receive those benefits, whether they were food stamps, or medical insurance, or housing assistance, or an unemployment check.

As surely the LIBERALS had an evil side, so did CONSERVATIVES in their language show an 'evil side' that was absolutely disgusting and unbelievable.

The FACT about MONEY is that it requires trillions to care for \$7 billion people and BOTH liberals and conservatives just didn't understand FREEDOM as Earth's Creator DESIGNED freedom without banks or taxation.

Both "FINANCIAL PHILOSOPHIES" are a failure and both "SOCIAL" conservatism versus liberalism are BIBLICALLY BANKRUPT from having a clear understanding of what GOD meant when He stated, "YOU CAN'T SERVE BOTH GOD AND MONEY!"

## The Rich Young Man

*19:16-29 pp—Mk 10:17-30; Lk 18:18-30*

Mt 19:16 Now a man came up to Jesus and asked, "Teacher, what good thing must I do to get eternal life <sup>e</sup> ?" <sup>f</sup>

Mt 19:17 "Why do you ask me about what is good?" Jesus replied. "There is only One who is good. If you want to enter life, obey the commandments." <sup>g</sup>

Mt 19:18 "Which ones?" the man inquired. Jesus replied, " 'Do not murder, do not commit adultery, <sup>h</sup> do not steal, do not give false testimony,

Mt 19:19 honor your father and mother,' <sup>82 i</sup> and 'love your neighbor as yourself.' <sup>83 j</sup> "

Mt 19:20 **“All these I have kept,” the young man said. “What do I still lack?”**

Mt 19:21 **Jesus answered, “If you want to be perfect,<sup>k</sup> go, sell your possessions and give to the poor,<sup>l</sup> and you will have treasure in heaven.<sup>m</sup> Then come, follow me.”**

Mt 19:22 **When the young man heard this, he went away sad, because he had great wealth.**

Mt 19:23 **Then Jesus said to his disciples, “I tell you the truth, it is hard for a rich man<sup>n</sup> to enter the kingdom of heaven.**

Mt 19:24 **Again I tell you, it is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle than for a rich man to enter the kingdom of God.”**

Mt 19:25 **When the disciples heard this, they were greatly astonished and asked, “Who then can be saved?”**

Mt 19:26 **Jesus looked at them and said, “With man this is impossible, but with God all things are possible.”<sup>o</sup>**

Mt 19:27 **Peter answered him, “We have left everything to follow you! <sup>p</sup> What then will there be for us?”**

Mt 19:28 **Jesus said to them, “I tell you the truth, at the renewal of all things, when the Son of Man sits on his glorious throne,<sup>q</sup> you who have followed me will also sit on twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel.”<sup>r</sup>**

Mt 19:29 **And everyone who has left houses or brothers or sisters or father or mother<sup>84</sup> or children or fields for my sake will receive a hundred times as much and will inherit eternal life.<sup>s</sup>**

Mt 19:30 **But many who are first will be last, and many who are last will be first.<sup>t</sup> \_**

**CONSERVATIVES** always have this feeling of ‘entitlement’ to God’s Creation by saying, “It’s **OURS** and **MINE**,” and not “**YOURS**” or “**THEIRS**.” There is only **ONE NATION** who has the right to say that and that is Israel because **TORAH LAW** is God’s Law defining the territory that is **ISRAEL’S RIGHT TO HAVE**.

**But the REST OF THE WORLD** should be shared.

**SHARING** is against **CONSERVATIVE CATHOLIC** teachings which believes that you have to ‘**WORK HARD TO EARN YOUR SALVATION**,’

**and requires advancement through a system of ranks and ‘proving yourself’ before you can be worshiped as someone to be followed.**

**It is TRUTH that SKILLS and EXPERIENCE are achieved with time and people have to get an education and hands on experience with time to be able to become successful at anything.**

**I agree that EDUCATION IS GOOD AND NECESSARY. But to put people into DEBT or LOAN DEBT to get an education that ought to be FREE is WRONG, no matter how you look at it.**

**GIVING for FREE also tends to be against both liberal and conservative philosophy because the attitude is, “Hey, I worked HARD for this and I don’t have to share this with anyone! You can’t have some of my surplus because I OWN IT!”**

**And so, when a monkey brain like Obama says, “YOU ARE REQUIRED TO SHARE SO THAT EVERYONE IS EQUAL!” Well, that doesn’t work from a COMMUNIST DICTATOR’S LIPS does it!**

**No.**

**Obama was and is not Jesus Christ.**

**Private ownership is from God and you can’t FORCE people to give.**

**I just say that if we ABOLISHED money and taxation, there would be equality and less fighting.**

**In my dysfunctional family, everyone ganged up on my parents while they were left destitute, harassed, and helpless by the bad corporate politics of the times. In my next volume I will be discussing my undercover investigations of California companies that did me dirty. I was a good, clean, hard working guy too and got a close up, hands on experience with all the dirty rotten scoundrels that are out there among these democratic companies that are ousting good American citizens.**

**Among 4 relatives, it was everybody for themselves and screw everybody else. After my grandma and dad died, NOBODY, but NOBODY among my dad's in-laws stepped up to help his widow and son, whose exclusive inheritance was each other.**

**GREED. HATRED OF ISRAEL'S GOD. LOVE OF MONEY.**

**During my dad's last days, it could be said of the relatives who didn't support or defend him or his widow:**

## **Godlessness in the Last Days**

<sup>2Ti 3:1</sup> **But mark this: There will be terrible times in the last days.<sup>j</sup>**

<sup>2Ti 3:2</sup> **People will be **lovers of themselves**, lovers of money,<sup>k</sup> boastful, proud,<sup>l</sup> abusive,<sup>m</sup> disobedient to their parents,<sup>n</sup> ungrateful, unholy,<sup>2Ti 3:3</sup> without love, unforgiving, slanderous, without self-control, brutal, not lovers of the good,**

<sup>2Ti 3:4</sup> **treacherous,<sup>o</sup> rash, conceited,<sup>p</sup> lovers of pleasure rather than lovers of God—**

<sup>2Ti 3:5</sup> **having a form of godliness<sup>q</sup> but denying its power. Have nothing to do with them.**

**Can you relate to feelings of abandonment and betrayal? When you FOLLOW JESUS and THE FREEDOM He offers, you have to give up EVERYTHING, whether it is jobs, money, careers, personal ambitions, pride, ego, material possessions, your house – EVERYTHING to follow Jesus.**

**Not too many churches teach you about how to cope with being rejected and despised and hated.**

**Not too many churches teach you that you will be HATED BY THE WORLD and not LOVED by the world when you follow Jesus.**

**GODLESSNESS in the LAST DAYS is here.**

**Jesus said, ““Surely you will quote this proverb to me: ‘Physician, heal yourself! Do here in your hometown<sup>u</sup> what we have heard that you did in Capernaum.’ ”<sup>v</sup>**

**Lk 4:24 “I tell you the truth,” he continued, “no prophet is accepted in his hometown.”<sup>w</sup>**

**Lk 4:25 I assure you that there were many widows in Israel in Elijah’s time, when the sky was shut for three and a half years and there was a severe famine throughout the land.<sup>x</sup>**

**Lk 4:26 Yet Elijah was not sent to any of them, but to a widow in Zarephath in the region of Sidon.<sup>y</sup>**

**Lk 4:27 And there were many in Israel with leprosy<sup>20</sup> in the time of Elisha the prophet, yet not one of them was cleansed—only Naaman the Syrian.”<sup>z</sup>**

**Lk 4:28 All the people in the synagogue were furious when they heard this.**

## **A Prophet Without Honor**

*13:54-58 pp—Mk 6:1-6*

**Mt 13:53 When Jesus had finished these parables,<sup>o</sup> he moved on from there.**

**Mt 13:54 Coming to his hometown, he began teaching the people in their synagogue,<sup>p</sup> and they were amazed.<sup>q</sup> “Where did this man get this wisdom and these miraculous powers?” they asked.**

**Mt 13:55 “Isn’t this the carpenter’s son?<sup>r</sup> Isn’t his mother’s<sup>s</sup> name Mary, and aren’t his brothers<sup>t</sup> James, Joseph, Simon and Judas?**

**Mt 13:56 Aren’t all his sisters with us? Where then did this man get all these things?”**

**Mt 13:57 And they took offense<sup>u</sup> at him. But Jesus said to them, “Only in his hometown and in his own house is a prophet without honor.”<sup>v</sup>**

**Mt 13:58 And he did not do many miracles there because of their lack of faith. \_**

**It is THE TRUTH that people who claim to be closest to you don’t know you or understand you at all.**

**In your hometown where you grew up, people might know you by what house you lived in, what car you drove, where your parents worked or didn't work, your reputation at work and school, or rumors spread about you that weren't quite true.**

**The Truth about all of us is that nobody but GOD HIMSELF truly understands us or knows us best.**

**Only GOD is our Judge and with that knowledge comes the responsibility of not judging others. It's tough to turn the other cheek when other people insult you, insult your parents, and worship money instead of God.**

**When people are rude and disrespectful, it's easy to want to lash back or get revenge.**

**But we learned something from the film entitled: THE EGYPTIAN where a greedy woman took everything away from a physician who had claimed he loved her and then spent his entire life wanting revenge, only to discover she needed his medical wisdom to help her with her leprosy. There could be no justice achieved through revenge, only compassion and forgiveness for a beaten foe who knew not what they did when they were cruel, mean, nasty and selfish at your expense.**

**The REAL SHAME is when our enemies refuse to turn to the God of Israel before they die and then end up in the Abyss in the afterlife because not only did they forsake God, they forsook the treasure of family and friends, who should have been more important to focus on MORE THAN EARNING MONEY.**

**PEOPLE are more important than money and that is why Jesus was very clear about giving Caesar and world leaders what they value the most, which is basically worthless in God's Eternal Kingdom.**

**Our greatest sin and shame and regret in life, are the moments when we disobeyed God and subjected our souls to madness and folly, rather than spending more time being concerned about the welfare of others, especially our immediate family.**



**As soon as I was told by a former CIA person that I was being “FOLLOWED” on twitter, some democratic goons came to my job after my dad died and sabotaged it, while a dirty employer moved in for the kill, after having been a dedicated employee for 2 years. That will be in my next volume about the California job market.**

**Did anyone among my dad’s in-laws care to assist his widow with funeral costs or arrangements? No. He had to be cremated for a grand total of about seven hundred bucks!**

**We took my dad’s ashes to the beach in a tiny urn and I took my KING SOLOMON SWORD to sheath in the sand as a pastor from a church quoted a few scriptures.**

**The sun shined brightly upon the waters and my mother and I were pondering the 40 years between 1972 and 2012 of all the good, bad, and ugly times spent with our best friend.**

**My other volume, put together after his departure to Heaven, is entitled:**

**THE SONGS AND POETRY OF ROBIN FOX’S FATHER: MINSTREL OF CALIFORNIA.**

**This volume has 31 songs written by my dad.**

**When I was a child and teenager, my dad LOVED to play guitar, sing songs, and write songs.**

**When he was a hard working man he had a den with KNIGHTS, swords, axes, chess sets, medieval art showing medieval times and collected all sorts of wonderful antiques from the medieval period.**

**His den was his PLACE where he could escape from the world and play his guitar. He also loved playing sheet music from talented musical artists such as BOB DYLAN, CAT STEVENS, FLEETWOOD MAC, NEIL YOUNG, DONOVAN, MOODY BLUES, Crosby, Stills & Nash, and a variety of other folk artists.**

**Singing and playing guitar, although a hobby, was his MAIN CAREER INTEREST. He did make an effort to become a published song writer but didn't have any doors open for him. When my mother got tired of hearing him tune his guitar all the time, he was booted out of the house to go play his guitar at the park.**

**The photo of him strumming his guitar in the park was taken by a newspaper agency where he was named: "GUITAR BOB, THE MINSTREL OF..... [City not named]"**

**I will be including songs and sheet music from the artists who inspired him on my facebook page located at:**

**[www.lulu.com/spotlight/foxsunstar](http://www.lulu.com/spotlight/foxsunstar) . I have used my facebook page to inspire my Fox News Network 'friends' with movies and music I have enjoyed throughout my lifetime. I used the music and movies I enjoyed to make political statements that made a whole lot of people laugh and be inspired and was happy to contribute it to Fox and Friends.**

**This particular volume is COPYRIGHTED and belongs to my dad, but published with permission as it was his wish for me to someday publish them after his departure. Every song in this volume was written by my dad and represents a tribute to him – to remember my dad when he was both sad and happy; when he was inspired to write his own songs, create his own music and lyrics, and have moments to feel and experience his love for his wife. He loved his wife with all his heart, with all his soul, with all his body, and with all his SOUL.**

**His dreams had been shattered by this world's foolish and merciless system. He was not free until Jesus took him home. But during the few moments he spent writing and singing songs, he was happy and free in his mind, exploring his own musical talents as a singing and song writing artist.**

**I am LOOKING FORWARD to seeing my dad young again at the Resurrection when he sees my mother for the first time all over again. I smile when I think about the songs he is singing and writing now as**

**he joins the chorus of angels in musical harmony. He is now tuning a perfect guitar. He is now playing his guitar with young hands, a young mind, a young heart, a BRAND NEW BODY that is healed and strong.**

**Though the world turned my dad's physical body into ashes, the Lord of Creation has resurrected my dad, whose name is written in the Lamb's Book Of Life, by grace.**

**When people ask me, "Who do you look up to the most?" or, "Who is your hero?" I first answer with, "JESUS CHRIST." And my second answer is, "My dad."**

**Since my dad never published his writings with no clear opportunities, I am carrying his torch and publishing his writings because to be a published song writer was what he wanted. He also entrusted me with his songs during his 15 years of being paralyzed by a severe stroke that left him disabled.**

**This was NOT EASY for me to read and put together, but I figure the best way to HONOR my dad is to HONOR him by remembering what he LOVED doing the most when he wasn't a slave of this communist culture that beat him down.**

**Remembering my dad's songs makes me remember the GOOD TIMES when he invited me into his den to play a harmonica while he played his guitar. I loved playing that harmonica, even if I sucked at it. I remember how many hours he spent breaking strings and tuning his guitar. I remember all the guitars he bought when times were good and all the guitars he had to sell and give up when nobody cared whether he lived or died and did their best to insult him, disrespect him, and try to beat him down.**

**MUSIC, singing, song writing, and feeling his love for his wife was very inspirational.**

**These 31 songs are FREE at no cost or obligation and if you want to play your own tune to these words, feel FREE to do so!**

## **FREEDOM.**

**Did I CREATE, INVENT, INNOVATE books by placing a price on myself or on my dreams?**

**No. Although if that opportunity had arisen anytime between the 1980s until 2012 to become a published author, I might have taken that opportunity to earn money doing what I loved doing the most.**

**But with REVELATION PROPHECY STUDIES, combined with the madness and folly of my California Adventures, I suppose today it's too little too late to try to 'EARN LOTS OF MONEY' at my own craft.**

**I was cursed in the area of making money for a HIGHER PURPOSE – that I might be blessed with GOD'S MESSAGE of FREEDOM.**

**All of my personal studies, research, and investigations have brought me to the same conclusions that children and elderly people arrive at:**

**JESUS IS GOD!**

**THE FREEDOM that this ONE SINGLE TRUTH teaches is most liberating to the soul, while the body is held hostage to a world ruled by the devil and his many advocates.**

**They can take your parents; they can take your grandparents; they can take your house; they can take your job; they can take your flesh; but they CAN'T HAVE YOUR SOUL!**

**Mt 10:34 “Do not suppose that I have come to bring peace to the earth. I did not come to bring peace, but a sword.**

**Mt 10:35 For I have come to turn “ ‘a man against his father, a daughter against her mother, a daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law<sup>h</sup> —**

**Mt 10:36 a man's enemies will be the members of his own household.’<sup>40 i</sup>**

**Mt 10:37 “Anyone who loves his father or mother more than me is not worthy of me; anyone who loves his son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me;<sup>j</sup>**

**Mt 10:38 and anyone who does not take his cross and follow me is not worthy of me. <sup>k</sup>**

**Mt 10:39 Whoever finds his life will lose it, and whoever loses his life for my sake will find it. <sup>l</sup>**

**Indeed my dad's greatest enemies were his in-laws and that's it!**

**Everyone else was pretty cool with him, except 4 rotten, miserable people on earth who are now cursed and on their way to hell.**

**Do I want them to go to hell? No. My first prayer is that they would all come to know who Jesus was and is and is to come as. But since they reject HIM first, it would be all too natural to hate and despise those dedicated to Him. The way they treated both my grandparents and my parents will have to be judged by God, while my own feelings of resentment and anger had to be let go of, since each of those individuals are now too sick and old and rotting.**

**A very sad time indeed.**

**Sometimes we just LOOSE.**

**Sometimes we just FAIL.**

**There is no shame in failing, according to this world's standards.**

**While ILLUSIONS of 'success' dominated politics during the 2012 elections and Barack Hussein Obama was just SLAUGHTERING American businesses bent on revenge against rich white men in collaboration with communist aspirations to see America done away with, EVERYONE in America was suffering HUGE losses.**

**2012 was the year a lot of Americans who 'didn't succeed' realized we would never go back to the 20<sup>th</sup> century to recover this financial system or restore it to what it started out to become.**

**There was too much lying, cheating, stealing, dishonesty, theft, greed, and selfishness to make the "MONEY SYSTEM" work, either in America or in other countries.**

**MONEY** was always based on **ABSOLUTES** and never on grace, mercy, or love.

Although many people became **'CHARITABLE'** and did **"GOOD DEEDS"** in order to either pat each other on the back, give awards, or use charity as a tax write off or an applause to **"THE SYSTEM,"** the exploitation of women, children, elderly, and disabled people continued to create a spirit of ignorance about our **FINANCIAL SYSTEM** – a fantasy land that was a mirage of reality.

Could societies on earth **EVER** reflect Heaven's glory by not using **MONEY** and **TAXATION** to share and give and work for Earth's resources?

Couldn't we just allow everyone to have **FREE HOUSING?**

Couldn't we just allow everyone to have **FREE ENERGY?**

Couldn't we just allow everyone to have **FREE EDUCATION?**

Couldn't we just allow everyone to have **FREE HEALTH CARE?**

According to **LIBERATARIAN STOSSEL**, **"No we CAN'T!"**

Obama **CAN**, as a slave, create a new slave empire by raising taxes, raising the National Debt, and destroying the whole world, like any man bent on revenge would do. But his **"CHANGES"** were for the destruction of the world and not its salvation. To play **PIMP** over the prostitutes just didn't work out for Obama and no hard working person trying to earn an honest living needs a pimp for president.

Selling people's flesh for money was always a bad idea.

**"I won't work for you unless I get something in return! If I can't get something in return for myself, then I'm not working!"**

The **FINANCIAL SYSTEM** doesn't allow you to be free.

So long as food and housing are priced and taxed and your jobs are priced and taxed, you can never be **FREE** because this system is set up for your **ENSLAVEMENT**.

**People who “SUCCEED” at making lots of money, have been fooled into believing that they themselves are FREE. But when you walk into a grocery store, the clerks earning minimum wages to work ‘real hard’ for you, aren’t free.**

**A lot of restaurant employees that conservatives boast about earn minimum wages and aren’t FREE as they return home to piles of debts that three minimum waged jobs cannot keep up with. As TAXES and INFLATION create profits for the JOB CREATORS, the employees are left destitute.**

**In addition to the IRS taking your income taxes, your churches sometimes COMMAND you give a tithe or a special contribution so they can continue sending our missionaries overseas, while ignoring the bills and needs of their local residents.**

**What creates POVERTY?**

**The MONEY SYSTEM.**

**Who is responsible for GLOBAL HUNGER?**

**The MONEY SYSTEM.**

**If conservative argument commits the evil of picking apart and cutting entitlement programs that the elderly and disabled depend upon, then what makes them believe THEY are ENTITLED to put a price on people or any material resources?**

**The WORLD belongs to God and we aren’t entitled to anything but a GRAVE at the end of our stay here.**

**Your SIX FOOT PLOT or six inch box is your only FUTURE!**

**So what are you holding onto that you would say that EARTH’S RESOURCES don’t belong to everyone to share, to give, to receive, to have?**

**Most people just want a piece of land and property they can call their own without being harassed by the bad politics of money and taxation.**

**Although the ‘capitalist system’ worked for a little while, it DOESN’T WORK ANYMORE! It’s a FAILURE like all other systems!**

**It’s not ME who failed.**

**It’s not YOU who failed.**

**It’s not your parents or grandparents who failed.**

**It’s MONEY and the world’s worship of it that is THE FAILURE!**

**Jesus was ABUNDANTLY CLEAR that you can’t serve both God and Money. But men like Joel Osteen, Dave Ramsey, Rick Warren share a lot in common with other money makers such as Bill Maher, Barack Obama, Bill Clinton, and many communist governments – their beliefs about MONEY and TAXATION are ALSO a LIE!**

**It doesn’t matter how big the church built it.**

**It doesn’t matter how ‘successful’ at making money they were and are.**

**Their whole lives are a lie.**

**A chain is only as strong as its weakest link and when the golden chain snaps at its weakest link the whole chain falls.**

**Of GOLD and SILVER replacing paper and coin currency, God says:**

## **The Great Day of the LORD**

**Zep 1:14 “The great day of the LORD <sup>h</sup> is near <sup>i</sup> — near and coming quickly. Listen! The cry on the day of the LORD will be bitter, the shouting of the warrior there.**

**Zep 1:15 That day will be a day of wrath, a day of distress and anguish, a day of trouble and ruin, a day of darkness <sup>j</sup> and gloom, a day of clouds and blackness, <sup>k</sup>**

**Zep 1:16 a day of trumpet and battle cry <sup>l</sup> against the fortified cities and against the corner towers. <sup>m</sup>**



**Zep 1:17 I will bring distress <sup>n</sup> on the people and they will walk like blind <sup>o</sup> men, because they have sinned against the LORD. Their blood will be poured out <sup>p</sup> like dust and their entrails like filth. <sup>q</sup>**

**Zep 1:18 **Neither their silver** nor their gold will be able to save them on the day of the LORD'S wrath. <sup>r</sup> In the fire of his jealousy <sup>s</sup> the whole world will be consumed, <sup>t</sup> for he will make a sudden end of all who live in the earth. <sup>u</sup> ” \_**

**I'm not against people earning a paycheck and trying to earn an honest living. You are FORCED to survive and this system was thrown upon all of us, LIKE A TRAP!**

**We are TRAPPED. In order for people to avoid the “NEGATIVITY” of feeling helpless, trapped, and not in control, they resort to all forms of entertaining escapism to try to either run away from or ignore their slavery to someone or something else.**

**We are NOT HYPOCRITES for our surrender to banking, money, taxation, lending and borrowing. It's the system that we are forced to accept or we will die!**

**We are all being THREATENED with DEATH and utter HUMILIATION. Sure, we can choose to GIVE UP EVERYTHING we have to follow Jesus, even unto death.**

**But most personal realities that Americans face is that instead of celibacy, abstinence, and teaching Jesus' disciples on how best to learn to live without a marriage partner, MARRIAGE is encouraged and lots of “FINANCIAL RESPONSIBILITY” classes are being advocated with a Dave Ramsey style of worship.**

**I support MARRIAGE between a man and a woman only and that homosexuality is a perversion, is detestable, and against God's Will.**

**But MARRIAGE and having children are often a form of slavery that reduces men to always worrying about the costs involved with caring for a wife and children and being their provider. THE SYSTEM doesn't**

**allow most married couples to live RICH lives financially, but manages to always exasperate, humiliate, embarrass, harass, threaten, bother, annoy, frustrate, and anger a lot of married couples. One of the leading causes for divorce in America is FIGHTING OVER MONEY.**

**And whether you have a lot of money or very little of it, a lot of married couples are ending up divorced. Men and women who are single and dating/courting, have no hopes of getting married anytime soon, due to the FISCAL REALITY that GREED dominates the mathematics of housing, education, health care, and all of earth's resources.**

## **CHAPTER 7**

### **WHAT THE BIBLE TEACHES US ABOUT FREEDOM VERSUS MONEY, INTEREST, TAXES, LENDING, BORROWING**

#### **DON'T CHARGE YOUR BROTHERS & SISTERS OR ANYONE IN YOUR NATION "INTEREST"**

**The whole philosophy of MONEY, TAXATION, INTEREST never came from God.**

**These systems were created by pagan systems.**

**Israel, living under Egyptian slavery, were reduced to minimum wages while the Egyptians practiced their own methods of exchange through coined currency and bartering.**

**When a man worked hard on his own land and property, he worked by the sweat of his brow. He had THE RIGHT to have a piece of land and property he could call his own. Each tribe becoming a nation had THE RIGHT to have their own territories FREED from violence and invasion from anyone who would try to take it away from them.**

**The CURSE of SIN, in that one man would war against another to confiscate other men's land, seize it, control it, and take over it, is what has caused border disputes, wars, fighting, and conflict.**

**Instead of SHARING Earth's FREE resources, as the Creator originally designed the world, each tribe chose to selfishly hoard their own resources with a stake of claim, "IT'S MINE! IT'S OURS! YOU CAN'T HAVE IT! But if you have a RESOURCE we want and need, we will trade you OUR RESOURCES for YOUR RESOURCES.**

**The BEGINNING of TRADING began with the notion, "Our land has a resource yours doesn't and since we OWN our own land, we will only SHARE our resources with you UNDER THE CONDITION that you GIVE us something back from your territory that we need, want and desire."**

**Like MONEY, BARTERING was also a failed system of trade, as Stossel on Fox News so proudly pointed out on his “Libertarian” programs.**

**“This is OUR LAND. It’s OUR RESOURCE! You can’t HAVE ANY OF OUR RESOURCES UNLESS YOU GIVE US SOMETHING BACK FROM “YOUR” LAND.”**

**This is what is called: SELFISH GREED.**

**What did JESUS say about SHARING Earth’s resources and FREEDOM?**

## **ON LENDING**

**Lk 6:30.**

**Lk 6:30 Give to everyone who asks you, and if anyone takes what belongs to you, do not demand it back. <sup>d</sup>**

**Lk 6:31 Do to others as you would have them do to you. <sup>e</sup>**

**Lk 6:32 “If you love those who love you, what credit is that to you? <sup>f</sup> Even ‘sinners’ love those who love them.**

**Lk 6:33 And if you do good to those who are good to you, what credit is that to you? Even ‘sinners’ do that.**

**Lk 6:34 And if you lend to those from whom you expect repayment, what credit is that to you? <sup>g</sup> Even ‘sinners’ lend to ‘sinners,’ expecting to be repaid in full.**

**Lk 6:35 But love your enemies, do good to them, <sup>h</sup> and lend to them without expecting to get anything back. Then your reward will be great, and you will be sons <sup>i</sup> of the Most High, <sup>j</sup> because he is kind to the ungrateful and wicked.**

**Lk 6:36 Be merciful, <sup>k</sup> just as your Father <sup>l</sup> is merciful.**

**Most of capitalist ‘success’ had to do with LENDING and FORCING people to pay back what they ‘owe’ to the lenders, and with INTEREST!**

**IN a REAL CHRISTIAN COMMUNITY, someone in need asking for help would need a friend or family member to step up and say, “We lack this resource and need assistance in providing such resources due to being locked out.” A Christian Believer, who has a surplus of either**

money or material surplus could easily glorify God as the PROVIDER of all resources, even their own, and, grateful to God to have resources, would SHARE those resources, WITHOUT COST OR OBLIGATION or expecting to get anything back. A selfish pagan like Stossel would disagree. His worldview is that you shouldn't give ANYONE a 'handout' or 'give anything away for free,' and that a person in need 'shouldn't depend on anyone else but themselves,' and shouldn't depend on 'the government' for any assistance.

Stossel doesn't know what it's like to be completely helpless, whether physically, financially, or spiritually because he was pampered by a system he 'worked real hard for.' I just disregard such men as anti-Christ in their philosophies about money, taxation, and capitalism. Such lunacy was clearly rebuked by God.

According to Jesus, if you have the opportunity to LEND you SHOULD LEND without expecting to get anything back. Jesus understood how SELFISH human beings were with money, which is why he stated:

Mt 6:19.

## Treasures in Heaven

*6:22, 23 pp—Lk 11:34-36*

Mt 6:19 **“Do not store up for yourselves treasures on earth,<sup>z</sup> where moth and rust destroy,<sup>a</sup> and where thieves break in and steal.**

Mt 6:20 **But store up for yourselves treasures in heaven,<sup>b</sup> where moth and rust do not destroy, and where thieves do not break in and steal.<sup>c</sup>**

Mt 6:21 **For where your treasure is, there your heart will be also.<sup>d</sup>**

Mt 6:22 **“The eye is the lamp of the body. If your eyes are good, your whole body will be full of light.**

Mt 6:23 **But if your eyes are bad, your whole body will be full of darkness. If then the light within you is darkness, how great is that darkness!**

Mt 6:24 **“No one can serve two masters. Either he will hate the one and love the other, or he will be devoted to the one and despise the other. You cannot serve both God and Money.”<sup>e</sup> \_**

### **DO NOT CHARGE THOSE IN NEED INTEREST!**

**Ex 22:25.**

Ex 22:25 **“If you lend money to one of my people among you who is needy, do not be like a moneylender; charge him no **interest**.”**

### **BIBLICAL COMMAND**

Moneylenders charged ‘interest’ and such pagan methods have been the same in every land since the beginning of ages. The Biblical command is to not be like PAGAN or JEWISH or “CATHOLIC” money lenders – **DON’T CHARGE YOUR BROTHERS AND SISTERS INTEREST**, if, under the money system, you must **“LEND”** versus **“GIVE FREELY”** **“YOUR”** money to help a brother or sister.

Anyone who is **NEEDY** is not to be charged interest if you should have to **“lend”** versus **“give”** money to someone who needs it.

### **DO NOT SELL FOOD AT A PROFIT OR LEND MONEY AT INTEREST TO PEOPLE IN NEED**

**Lev 25:35.**

Lev 25:35 **“ ‘If one of your countrymen becomes poor<sup>p</sup> and is unable to support himself among you, help him<sup>q</sup> as you would an alien or a temporary resident, so he can continue to live among you.**

Lev 25:36 **Do not take **interest**<sup>r</sup> of any kind<sup>65</sup> from him, but fear your God,<sup>s</sup> so that your countryman may continue to live among you.**

Lev 25:37 **You must not lend him money at **interest**<sup>t</sup> or sell him food at a profit.**

**DO NOT CHARGE YOUR OWN COUNTRYMEN INTEREST, WHETHER IN ISRAEL, THE UNITED STATES, OR ANY 'FREE' COUNTRY!**

**Dt 23:19.**

**Dt 23:19 Do not charge your brother **interest**, whether on money or food or anything else that may earn **interest**.<sup>m</sup>**

**Dt 23:20 You may charge a foreigner<sup>n</sup> **interest**, but not a brother Israelite, so that the LORD your God may bless<sup>o</sup> you in everything you put your hand to in the land you are entering to possess.**

**THIS SHOULD BE GOD'S LAW implemented in all human laws:**

- 1. DO NOT CHARGE YOUR BROTHER/SISTER INTEREST**
- 2. DO NOT CHARGE YOUR BROTHER/SISTER INTEREST ON MONEY**
- 3. DO NOT CHARGE YOUR BROTHER/SISTER INTEREST ON FOOD**
- 4. DO NOT CHARGE YOUR BROTHER/SISTER INTEREST ON ANYTHING!**
- 5. DO NOT CHARGE YOUR BROTHER ISRAELITE/AMERICAN/EUROPEAN INTEREST** so that you can be **BLESSED** instead of **CURSED**. Today, as a result of Americans and Israelis charging each other interest, the lands are **CURSED** with economic turmoil instead of the inheritance of God's Blessings of **FREEDOM**.

**We should write THESE LAWS as an AMENDMENT to the United States Constitution!**

**Pr 28:8.**

**Pr 28:8 He who increases his wealth by exorbitant **interest**<sup>b</sup> amasses it for another,<sup>c</sup> who will be kind to the poor.<sup>d</sup>**

**Eze 18:8.**

**Eze 18:8** **He does not lend at usury or take excessive interest.**<sup>35 x</sup> **He withholds his hand from doing wrong and judges fairly<sup>y</sup> between man and man.**

**Eze 18:9** **He follows my decrees<sup>z</sup> and faithfully keeps my laws. That man is righteous;<sup>a</sup> he will surely live,<sup>b</sup> declares the Sovereign LORD.**

**DO NOT LEND AT USURY OR TAKE EXCESSIVE INTEREST IS A BIBLICAL COMMAND.** So why are the world governments lending at usury or taking excessive interest?

**What is THE CURSE for those who lend at usury or take excessive interest?**

**Eze 18:13.**

**Eze 18:13** **He lends at usury and takes excessive interest.**<sup>h</sup>

**Will such a man live? He will not! Because he has done all these detestable things, he will surely be put to death and his blood will be on his own head.<sup>i</sup>**

**What would God's penalty be against those the SECURITIES EXCHANGE COMMISSION has prosecuted for fraud, racketeering, theft? [www.sec.gov](http://www.sec.gov)**

**Eze 22:12.**

**Eze 22:12** **In you men accept bribes<sup>b</sup> to shed blood; you take usury<sup>c</sup> and excessive interest<sup>46</sup> and make unjust gain from your neighbors<sup>d</sup> by extortion. And you have forgotten<sup>e</sup> me, declares the Sovereign LORD.<sup>f</sup>**



## **THE BIBLICAL VIEW OF “USURY” / “SLAVERY” / “TAKING LAND AWAY FROM A NATION’S CITIZENS”**

### **THE DEFINITION OF “USURY” –**

- 1. The practice of lending money at an exorbitant interest rate**
- 2. An exorbitant amount or rate of interest.**
- 3. Interest paid for the use of money**

### **THE DEFINITION OF “EXORBITANT”**

- 1. Exceeding the bounds of custom, propriety, or reason in amount or extent.**

**Ne 5:6.**

**Ne 5:6** When I heard their outcry and these charges, I was very angry.

**Ne 5:7** I pondered them in my mind and then accused the nobles and officials. I told them, “**You are exacting usury<sup>c</sup> from your own countrymen!**” So I called together a large meeting to deal with them

**Ne 5:8** and said: “As far as possible, we have bought<sup>d</sup> back our Jewish brothers who were sold to the Gentiles. Now you are selling your brothers, only for them to be sold back to us!” They kept quiet, because they could find nothing to say.<sup>e</sup>

**Ne 5:9** So I continued, “What you are doing is not right. Shouldn’t you walk in the fear of our God to avoid the reproach<sup>f</sup> of our Gentile enemies?

**Ne 5:10** I and my brothers and my men are also lending the people money and grain. **But let the exacting of usury stop!**<sup>g</sup>

**Ne 5:11** **Give back to them immediately their fields, vineyards, olive groves and houses, and also the usury<sup>h</sup> you are charging them—the hundredth part of the money, grain, new wine and oil.”**

**We should make a NEW AMENDMENT to the United States Constitution and shut down Fannie Mae, Freddie Mac, Goldman Sachs, Morgan Stanely Dean Witter, and all REAL ESTATE BROKERAGE companies. We need to give Americans and Israelis God’s fields, God’s vineyards,**

**God's olive groves and houses and STOP GOVERNMENT and PRIVATE SECTOR USURY!**

**Ps 15:1.**

**Ps 15:1 LORD, who may dwell <sup>u</sup> in your sanctuary? <sup>v</sup> Who may live on your holy hill? <sup>w</sup>**

**Ps 15:2 He whose walk is blameless <sup>x</sup> and who does what is righteous, who speaks the truth <sup>y</sup> from his heart**

**Ps 15:3 and has no slander <sup>z</sup> on his tongue, who does his neighbor no wrong and casts no slur on his fellowman,**

**Ps 15:4 who despises a vile man but honors <sup>a</sup> those who fear the LORD, who keeps his oath <sup>b</sup> even when it hurts,**

**Ps 15:5 who lends his money without **usury** <sup>c</sup> and does not accept a bribe <sup>d</sup> against the innocent.**

**He who does these things will never be shaken. <sup>e</sup>**

## **WHAT THE BIBLE SAYS ABOUT TAXES AND TAX COLLECTIONS**

**Just because the Bible says “Jews” and “Christians” were under TAXATION methods and systems does not mean that God approved of TAXATION. I’m a firm believer that the “Jewish” and “Catholic” beliefs about MONEY and TAXATION are wrong, against God’s Will, against FREEDOM as GOD designed freedom. Just because Jewish synagogues and “Christian” churches adopted MONEY and TAX SYSTEMS into their congregations does not make them RIGHT in God’s Judgment book.**

**MONEY and TAXATION complacency is what caused me to walk in and out of countless American churches – because from the Bible to the U.S. Constitution, our Jewish and Christian leaders have led us all into the WRONG DIRECTION. MONEY and TAXES are not necessary in a FREE society and the fact that the Bible is used to justify money and taxation, as well as our U.S. Constitution, is like the Ku Klux Klan using the Bible to justify slavery, or male leaders using the Bible to justify sexism, the division of men and women during Bible studies and social retreats, or incorrectly interpreting Bible prophecy with fictional theories that do not fit into context with what the Bible actually says and teaches.**

**Not only has the Bible been mis-interpreted, but the incorporation of MONEY and TAXATION into the U.S. CONSTITUTION was also a GRAVE ERROR that has plunged EVERYONE into ruin and destruction for the LOVE OF MONEY and TAXATION versus the LOVE OF GOD.**

Mt 9:9.

## The Calling of Matthew

*9:9-13 pp—Mk 2:14-17; Lk 5:27-32*

Mt 9:9 **As Jesus went on from there, he saw a man named **Matthew** sitting at the tax collector's booth. "**Follow me,**"<sup>t</sup> he told him, and **Matthew** got up and followed him.**

Mt 9:10 **While Jesus was having dinner at Matthew's house, many tax collectors and "sinners" came and ate with him and his disciples.**

Mt 9:11 **When the Pharisees saw this, they asked his disciples, "Why does your teacher eat with tax collectors and 'sinners'?"<sup>u</sup>**

Mt 9:12 **On hearing this, Jesus said, "**It is not the healthy who need a doctor, but the sick.****

Mt 9:13 **But go and learn what this means: 'I desire mercy, not sacrifice.'**

35 v **For I have not come to call the righteous, but sinners."**<sup>w</sup> —

Lk 5:27.

## The Calling of Levi

*5:27-32 pp—Mt 9:9-13; Mk 2:14-17*

Lk 5:27 **After this, Jesus went out and saw a **tax collector** by the name of **Levi** sitting at his tax booth. "**Follow me,**"<sup>p</sup> Jesus said to him,**

Lk 5:28 **and Levi got up, left everything and followed him."<sup>q</sup>**

Lk 5:29 **Then Levi held a great banquet for Jesus at his house, and a large crowd of tax collectors<sup>r</sup> and others were eating with them.**

Lk 5:30 **But the Pharisees and the teachers of the law who belonged to their sect<sup>s</sup> complained to his disciples, "Why do you eat and drink with tax collectors and 'sinners'?"<sup>t</sup>**

Lk 5:31 **Jesus answered them, "**It is not the healthy who need a doctor, but the sick.****

Lk 5:32 **I have not come to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance."**

u —

**LEVI/MATTHEW was a TAX COLLECTOR that Jesus called away from TAX COLLECTING in order to follow Him. This TAX collector left EVERYTHING and followed Jesus.**

**Lk 18:9.**

## **The Parable of the Pharisee and the Tax Collector**

**Lk 18:9 To some who were confident of their own righteousness<sup>m</sup> and looked down on everybody else,<sup>n</sup> Jesus told this parable:**

**Lk 18:10 “Two men went up to the temple to pray,<sup>o</sup> one a Pharisee and the other a tax collector.**

**Lk 18:11 The Pharisee stood up<sup>p</sup> and prayed about<sup>71</sup> himself: ‘God, I thank you that I am not like other men—robbers, evildoers, adulterers—or even like this tax collector.**

**Lk 18:12 I fast<sup>q</sup> twice a week and give a tenth<sup>r</sup> of all I get.’**

**Lk 18:13 “But the tax collector stood at a distance. He would not even look up to heaven, but beat his breast<sup>s</sup> and said, ‘God, have mercy on me, a sinner.’<sup>t</sup>**

**Lk 18:14 “I tell you that this man, rather than the other, went home justified before God. For everyone who exalts himself will be humbled, and he who humbles himself will be exalted.”<sup>u</sup> \_**

**A TAX COLLECTOR acknowledged he had sinned in his tax collection duties and asked for forgiveness for all the sins he committed as a tax collector. Jesus forgave him because he meant it.**

**Lk 19:1.**

## **Zacchaeus the Tax Collector**

**Lk 19:1 Jesus entered Jericho<sup>v</sup> and was passing through.**

**Lk 19:2 A man was there by the name of Zacchaeus; he was a chief **tax collector** and was wealthy.**

**Lk 19:3 He wanted to see who Jesus was, but being a short man he could not, because of the crowd.**

Lk 19:4 **So he ran ahead and climbed a sycamore-fig<sup>w</sup> tree to see him, since Jesus was coming that way.<sup>x</sup>**

Lk 19:5 **When Jesus reached the spot, he looked up and said to him, “Zacchaeus, come down immediately. I must stay at your house today.”**

Lk 19:6 **So he came down at once and welcomed him gladly.**

Lk 19:7 **All the people saw this and began to mutter, “He has gone to be the guest of a ‘sinner.’ ”<sup>y</sup>**

Lk 19:8 **But Zacchaeus stood up and said to the Lord,<sup>z</sup> “Look, Lord! Here and now I give half of my possessions to the poor, and if I have cheated anybody out of anything,<sup>a</sup> I will pay back four times the amount.”<sup>b</sup>**

Lk 19:9 **Jesus said to him, “Today salvation has come to this house, because this man, too, is a son of Abraham.”<sup>c</sup>**

Lk 19:10 **For the Son of Man came to seek and to save what was lost.”<sup>d</sup>** \_

**I started our Biblical TAX ASSESSMENT with Matthew, because MATTHEW was the first tax collector who left tax collecting to follow our Savior. Our Savior wanted to FREE MATTHEW from the slavery that TAXES imposed on the people and on Matthew’s soul. When Matthew, the tax collector followed Jesus, people judged him and Jesus too. People HATED the tax collectors because they were committing acts of usury, exorbitant interest, fraud, racketeering, theft. The Roman Empire also encouraged Jewish tax collectors to take so much the citizens were left poor and bankrupt.**

**Today’s “CONSERVATIVE” philosophy about money and taxation, as well as “LIBERAL” philosophy about money and taxation, DON’T WORK! Both sides are correct in saying that neither side has THE FORMULA that works. Both sides have successes and failures – but we cannot measure ‘success’ or ‘failure’ through MONEY or TAXATION methods, which are all an ILLUSION creating a MIRAGE of ‘freedom’ that doesn’t exist for either the wealthy or the poor.**

**Is Jesus calling us in modern times to LEAVE TAX COLLECTING to follow Jesus? Do we have to give up EVERYTHING to follow Jesus too?**

**When you do a word search for “TAX” in the Bible, something astonishing is said, something that needs to be addressed from a GOSPEL versus OLD TESTAMENT perspective about TAXES.**

**I remember when growing up how there were lots of Jewish jokes about Jews being greedy, selfish, and penny savers. I had a Jewish cousin, who, during a penny poker game, won 25 cents, got up from the poker table, ran to his mother and said, “Here mom. Put this in your purse and save it for me!”**

**As much as we thought it was funny, considering he was part Jewish, his parents funded his college education, helped him with housing assistance, and providing a good career direction for him to become a stock broker, where he had to move three times due to the instability of stock broking in the 21<sup>st</sup> century.**

**Nevertheless, during the 20<sup>th</sup> century, before and after Hitler’s rise, Jewish people were well known to be the world’s BANKERS, in charge of the treasuries and the taxes. Jews were made fun of as being “penny pinchers” and sometimes, all jokes aside, HATED for being greedy bankers.**

**Jews viewed their global ‘wealth’ and ‘status’ as bankers as “God’s blessing” upon a displaced nation in being charged with enemy finances.**

**However, MONEY and TAXATION were ALWAYS a curse and not a blessing upon all tribes of peoples throughout every land. This does not mean that God couldn’t bless people who were UNDER SLAVERY to money and taxation, anymore than you could dispel the logic that African slaves under white slave masters were also ‘blessed’ while under the curse of human slavery.**

**What we are saying is that MONEY and TAXATION are from the basic principles of this world and not from Jesus Christ.**

**There were also ATHEIST and PAGAN jokes pretty common throughout the 1960s, 1970s, 1980s, 1990s, and even today that the only thing churches want is YOUR MONEY. They also resorted to the blasphemy of accusing Churches and Synagogues being about “MONEY!” “JESUS WANTS YOUR MONEY!” Laughter. “GOD NEEDS YOUR MONEY!” Laughter.**

**Are all such judgments correct?**

**The TRUTH is that the Jewish people were blessed by GOD without money and taxation.**

**The TRUTH is that GOD never created money. Man did.**

**Churches and synagogues SINNED by resorting to world methods of exchange, which would hold all of God’s FREE resources hostage to money and taxation methods which never came from Him.**

**Col 2:8.**

**Col 2:8 See to it that no one takes you captive through hollow and deceptive philosophy,<sup>m</sup> which depends on human tradition and the **basic principles** of this world<sup>n</sup> rather than on Christ.**

**I’m a FIRM BELIEVER that all nations have been taken captive through the hollow and deceptive philosophies about MONEY and TAXATION, LENDING and BORROWING, which depend on human traditions in every land, which are the BASIC PRINCIPLES of this world, rather than on Christ.**

## **Freedom in Christ**

**Gal 5:1 It is for freedom that Christ has set us free.<sup>m</sup> Stand firm,<sup>n</sup> then, and do not let yourselves be burdened again by a **yoke of slavery**.<sup>o</sup> \_**



**Don't feel like a hypocrite because you have become dependent on taking out a loan, living on credit or borrowed money, and spending more than what you take in or living 'beyond your own means.'**

**Truthfully, many Rockefeller leaders and politicians, receiving handouts in the forms of grants and loans and special contributions, both on and off the record books, lied, cheated, and stole to make this dysfunctional system work for a short time among their own benefactors, while swindling the general population that depended on their MIRAGE to try to build their own substance.**

**Many "HARD WORKERS" lost their money and fortunes to the crimes of higher taxes, government interference, and the tight grip of communist capitalism enforced globally at the expense of all civilized and uncivilized worlds.**

**While "successful" people all ally their clubs and memberships for 'successful' people, while insulting 'hard working' minimum waged employees who often have to borrow money to try to keep up with the ridiculous costs imposed on them by their prison warden representatives, all the little people just want to be FREE and not be slaves.**

**With Liberal Obama and Conservative Romney making their points on how best to enslave humanity with 'hard work,' 'taxes,' 'war,' and opposing views about how best to pimp out the slaves at a price, nobody but Jesus Christ has given us a CLEAR OPPORTUNITY to LEAVE tax collecting to follow Earth's owner, instead of earth's throne dwarves and stooges.**

**While threats of a "GLOBAL ROBIN HOOD TAX" make the horns of the beast hornier than ever, the bows are bending and the arrows are flying, after being ripped out of the American Eagle's talons.**

**No matter whose portrait is on ANY CURRENCY, everyone has been priced, taxed, and enslaved by the basic principles of MONEY and**

**TAXATION versus the FREEDOM Jesus Christ preached we can have when we GIVE UP EVERYTHING TO FOLLOW HIM.**

**Before I dabble in the OLD TESTAMENT views about MONEY and TAXES, which corrupted Jewish histories and traditions throughout all time, I should like to first note that GOOD MEN, who loved God and believed in God, from the Biblical view, have sometimes been WRONG in their interpretations of Scriptures.**

**Just because the Bible says the word:**

**SLAVERY does not mean that God approved of slavery, advocated slavery, made slavery legal, or wanted any man or woman to be held in slavery.**

**When the racist black supremacist groups condemn the Bible, along with pagans and atheists and democrats and New Agers, they all say the same thing: THE BIBLE ADVOCATES SLAVERY and the KU KLUX KLAN and HITLER were only obeying what the Bible said about slavery!**

**They get their point of view from mis-reading:**

**Eph 6:5.**

**Eph 6:5 Slaves, obey your earthly masters with respect<sup>k</sup> and fear, and with sincerity of heart,<sup>l</sup> just as you would obey Christ.<sup>m</sup>**

**Eph 6:6 Obey them not only to win their favor when their eye is on you, but like slaves of Christ,<sup>n</sup> doing the will of God from your heart.**

**Eph 6:7 Serve wholeheartedly, as if you were serving the Lord, not men,<sup>o</sup>**

**Eph 6:8 because you know that the Lord will reward everyone for whatever good he does,<sup>p</sup> whether he is slave or free.**

**Eph 6:9 And masters, treat your slaves in the same way. Do not threaten them, since you know that he who is both their Master and yours<sup>q</sup> is in heaven, and there is no favoritism<sup>r</sup> with him.**

**OOPS! Are the KU KLUX KLAN and Hitler right? AFRICANS SHOULD OBEY WHITE PEOPLE?**

**During the age when Jesus appeared, the oppressive Roman Empire had slavery in their kingdom. They made slaves out of women, children, strong men, weak men, out of most of their conquered subjects. The WHOLE HISTORY of Israel under the Egyptians for 430 years had been under slavery.**

**SLAVERY was a condition of the curse and the fall and the CHOICE of a godless throng of nations who chose, by their own freedom of choice, to make slaves out of other people.**

**God CHOSE to deliver Israel from SLAVERY and FREE them from slavery.**

**Because many Jewish believers were SLAVES to the Romans, in order to cope with their un-beatable oppression, Jesus was merely telling his disciples that while under OPPRESSION as SLAVES to the Romans, the best way to handle such feelings of anger, hurt, revenge, hostility, regret, oppression, fear, anxiety, longing, was to let those feelings go, not HATE the slave masters, not commit acts of violence and murder towards their oppressors, but to love them by praying for their salvation, because THE ROMAN EMPIRE TOO was under slavery and not a FREE SOCIETY.**

**You may have always thought that the Roman Empire was a FREE land but it never was.**

**Jesus' answer to them was silence, crucifixion, and resurrection.**

**Releasing slaves from slavery, would not this time require the King of the Universe to use necessary force, a huge miraculous deliverance through another Moses or King David, but through FREE WILL.**

**The NEW MESSIAH in Jesus' Name required crucifixion and death to follow Him into Heaven.**

**While the devil was going around empowering world rulers, Jesus was empowering all the little people to be free in their souls and escape**

**the many traps of the devil who had taken the whole Roman Empire captive to do his bidding.**

**God's GOAL was FREEDOM.**

**But the ROMAN EMPIRE had to also CHOOSE FREEDOM and with 300 years of Christian and Jewish martyrdom, by Free Will, "Christianity" was made legal in European lands.**

**"A little yeast had worked through the whole batch of dough."**

**When Paul wrote "SLAVES, OBEY YOUR MASTERS," would not have justified the Freemasonic Confederate mis-interpretation of telling blacks they should obey whites, or Hitler commanding that Jews obey Germans. Honestly people, use your noodles! Obviously Paul was emphasizing that while you are a slave, you should have a good attitude and not a bad attitude towards those who claim to be your masters.**

**And yes, for many centuries good and bad men alike mis-interpreted what Paul said about slavery.**

**WOMEN are also the second mis-interpretation of Scriptures too, which I discuss thoroughly in my book entitled: WICKED SEX VERSUS HOLY SEX.**

**Israel asking for a "KING LIKE OTHER NATIONS" was also a huge mistake among leaders.**

## **Israel Asks for a King**

**<sup>1Sa 8:1</sup> When Samuel grew old, he appointed <sup>p</sup> his sons as judges for Israel.**

**<sup>1Sa 8:2</sup> The name of his firstborn was Joel and the name of his second was Abijah, <sup>q</sup> and they served at Beersheba. <sup>r</sup>**

**<sup>1Sa 8:3</sup> But his sons <sup>s</sup> did not walk in his ways. They turned aside <sup>t</sup> after dishonest gain and accepted bribes <sup>u</sup> and perverted <sup>v</sup> justice.**

**1Sa 8:4 So all the elders <sup>w</sup> of Israel gathered together and came to Samuel at Ramah. <sup>x</sup>**

**1Sa 8:5 They said to him, “You are old, and your sons do not walk in your ways; now appoint a king <sup>y</sup> to lead <sup>26 z</sup> us, such as all the other nations <sup>a</sup> have.”**

**1Sa 8:6 But when they said, “Give us a king <sup>b</sup> to lead us,” this displeased <sup>c</sup> Samuel; so he prayed to the LORD.**

**1Sa 8:7 And the LORD told him: “Listen <sup>d</sup> to all that the people are saying to you; it is not you they have rejected, <sup>e</sup> but they have rejected me as their king. <sup>f</sup>**

**1Sa 8:8 As they have done from the day I brought them up out of Egypt until this day, forsaking <sup>g</sup> me and serving other gods, so they are doing to you.**

**1Sa 8:9 Now listen to them; but warn them solemnly and let them know <sup>h</sup> what the king who will reign over them will do.”**

**1Sa 8:10 Samuel told <sup>i</sup> all the words of the LORD to the people who were asking him for a king.**

**1Sa 8:11 He said, “This is what the king who will reign over you will do: He will take <sup>j</sup> your sons and make them serve <sup>k</sup> with his chariots and horses, and they will run in front of his chariots. <sup>l</sup>**

**1Sa 8:12 Some he will assign to be commanders <sup>m</sup> of thousands and commanders of fifties, and others to plow his ground and reap his harvest, and still others to make weapons of war and equipment for his chariots.**

**1Sa 8:13 He will take your daughters to be perfumers and cooks and bakers.**

**1Sa 8:14 He will take the best of your <sup>n</sup> fields and vineyards <sup>o</sup> and olive groves and give them to his attendants. <sup>p</sup>**

**1Sa 8:15 He will take a tenth <sup>q</sup> of your grain and of your vintage and give it to his officials and attendants.**

**1Sa 8:16 Your menservants and maidservants and the best of your cattle <sup>27</sup> and donkeys he will take for his own use.**

**1Sa 8:17 He will take a tenth of your flocks, and you yourselves will become his slaves.**

**1Sa 8:18 When that day comes, you will cry out for relief from the king you have chosen, and the LORD will not answer <sup>r</sup> you in that day. <sup>s</sup> ”**

**1Sa 8:19 But the people refused <sup>t</sup> to listen to Samuel. “No!” they said. “We want <sup>u</sup> a king <sup>v</sup> over us.**

**1Sa 8:20 Then we will be like all the other nations,<sup>w</sup> with a king to lead us and to go out before us and fight our battles.”**

**1Sa 8:21 When Samuel heard all that the people said, he repeated<sup>x</sup> it before the LORD.**

**1Sa 8:22 The LORD answered, “Listen<sup>y</sup> to them and give them a king.” Then Samuel said to the men of Israel, “Everyone go back to his town.”**

—

**1Sa 12:12.**

**1Sa 12:12 “But when you saw that Nahash<sup>s</sup> king<sup>t</sup> of the Ammonites was moving against you, you said to me, ‘No, we want a king to rule<sup>u</sup> over us’—even though the LORD your God was your king.**

**1Sa 12:13 Now here is the king<sup>v</sup> you have chosen, the one you **asked<sup>w</sup> for**; see, the LORD has set a king over you.**

**1Sa 12:14 If you fear<sup>x</sup> the LORD and serve and obey him and do not rebel<sup>y</sup> against his commands, and if both you and the king who reigns over you follow the LORD your God—good!**

**1Sa 12:15 But if you do not obey the LORD, and if you rebel against<sup>z</sup> his commands, his hand will be against you, as it was against your fathers.**

**1Sa 12:16 “Now then, stand still<sup>a</sup> and see<sup>b</sup> this great thing the LORD is about to do before your eyes!**

**1Sa 12:17 Is it not wheat harvest<sup>c</sup> now? I will call<sup>d</sup> upon the LORD to send thunder<sup>e</sup> and rain.<sup>f</sup> And you will realize what an evil<sup>g</sup> thing you did in the eyes of the LORD when you **asked<sup>w</sup> for** a king.”**

**Up to that time, GOD was ISRAEL’S KING.**

**By asking to be like other nations, pagan nations who had human kings, Israel had lost FAITH in GOD as THEIR KING.**

**The GREAT EXPERIMENT of Israel existing WITHOUT A KING through the times of the judges was a period in time when God had tested Israel. During that age, GOD WAS THEIR JUDGE and KING, while pagan rulers kept attacking their people and their land.**

**While settling in the promised land, Israel enjoyed a time of free will, until they asked for a human king.**

**And just as surely ISRAEL'S leaders had made mistakes in asking for a king, so had a lot of men made a mistake in ALTERING God's commandments, especially the ADULTERY commandment.**

**God stated that marriage ought to be between ONE MAN and ONE WOMAN. Because God's Law in the Ten Commandments prohibited adultery, the pagan custom of having multiple wives, would represent man's attempt to bypass breaking God's Laws by marrying however many women interested him beyond just one woman.**

**Were Jewish men wrong in having multiple wives? YES!**

**Solomon had 1,000 wives! David had 4 wives!**

**God's will was each person have only one spouse.**

**And just as truly Jewish men were wrong about such issues, so were they wrong about MONEY and TAXATION, even though God had not ordered such methods to govern his people.**

**2 Ch 24:6.**

**2Ch 24:6 Therefore the king summoned Jehoiada the chief priest and said to him, "Why haven't you required the Levites to bring in from Judah and Jerusalem the tax imposed by Moses the servant of the LORD and by the assembly of Israel for the Tent of the Testimony?"**

**2Ch 24:7 Now the sons of that wicked woman Athaliah had broken into the temple of God and had used even its sacred objects for the Baals.**

**2Ch 24:8 At the king's command, a chest was made and placed outside, at the gate of the temple of the LORD.**

**2Ch 24:9 A proclamation was then issued in Judah and Jerusalem that they should bring to the LORD the tax that Moses the servant of God had required of Israel in the desert.**

**MOSES 'IMPOSED A TAX?' Oh, that TRULY JUSTIFIES THE USE OF TAXATION! NOT! Let's do the math:**

**Ex 30:11.**

## **Atonement Money**

**Ex 30:11 Then the LORD said to Moses,**

**Ex 30:12 "When you take a census <sup>z</sup> of the Israelites to count them, each one must pay the LORD a ransom <sup>a</sup> for his life at the time he is counted. Then no plague <sup>b</sup> will come on them when you number them.**

**Ex 30:13 Each one who crosses over to those already counted is to give a half shekel, <sup>93</sup> according to the sanctuary shekel, <sup>c</sup> which weighs twenty gerahs. This half shekel is an offering to the LORD.**

**Ex 30:14 All who cross over, those twenty years old or more, <sup>d</sup> are to give an offering to the LORD.**

**Ex 30:15 The rich are not to give more than a half shekel and the poor are not to give less <sup>e</sup> when you make the offering to the LORD to atone for your lives.**

**Ex 30:16 Receive the atonement <sup>f</sup> money from the Israelites and use it for the service of the Tent of Meeting. <sup>9</sup> It will be a memorial <sup>h</sup> for the Israelites before the LORD, making atonement for your lives\_**

**Oh, so GOD approved of the USE OF MONEY for ATONEMENT! AHA! That justifies capitalism, communism, socialism and all MONEY systems because if GOD'S PEOPLE were commanded to do it, EVERYONE CAN DO IT! Let's start waving our American flags over the Constitution and the Bible! NOT!**

**First of all, do you really believe that God needed animals to be slaughtered or money to be given to Him?**

**No.**

**So why would God command Israel to sacrifice money and animals to Him when He didn't need it?**



**Man, under the curse of the fall, placed his OWN VALUE on MONEY and ANIMALS.**

**God was teaching Israel, through the MATERIAL OBJECTS they valued the most, on how to OBEY God through SACRIFICES.**

**Man, as a fallen being, had created his own methods of exchange through free will. God did not advocate or inspire such methods.**

**Why couldn't God have just required another method of sacrifice, other than animals or money?**

**It's not that GOD was primitive.**

**It was that MAN was primitive in his sinful condition.**

**Man's greatest treasures on earth were women, children, animals, land, and the methods of exchanging material resources.**

**God would never require the sacrifices of children or women, such as pagan nations did when they burned their wives and children in the fire as a sacrifices to gods that didn't exist [inspired by the devil trying to make a mockery of God's laws].**

**Animals and money had value to mankind among the Egyptians and even Moses may have thought that the use of money would have been a good method of exchange, not necessarily as a method inspired of God or approved by God, any more than the treatment of women as second class citizens.**

**People often had to figure out, by free will, what all the material symbolisms of God's Sanctuary actually meant. During those times people used lots of symbols to represent a truth or THE TRUTH.**

**Whatever reasoning "JEWISH" believers had for the use of money, whether in coined, gold, or paper format, to make 'sacrifices' or 'tithes' to God, only means that God NEVER REQUIRED people's animals or money to enrich himself or even Israel.**

**It only means that God wanted man to take his SELFISH FOCUS off of himself and learn to sacrifice whatever he held most valuable in order to honor God.**

**The STRICT RULES and REGULATIONS for worship were to captivate a priest's attention, morning, noon, and night, 24/7, so that focus on obedience to God would be more important than serving self interests or falling victim to the practices, customs, and worships of pagan states.**

**God never needed: ATONEMENT MONEY or TITHES or SPECIAL CONTRIBUTIONS, even though THE LAW required it.**

**When Jesus came, the necessity of ANIMAL and MONEY sacrifices were abolished and a NEW WAY was opened up through the curtain of His Body, sacrificed as a ONE SACRIFICE FOR ALL, which HEBREWS emphasized.**

**The next argument capitalists and “Christian” or “Catholic” capitalists make to justify MONEY and TAXATION methods of exchange often are recited from the following passage:**

## **Paying Taxes to Caesar**

*22:15-22 pp—Mk 12:13-17; Lk 20:20-26*

**Mt 22:15 Then the Pharisees went out and laid plans to trap him in his words.**

**Mt 22:16 They sent their disciples to him along with the Herodians. <sup>w</sup>**

**“Teacher,” they said, “we know you are a man of integrity and that you teach the way of God in accordance with the truth. You aren’t swayed by men, because you pay no attention to who they are.**

**Mt 22:17 Tell us then, what is your opinion? Is it right to pay taxes <sup>x</sup> to Caesar or not?”**

**Mt 22:18 But Jesus, knowing their evil intent, said, “You hypocrites, why are you trying to trap me?**

**Mt 22:19 Show me the coin used for paying the tax.” They brought him a denarius,**

**Mt 22:20 and he asked them, “Whose portrait is this? And whose inscription?”**

**Mt 22:21 “Caesar’s,” they replied. Then he said to them, “Give to Caesar what is Caesar’s,<sup>y</sup> and to God what is God’s.”**

**Mt 22:22 When they heard this, they were amazed. So they left him and went away.<sup>z</sup> \_**

**Whenever I try to teach people that they shouldn’t be TAXED or that no society should use TAXATION methods, I am consistently reminded of my so called: ITALIAN heritage through these Scriptures.**

**Obviously, people who saw in Jesus FREEDOM would try to trap Him through a perception that Jesus was about to FREE THE JEWISH SLAVES and since TAXATION was widely hated by the poor, they asked a question in order to extract some REBELLIOUS INSURRECTION from Jesus that would incite Christians NOT TO PAY TAXES!**

**Notice how Jesus didn’t have the coin used for paying taxes? He asked them to SHOW the coin used for paying taxes.**

**The inscription on the coin used for paying taxes to Caesar was CAESAR’S IMAGE!**

**Think for a moment with me:**

**Whose inscription is on CHINESE currency today? The Chinese communist leader!**

**Whose inscription is on the foreign currency of each member of the United Nations? The leader of those nations.**

**Whose inscription is on United States money? The presidents.**

**When Jesus said, “Give to Caesar what is Caesars,” what Jesus was really saying is that this is THE ONLY IMAGE CAESAR WILL EVER GET!**

**Caesar would most likely go to the lake of fire so this world was all he was ever going to get. MONEY and TAXATION was the RULER of the Roman Empire and not Caesar and Caesar had placed more value in his own image, in his own self worth, in his own image being set up both on the Temple and on coins, that he missed the VALUE OF HUMAN LIFE meant to be FREE and not enslaved.**

**“Give that coin to Caesar because that’s all the worship he will ever get!”**

**It wasn’t that Jesus was telling everyone, “PAY YOUR TAXES! I AS THE MESSIAH APPROVE OF PAYING TAXES!” Such a mis-interpretation, like the others I highlighted, has made modern capitalists socialist retards.**

**And like Capitalism, socialism and communism also mold the pattern of coining the images of world leaders with a system of exchange that is not FREE, but reduces the hard work of its citizens to slavery versus freedom.**

**With Caesar’s image on the Temple and on the coin and TEMPLE TAXES being imposed, human life was considered worthless and MONEY worth more than people.**

**Mt 17:24.**

## **The Temple Tax**

**Mt 17:24 After Jesus and his disciples arrived in Capernaum, the collectors of the two-drachma tax<sup>p</sup> came to Peter and asked, “Doesn’t your teacher pay the temple tax<sup>70</sup>?”**

**Mt 17:25 “Yes, he does,” he replied. When Peter came into the house, Jesus was the first to speak. “What do you think, Simon?” he asked. “From whom do the kings of the earth collect duty and taxes<sup>q</sup> —from their own sons or from others?”**

**Mt 17:26 “From others,” Peter answered. “Then the sons are exempt,” Jesus said to him.**

Mt 17:27 **“But so that we may not offend<sup>r</sup> them, go to the lake and throw out your line. Take the first fish you catch; open its mouth and you will find a four-drachma coin. Take it and give it to them for my tax and yours.”** \_

They came to Peter and not to Jesus when they asked if Jesus paid a temple tax. We know that Peter’s three denials of being with Jesus was a covert way of survival, so it is unclear from Jesus’ own words whether Jesus actually ever paid a temple tax or not. Once again, rather than placing value on the words and person of Jesus, the tax collectors wanted to catch Jesus in direct rebellion against paying taxes to Caesar. For Jesus to OFFEND them at that moment, He could have easily said, “Go back to your slave master and tell him that FREE people don’t need to pay taxes. You are on my property. What gives you the right to tax anyone? In my Kingdom, taxes don’t exist. Neither do I require coined currency with my own image on it to be glorified!” Jesus could have given one in a hundred answers.

Because they were pursuing Jesus and His disciples for “unpaid” taxes, Jesus did something that often goes without any understanding by Bible interpreters or readers.

Peter’s TRADE was a FISHERMAN. So Jesus had asked Peter to go take the first fish he could catch and take out a coin that would pay for Peter’s tax and Jesus’ tax.

## The Calling of the First Disciples

*4:18-22 pp—Mk 1:16-20; Lk 5:2-11; Jn 1:35-42*

Mt 4:18 **As Jesus was walking beside the Sea of Galilee,<sup>p</sup> he saw two brothers, Simon called **Peter**<sup>q</sup> and his brother Andrew. They were casting a net into the lake, for they were fishermen.**

Mt 4:19 **“Come, follow me,”<sup>r</sup> Jesus said, “and I will make you fishers of men.”**

Mt 4:20 **At once they left their nets and followed him.<sup>s</sup>** \_

**We are reminded that Peter left his career as a fisherman to follow Jesus who had promised he would make Peter ‘a fisher of man.’**

## **The Calling of Matthew**

*9:9-13 pp—Mk 2:14-17; Lk 5:27-32*

**Mt 9:9 As Jesus went on from there, he saw a man named Matthew sitting at the tax collector’s booth. “Follow me,”<sup>t</sup> he told him, and Matthew got up and followed him. \_**

**Matthew had left his career in tax collecting to follow Jesus too.**

**However, the devil’s advocates, great oppressors of FREEDOM, sent tax collectors in order to deprive Peter and Jesus of the FREEDOM Jesus was teaching about.**

**Fishermen, during those times, would catch fish, sell them at a price, and pay a tax on each fish. Peter was called to leave Jesus for a moment, catch a boat, put his net out into the water, and do a little work to take the first fish he could find and pull a coin out that would pay their taxes. Notice that Peter didn’t need to sell the fish?**

**HOW DID JESUS KNOW THERE WAS A COIN in the first fish that Peter would catch?**

## **Do Not Forget the LORD**

**Dt 8:1 Be careful to follow every command I am giving you today, so that you may live<sup>t</sup> and increase and may enter and possess the land that the LORD promised on oath to your forefathers. <sup>u</sup>**

**Dt 8:2 Remember how the LORD your God led<sup>v</sup> you all the way in the desert these forty years, to humble you and to test<sup>w</sup> you in order to know what was in your heart, whether or not you would keep his commands.**

**Dt 8:3 He humbled<sup>x</sup> you, causing you to hunger and then feeding you with manna,<sup>y</sup> which neither you nor your fathers had known, to teach<sup>z</sup>**

you that man **does not live on bread<sup>a</sup> alone** but on every word that comes from the mouth<sup>b</sup> of the LORD.<sup>c</sup>

Jesus understood the oppressions that followed service to **MONEY** and **TAXATION** and Peter, as well as the disciples, in response to the angry tax collectors, were reminded of being dependent on God versus man.

Jesus was also showing, once again, that **HE** did not need or require taxes from anyone. Jesus owned the entire universe and could have easily sported with them by refusing to pay the Temple tax. But once again, tax collectors, from the Romans to the Jewish leaders, placed more value on money than on people, placed more value in extracting a single coin for a tax payment, than obeying and listening to the **FREE WORDS OF GOD**.

## **The Fulfillment of the Law**

Mt 5:17 **“Do not think that I have come to abolish the Law or the Prophets; I have not come to abolish them but to fulfill them.”<sup>a</sup>**

Mt 5:18 **I tell you the truth, until heaven and earth disappear, not the smallest letter, not the least stroke of a pen, will by any means disappear from the Law until everything is accomplished.<sup>b</sup>** \_

It was assumed that Jesus was trying to abolish all of the Roman and Jewish laws. In **SPIRIT**, the **HOLY SPIRIT** had already abolished all of those man made rules and laws. Jesus often spoke against **JEWISH LAWS** versus **GOD’S DEFINITION** of **HIS OWN LAWS**, being revealed through the Body of Jesus.

God’s laws would not be abolished by Jesus, but fulfilled. Only human laws would be abolished, as well as all of the mis-applications, mis-interpretations, and bad judgments about the Law.

All that the Roman and Jewish leaders would get is **SLAVERY** to a coin, a tax, money, which had only as much value as they placed on such exchange methods, versus placing **MORE VALUE** and **WORTH** on

**people. And the MESSIAH was in their presence and cared more about Jesus paying a tax!**

## **Clean and Unclean**

*7:1-23 pp—Mt 15:1-20*

**Mk 7:1 The Pharisees and some of the teachers of the law who had come from Jerusalem gathered around Jesus and**

**Mk 7:2 saw some of his disciples eating food with hands that were “unclean,”<sup>g</sup> that is, unwashed.**

**Mk 7:3 (The Pharisees and all the Jews do not eat unless they give their hands a ceremonial washing, holding to the tradition of the elders.<sup>h</sup>**

**Mk 7:4 When they come from the marketplace they do not eat unless they wash. And they observe many other traditions, such as the washing of cups, pitchers and kettles.<sup>19</sup> )<sup>i</sup>**

**Mk 7:5 So the Pharisees and teachers of the law asked Jesus, “Why don’t your disciples live according to the tradition of the elders<sup>j</sup> instead of eating their food with ‘unclean’ hands?”**

**Mk 7:6 He replied, “Isaiah was right when he prophesied about you hypocrites; as it is written: “ ‘These people honor me with their lips, but their hearts are far from me.**

**Mk 7:7 They worship me in vain; their teachings are but rules taught by men.’<sup>20</sup> k**

**Mk 7:8 You have let go of the commands of God and are holding on to the traditions of men.”<sup>l</sup>**

**Mk 7:9 And he said to them: “You have a fine way of setting aside the commands of God in order to observe<sup>21</sup> your own traditions!”<sup>m</sup> \_**

**No matter what PHILOSOPHIES about MONEY, TAXATION, INTEREST, LENDING, BORROWING you have been brainwashed into accepting, either inside Christian Churches and Jewish synagogues, or outside of them, such TRADITIONS are not in harmony with the FREEDOM Jesus Christ called us all into.**

**Jesus called everyone to be FREE, not slaves.**



**Jesus called men and women to be equals – not one more powerful than another.**

**Jesus called us to follow ONE KING – THE GOD OF ISRAEL, not follow human kings or ranks.**

**Jesus called us to follow Him and not human commands and teachings.**

## **Sons of God**

**Gal 3:26 You are all sons of God<sup>m</sup> through faith in Christ Jesus,**

**Gal 3:27 for all of you who were baptized into Christ<sup>n</sup> have clothed yourselves with Christ.<sup>o</sup>**

**Gal 3:28 There is neither Jew nor Greek, slave nor free,<sup>p</sup> male nor female,<sup>q</sup> for you are all one in Christ Jesus.<sup>r</sup>**

**Gal 3:29 If you belong to Christ,<sup>s</sup> then you are Abraham's seed,<sup>t</sup> and heirs<sup>u</sup> according to the promise.<sup>v</sup>**

**Gal 4:1 What I am saying is that as long as the heir is a child, he is no different from a slave, although he owns the whole estate.**

**Gal 4:2 He is subject to guardians and trustees until the time set by his father.**

**Gal 4:3 So also, when we were children, we were in slavery<sup>w</sup> under the basic principles of the world.<sup>x</sup>**

**Gal 4:4 But when the time had fully come,<sup>y</sup> God sent his Son,<sup>z</sup> born of a woman,<sup>a</sup> born under law,<sup>b</sup>**

**Gal 4:5 to redeem<sup>c</sup> those under law, that we might receive the full rights<sup>d</sup> of sons.<sup>e</sup>**

**Gal 4:6 Because you are sons, God sent the Spirit of his Son<sup>f</sup> into our hearts,<sup>g</sup> the Spirit who calls out, “Abba,<sup>15</sup> Father.”<sup>h</sup>**

**Gal 4:7 So you are no longer a slave, but a son; and since you are a son, God has made you also an heir.<sup>i</sup> \_**

**So if you feel that ANY ‘IMPOSITION’ was enforced by Moses himself, Jesus did away with old world systems dependent on human traditions that followed false gods.**

**MONEY is a FALSE GOD and a FALSE PROPHET and those that worship money cannot BUY OR SELL without it.**

**MONEY is the MARK of the beast holding the whole world in modern slavery that imitates historical slavery.**

**But it ALSO can be found in Biblical times and just because MONEY and TAXES are in the Bible, doesn't mean that God requires money and taxes. Jesus came and did away with it all, but FREEDOM TO CHOOSE evil instead of good ruined all civilizations.**

**What has become of MODERN AMERICA?**

**What has become of ALL NATIONS globally?**

## **Nehemiah Helps the Poor**

**Ne 5:1 Now the men and their wives raised a great outcry against their Jewish brothers.**

**Ne 5:2 Some were saying, "We and our sons and daughters are numerous; in order for us to eat and stay alive, we must get grain."**

**Ne 5:3 Others were saying, "We are mortgaging our fields, <sup>w</sup> our vineyards and our homes to get grain during the famine." <sup>x</sup>**

**Ne 5:4 Still others were saying, "We have had to borrow money to pay the king's <sup>y</sup> tax on our fields and vineyards.**

**Ne 5:5 Although we are of the same flesh and blood <sup>z</sup> as our countrymen and though our sons are as good as theirs, yet we have to subject our sons and daughters to slavery. <sup>a</sup> Some of our daughters have already been enslaved, but we are powerless, because our fields and our vineyards belong to others." <sup>b</sup>**

**Ne 5:6 When I heard their outcry and these charges, I was very angry.**

**Ne 5:7 I pondered them in my mind and then accused the nobles and officials. I told them, "You are exacting usury <sup>c</sup> from your own countrymen!" So I called together a large meeting to deal with them**

**Ne 5:8** and said: “As far as possible, we have bought <sup>d</sup> back our Jewish brothers who were sold to the Gentiles. Now you are selling your brothers, only for them to be sold back to us!” They kept quiet, because they could find nothing to say. <sup>e</sup>

**Ne 5:9** So I continued, “What you are doing is not right. Shouldn’t you walk in the fear of our God to avoid the reproach <sup>f</sup> of our Gentile enemies?

**Ne 5:10** I and my brothers and my men are also lending the people money and grain. But let the exacting of usury stop! <sup>g</sup>

**Ne 5:11** Give back to them immediately their fields, vineyards, olive groves and houses, and also the usury <sup>h</sup> you are charging them—the hundredth part of the money, grain, new wine and oil.”

**Ne 5:12** “We will give it back,” they said. “And we will not demand anything more from them. We will do as you say.” Then I summoned the priests and made the nobles and officials take an oath <sup>i</sup> to do what they had promised.

**Ne 5:13** I also shook <sup>j</sup> out the folds of my robe and said, “In this way may God shake out of his house and possessions every man who does not keep this promise. So may such a man be shaken out and emptied!” At this the whole assembly said, “Amen,” <sup>k</sup> and praised the LORD. And the people did as they had promised.

**Ne 5:14** Moreover, from the twentieth year of King Artaxerxes, <sup>l</sup> when I was appointed to be their governor <sup>m</sup> in the land of Judah, until his thirty-second year—twelve years—neither I nor my brothers ate the food allotted to the governor.

**Ne 5:15** But the earlier governors—those preceding me—placed a heavy burden on the people and took forty shekels <sup>11</sup> of silver from them in addition to food and wine. Their assistants also lorded it over the people. But out of reverence for God <sup>n</sup> I did not act like that.

**Ne 5:16** Instead, <sup>o</sup> I devoted myself to the work on this wall. All my men were assembled there for the work; we <sup>12</sup> did not acquire any land.

**Ne 5:17** Furthermore, a hundred and fifty Jews and officials ate at my table, as well as those who came to us from the surrounding nations.

**Ne 5:18** Each day one ox, six choice sheep and some poultry <sup>p</sup> were prepared for me, and every ten days an abundant supply of wine of all kinds. In spite of all this, I never demanded the food allotted to the governor, because the demands were heavy on these people.

Ne 5:19 **Remember<sup>q</sup> me with favor, O my God, for all I have done for these people. \_**

## **Jesus Clears the Temple**

*2:14-16 pp—Mt 21:12, 13; Mk 11:15-17; Lk 19:45, 46*

Jn 2:12 **After this he went down to Capernaum<sup>g</sup> with his mother<sup>h</sup> and brothers<sup>i</sup> and his disciples. There they stayed for a few days.**

Jn 2:13 **When it was almost time for the Jewish Passover,<sup>j</sup> Jesus went up to Jerusalem.<sup>k</sup>**

Jn 2:14 **In the temple courts he found men selling cattle, sheep and doves,<sup>l</sup> and others sitting at tables exchanging money.<sup>m</sup>**

Jn 2:15 **So he made a whip out of cords, and drove all from the temple area, both sheep and cattle; he scattered the coins of the money changers and overturned their tables.**

Jn 2:16 **To those who sold doves he said, “**Get these out of here! How dare you turn my Father’s house<sup>n</sup> into a market!**”**

Jn 2:17 **His disciples remembered that it is written: “Zeal for your house will consume me.”<sup>15 o</sup>**

Jn 2:18 **Then the Jews<sup>p</sup> demanded of him, “What miraculous sign<sup>q</sup> can you show us to prove your authority to do all this?”<sup>r</sup>**

Jn 2:19 **Jesus answered them, “**Destroy this temple, and I will raise it again in three days.**”<sup>s</sup>**

Jn 2:20 **The Jews replied, “It has taken forty-six years to build this temple, and you are going to raise it in three days?”**

Jn 2:21 **But the temple he had spoken of was his body.<sup>t</sup>**

Jn 2:22 **After he was raised from the dead, his disciples recalled what he had said.<sup>u</sup> Then they believed the Scripture<sup>v</sup> and the words that Jesus had spoken.**

Jn 2:23 **Now while he was in Jerusalem at the Passover Feast,<sup>w</sup> many people saw the miraculous signs<sup>x</sup> he was doing and believed<sup>y</sup> in his name.<sup>16 \_</sup>**

**Jesus gave up His body unto death so that death could pass over us. While human bodies have been abandoned and forsaken by greedy and selfish world interests, enslaved by the aspirations of the devil's many arrogant rulers, Jesus cared more about His children finding a NEW LIFE, A NEW WAY, an ETERNAL LIFE.**

**While world rulers coined themselves on money, Jesus taught that FREEDOM is better than money and that people are more important than the self worship of rulers of fools who know not what they do.**

**Solomon wrote:**

**Pr 22:7 The rich rule over the poor, and the borrower is servant to the lender.**

## **The LORD'S Devastation of the Earth**

**Isa 24:1 See, the LORD is going to lay waste the earth <sup>o</sup> and devastate <sup>p</sup> it; he will ruin its face and scatter <sup>q</sup> its inhabitants—**

**Isa 24:2 it will be the same for priest as for people, <sup>r</sup> for master as for servant, for mistress as for maid, for seller as for buyer, <sup>s</sup> for borrower as for lender, for debtor as for creditor. <sup>t</sup>**

**Isa 24:3 The earth will be completely laid waste <sup>u</sup> and totally plundered. <sup>v</sup> The LORD has spoken <sup>w</sup> this word. <sup>x</sup>**

**The God of Israel was very clear, not just about Israel's historical destruction, but also in the entire world's coming destruction.**

**Moses stated, under the condition Israel OBEYED God's Will, stated the following:**

**Dt 15:4 However, there should be no poor among you, for in the land the LORD your God is giving you to possess as your inheritance, he will richly bless <sup>x</sup> you,**

**Dt 15:5 if only you fully obey the LORD your God and are careful to follow <sup>y</sup> all these commands I am giving you today.**

**Dt 15:6 For the LORD your God will bless you as he has promised, and you will lend to many nations but will **borrow** from none. You will rule over many nations but none will rule over you. <sup>z</sup>**

**Dt 15:7 If there is a poor man <sup>a</sup> among your brothers in any of the towns of the land that the LORD your God is giving you, **do not be hardhearted or tightfisted <sup>b</sup> toward your poor brother.****

**Dt 15:8 Rather be openhanded <sup>c</sup> and freely lend him whatever he needs.**

**Dt 15:9 Be careful not to harbor this wicked thought: “**The seventh year, the year for canceling debts, <sup>d</sup> is near,**” so that you do not show ill will <sup>e</sup> toward your needy brother and give him nothing. He may then appeal to the LORD against you, and you will be found guilty of sin. <sup>f</sup>**

**Dt 15:10 Give generously to him and do so without a grudging heart; <sup>g</sup> then because of this the LORD your God will bless <sup>h</sup> you in all your work and in everything you put your hand to.**

**Dt 15:11 There will always be poor people <sup>i</sup> in the land. Therefore I command you to be openhanded toward your brothers and toward the poor and needy in your land. <sup>j</sup>**

**The U.S. GOVERNMENT is very merciful in granting the 7<sup>th</sup> year as a year of BANKRUPTCY. Your debts are not forgiven – you are humiliated with a reminder of your financial failings which goes on record for 7 years. All DEBTS should be cancelled, but greed had prohibited generosity and inspired grudging hearts.**

**It was GOD’S WILL that NO NATIONS rule over Israel. This would be God’s blessing to Israel for OBEDIENCE to His commands. But today, THE NATIONS are ruling over Israel with FINANCIAL CONTROL. Israel has borrowed money from other countries and is under duress as a result. The OIL/PETROLEUM EXPORTING COUNTRIES regulate the international flow of oil and petroleum resources and nobody can buy or sell without accepting the names of Allah/Muhammad as a legitimate voice with a legitimate religion that is ultimately oppressive to all Muslims living under Islamic oppression.**

**Whenever America wants to bust a move against an Islamic dictator, such as the Iranian Ayatollahs and their I-MEAN-A-JIHAD president,**

**the energy companies THREATEN the whole world with HIGHER GAS PRICES [a fascade to mask greed].**

**2,000 mosques got built in America due to the idolatry of democratic energy aspirations with the beast's ten Islamic horns.**

**The ROCKEFELLER UNITED NATIONS and the ROCKEFELLER G20 nations have celebrated “UNITY WITH DIVERSITY” a new coined term that the Russian President introduced between 2008 to 2012 when he submitted the Russian ideas of a new global currency.**

**“UNITY THROUGH DIVERSITY” on a gold coin from a Russian president reminds us of the communist “DIVERSITY” politics that were forced upon American corporations who were FORCED to hire people from foreign countries, granted visas and PAID CITIZENSHIP by a democratic government that didn't care about defending America's borders from terrorist invasion.**

**COMMUNIST “DIVERSITY”, as coined on a new Russian GLOBALIST COIN creates a false unity that only hurts NATIONAL SOVEREIGNTY with a fake sense of ‘global security.’ The God of Israel WARNED Israel not to participate in worship with foreign rulers who worship foreign gods:**

**Dt 28:12 The LORD will open the heavens, the storehouse <sup>z</sup> of his bounty, <sup>a</sup> to send rain <sup>b</sup> on your land in season and to bless <sup>c</sup> all the work of your hands. You will lend to many nations but will **borrow** from none. <sup>d</sup>**

**Dt 28:13 The LORD will make you the head, not the tail. If you pay attention to the commands of the LORD your God that I give you this day and carefully follow <sup>e</sup> them, you will always be at the top, never at the bottom. <sup>f</sup>**

**Dt 28:14 Do not turn aside from any of the commands I give you today, to the right or to the left, <sup>g</sup> following other gods and serving them.**

**Though modern Israeli leaders such as SHIMON PERES and EHUD OLMERT, and ARIEL SHARON have forsaken Israel's God, God has not forsaken Israel on account of wicked leadership. Though they**

**celebrate “DIVERSITY” with pagan rulers and allow the Islamic Dome of the Rock bear a plaque with a false god/false prophet named Allah/Muhammad where the First and Second Jewish Temples used to stand, the ABOMINATION THAT CAUSES DESOLATION continues standing in THE HOLY PLACE where it does not belong.**

**Israel's enemies continue, along with the devil's nations, to attack Israel, behaving deceitfully, while their rulers become complacent, clasping hands with WICKED MEN like Barack Hussein Obama.**

**Barack Hussein Obama approves of the ABOMINATION THAT CAUSES DESOLATION and has empowered Islamic rebellion among Islamic states, while communism has arisen to hold the whole world hostage – and freedom denied to the majority of world nations.**

**The DELUSIONS/ILLUSIONS of money and taxation continue enslaving a majority of the human race, while national security identification technologies continue taking away more freedoms.**

**The devil's disciples continue terrorizing free people's through murder, bombings, weapons of mass destruction, guns, knives, and whichever tool for murder and violence can be used, so that the globalists can further build their satanic surveillance societies.**

**Rev 13:16 He also forced everyone, small and great,<sup>s</sup> rich and poor, free and slave, to receive a mark on his right hand or on his forehead,<sup>t</sup>**

**Rev 13:17 so that no one could buy or sell unless he had the mark,<sup>u</sup> which is the name of the beast or the number of his name.<sup>v</sup>**

**While scholars keep looking for that next EMPIRE IMAGE of one man on one currency, watching paper currency and coin currency change their images throughout each generation, and new biometric and identification processes are forcing people into submission to the financial systems of global banking, TODAY, NO ONE CAN BUY OR SELL WITHOUT MONEY or TAXATION.**



**The REVIVAL OF ANCIENT ROME'S old money systems have been given a voice to speak.**

**Much like Allah was given a voice to speak so that all who refused to worship Allah were killed, all non-Muslims were forced into either submission to Allah, given a voice by the false prophet Muhammad, or pay a HEAD TAX.**

**Muhammad is reported to have not existed as there was no verifiable proof he ever existed, so if Muhammad/Allah are the beast out of the sea, in context, then the beast out of the earth gave him a voice to speak and nobody in the Middle East could buy or sell without accepting their name IN their foreheads and right hands spiritually.**

**In a similar way, the images placed on European Money, Russian money, American money, Chinese money, and any money throughout the world have bore MAN'S IMAGE among world rulers. No one could BUY OR SELL unless they accepted the names and numbers of all the heads of nations whose resources were exchanged through MONEY and TAXATION.**

**CAPITALISTS, under a "Christian" Republic, argued something that should never have been an argument to begin with and didn't foresee that what was written in the United States Constitution was a clear path to the future destruction of all FREEDOM seeking Americans.**

**There is NOTHING wrong with working and earning an honest living. Unfortunately, playing by the rules of the numbers THEY imposed upon you while cheating, lying, and stealing, kind of ruins their teachings about "CONSERVATION" in fiscal policies. LIBERAL SPENDING has its own prophetic destruction, only thinking about the present, while subjecting the next generation to slavery much worse than ours.**

**You are not evil or anti-Christ for using money or a paycheck to try to build a better life for yourselves or your children & family. Charities have proven that GOOD can be done with money. So you are not a hypocrite for using borrowed money or loans or credit or money to try**

**to survive. It's the only system we grew up with and nothing in the realm of FREEDOM was ever proposed while we were held in slavery to philosophies other people from the previous generations forced upon us without our approval or input.**

**I want you to know that my favorite NEWS MEDIA station on earth is FOX NEWS and I have been a loyal fan and contributor from the first days they started to the present. When we are done with our observations and studies, TRUTH does matter.**

**I am a fan of America, even if nobody gives a care in the world whether I live or die. I am a fan of NATIONAL SECURITY and INTERNATIONAL SECURITY. I support and pray for those who fight against Islamic aggression or terrorism or any other form of evil throughout the world. I am for the UNITED STATES CONSTITUTION except the parts about money or taxation.**

**I still work in the job market like any other average person. I still live under the rules of the system and play by those rules without much rebellion or protest. Like most families, I have poor and needy people to care for so I have to play by some of the rules like everybody else does in order to survive under the current oppressive financial conditions imposed upon all of us.**

**There is no hypocrisy on your part for borrowing and spending money as one must survive. Sometimes you have to borrow more than you take in to not only survive but help your family survive. You can still protest such methods while feeling oppressed and discouraged of having to accept such methods to achieve the goal of helping others.**

**I wish we could all live DEBT FREE, but most people don't live in that fantasy world that Dave Ramsey or Stossel lives in.**

**There is something THE MONEY WORSHIPERS can't take away from me or from you or from anyone else that God gave us: OUR SOULS. Our souls were born with a sense of PARADISE, ETERNITY, ETERNAL LIFE, AND GOD'S KINGDOM. The HOLY SPIRIT has always counseled us to know right from wrong, good from evil and allowing us to make**

**our own choices and decisions on how to respond to the Spirit's calling. We will either obey or disobey – experiencing the consequences of either responses. The great thing about God's grace is that if we make the wrong choices, we someday snap out of it and make the right choices. Salvation is HERE today and NOW!**

**MONEY is a tool used to distract you from thinking about HEAVEN, FREEDOM, AND ETERNITY. We become complacent into accepting things as they've been built all around us without much of a challenge.**

**Many people have different beliefs on MONEY and TAXATION, but the REALITY of 7 billion people on earth is everyone is held hostage to MONEY and TAXATION, no matter what flag or nation you wave. MONEY is the same no matter where you live and dwell.**

**There will ALWAYS BE FIGHTING in just how to generate money and taxation because they don't lead us to freedom at all.**

**The world governments, no matter how much or how little money they generate under whatever name or face or place is engraved on their self-esteem monetary exchanges, have imprisoned God's Creation and God's People globally. Most people want OUT but don't know HOW to live a FREE life apart from MONEY and TAXATION.**

**Since our MILITARIES are all dependent on MONEY we are all held hostage to the military aspirations of each nation warring against another nation. It was NATIONAL DEFENSE that became HAMILTON'S primary argument to justify the generation of money and taxes to pay for the military establishments.**

**NATIONAL SECURITY was the primary cause for money and taxation to be generated through constitutional laws and every CONSERVATIVE wants to obey the CONSTITUTION for NATIONAL DEFENSE and all FREEDOM loving people support our NATIONAL DEFENSE, no matter what the cost.**

**During August 6, 2012, the FIVE on FOX NEWS had showed how happy and cheerful NASA workers were for landing a craft they invented on**

**Mars which cost \$2.9 BILLION! In that same show, Andrea was just so proud of PAUL RYAN for making the tough choice to make cuts to entitlement programs! It was just INSANITY to suggest that it was okay to spend \$2.9 BILLION so that children could be ‘inspired to learn math and science,’ versus spending that \$2.9 BILLION on perhaps SAVING LIVES on earth instead?**

**Conservatives all had to rally behind Romney who just didn’t have the RIGHT MOVES or THE RIGHT STUFF, but did what they could to insult and disrespect the poor, the needy, and anyone accepting government paid assistance, which is why they slid in the polls and Obama was rising. Conservatives rallied to the slave masters of “American Wealth and Prosperity,” while liberals rallied to the slaves of “American Failure in Capitalism.”**

**During 2012, there was more FAILURE among employees than success and by no means was anyone ‘jealous’ of Romney or rejecting Romney because ‘he was rich and successful!’ Such arguments were really just like flies landing in the ointment with the bottle smacked down by an agitated Obama presidency.**

**MONEY on both the conservative side and the liberal side would corrupt and derail freedom from their many heated debates. Some of us could only stand in the middle and ask, “Huh?”**

**MONEY has always been a necessary evil used to defend nations from greater evils inspired by God’s enemies.**

**As Jesus said, “<sup>Mt 24:6</sup> You will hear of wars and rumors of wars, but see to it that you are not alarmed. Such things must happen, but the end is still to come. <sup>Mt 24:7</sup> Nation will rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom. <sup>m</sup> There will be famines <sup>n</sup> and earthquakes in various places. <sup>Mt 24:8</sup> All these are the beginning of birth pains.”**

**I am grateful to God that America was empowered to protect and defend citizens in this country and throughout the world and WAS the leader before this imposter named Obama came to destroy our country with all of his throne dwarves and stooges he appointed.**

**What did we learn from HURRICANE KATRINA or any natural disaster? BANKS did not save people. People lost their homes and did not get them back. People were held hostage to money and those who didn't have any to recover with were left homeless and shut out of the system after funds ran dry. Thousands of mobile homes were ready to be inhabited, but FEMA never allowed those mobile homes to be used to house the people because of red tape and greed.**

**Whether people like it or not, global disasters are imminent. MONEY and TAXATION need to be shut down and earth's resources freed up to assist people when they lose everything.**

**Mt 24:15 “So when you see standing in the holy place”<sup>w</sup> “the abomination that causes desolation,”<sup>105 x</sup> spoken of through the prophet Daniel—let the reader understand—**

**Mt 24:16 then let those who are in Judea flee to the mountains.**

**Mt 24:17 Let no one on the roof of his house<sup>y</sup> go down to take anything out of the house.**

**Mt 24:18 Let no one in the field go back to get his cloak.**

**Hopefully, by now, as you see the Dome of the Rock hovering over Allah/Muhammad's name on the Temple Mount, you have seen the ABOMINATION THAT CAUSES DESOLATION. The global economy has not been able to buy or sell without acceptance of Allah/Muhammad as a god and the daily sacrifices that Moses prescribed Israel to make under the First and Second Jewish Temples are abolished and no TEMPLE or HOUSE for God stands on the Temple Mount.**

**It is my conviction, based on the facts of history and current events, that the CATHOLIC church is NOT the anti-Christ or the beast. ALLAH/MUHAMMAD are the ABOMINATION THAT CAUSES DESOLATION. Although the CATHOLIC CHURCH has been part of the beast's kingdom through the acceptance of money, taxation and salvation by religious ‘works’, they may only be one of the ten horns giving power to Allah/Muhammad through pagan love, most likely because the FREEMASON spirit has infiltrated their ranks from within,**

as we learned during the Clintonian/Pope John Paul II phase of historical blasphemy.

## **A Call to Build the House of the LORD**

**Hag 1:1** In the second year of King Darius,<sup>a</sup> on the first day of the sixth month, the word of the LORD came through the prophet Haggai<sup>b</sup> to Zerubbabel<sup>c</sup> son of Shealtiel, governor<sup>d</sup> of Judah, and to Joshua<sup>1e</sup> son of Jehozadak,<sup>f</sup> the high priest:<sup>g</sup>

**Hag 1:2** This is what the LORD Almighty<sup>h</sup> says: “These people<sup>i</sup> say, ‘The time has not yet come for the LORD’S house to be built.<sup>j</sup>’ ”

**Hag 1:3** Then the word of the LORD came through the prophet Haggai:<sup>k</sup>

**Hag 1:4** “Is it a time for you yourselves to be living in your **paneled houses**,<sup>l</sup> while this house remains a ruin?<sup>m</sup> ”

**Hag 1:5** Now this is what the LORD Almighty says: “Give careful thought<sup>n</sup> to your ways.

**Hag 1:6** You have planted much, but have harvested little.<sup>o</sup> You eat, but never have enough.<sup>p</sup> You drink, but never have your fill.<sup>q</sup> You put on clothes, but are not warm. You earn wages,<sup>r</sup> only to put them in a purse with holes in it.”

**Hag 1:7** This is what the LORD Almighty says: “Give careful thought<sup>s</sup> to your ways.

**Hag 1:8** Go up into the mountains and bring down timber<sup>t</sup> and build the house, so that I may take pleasure<sup>u</sup> in it and be honored,<sup>v</sup> ” says the LORD.

**Hag 1:9** “You expected much, but see, it turned out to be little.<sup>w</sup> What you brought home, I blew<sup>x</sup> away. Why?” declares the LORD Almighty. “Because of my house, which remains a ruin,<sup>y</sup> while each of you is busy with his own house.

**Hag 1:10** Therefore, because of you the heavens have withheld<sup>z</sup> their dew<sup>a</sup> and the earth its crops.<sup>b</sup>

**Hag 1:11** I called for a drought<sup>c</sup> on the fields and the mountains,<sup>d</sup> on the grain, the new wine,<sup>e</sup> the oil<sup>f</sup> and whatever the ground produces, on men and cattle, and on the labor of your hands.<sup>g</sup> ” \_

**Lk 17:26.**

Lk 17:26 **“Just as it was in the days of Noah,<sup>x</sup> so also will it be in the days of the Son of Man.**

Lk 17:27 **People were eating, drinking, marrying and being given in marriage up to the day Noah entered the ark. Then the flood came and destroyed them all.**

Lk 17:28 **“It was the same in the days of Lot.<sup>y</sup> People were eating and drinking, buying and selling, planting and building.**

Lk 17:29 **But the day Lot left Sodom, fire and sulfur rained down from heaven and destroyed them all.**

Lk 17:30 **“It will be just like this on the day the Son of Man is revealed.<sup>z</sup>**

Lk 17:31 **On that day no one who is on the roof of his house, with his goods inside, should go down to get them. Likewise, no one in the field should go back for anything.<sup>a</sup>**

Lk 17:32 **Remember Lot’s wife!<sup>b</sup>**

Lk 17:33 **Whoever tries to keep his life will lose it, and whoever loses his life will preserve it.<sup>c</sup>**

Lk 17:34 **I tell you, on that night two people will be in one bed; one will be taken and the other left.**

Lk 17:35 **Two women will be grinding grain together; one will be taken and the other left.<sup>70 ”” d</sup>**

Lk 17:37 **“Where, Lord?” they asked. He replied, “Where there is a dead body, there the vultures will gather.”<sup>e</sup>**

## **CHAPTER 8**

**RETHINKING THE FEDERALIST PAPERS ON A CONSTITUTIONAL LEVEL WITHOUT BETRAYING OUR CONSTITUTION, OUR BILL OF RIGHTS, OUR BIBLICAL FREEDOMS, BY ASSESSING WHERE WE ALL WENT WRONG AND MAKE IT RIGHT AND PERHAPS BE BRIGHTER IN DEFENDING OUR PERSONAL, NATIONAL, AND GLOBAL SECURITY WITHOUT NUCLEAR WAR ASPIRATIONS THAT ENEMIES OF FREEDOM HAVE CONSPIRED**

**Barack Hussein Obama would become the first black racist communist Muslim president to try to “change the set times and the laws” in America and violate virtually all the principles of GOOD CONSTITUTIONAL GOVERNMENT that the Framers warned would happen if certain principles were violated. Such TREASON started with President Jimmy Carter, was repeated by Bill Clinton, and finalized by Barack Hussein Obama, three communist sympathizing presidents. These three presidents had been conspiring with communists to create: “UNITY THROUGH DIVERSITY.”**

**Barack Hussein Obama did the following:**

- 1. Ordered the moon to be blown up to see if there is water under the crust.**
- 2. Dismantled the U.S space shuttle program and ridiculous military cuts.**
- 3. Allowed Russian warships to enter the Venezuela coast to help the socialist dictator Hugo Chavez build a nuclear power plant**
- 4. Disarmed American nuclear arsenals**
- 5. Appeased communist democrats by imposing a new 2,000 page health care mandate that would penalize the poor, the needy, and the disabled who didn't have health insurance with a heavy IRS penalty. And by expanding a new unaffordable program to**



**exploit the poor's needs, would make cuts to existing programs that poor people depended on, while penalizing them.**

- 6. Imposed higher taxation without representation.**
- 7. Empowered LUCIFER'S NETWORK: THE MASTERS OF THE NEW WORLD ORDER**
- 8. Made gay marriage legal.**
- 9. Received a million dollars from Bill Maher, an ultra pig head.**
- 10. Received Soros money in addition to that circus that is Wall Street.**
- 11. Lied to Israeli leadership.**
- 12. Made gays in the military legal and got rid of 'don't ask, don't tell.'**
- 13. Gave Hamas, a terror organization \$800 million.**
- 14. Empowered the Muslim Brotherhood throughout the world**
- 15. Caused an unprecedented unemployment rate such as American businesses have never experienced since the first great depression caused by the very Wall Street bankers who had caused the first great depression.**
- 16. BOUGHT AND PAID FOR by Charles Gasparino shows that Obama was empowered to empower the same elitist circles that Americans rebelled against throughout the 20<sup>th</sup> and 21<sup>st</sup> centuries.**
- 17. Obama refused to wear an American flag lapel pin.**
- 18. Obama produced a phony birth certificate.**
- 19. Obama hired virtually EVERY WEASEL possible to run American government or shall we rather say, "RUIN".**
- 20. Obama attacked the Catholic Church by imposing a new contraception mandate.**
- 21. Obama DECEIVED Israel while empowering their enemies with weapons, and also empowered the Muslim Brotherhood among the beast's horns.**
- 22. Obama is dismantling our military and not funding the equipment necessary to defend America.**

- 23. He withdrew our troops from Iraq leaving citizens vulnerable to terror and corruption and murder.**
- 24. Insulted small businesses throughout America by saying, “You didn’t build your business on your own. The government did it.”**
- 25. Obama lied by saying everything is FINE WITH THE PRIVATE SECTOR after bailing out the bankers and corporations responsible for the greatest economic crash since the depression our grandparents suffered through.**
- 26. Stated that the US CONSTITUTION is an old document that should be changed and/or replaced.**
- 27. Told Russia that ‘when he is re-elected’ he would do more to help them.**
- 28. Outsourced American prosperity to Chinese interests.**
- 29. Appointed a gay woman to the NSA chief position.**
- 30. Appointed two gay female judges to the U.S. Supreme Court.**
- 31. Did not support the defense of American borders and gave amnesty to illegal immigrants.**
- 32. Allowed a UNITED STATES DRONE to fall into Iranian hands and not recover it.**
- 33. Obama gave up on Iranian protesters and did not take decisive action to arrest and detain a TERRORIST REGIME and allowed that regime to murder and jail its own citizens.**
- 34. Obama took no actions against Iran to defend other countries from the threats of nuclear annihilation.**
- 35. Obama claimed credit for capturing Osama Bin Laden.**
- 36. Obama received a monkey god idol from India.**
- 37. Obama was photographed in Islamic attire**
- 38. Obama was mentored by the Communist Party USA**
- 39. Obama’s reverend stated: GOD DAMN AMERICA and sat there for 20 years listening to BLACK REPLACEMENT THEOLOGY**

- 40. He accepted praise from Louis Farrakhan, a communist Muslim. Louis Farrakhan was awarded by Obama's pastor.**
- 41. Obama appointed Eric Holder who refused to prosecute the Black Panthers for threatening American citizens with batons at a voting booth. He also helped corrupt the DEPARTMENT OF JUSTICE.**
- 42. Obama refused to turn over Fast and Furious documents to the family and to Congress once he seized those documents after a Congressional prosecution of Eric Holder's contempt of Congress.**
- 43. Obama gave Saudi Arabia scores of new American jet fighters, as well as new missile defense technologies, thus, jeopardizing Israel's safety and security.**
- 44. Obama-nation of desolation imposed heavy taxation without representation.**
- 45. Appointed a gay female judge to the Supreme Court.**
- 46. Obama stated, "YOU DIDN'T BUILD THAT" to the business owners of America**
- 47. Obama denied the United States military the legal right to vote in the 2012 elections.**
- 48. Obama imposed a new COMMUNIST HEALTH CARE MANDATE forcing everyone to buy and sell health insurance and then penalizing the poor for not carrying insurance, thus furthering the beast's totalitarian plans.**

# **THE DECLARATION OF INDEPENDENCE**

**In “WE THE PEOPLE”**

**Congress Assembled, 2012**

**The Unanimous Declaration  
of the FIFTY United States of America’s Citizens Not Represented By A  
Corrupted Congress**

**REVISED DURING THE OBAMA NATION OF DESOLATION YEAR 2012**

**WHEN in the course of human events which effect God’s children negatively, it becomes necessary for one people to dissolve the political bands which have connected them with another, and to assume among the powers of the earth, the separate and equal station to which the laws of nature and of nature’s God entitle them, a decent respect to the opinions of mankind requires that they should declare the causes which impel them to the separation.**

**We the **FREE AMERICAN PEOPLE** hold these Biblical truths to be self-evident: That all men and women are created equal; that they are endowed by their Creator with certain unalienable rights; that among these are life, liberty, and the pursuit of happiness; that, to secure these rights, governments are instituted among men and women, deriving their just powers from the consent of the governed; that **whenever any form of government becomes destructive of these ends, it is the right of the people to alter or to abolish it, and to institute new government, laying its foundation on such principles, and organizing its powers in such form, as to them shall seem most likely to effect their safety and happiness.** Prudence, indeed, will dictate that governments long established should not be changed for light and transient causes; and accordingly all experience hath shown that people are more disposed to suffer, while evils are sufferable than to**

right themselves by abolishing the forms to which they are accustomed. But when a long train of abuses and usurpations, pursuing invariably the same object, evinces a design to reduce them under absolute despotism, it is their right, it is their duty, to throw off such government, and to provide new guards for their future security. Such has been the patient sufferance of these STATES not experiencing “UNITY THROUGH DIVERSITY” due to the communist rhetoric of corrupted democrats; and such is now the necessity which constrains them to alter their former systems of government. The history of the Kings of Great Britain, European Kings, Catholic Popes, Islamic Caliphs & leaders, Communist leaders, Socialist leaders, capitalist leaders, and whichever other throne dwarf has existed as a burden to FREE peoples enslaved by their oppressive policies of MONEY and TAXATION, in COMBINATION with the PRESIDENT OF THE UNITED STATES and the UNITED NATIONS thrown dwarves, is a history of repeated injuries and usurpations, all having in direct object the establishment of an absolute tyranny over these states. To prove this, let facts be submitted to a candid world:

The UN leaders, the communist leaders, the socialist leaders, in concert with Obama & His Democrats have refused assent to GOD’S laws, the most wholesome and necessary for the public good of all nations.

The UN leaders, the communist leaders, the socialist leaders, in concert with Obama & His Democrats have forbidden his

**governors to pass laws of immediate and pressing importance, unless suspended in their operation till his assent should be obtained; and, when so suspended, he has utterly neglected to attend to them.**

**The UN leaders, the communist leaders, the socialist leaders, in concert with Obama & His Democrats** have refused to pass other laws for the accommodation of large districts of people, unless those people would relinquish the right of representation in the legislature, a right inestimable to them, and formidable to tyrants only.

**The UN leaders, the communist leaders, the socialist leaders, in concert with Obama & His Democrats** have called together legislative bodies at places unusual uncomfortable, and distant from the depository of their public records, for the sole purpose of fatiguing them into compliance with his measures.

**The UN leaders, the communist leaders, the socialist leaders, in**

**concert with Obama & His Democrats** have dissolved representative houses repeatedly, for opposing, with manly firmness, his invasions on the rights of the people.

**The UN leaders, the communist leaders, the socialist leaders, in concert with Obama & His Democrats** have refused for a long time, after such dissolutions, to cause others to be elected; whereby the legislative powers, incapable of annihilation, have returned to the people at large for their exercise; the state remaining, in the mean time, exposed to all the dangers of invasions from without and convulsions within.

**The UN leaders, the communist leaders, the socialist leaders, in concert with Obama & His Democrats** have endeavored to prevent the population of these states; for that purpose obstructing the laws for naturalization of foreigners; refusing to pass others to encourage their migration hither, and raising the conditions of new

**appropriations of lands.**

**The UN leaders, the communist leaders, the socialist leaders, in concert with Obama & His Democrats** have obstructed the administration of justice, by refusing his assent to laws for establishing judiciary powers.

**The UN leaders, the communist leaders, the socialist leaders, in concert with Obama & His Democrats** have made judges dependent on his will alone, for the tenure of their offices, and the amount and payment of their salaries.

**The UN leaders, the communist leaders, the socialist leaders, in concert with Obama & His Democrats** have erected a multitude of new offices, and sent hither swarms of officers to harass our people and eat out their substance.

**The UN leaders, the communist leaders, the socialist leaders, in concert with Obama & His Democrats** have kept among us, in times of peace, standing



**armies, without the consent of our legislatures.**

**The UN leaders, the communist leaders, the socialist leaders, in concert with Obama & His Democrats** have affected to render the military independent of, and superior to, the civil power.

**The UN leaders, the communist leaders, the socialist leaders, in concert with Obama & His Democrats** have combined with others to subject us to a jurisdiction foreign to our Constitution and unacknowledged by our laws, giving his assent to their acts of pretended legislation:

**For quartering large bodies of armed troops among us both inside our borders and outside our borders;**

**For protecting them, by a mock trial, from punishment for any murders which they should commit on the inhabitants of these states;**

**For cutting off our trade with all parts of the world;**

**For imposing taxes on us without our consent;**

**For depriving us, in many cases, of the benefits of trial by jury;**

**For transporting us beyond seas, to be tried for pretended offenses;**

**For abolishing the free system of English laws in a neighboring province, establishing therein an arbitrary government, and enlarging its boundaries, so as to render it at once an example and fit instrument for introducing the same absolute rule into these colonies;**

**For taking away our charters, abolishing our most valuable laws, and altering fundamentally the forms of our governments;**

**For suspending our own legislatures, and declaring themselves invested with power to legislate for us in all cases whatsoever.**

**The UN leaders, the communist leaders, the socialist leaders, in concert with Obama & His Democrats** has abdicated government here, by declaring us out of his protection and waging war against us.

**The UN leaders, the communist leaders, the socialist leaders, in concert with Obama & His Democrats** have plundered our seas, ravaged our coasts, burned our towns, and destroyed the lives of our people.

**The UN leaders, the communist leaders, the socialist leaders, in concert with Obama & His Democrats** is at this time transporting large armies of foreign mercenaries to complete the works of death, desolation, and tyranny already begun with circumstances of cruelty and perfidy scarcely paralleled in the most barbarous ages, and totally unworthy the head of a civilized nation.

**The UN leaders, the communist leaders, the socialist leaders, in concert with Obama & His**

**Democrats** have constrained our fellow-citizens, taken captive on the high seas, to bear arms against their country, to become the executioners of their friends and brethren, or to fall themselves by their hands.

**The UN leaders, the communist leaders, the socialist leaders, in concert with Obama & His Democrats** have excited domestic insurrection among us, and has endeavored to bring on the inhabitants of our frontiers the merciless Indian savages, whose known rule of warfare is an undistinguished destruction of all ages, sexes, and conditions.

In every stage of these oppressions we have petitioned for redress in the most humble terms; our repeated petitions have been answered only by repeated injury. A prince, a president, a dictator, a communist, a capitalist, a socialist, or any throne dwarf whose character is thus marked by every act which may define a tyrant, is unfit to be the ruler of a free people.

**Nor have we been wanting in our attentions to our British & other oppressed national brethren. We have warned them, from time to time, of attempts by their legislature to extend an unwarrantable jurisdiction over us. We have reminded them of the circumstances of our emigration and settlement here. We have appealed to their native justice and magnanimity; and we have conjured them, by the ties of our common kindred, to disavow these usurpations which would inevitably interrupt our connections and correspondence. They too, have been deaf to the voice of justice and of consanguinity. We must, therefore, acquiesce in the necessity which denounces our separation, and hold them as we hold the rest of mankind, enemies in war, in peace friends.**

**We, therefore, the representatives of the United States of America, in General Congress assembled, appealing to the Supreme Judge of the world for the rectitude of our**

**intentions, do, in the name and  
by the authority of the good  
people of these colonies  
solemnly publish and declare,  
That these United Colonies are,  
and of right ought to be, *FREE  
AND INDEPENDENT STATES*; that  
they are absolved from all  
allegiance to the British crown  
and that all political connection  
between them and the state of  
Great Britain, THE UNITED  
NATIONS, TERRORIST STATES,  
THE BANKER MONOPOLIES, THE  
CORPORATION MONOPOLIES,  
THE IRS, THE MONEY AND  
TAXATION SYSTEMS, is, and  
ought to be, totally dissolved;  
and that, as free and independent  
states, they have full power to  
levy war, conclude peace,  
contract alliances, establish  
commerce, and do all other acts  
and things which independent  
states may of right do. And for  
the support of this declaration,  
with a firm reliance on the  
protection of Divine Providence,  
we mutually pledge to each other  
our lives, our fortunes, and our  
sacred honor.**

***JOHN HANCOCK [President]***

**New Hampshire    Delaware**

***Josiah Bartlett    Caesar Rodney***

***William Whipple    George Read***

***Matthew                Thomas***  
***Thornton              McKean***

**Massachusetts    Maryland**

***John Hancock    Samuel Chase***

***Samual Adams    William Paca***

***John Adams        Thomas Stone***

***Robert Treat        Charles Carroll***  
***Paine                of Carrollton***

***Elbridge Gerry***

**Virginia**

**Rhode Island    *George Wythe***

***Stephen              Richard Henry***

***Hopkins***

***Lee***

***William Ellery***

***Thomas  
Jefferson***

***Benjamin  
Harrison***

***Connecticut***

***Thomas Nelson,  
Jr.***

***Roger Sherman***

***Francis  
Lightfoot Lee***

***Samuel  
Huntington***

***Carter Braxton***

***William Williams***

***North Carolina***

***New York***

***William Hooper***

***William Floyd***

***Joseph Hewes***

***Philip  
Livingston***

***John Penn***

***Francis Lewis***

***Lewis Morris***

***South Carolina***

***Edward  
Rutledge***

***New Jersey***

***Thomas***



***Heyward, Jr.***

***Richard  
Stockton***

***Thomas Lynch,  
Jr.***

***John  
Witherspoon***

***Arthur  
Middleton***

***Francis  
Hopkinson***

***John Hart***

***Georgia***

***Abraham Clark***

***Button  
Gwinnett***

***Lyman Hall***

***Pennsylvania***

***George Walton***

***Robert Morris***

***Benjamin Rush***

***Benjamin  
Franklin***

***John Morton***

***George Clymer***

***James Smith***

***George Taylor***

***James Wilson***

***George Ross***

***ROBIN FOX***

**In 2012, OBAMA NATION OF  
DESOLATION is only a horny  
donkey among the beast's ten horny leaders who just want to sit on  
God's Mountain as THE ABOMINATION OF DESOLATION!**

**We've got another SHITLER in charge of another nation. [Shittah is a  
Hebrew term for the Holiest place on the Temple Mount and therefore,  
"SHITLER" would represent the next HITLER seeking dominion on  
God's Throne before God clears that dung heap off His  
mountain/mountains and pop that pimple called: THE DOME OF THE  
ROCK, which shields the name of a false god and false prophet, thus  
denying Israel the right to pray on the Temple Mount and build the  
Third Temple.]**

**Don't EVER try to disrespect those world leaders who tried to create a  
new financial system under the premise that they would make the  
world a better place called: "AMERITOPIA" or "UTOPIA." They fooled  
themselves and the general population, that just because smarter  
people invent, innovate, and create, this gave the banks THE RIGHT to  
impose LOAN DEBTS to the few in order to enslave the masses.**

**Respect those leaders who tried to break away from oppression, not  
realizing they would oppress their great grandchildren because of  
ANCIENT SYSTEMS initiated by those who patterned their 'new' money  
systems after ancient money systems.**

**All money systems throughout time have FAILED.**

**Today's MONEY SYSTEMS have so PROUDLY FAILED.**

**It's time for devout money worshippers to bow in a different direction –  
towards EARTH'S MESSIAH / CREATOR.**

**People who tried to hold on to the POWER OF MONEY have some respect in their PURE motivations to make this world a better place by harvesting the hard work of others and working hard themselves. They did 'WORK REAL HARD,' both those who earned lots of money, and those that didn't.**

**Un-FORTUNATE-ly, no money system in the world produced a WORLD THAT IS A BETTER PLACE spiritually, intellectually, religiously, or individually. [Unless you were lucky enough to be 'bailed out,' 'get a handout,' win the lottery, inherit lots of money, be given huge grant sums to make your dreams come true.]**

**Are you truly LIBERATED? No.**

**Are you truly FREE? No.**

**You are angry. You are just FOOLED into believing that you are FREE when you are not and so, whether you are passive or aggressive or PASSIVE AGGRESSIVE, you can conjure up as many psychiatrists and psychologists as your itching ears want to hear that all of your years were not spent in VAIN or VANITY when you thought that MONEY and TAXATION were beneficial to your liberation.**

**Then again, when you approach a more LIBERAL COMMUNIST APPROACH, you might not feel so bad about trying to obtain YOUR FREEDOM from.....those and that which and whom are not FREE.**

**Is ONE MONEY system better than another? Perhaps seeing U.S. Presidents on money is better than seeing communist or fascist rulers on money. Then when you observe how other countries have to endure seeing those ugly communist faces on their currency, you shouldn't necessarily boast: OUR MONEY IS BETTER THAN YOUR MONEY AND OUR MONEY CREATED A BETTER WORLD THAN YOURS!**

**An ugly COMMUNIST CHINESE LEADER'S portrait is now the dominant MONEY figure of the world, without which CHINESE people cannot buy or sell and to which AMERICAN PRESIDENTS are now made worthless.**

**We need to cancel COMMUNIST PLANS for money and develop a NEW WAY OF THINKING about the FEDERALIST PAPERS, THE U.S. CONSTITUTION, MONEY, TAXES and current laws without abandoning our AMERICAN OR EUROPEAN OR RUSSIAN histories – which have ALL SOUGHT FREEDOM from principles of slavery versus FREEDOM.**

**Let the world....the WHOLE world unite on FREEDOM. But is the WHOLE WORLD FREE? No. Just don't kill your neighbor because they are ugly enough to be looked at and say, "YOU ARE A TEST TUBE BABY!" Feeling like a GUINEA PIG in a lab experiment. YOU ARE! This is THE HOUR OF TRIAL that has come upon the whole world to test those who live on the earth!**

**MONEY and TAXATION were the beginning and the ending of the whole world, even America, from the time nations were first founded until today. Our Constitutional Framers made HUGE blunders with their introductions to REVENUE, REQUISITION, MONEY, TAXATION into the FREE WORLD.**

**MONEY and TAXATION models in America were adopted from Roman/European cults and not the signs of FREEDOM our first settlers wanted or even needed. Indians and Pilgrims faired fine without banks, money and taxes and this merciless mathematical monopoly game is a proven failure. It's time for a NEW EXPERIMENT and I am now writing a new PROPOSAL that will put an end to MONEY and TAXATION forever. There ARE ANSWERS and this CAN BE SOLVED - but a new system will have to be set up.**

**Don't worry. I am not a communist. I am not a socialist. I am not a capitalist. I am A FREE THINKER and believe in the right NOT TO WORK and be a slave to a series of government systems I DON'T BELIEVE IN! I don't know about you, but I am DONE, through, FINISHED being their slave!**

**Obama makes a great point why the American experimental system was and is a complete failure as he pimped himself and everyone else out like a prostitute. Although a liar and a hypocrite, Obama's plans to destroy American capitalism was long in communist planning, as the collapse of communist and socialist money systems occurred just before the capitalist fall.**

**No matter how PRIDEFUL we wave our American flags, the MONEY SYSTEM has oppressed everyone and we must end such oppression by re-arranging the democratic seats in Congress, who are all too corrupted by the world systems to care about a FREE and SOVEREIGN UNITED STATES OF AMERICA.**

**They have also ENSLAVED and HARRASSED the FREE NATION of Israel, also enslaved by the politics of money and taxation and energy agreements.**

**Let me first of all explain to you that I LOVE AMERICA. I LOVE THE BIBLE. I BELIEVE in the FREEDOM that GOD defined as FREEDOM and not how man, through money and taxation methods defined it on our spiritual and intellectual behalf.**

**I LOVE the fact that inventors invented all the great stuff we have enjoyed. I LOVE the fact that people smarter than me in the areas of building, inventing, creating, innovating, and getting out there and building many businesses so we could ENJOY the American lives we enjoyed throughout the 20<sup>th</sup> and 21<sup>st</sup> centuries could be possible.**

**I just DON'T BELIEVE that using MONEY and TAXATION should have been the methods to make such inventions and dreams come true. It is because of MONEY and TAXATION that many dreams were shattered and destroyed with nothing left but NICE LOOKING EMPTY BUILDINGS, Americans overworked and underpaid and fired after the CEOs collect their profits and go home.**

**My ancestors were all Europeans from Italy, Germany, Austria, Russia, Ireland, England, and Holland and migrated all over America.**

**I have always been a law abiding citizen, respecting God's Laws first and questioning EVERY CURRENT law to determine if those man made laws are in harmony with Biblical Faith and Reason. Many are NOT! And it is such MAN MADE rules and regulations that HURT instead of helped humanity that will address in this volume.**

**As of 2012, I have matured in my own faith to know that I want nothing more to do with the BAD and UGLY side of America. And whatever GOOD is left, I shall participate in whatever GOD almighty chooses for me as the path of His glory.**

**As a Fox News writer and contributor for well over 10 years, sometimes I had to step away and figure out some NEW IDEAS that might actually work in a world of HURRICANES, FIRES, FLOODS, EARTHQUAKES, PESTILENCE, DEATH, DISEASE, and unprecedented disaster and hardship. I felt a commission to take world events seriously and try to lighten the mood for some fun stuff on my facebook page.**

**While at the same time supporting and defending Fox News and their esteemed affiliates who nobly stuck with the Bible, the Constitution, American rights, and FREE TRADE principles, unfortunately, I felt sorry for them and their constituents because through MONEY and TAXATION they tried their absolute best to save the world. I applaud all of them for giving it their best try. Unfortunately it's too late to save the world through money and taxation and another idea has to occur in order for world peace to move forward.**

**So I always remained in the shadows, undercover, to explore what next piece of the puzzle I could find and continue to make the most powerful name in news my friends. I haven't always been a good friend with them and not so bold in applying for a job application due to distance factors of not having their offices close to me. So why not use my writing skills to apply by computer, while at the same time serving as a field agent? I LOVE FOX NEWS and can sometimes be among their harshest critics since I don't agree with them 100% of the time, nor accept many of their views on religion, money, or taxation,**

**although I do support their IDEALS within the system that condemns all the corruption.**

**I made THE BOOK OF REVELATION, in combination with silly and stupid stuff that Solomon would define as the meaningless pursuits of MADNESS and FOLLY, MY LIFE.**

**The END TIMES has been my LIFETIME STUDY which caused me to also study English, writing, computers, math, science, history, current events, and all kinds of great books and online resources which would enhance my personal endeavors to write some really great books.**

**As a FREE WRITER, I can assure you that I am a FINANCIALLY POOR WRITER who never sought to EARN MONEY doing what he loves doing the most. I suppose that if Fox News was in my town, I would have gladly marched right in there and gotten a job. But I was exactly where I needed to be for the time frame I experienced to gather another piece of REVELATION CLUES in the midst of turmoil and tragedy.**

**I am in the process of writing another book about my JOB EXPERIENCES.**

**Before I undertake the task of showcasing how companies took a nose dive into the lake of fire, I should first like to complete this volume about MONEY and TAXATION.**

**While modern FINANCIAL 'GURUS' fight and debate over how to create those magical numbers to pay off American NATIONAL DEBT over \$15 trillion; over how to BAIL OUT BANKS and CORPORATIONS with billions and trillions of dollars of loan debts; while financial geniuses make the argument that CITIBANK SHOULD BE BAILED OUT, but not Student Loan recipients; while conservatives preach the new Freemasonic Mormon gospel about how creating low waged jobs will save the socialist recipients from continual laziness and dependency on communist taxes and liberals will just argue back that spending trillions has to occur to make the illusion that is our financial systems function and pay everybody – both sides have missed out on a clear**

**opportunity to FREE all American and global slaves from slavery by TRYING SOMETHING REALLY NEW!**

**Does your head go blank when people give up on FREEDOM and pessimistically argue, “It’s no use. There is no other way than MONEY and TAXATION and LOANING MONEY and borrowing money on credit!”**

**I kind of look back at them rather puzzled as to HOW they can’t see the BIGGER PICTURE as GOD ORIGINALLY DESIGNED IT!**

**GOD ORIGINALLY DESIGNED the whole world to be FREE.**

**All of GOD’S RESOURCES were FREE. God did not set up the world with bankers or tax collectors or inspire that PRIDE would breed wars of CAIN VERSUS ABEL jealousy and so called, “COMPETITION.”**

**Man chose SLAVERY over freedom because he disobeyed God’s ordination of FREEDOM by listening to the devil’s promises of gaining the whole world if man does just one thing: DON’T WORSHIP GOD OR FOLLOW FREEDOM!**

**We all want FREEDOM but are repeatedly disappointed with these government systems that aren’t representing REAL FREEDOM that reflects Heaven’s glory of love, peace, sharing, giving, caring. The world has become HOSTILE, ANGRY, VIOLENT, NASTY, RUDE, MEAN, INSENSITIVE, DANGEROUS, JADED, DEPRESSED to the point of wanting to wench slap men like Joel Osteen and tell him to just SHUT UP YOU RETARDED IDIOT!**

**Then again, you really shouldn’t tell such a retarded idiot to shut up because it is his Biblical and Constitutional right to be a dummy if he wants to be a dummy and if you are in a government position and want to shut him up, you can’t, because, that idiot has the right to be an idiot in his own church and play his own game by his own rules in his own cult if he wants to!**

**Romney, after spending a lifetime in a Mormon cult, has been voted for by the democratic process. And because DEMOCRATS voted Obama**



**into office it is only logical that both sides, who follow a formula of SLAVERY versus freedom, will PROUDLY FAIL no matter who gets the presidency.**

**There is only ONE SAVIOR for AMERICA and ISRAEL and no man is going to do it.**

**My pathetic attempt to share about what I come to believe is FREEDOM will be forgotten by the stampeding footsteps of money, taxation, and war, which the LORD OF PROPHECY warned would destroy this entire planet due to man's sin and greed.**

**There are a LOT of cults that have been created in America to make money and corrupt established churches and doctrines, all protected by the freedom of religion amendment. L. RON HUBBARD, founder OF THE SCIENTOLOGY cult confessed that if you want to make a million dollars, create a new religion. That religion would cause Tom Cruise to loose three wives to this demonic possession.**

**If you want to worship a LIE that is YOUR RIGHT under the "FREEDOM OF RELIGION" amendment in your own house and God is your judge in the END.**

**When it comes to Fox News "Catholics" & "Christians," there are TWO critiques you never ever throw their way in a manner that is rude, insulting or disrespectful:**

- 1. CRITIQUE #1 – MANDATING RELIGIOUS INSTITUTIONS, EVEN THE CATHOLIC CHURCH IS A VIOLATION OF THE CONSTITUTION: When it comes to Fox News "Christian" believers many of them are "Catholics". Christians who aren't Catholic reject Catholicism. But this doesn't necessarily mean that the Catholics of Fox News aren't "Christians", because like BELIEVERS in any other "Christian" denomination that has some social conservative division based on some different Biblical perspective, some Fox News heroes, who happen to be deceived**

**by Catholicism, are STILL BELIEVERS! We can't really JUDGE certain Fox News Catholics for being Catholics because some of them are TRUE BELIEVERS in Jesus. Some aren't true believers in Jesus. Some are just traditional Catholics and never really had the time to thoroughly study the Bible, being wrapped up with the business of the heroism that comes from a busy college and career life. So we should HONOR THEM, RESPECT THEM, and be quick not to JUDGE THEM by throwing them into Catholicism Ville, disregarding everything they're trying to say just because they are part of what we as non-Catholics view as a "CULT." Even if we Biblically prove that Catholicism is a MASSIVE multi-billion dollar cult, like any other cult religion, we can still love and respect people who follow this massive delusion that has plagued the world since the Roman Empire became 'tolerant of Christianity.' Perhaps such a dialogue shocks you! Perhaps as a Christian BELIEVER you reject Catholicism as you would any other cult. Or, if you are a Catholic you don't understand why any Christian would call Catholicism a 'cult.' Well, I reject Catholicism entirely. But this doesn't cause me to loose respect for Bill O'Reilly or anyone on the Five such as Greg Gutfeld or Andrea Tantaros, who, while being Catholics have a dynamite message 75% of the time! Obama's ONE MISTAKE he made is that you should never ever attack the Catholic Church or ANY CHURCH from a political seat. When Obama, from a GOVERNMENT SEAT tried mandating Catholics in health care, there was a clear invasion of their church by a communist leader. I, personally, as a non-denominational, non-partisan Christian who VOTES for JESUS to be president over every law, rule, and decision made, reject Catholicism as a legitimate "Christian" organization on the basis of Scriptures. However, do I respect FOX NEWS "BELIEVERS" who believe in Jesus and have accepted him as their personal Lord and Savior? Yes. I can disagree with their 'religious points of view from the**

**Catholic perspective' which is largely based MORE on 'salvation by works,' versus, 'salvation through grace, mercy, and love' which are FREE. But one thing you don't do is ATTACK THEM, ATTACK their rights to have their own rules, laws, and regulations, anymore than you would want them to attack your freedoms that you enjoy by rejecting Catholicism. When Obama ATTACKED the Catholic Church by imposing a contraceptive mandate, I myself, although still maintaining that I disagree with Catholicism, would never have attacked their church in such a manner that Obama did by bringing THE GOVERNMENT into a long established religious institution. The CATHOLIC CHURCH, like every other religion, is protected by the first amendment and if you believe that what they worship and do is a LIE, they have THE RIGHT to believe in their LIE until you are able to convince them, verbally, by MUTUAL CONSENT that what they are following is a LIE and NOT THE TRUTH.**

- 2. CRITIQUE #2 – NEVER EVER ATTACK CAPITALISM because FOX NEWS and their affiliates are a “CAPTIALIST” organization. They have come to believe that “THE MONEY SYSTEM” was set up by the FEDERALIST PAPERS ideology. So it really doesn't help to preach the GOSPEL OF anti-Capitalist FREEDOM to Fox News without CAPITALIST philosophies being accepted as your mark of a “true American”, when they have an entirely DIFFERENT perspective about FREEDOM in ECONOMICS from a capitalist point of view.**
- 3. CRITIQUE #3 – You can disagree with Fox News, but don't INSULT THEM or DISRESPECT THEM – just try to understand their perspectives with an open mind, as you had to endure during the CNN and NBC ages of corrupting this country with their communist rhetoric. It only goes to follow that their hero, Barack Hussein Obama would attack and attempt to destroy this nation's laws by trying to CHANGE the set times and laws, as**

**Daniel predicted the beast would do through the ten horns of the beast has set up throughout the world. And why not America?**

**I always just tried calling everything with clarity in just saying, “All religions are really stupid and bogus and made of money.”**

**As a CHRISTIAN and not an atheist or pagan, I say this with clarity.**

**I can say that with authority by visiting 30 different “Christian” denominations discovering the same truth that all are ruled BY MONEY instead of the FREEDOM that Jesus Christ taught.**

**I am neither a “FISCAL CONSERVATIVE” or a “FISCAL LIBERAL”, although I mainly vote for “SOCIAL CONSERVATIVES” over “SOCIAL LIBERALS,” as at least you get SOME BIBLICAL WISDOM instead of none. However, the one main hole that ruins the whole cause of SOCIAL CONSERVATISM is MONEY and TAXATION, JUST LIKE THE LIBERAL SIDE.**

**All are being held hostage to a failed financial system.**

**I have never had anything to be FISCAL about because I don’t like FISCAL politics. I am a non-partisan, non-denominational Christian who believes in the authority and accuracy of the Bible, like many LAY believers in many different denominations believe. I believe in JESUS as the Savior of the world. I just don’t believe in MONEY or that MONEY is the savior of the world. I also don’t believe that TAXES are a good savior either.**

**As a “Christian” BELIEVER I don’t believe that MONEY or TAXES should exist at all and that no advanced or free society which wants to reflect Heaven’s glory should require such primitive concepts in money and taxes, which are a proven mathematical catastrophe from the beginning of civilizations until now.**

**The kind of CHANGES I would propose is FREEDOM without money and taxes, but doing this FEAT without DESTROYING America or its infrastructures – but to rebuild America and save America.**

**Obama, the great illusionist of revenge, hatred, dissension, factions, envy, strife, malicious talk, racism, gay advocacy, division, war, and total damnation made a very poor POSER of salvation because it was evident he sought to DESTROY instead of CREATE, BUILD, and INNOVATE a FREE society. Obama became a slave of a slave empire, hoping the slave masters would fight against each other and hate each other and America and Israel so much, while he masqueraded as a leader of light – much like that imposter the anti-Christ would do.**

**Both the Romney campaign and Obama campaign were GOLDMAN SACHS sponsored campaigns and everyone in America is just weary of being played by both sides when BOTH sides are WRONG in their formulas.**

**It is logical that the abuses that bankers, corporations, and politicians have exercised against the masses of citizens who are trying to respect them as their representatives, only to be repeatedly doomed to disappointment and misfortune should END their continual threats and provocations against the citizens of a FREE country.**

**To TRULY change into a DIFFERENT world, the world must choose to get rid of money and tax systems and INNOVATE, CREATE, INVENT, BUILD and be ENTREPRENEURS without MONEY or TAXES threatening or owning their dreams.**

**LOANS are a THREAT.**

**DEBTS are a THREAT.**

**TAXES are a THREAT.**

**MONEY is a THREAT.**

**Whether you are 'successful' or 'not successful' at overcoming this MONOPOLY GAME illusion really doesn't matter.**

**Both liberal spenders and conservative cutters are being played for FOOLS in a game that is causing too much anxiety, fighting, war, hatefulness, nastiness, division, depression, anger, and virtually provokes most crimes that occur in the world today.**

**When somebody else owns your education, your housing, your health care, your energy, your transportation – that's communism.**

**Obama's idea of taking money from the rich to give to the poor doesn't work either. Neither does the POOR working for the rich at a low wage job work either.**

**Conservatives argue, "Be HAPPY working a minimum wage job at part time so that you won't be dependent on the government for help!" But their formula doesn't work either. It works for them because they earn HIGH PAY and are empowered to talk that way.**

**Liberals argue, "Your system sucks. It doesn't work. You can't survive LOW WAGED jobs. These people need to be taken care of so we'll raise taxes and inflation to pay for everyone!" That doesn't work either.**

**Both sides argue that THEIR side is right while the other is wrong – but can't both sides be right and wrong from a Biblical view? Absolutely. But no church pulpit is ALIVE to preach to their congregations such very important Christian truths. They only listen to the whining, moaning, groaning and complaining of people upset with nobody being able to help them with their ridiculous bills.**

**I would attend Churches where they spent thousands of dollars to send people overseas, but if someone asked for help in their own backyard they would say, "Here's a newspaper. Go out and get a job!" or, "No, you aren't "A MEMBER" so we can't help you!" or, "Sorry, we**

**can't help you because we're broke. We just bought a new entertainment system so that Obama's followers can jump up and down and sing: "Halleluljiah!"**

**We have to trace, exactly where, through MONEY and TAXATION, GOVERNMENT FAILURE in Constitutional philosophy erred and then come forward into our current crisis in America and throughout the world and perhaps ask for the assistance of Christian churches in forming a new NATIONAL CHARTER calling for an end to money and taxation.**

**I don't know about you, but I'm sick and tired of the Rothschilds, the Rockefellers, Goldman Sachs, KKR, Wall Street, Bankers, the IRS and the whole God damned crowd of religious infidels trying to get you to buy the bull pucky they are selling!**

**I'm tired of them and their stupid system and if the only way to have personal reform is to be HOMELESS, then one must give up everything they built, which you have depended on.**

**They have made you dependent on THEM versus FREEDOM and have DESTROYED freedom by pricing and taxing everyone and everything – and THAT IS THE WRONG FORMULA!**

**By the time we get to our own mirror reflections, each of us are to blame for a complete and total surrender to someone or something that didn't have God's Seal of approval.**

**I, Robin Fox, have READ the FEDERALIST PAPERS for the first time in 2012. I bought this book during the age of GLENN BECK when he was on Fox News because it was only a few bucks. It was written by three of the FRAMERS of our U.S. CONSTITUTION: ALEXANDER HAMILTON, JAMES MADISON, and JOHN JAY.**

**THE FEDERALIST PAPERS are an EXCELLENT GUIDE in our understanding of HOW and WHY the US CONSTITUTION was written and inspired.**

**Here is my personal take on WHAT WENT WRONG from when the FEDERALIST PAPERS were written, what happened with the US CONSTITUTION, and how all the holes in what the Framers wrote have now become wider by the very imposters the authors of the Federalist papers wrote to us about. Literally every prediction of the FAILURE of this American experiment has been fulfilled by infiltrators of this good Christian country. I will not be giving you a communist, a socialist, a capitalist, or a Freemason perspective.**

**Just a new perspective perhaps you might have thought about, but weren't allowed to by your current SLAVE MASTERS who SPIN words for politics, so that both conservatives and liberals are in a continual war for truths that don't exist in Heaven's freedom and glory.**

**Here is what I learned about the FEDERALIST PAPERS and what might interest you about WHERE THE FRAMERS WENT WRONG and how those WRONG MINDED PHILOSOPHIES screwed up the entire United States:**

**The original 13 colonies were CHRISTIAN colonies founded by Christians who made different charters for their own states. These 13 colonies were founded by HARD WORKING Christians seeking freedom from the Tyrannies of Britain and other established monarchies who imposed HEAVY BANKING and TAXES on the common citizens in order to make ONE KING and his ELITE CIRCLES richer, while leaving the masses poorer.**

**The oppressions of the CATHOLIC CHURCH, combined with tyrannical monarchies, was enough for most Europeans to flee to the DREAM OF A FREE WORLD.**



**Europeans, once it became known that a NEW WORLD was discovered with countless resources abundant enough for each person to have a piece of land and property they could call their own, fled Europe in mass.**

**When the CHRISTIAN PILGRIMS first settled on American soil, they SHARED the FREE RESOURCES that God created FREE, not just among themselves, but with the INDIANS as they peacefully gave THANKS to God for being allowed to work hard and get a FREE RETURN for their hard labor. When a Libertarian like that idiot Stossel, gets up and tells Americans that the Puritan or Pilgrim way of life didn't work or couldn't work today, while at the same time telling Americans that it's okay to be a homosexual or be into the legalization of prostitution or go out among the homeless to insult them and degrade them with a MIS-REPRESENTATION of Christian Faith and doctrine, such MEN will never ever get a clue about FREEDOM because they are so BLINDED by the slavery that has surrounded them from the founding of this country down to now, that their idea of FREEDOM is liberation from HOLINESS, GOD'S LAWS, GOD'S WAY OF THINKING in order to justify SIN.**

**SIN was the #1 destroyer of this country from its founding until now and ONE SIN that goes unrecognized by most schools of thought is MONEY and TAXATION.**

**Getting back to the FEDERALIST PAPERS, the ORIGINAL 13 COLONIES were sharing earth's resources at no cost or obligations, without banks or taxes, until the British and European monarchies THREATENED THEIR FREEDOMS because of their lust for harnessing America's resources and bringing their FAILED European banking and taxing systems into a NEW WORLD where the DREAM OF FREEDOM was threatened by the SINS OF EUROPEAN 'MONEY' philosophy.**

**While CHRISTIANS were trying to establish a FREE CHRISTIAN SOCIETY not ruled by European banking and taxation, FREEMASON**

**imposters, THE WEEDS grew up alongside the wheat, corrupting our leaders and starting internal and external wars designed to imitate the devil's attack of the woman and her child**

**“JERUSALEM/ISRAEL/JEWS/CHRISTIANS” the moment they were born again with Jesus Christ's ascension into heaven.**

**It is my opinion that THE DEVIL created money. THE DEVIL inspired money and taxation among the world thrones he established in order to OPPRESS and HARRASS and THREATEN human freedom.**

**The EUROPEAN bankers of medieval times and the monarchies who exercised a tax based system, most likely modeled banking and taxation after TORAH LAWS that Moses wrote in the first five books of the Bible.**

**But the TORAH LAWS about money, taxes, and interest, were based on PAGAN MODELS and not as something that the God of Israel necessarily approved of since HE created the world free. Egyptians, when they kept Israel in slavery had a monetary system in which Egyptians were kept wealthy and Israelis kept poor.**

**We can TRACE the history of money all the way back to Egyptian exchanges.**

**But they were NOT based on GOD'S wisdom about FREEDOM.**

**So when the FREEMASONS, working alongside Christian FRAMERS of America, adopted an EGYPTIAN, BABYLONIAN, SYRIAN, RUSSIAN, EUROPEAN, MIDDLE EASTERN model for monetary exchanges and taxes, all the while building lodges which had a Bible, a Koran, and other religions on an altar in the middle of their ritualistic ceremonies, they REFERRED back to the doctrines of pagan states who had long established MONETARY systems based on money, taxes, and interest.**

**When coming into the FREE WORLD with the DREAM of having FREE LAND, FREE FOOD, FREE CLOTHING, FREE CHURCHES, and a**

**completely FREE SOCIETY void of European bankers and their tax systems, Europeans who BELIEVED in European models as a good platform, would soon be bound to REPEAT an ANCIENT tradition of creating a NEW MONEY system that would have the APPEARANCE of 'liberty from European monarchies,' only to IMITATE those systems all over again.**

**I am convinced that many framers of our U.S. CONSTITUTION were freemasons who believed in the Bible, but had more of a FREEMASON point of view about money and taxes, than a Biblical point of view. Even CATHOLICS had a 'salvation through hard works' mindset, while at the same time murdering any Jew or Christian who opposed established Catholic traditions and orthodoxies, which prohibited the natural citizen from carrying a Bible.**

**FREEMASONS had a WAR planned against Catholicism, but at the same time FREEMASONS had a new war planned against AMERICA and CATHOLICS, Christians, who looked to the Bible, naturally rejected Catholicism, as well as established European monarchies as an institution that God did not inspire or bless and sought to be FREED from that style and methodology of worship.**

**FREEMASONS, together with Christian men who were Bible Believing intellectuals, wrote the FIRST AMENDMENT of FREEDOM OF RELIGION because of the THREATS of the European monarchies, largely ruled by Catholic popes, bishops and their non-democratic kings.**

**The 13 colonies had 13 different Christian denominations which had broken away from Catholicism, in addition from seceding from European monarchies.**

**They started out FREE without banking and taxes until EUROPEAN bankers and taxers, mainly from Britain and France came with their weapons of warfare in order to take over the land, harness American**

**resources, and establish their own monarchy rule over certain American territories.**

**What I AGREE WITH in the Federalist papers argument is that a NEW NATIONAL DEFENSE was necessary to eliminate the THREATS of those European monarchies making an attempt to take over and dominate the NEW WORLD of FREEDOM. And today, with men like James Holmes running around, I would push for the second amendment rights for every American citizen to carry a concealed weapon for the purposes of public safety.**

**I love the fact that representatives from each of the 13 Christian colonies united to create: THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA to protect THE FREEDOMS the 13 colonies were enjoying until the British imposed their heavy ‘taxation without representation’ philosophies.**

**The 13 colonies had to have ‘the right to bear arms’ to defend this NEW WORLD.**

**Instead of having 13 separate colonies, which could be invaded any moment by the European monarchies, the 13 Christian colonies, UNITED, could defend the WHOLE EASTERN BORDER of America as ONE MILITARY versus 13 separate militaries. This idea was BRILLIANT!**

**When one considers the CIVIL WAR and the REVOLUTIONARY WAR, in which countless good men fought and died and became disabled by, these men took a stand on the battlefield to shake off EUROPEAN hostilities imposed by the monarchies, their Catholic institutions, their bankers and their tax collectors.**

**This was THE FRAMEWORK through which the writings of the FEDERALIST PAPERS and THE U.S. CONSTITUTION was written: A new “CHRISTIAN” community in a new “Christian” world, would establish the RIGHTS of a FREE CHRISTIAN SOCIETY to read and**

**study and interpret and live out the Bible, without Catholic harassment, oppression, threat, or provocation.**

**The RIGHT of a NEW FREE CHRISTIAN WORLD to not have EUROPEAN BANKERS and TAX COLLECTORS impose their FAILED monetary systems over a FREE WORLD is THE AMERICAN DREAM.**

**AMERICA'S RESOURCES were FREE and a new government could allow an OKLAHOMA LAND RUSH where people could stake their claim for FREE and Indians allotted their own land on their own terms. Indians seemed to do fine without banks or taxes and their cultures, although sometimes savage, primitive, and barbaric in their pagan revelry had TRUTH in their simplistic styles of living. They dwelled in tents and hunted for their food and didn't need banks or taxation like Europeans dwelled upon since the rise of the Roman Empire's cruel and oppressive government systems.**

**Today, in 2012, the DEMOCRATIC PARTY, as well as their monkey god president, Barack Obama [who received a monkey god idol by India when he first became president – this is not a racial statement but a Hindu statement, as well as a democratic 'evolutionary' perspective] VIOLATED EVERY RULE that the Framers of our Constitution warned us about.**

**The REPUBLICAN PARTY is STRICTLY for the CONSTITUTIONAL perspective about the American Republic and follows the U.S. CONSTITUTION in harmony with the Bible.**

**Whereas democrats, in collaboration with communists, seek to overthrow America's constitution, Republicans seek to preserve our constitutional "FREEDOMS".**

**While the ANTI-CHRIST seeks to change the set times and the laws, and with smooth talk and flattery deceives the minds of naïve individuals, while attacking the Israeli and Christian saints, being "SUCCESSFUL" until the time of wrath is completed, it only goes to**

**follow that the American Constitution, in addition to the Bible, would be attacked by the SOCIAL TRANSFORMERS of the anti-Christ's pyramid.**

**Before we get into the ERRORS of modern FOX NEWS thinking about Catholicism and MONEY, which the new communist democratic government naturally opposes and attacks, and rightly so, we need to start with WHERE the FRAMERS of the US CONSTITUTION went wrong so that when a communist democratic Muslim like Obama starts dismantling the whole American experiment, so that every BIBLE PERSON is a MUSLIM we can have a proper "CHRISTIAN" perspective of how THE BEAST got fatter.**

**We all as AMERICANS would agree with the FEDERALIST PAPERS about the importance of NATIONAL DEFENSE as a first priority so that when someone like Obama and his democratic communist sympathizers tried taking over our American government, the nation would be protected by Constitutional checks and balances.**

**HOWEVER, with UNMISTAKABLE clarity in Christian thought and dialogue, when it comes to MONEY and TAXES, naturally assumes that "MONEY AND TAXES" were never EVER THE SOLUTION, but ALWAYS THE PROBLEM!**

**But in both CONSERVATIVE and LIBERAL thought, money IS THE SOLUTION and never the problem. Don't condemn other religions! Those were SACRED and built on MONEY! Don't condemn MONEY because that's our god!**

**As much as we RESPECT the Framers of the U.S. CONSTITUTION and understand their MOTIVES as well as defending this doctrine against all enemies, foreign and domestic, the methodologies of money and taxes being applied to a FREE WORLD should be disagreed with, opposed, and maybe even abolished.**

**At the same time the DESTROYER named Barack Obama figured out a way to destroy the American infrastructure, in collaboration with those seeking the destruction of the ‘American way of life,’ some things this man said were true!**

**American businesses were built by hard working Americans who had a dream to build a business and become successful! I stand with Fox and their affiliates on that one undisputable point. You shouldn’t insult hard working Americans who fought to make their businesses become successful.**

**But we can’t all be like Nebuchadnezzar and conservatives always seem to have a Nebuchadnezzar mindset about ‘success’ and ‘achievement’ which isn’t confident, but arrogant:**

**Dt 8:17.**

**Dt 8:17 You may say to yourself, <sup>a</sup> “My power and the strength of my **hands<sup>b</sup> have** produced this wealth for me.”**

**Dt 8:18 But remember the LORD your God, for it is he who gives you the ability to produce wealth, <sup>c</sup> and so confirms his covenant, which he swore to your forefathers, as it is today.**

**Dt 8:19 If you ever forget the LORD your God and follow other gods <sup>d</sup> and worship and bow down to them, I testify against you today that you will surely be destroyed. <sup>e</sup>**

**Dt 8:20 Like the nations <sup>f</sup> the LORD destroyed before you, so you will be destroyed for not obeying the LORD your God. <sup>g</sup>**

**Da 4:28.**

**Da 4:28 All this happened <sup>e</sup> to King **Nebuchadnezzar**.**

**Da 4:29 Twelve months later, as the king was walking on the roof of the royal palace of Babylon,**

**Da 4:30 he said, “Is not this the great Babylon I have built as the royal residence, by my mighty power and for the glory <sup>f</sup> of my majesty?” <sup>g</sup>**

**Da 4:31** The words were still on his lips when a voice came from heaven, “This is what is decreed for you, King **Nebuchadnezzar**: Your royal authority has been taken from you.<sup>h</sup>

**cc 9:11.**

**Ecc 9:11** I have seen something else under the sun: The race is not to the swift or the **battle to the strong**,<sup>o</sup> nor does food come to the wise<sup>p</sup> or wealth to the brilliant or favor to the learned; but time and chance<sup>q</sup> happen to them all.<sup>r</sup>

**There are a few who started with a little bit of money and were able to succeed and Fox News always finds a small handful of them to showcase with PRIDE, like little girls at a lemonade stand cutely professing, “We made enough money to pay our investors back!”**

**But a majority of businesses DID RECEIVE a government grant, a government loan, an INVESTOR who came up with the cash, in order for Americans who had an idea to build a business to have that ability to BUILD THAT BUSINESS. If the world is ruled by money and you wanted to build your business or idea, you couldn’t do it without money because MONEY had become the god of every global system.**

**Personally, I HATE money. It’s stupid. It’s ungodly. It’s WRONG. No matter how many charities or good deeds people do in the name of money, it’s all WRONG! It doesn’t matter if your motives are good or whether you intended to save the world, MONEY is the CHIEF CAUSE of every problem imaginable, whether you are ‘successful’ at this illusion or not.**

**If the builders, entrepreneurs, and inventors of American ‘prosperity’ and ‘progress’ hadn’t surrendered to the loan, grant systems, tax, or money systems, created by the Rothschilds, Rockefellers and their affiliates, many American businesses wouldn’t have been created since BANKERS and TAX COLLECTORS had taken over American lands and the whole free world.**



**After all, isn't AMERICAN MONEY better than COMMUNIST or SOCIALIST money?**

**Maybe if we put all the presidential photos on money, that will inspire good 'Christian' and 'pagan' Americans to justify the use of money for 'success' and 'progress!'**

**I know. Let's put a price on food, on land, on medicine, on people, places, animals, and things!**

**The ROTHSCHILDS, ROCKEFELLERS and his other affiliates such as KKR and GOLDMAN SACHS, the FEDERAL RESERVE BANKERS and the IRS builders, would try to 'HELP' Americans become 'SUCCESSFUL' by government grants, loans and financial handouts in a similar pattern that BARACK OBAMA did when he bailed out all those corporations and banks that crashed from 2008 onward – thus fulfilling Stossel's argument that prostitution is OKAY.**

**Islamic Communist sympathizer Obama was just simply a PIMPED OUT PUPPET giving the prostitutes payment for their flesh. While the bankers and corporations got bailed out and forgiven with billions and trillions of dollars in order to 'SAVE THE WORLD', men like Stuart Varney blamed 'entitlement programs' as THE SOURCE of the great crash – picking on government programs such as medicare or food stamps – you know, those "SOCIALIST" programs that caused Stuart Varney's United Kingdom to FAIL and as a 'prophet of socialist doom' warns Americans that EVERYTHING WILL CRASH because of THE POOR!**

**This is where the liberal left gets agitated, because even though the liberal left tends to be a bunch of perverted porn junkies high on crack and other various illegal drugs, the conservative side also seems like a lie, just like liberal spending.**

**Whether you are a conservative spender or a liberal spender – MONEY IS THE LIE and quite possibly the MARK THE DEVIL'S BEAST.**

**And while MORE BAILOUTS and HANDOUTS continued for the bankers and corporations, there were NO BAILOUTS for Americans who became bankrupt. These same bankers who got bailed out confiscated American homes and land; they did not forgive Student Loan debts and sent bill collectors after Americans who didn't have any money to pay them back, thus further increasing their interest and principals, even punishing them when they defaulted; they RAISED TAXES; they raised the price of oil and gas to a ridiculous amount; they raised the prices of food; they imposed heavy HEALTH CARE bills to collect from the disabled, injured, unhealthy, and elderly citizens and imposed a new mandate to punish citizens for not choosing a health care plan.**

**My SOLUTION would have been to shut down the IRS and the BANKS and to:**

- 1. MAKE 'FREE' HEALTH CARE FOR ALL MANDATORY!**
- 2. MAKE 'FREE' ENERGY FOR ALL MANDATORY!**
- 3. MAKE 'FREE' HOUSING FOR ALL MANDATORY!**
- 4. MAKE "FREE" EDUCATION FOR ALL MANDATORY!**

**The SOCIALIST spin was that by taking TAXES from citizen income, THAT HELPS the poor, the needy, and the elderly become FREE! Does it? When you make cuts to one program to fund another, what you are really doing is making people watch one hand while something is going on in the other! It's a MAGIC SHOW – an ILLUSION designed to trick you and trap you with a game created by THE DEVIL HIMSELF!**

**The COMMUNIST SPIN was that 'the government will provide you with everything!' We will provide you with a job, but you HAVE TO WORK THAT JOB AND CAN'T QUIT! We will provide you with a house! But you have to do this and that to keep it or we'll send the police to your house and throw you into jail! We will provide you with health care,**

**but take half your income to pay for it and if you don't work anymore we'll kill you or kick you to the street to beg for your freedom!**

**The CAPITALIST spin is to laugh at those FAILED projects by preaching, "OUR SYSTEMS IS MORE SUCCESSFUL THAN YOURS AND YOU ARE JUST JEALOUS because we're FREE and you are not FREE!**

**But I'm sad to report that CAPITALISM like all other world systems is A LIE and A FAILURE and now consumed by the 666 totalitarian view that 'you cannot buy or sell without money!'"**

**Let's read Revelation 13 as a breaking point:**

***The Rev 13:16.***

**Rev 13:16 He also forced everyone, small and great,<sup>s</sup> rich and poor, free and slave, to receive a mark on his right hand or on his forehead,<sup>t</sup>**

**Rev 13:17 so that no one could buy or sell unless he had the mark,<sup>u</sup> which is the name of the beast or the number of his name.<sup>v</sup>**

**Rev 13:18 This calls for wisdom.<sup>w</sup> If anyone has insight, let him calculate the number of the beast, for it is man's number.<sup>x</sup> His number is 666.**

**Now when you look at the EGYPTIAN PYRAMID on the back of the ONE DOLLAR BILL with the word: MASON spelled out of ANNUIT COEPTIS: NOVUS ORDO SECLORUM, you can honestly see that GREEN TREE sitting in the middle of the Garden of Eden, the one GOD told you not to eat from or you would die!**

**MONEY IS THAT TREE God did not want us to eat from! The devil promised through money, "IF YOU EAT FROM THIS GREEN TREE YOU WILL NOT DIE! YOU WILL BECOME LIKE GOD AND RULE THE WHOLE WORLD!"**

**MONEY may very well be the MARK of the devil's beast and people missed that point.**

**I will now take excerpts from the FEDERALIST PAPERS to begin our journey as to why you don't have to be a socialist, a communist, a**

**dictator, or a democrat to disagree with long established thinking, which is naturally repulsive to all FREEDOM loving people:**

- 12. UNION AND THE NATIONAL REVENUE**
- 13. UNION AND ECONOMY IN GOVERNMENT**
- 30. A GENERAL POWER OF TAXATION**
- 31. THE NECESSITY OF A NATIONAL POWER OF TAXATION**
- 32. EXCLUSIVE AND CONCURRENT POWERS OF TAXATION**
- 33. THE CONSTITUTIONALITY OF NATIONAL TAX LAWS**
- 34. CONCURRENT AUTHORITY IN TAXATION**
- 35. FURTHER REASONS FOR AN INDEFINITE POWER OF TAXATION**
- 36. INTERNAL TAXES: DIRECT AND INDIRECT**

**After reading this I was APPALLED!**

**FREEMASONIC thinking about BANKING and TAXES was first written by some of our Framers! Some Framers were Christians and some were FREEMASONS. You COULD read these words more in a FREEMASON context than you could a Christian context because CHRISTIAN FREEDOM was destroyed by the above philosophies which caused American prosperity to be choked, thwarted, threatened and virtually eliminated as the drums of war beat louder than a more sensible approach.**

**I don't really disagree with any of the FEDERALIST PAPERS dissertations over NATIONAL SECURITY, THE BALANCE OF GOVERNMENT POWERS between the three branches, the UNITY of ALL UNITED STATES or having a military system to protect and defend our borders. All are AGREED to and sworn upon to defend by our fighting and government heroes.**

**But were MONEY and TAXES, which I don't believe in as a Christian, the proper way to go? I believe the answer is NO!**

**You might argue, "But who would have an incentive to go off to war without getting paid for it? That's ILLOGICAL! Who would want to work if they didn't get PAID by someone else?"**

**Our first militaries were filled with volunteers who didn't get paid money but fought for FREE. The ambition to FIGHT was FREEDOM and not for money.**

**Not only did many of our first fighting heroes who founded this country fight without getting a paycheck they fought for THAT FREEDOM! The RIGHT for America to have FREE LAND, FREE FOOD, FREE CLOTHES, FREEDOM OF RELIGION AND SPEECH; without the imposition of MONEY and TAXES threatening and harassing the FREE WORLD.**

**But FREEMASONS, coming from European banking and tax collectors, religious institutions and monarchies had their own plans with just how to HARNESS this FREE WORLD by resorting to reforming European style monies into a new monetary system that would have just enough power to convince them that a NEW FINANCIAL SYSTEM could unite these FREE STATES!**

**Could we TODAY, hit the reset button, close all banks and tax collection agencies, end the loan debt system, and essentially create a new society that can work and survive WITHOUT being priced and taxed? Well, it's how HEAVEN WORKS!**

**In God's Kingdom there is no necessity for banks and taxation. Everyone is FREE. Everyone SHARES resources in an unselfish manner worshiping GOD as the AUTHOR and CREATOR of everything.**

## **The Fellowship of the Believers**

**Ac 2:42 They devoted themselves to the apostles' teaching<sup>x</sup> and to the fellowship, to the breaking of bread<sup>y</sup> and to prayer.<sup>z</sup>**

**Ac 2:43 Everyone was filled with awe, and many wonders and miraculous signs were done by the apostles. <sup>a</sup>**

**Ac 2:44 All the believers were together and had everything in common. <sup>b</sup>**

**Ac 2:45 **Selling their possessions and goods, they gave to anyone as he had need.** <sup>c</sup>**

**Ac 2:46 Every day they continued to meet together in the temple courts. <sup>d</sup>  
They broke bread <sup>e</sup> in their homes and ate together with glad and sincere hearts,**

**Ac 2:47 praising God and enjoying the favor of all the people. <sup>f</sup> And the Lord added to their number <sup>g</sup> daily those who were being saved. <sup>h</sup>**

**I believe that JOHN STOSSEL, an avowed Libertarian on Fox News was wrong when he put the PILGRIMS up on his show and told the whole world their system didn't work then and wouldn't work today.**

**Their system WORKED for many years before the US CONSTITUTION was written and had their own methods of providing for themselves and their families, from a Christian point of view, without money and taxation systems interrupting their work.**

**This continual provocation and threatening posture by the BANKING AND TAXATION systems has to end.**

**Stossel is right about one thing though: A godless world full of prostitution, gay people, drug abusers, immoral people and LAZY people who worship other gods could never make such a society work out. Society would have to be entirely ONE JUDEO-CHRISTIAN country working together as this country started out to be with the arrival of the first settlers.**

**Today's people are like cattle, following the herd instinct, rather than independently making choices which actually help to improve all civilizations. Can we do this without the burdening structures of pricing and taxing everyone and everything?**

**God does in His Kingdom. Why can't we do this down here?**

**Oh yes, the drum beats of war grow louder every time a move for freedom might be near. And we HAVE TO FUND THE WAR!**

**Or do we? To work without getting paid would mean EVERYTHING has to be FREE! Is the world ready to do that IF THEY REALLY WANT SUCH A SOCIETY? I think the answer is universally YES!**

**RETHINKING THE FEDERALIST PAPERS ON A CONSTITUTIONAL LEVEL WITHOUT BETRAYING OUR CONSTITUTION, OUR BILL OF RIGHTS, OUR BIBLICAL FREEDOMS, BY ASSESSING WHERE WE ALL WENT WRONG AND MAKE IT RIGHT AND PERHAPS BE BRIGHTER IN DEFENDING OUR PERSONAL, NATIONAL, AND GLOBAL SECURITY WITHOUT NUCLEAR WAR ASPIRATIONS THAT ENEMIES OF FREEDOM HAVE 101**

**These were the subtle moments when FREEDOM would be lost.**

**Concerning the General Power of Taxation**

***From the New York Packet.***

***Friday, December 28, 1787.***

**[Alexander Hamilton](#)**

**To the People of the State of New York:**

**IT HAS been already observed that the federal government ought to possess the power of providing for the support of the national forces; in which proposition was intended to be included the expense of raising troops, of building and equipping fleets, and all other expenses in any wise connected with military arrangements and operations.**

**ROBIN FOX: MONEY should not have been the primary incentive. What the BIBLICAL teachers ought to have taught is that they could return to their homes, which would be FREE. They could get FREE WEAPONS, FREE UNIFORMS, FREE PROVISIONS at no cost and that FREEDOM would be their INCENTIVE to fight off the British. MILITARY DEPENDENCY on MONEY and the GOVERNMENT dependency on a 'TREASURY' or a 'TAX' system was THE FIRST MISTAKE. The PAYCHECK should have been FREEDOM. It wasn't. We could have done ALL OF THE ABOVE without money and dependency on money. The 13 colonies had survived on their own just fine without money, but agreed that a STATE as well as a UNIFIED national defense took priority. However, they forgot that EUROPEAN MONEY, BANKING and TAXATION were three more reasons why they left European militaries in order to establish their own. The fact we had to PAY money for arms was the beginning of the ending of the great war between:**



**MILITARY SPENDING and MILITARY BUDGET CUTS, both of which led to the demise of our military system and the spiritual hopelessness of so many fighting heroes returning home to debts, loan debts, houses owned by the government, the state, or the bank, land and property that wasn't theirs but someone else's, and a health care system that they 'couldn't afford' 'had no money to pay for,' and died in "THE FREE WORLD" if they didn't die in battle.**

**To state that MONEY had to be THE PRIMARY INCENTIVE for our military is where we went wrong! Our SERVICE should have been voluntary – the INCENTIVE FREEDOM. By using European banking systems as a model for MONEY and using money to PAY our troops, should never have been THE INCENTIVE for troops being motivated to war against the European invaders. IN TRUTH. Money was NEVER THE MOTIVE OF AMERICAN FIGHTING HEROES. Churches and the Bible DID INSPIRE THEM FIRST to fight for their FREEDOMS. If a paycheck was their motive, a lot of men would not have fought such wars because they got paid VERY LITTLE. They gave up their lives for FREEDOM, even the FRAMERS of the U.S. CONSTITUTION. MONEY was not their inspiration. The God of Israel in Jesus' Name was their inspiration. But the European Rothschild banking mindset of collecting revenue and taxes would pop up like a snake rising out of a basket hearing a magical flute.**

**But these are not the only objects to which the jurisdiction of the Union, in respect to revenue, must necessarily be empowered to extend. It must embrace a provision for the support of the national civil list; for the payment of the national debts contracted, or that may be contracted; and, in general, for all those matters which will call for disbursements out of the national treasury. The conclusion is, that there must be interwoven, in the frame of the government, a general power of taxation, in one shape or another.**

**ROBIN FOX: The conclusion is that there "MUST BE" interwoven, in the frame of government, A GENERAL POWER OF TAXATION?"**

**This is CLEARLY the second mistake our Framers made in their thinking at the urging of Hamilton's words here.**

**If the complaint of Fox News writers and affiliates is that ‘NOBODY SHOULD DEPEND ON THE GOVERNMENT and you should be SELF RELIANT and DO IT YOURSELF!’ then why would we preach that the GOVERNMENT SHOULD DEPEND ON THE PEOPLE’S HARD work, sweat, and tears to pay for it?**

**If the Stuart Varney argument is that NOBODY SHOULD get anything for free, that Earth’s resources shouldn’t be free, and that NO ENTITLEMENT PROGRAMS should exist to pay for the poor, the needy, the disabled, the elderly, then why should citizens pay for the government to be entitled to their own hard work?**

**This led to the law of the INCOME TAX in which YOUR HARD WORK has a certain percentage donated to the IRS to pay for this government! You can’t find this in the Bible! You can’t find it in Heaven. You can’t find it in the Gospel of Jesus Christ! And if you find it in the Torah, they also modeled some of their laws and teachings after the pattern of other countries, just like having multiple wives, creating money, taxing, charging interest, slavery, women being treated as second class citizens – GODLY MEN CAN GET IT WRONG.**

**I believe that just like many Christian and Jewish institutionalized leaders got it wrong throughout the centuries when it comes to such social issues, so could some of the GODLY HEROES of the U.S. Constitution get it wrong for laying the framework of a new government, dependent on TAXES to pay for it!**

**If the STUART VARNEY clenched teeth argument against FOOD STAMPS and ENTITLEMENT PROGRAMS is true, then we need to cut out the GOVERNMENT from taking people’s incomes to pay for it!**

**Why pay for a government that won’t pay for you?**

**Is the CURRENT GOVERNMENT representing you?**

**What are you paying HIGHER TAXES FOR?**

**The government?**

**The military?**

**Energy?**

**Housing?**

**Transportation?**  
**Education?**  
**Health Care?**

**This list goes on and on and on!**

**If we are going to cut entitlement programs that the poor and the needy depend on, then we'll have to SHUT DOWN THE IRS and therefore, shut down the ENTIRE GOVERNMENT COMPLETELY!**

**I would argue with Stuart Varney and some Fox News capitalists that the GOVERNMENT is NOT ENTITLED to your income in any percentage rate, nor is any corporation entitled to own you by giving you a paycheck that doesn't pay for housing, health care, transportation, energy, and education!**

**CAPITALISM, like Socialism and Communism is NOT A FREE SYSTEM but a SLAVE SYSTEM, also dependent on government! Perhaps that comment would INSULT capitalists who depend on MONEY and TAXATION for salvation over other government systems, which really are warped fun house mirrors of capitalist doctrines anyway.**

**Why?**

**HAMILTON: Money is, with propriety, considered as the vital principle of the body politic; as that which sustains its life and motion, and enables it to perform its most essential functions.**

**ROBIN FOX: WHY DID WE FLEE EUROPE? Christians did not consider European monetary systems as the vital principle of the body of FREEDOM! MONEY does not sustain life and motion. It has not sustained the life and motion of ANY CIVILIZATION since the world's beginning when the devil sat in Adam and Eve's garden! MONEY does not enable ANY GOVERNMENT to perform its most essential functions, which only ought to be about getting toilet paper to the people, gas to the gas stations, roads being paved, WITHOUT COST to 'consumers.'**

**This philosophy that you are entitled to ‘GET PAID” “MONEY” for your hard work is a stupid and primitive concept that has JAILED every freedom loving person since the beginning of time!**

**Why can’t you work HARD without MONEY? I disagree with Alexander Hamilton here and believe this is more in keeping with FREEMASON BANKING among the Rothschild/Rockefeller world of doing business, than how a Christian State and Christian Federal government would have looked like if our preachers and teachers had refused to accept MONEY to form militaries and fight wars and have houses and exchange goods and services.**

**MONEY is A HANDOUT!**

**It is true that a lot of people “EARNED MONEY ON THEIR OWN,” and created a business ‘ON THEIR OWN,’ but a majority of people had to have a grant, a loan, or some investor to believe that their company would become successful in order to make that business work.**

**Obama was wrong when he stated, “YOU DIDN’T BUILD YOUR BUSINESSES ON YOUR OWN!” Truthfully, Americans DID, but what this monkey god should have said was, “A lot of people who became prosperous received a bank loan, a grant, or an investor so they could work hard and build their businesses.” And leave it at that.**

**I personally WROTE FOR FREE. I posted FREE WRITINGS on a FREE WEBSITE and used a FREE FACEBOOK PAGE to socially communicate with SUCCESSFUL people at Fox News who inspire me. They got good paychecks by working hard, while I did not. I am not jealous nor envious of people who work hard and get a good paycheck.**

**I am just not a believer in MONEY and TAXATION. No worries, I have also worked hard, as my JOB HISTORY resume PROVES in another volume. I played by their rules and failed because of their failures and not because of my failures. I don’t sit around blaming myself or even the employers who fired me – I blame the greed of MONEY and TAXATION for ruining our dreams and goals and destroying our youthful ambitions.**

**MONEY and TAXATION were not a good method to make my own personal dreams come true. In fact, when I wasn't working or EARNING MONEY, I was HAPPIER because I was FREE to go where I wanted, do what I wanted, write what I wanted to write, read what I wanted to read, explore what I wanted to explore – and THAT FREEDOM enhanced by own writing endeavors so that I could become a "SUCCESSFUL" writer without getting PAID for it.**

**Fox News would often stick their tongues out at me saying, "HA! HA! HA! THIS IS WHAT IT'S LIKE TO EARN A PAYCHECK! ISN'T IT GREAT?"**

**I would laugh time and time again. I would laugh at them and they would laugh at me. We kind of both complimented and insulted each other quite well time and time again through our invisible saber rattlings. But BOTH sides of the argument can be right – kind of a statistical tie.**

**If you harvest a farm for yourself, then harvest a farm for yourself. It's YOUR RIGHT to your own land and property! If you go to Church, only JESUS can inspire you to share the fruits of your hard labor with someone who might not have land or property. However, if EVERYONE was free and all land was free and no price was placed on people, places or resources, there would be no homeless or poor people.**

**My theory is that MONEY is THE MARK OF THE BEAST because you can't BUY OR SELL WITHOUT IT and the BEAST THRIVES upon these systems because it OPPRESSES GOD'S PEOPLE AND GOD'S CREATION.**

**I would rather have had the framers use FREEDOM as the INCENTIVE for defending our borders, defending the FREE RESOURCES that Pilgrims shared without banks or taxes.**

**HAMILTON: A complete power, therefore, to procure a regular and adequate supply of it, as far as the resources of the community will permit, may be regarded as an indispensable ingredient in every constitution.**

**ROBIN FOX:** Well, what do you say to that Stuart Varney? The **GOVERNMENT** depends on the **RESOURCES OF THE COMMUNITY** and is **DEPENDENT** on this as the **“INGREDIENT IN EVERY CONSTITUTION!”**

That in itself sounds like **COMMUNISM** whether you agree or not. For as surely someone like Stuart Varney, who came from Socialist UK, saw the collapse of masses of people depending on the government for money through heavy taxation, so you can reverse that and say that the **GOVERNMENT** can collapse for dependency on the hard work of others! As the ‘people should not depend on the government,’ ‘the government should not depend on the people.’”

**HAMILTON:** From a deficiency in this particular, one of two evils must ensue; either the people must be subjected to continual plunder, as a substitute for a more eligible mode of supplying the public wants, or the government must sink into a fatal atrophy, and, in a short course of time, perish.

In the Ottoman or Turkish empire, the sovereign, though in other respects absolute master of the lives and fortunes of his subjects, has no right to impose a new tax. The consequence is that he permits the bashaws or governors of provinces to pillage the people without mercy; and, in turn, squeezes out of them the sums of which he stands in need, to satisfy his own exigencies and those of the state. In America, from a like cause, the government of the Union has gradually dwindled into a state of decay, approaching nearly to annihilation. Who can doubt, that the happiness of the people in both countries would be promoted by competent authorities in the proper hands, to provide the revenues which the necessities of the public might require?

**ROBIN FOX:** The fact that people didn’t have **“REVENUES”** was based on the banking and tax models of Europe. People leaving Europe were about to be freed from the demonic possession that European leaders were under and those European leaders, obsessed with retaining **POWER** over their ‘**SUCCESSFUL**’ systems, didn’t **WANT** the people leaving them to be free. **SUCCESSFUL** leaders depended on their **SLAVE LABORERS** to keep their elitist utopias alive. **SUCCESSFUL**

**and WEALTHY people took heavy taxes and paid very low wages, depending on the “HARD WORK” of others to pay for their own lavish lifestyles. People were oppressed by armed militaries, ruled by the Catholic and State elite and didn’t want to follow these goons anymore. Settling in a NEW FREE WORLD was more appealing than being SLAVE LABORERS for kings who did not represent the KING OF KINGS accurately.**

**Europeans were soon to seek becoming a FREE AMERICA after Amerigo Vespucci’s discovery of the New World and followed by Christopher Columbus’ finalizing the discoveries.**

**The British tried through warfare to bring America down and FAILED. So THE MASONIC LODGE became ONE of MANY platforms to corrupt our good Christian leaders into abandoning Christianity to embrace some other new BOUGHT AND PAID FOR way of thinking.**

**People would have had their necessities provided under a truly Christian country where the needs and wants and desires of each person would be fulfilled without banking money and taxation. The fact that we had to use money and banking and taxation, even WITH representation, to harness our ‘hard work’ was what defeated this country the moment it was born! Just one adherence to Freemasons and their bankers and tax collectors was a compromise that would lead to every problem in America and even EUROPE thereafter. To say that Middle Eastern countries were ruled by fascist dictatorial Islamic rulers is the truth. Their systems, like European systems were a threat and an oppression to human FREEDOMS that Earth’s Creator made us to enjoy and experience without some DONKEY becoming the mascot of world rulers who found humor in their own mirror reflections! But MONEY in every land ruined FREEDOM. But the people were FOOLED into believing that FREEDOM could be obtained by USING money – for a GREATER GOOD!**

**HAMILTON: The present Confederation, feeble as it is intended to repose in the United States, an unlimited power of providing for the pecuniary wants of the Union. But proceeding upon an erroneous principle, it has been done in such a manner as entirely to have**

frustrated the intention. **Congress**, by the articles which compose that compact (as has already been stated), **are authorized to ascertain and call for any sums of money necessary**, in their judgment, **to the service of the United States**; and their requisitions, **if conformable to the rule of apportionment**, are in every constitutional sense obligatory upon the States.

**ROBIN FOX:** Congress representatives would call for **ANY SUMS OF MONEY NECESSARY** to the service of the United States, but were **CONSERVATIVELY** required to conform to the **RULE OF APPORTIONMENT**. In other words, don't spend more than you take in! Sounds **RESPONSIBLE**! In our "Christian Republic" we would want to honor God by not going into debt or being in debt to another country, a foreign land, or even a banker or a tax collector here on American soil, so such a **NOBLE** and **RESPONSIBLE** principle would be: **DON'T LET THE GOVERNMENT SPEND MORE THAN IT TAKES IN!**

But such a **CONSERVATIVE** "Christian" point of view could never work. The reason why **IT COULDN'T WORK** is that math is **MERCILESS**. **MONEY** is not based on **MERCY** or **GRACE**, but on **ABSOLUTE NUMBERS** and if you **FAIL** to reach those numbers **YOU WILL FAIL!** This is why conservatives always preach the gospel of "**SUCCESS**" versus "**FAILURE**", while liberal democrats just laugh and say, "Sorry, but it's just simply not reality."

With many **WORLD WARS**, more **MONEY** was required from the **TREASURY** to be "borrowed" from the European Rothschild bankers and the Rockefeller oil interests. **HONEST** math was never achieved by this government, which always had to keep **SPENDING** a secret as they had the ability to print their own money, as much of it as they wanted to circulate and **PAY EVERYBODY**, no matter how much or how little it took to make **THEIR SOCIETY** work for them.

Sure, we'll get rid of African slavery, and make **EVERYONE** a slave! We'll **CONTROL** your hard work and reduce you to the lowest wages possible while helping ourselves to **MORE MONEY** if making enough of our own money doesn't work.



**I really don't want to give a SECRET SERVICE LESSON on the HISTORY of money, from the founding of this country until now. If you want to learn the history of the creation of global money and taxation, there are plenty of resources out there to learn from. I actually did some research under the CLONING 666 AND HISTORY AND FUTURE OF THE MONEY OF THE BEAST.**

**In this volume, we are simply doing an OVERVIEW of modern and historical VIEWS about MONEY, where THEY went wrong, and how WE can FREE OURSELVES today from the historical and current pyramids of slavery that have been built by the blood, sweat, and tears of countless underpaid slaves who gave their labor to elitists that cashed in and cashed out and called it "SUCCESS" and "FREEDOM" at their expense.**

**ALEXANDER HAMILTON: These have no right to question the propriety of the demand; no discretion beyond that of devising the ways and means of furnishing the sums demanded. But though this be strictly and truly the case; though the assumption of such a right would be an infringement of the articles of Union; though it may seldom or never have been avowedly claimed, yet in practice it has been constantly exercised, and would continue to be so, as long as the revenues of the Confederacy should remain dependent on the intermediate agency of its members.**

**ROBIN FOX: "as long as the revenues of the Confederacy should remain dependent on the intermediate agency of its members." The word "DEPENDENT" has become repugnant among conservative thinking because nobody should EVER DEPEND on the government or its members for revenue! Right? Alexander Hamilton meant well and had the best intentions, but if you used such language TODAY, what would the CONSERVATIVE argument be? What would the LIBERAL response be?**

**LIBERAL SPENDERS couldn't find any revenue exclusively from the SLAVE LABORERS, so they turned to the WEALTHY to find their taxes, as well as GREEDY INFLATION among their corporate benefactors which would be TAXED at an even higher rate, which is where**

**CONSERVATIVE ARGUMENTS** win their case. Spending beyond what you take in leads to **DEBT**. If you have to **BORROW** money you are **DEPENDENT** on someone **ELSE** to help you succeed! Whether you succeed **ON YOUR OWN** or not, all **DEPENDS ON YOU!** But you would have to **DEPEND** on **HARD WORKERS** to make your personal ambitions come true. But you need a **HANDOUT, A LOAN, A GRANT** – a **HAND UP**, but the conservative argument is that the **GOVERNMENT** shouldn't do this: **HARD WORKING PEOPLE SHOULD!**

**ALEXANDER HAMILTON:** What the consequences of this system have been, is within the knowledge of every man the least conversant in our public affairs, and has been amply unfolded in different parts of these inquiries. It is this which has chiefly contributed to reduce us to a situation, which affords ample cause both of mortification to ourselves, and of triumph to our enemies.

**What remedy can there be for this situation, but in a change of the system which has produced it in a change of the fallacious and delusive system of quotas and requisitions?**

**ROBIN FOX:**

The **ANTI-CHRIST** comes to **CHANGE** the set times and the laws and when Obama became president of the United States, we no longer needed the anti-Christ to destroy the set times and the laws: We had Obama! Banks went bankrupt. The **MASTERS OF THE NEW WORLD ORDER** went bankrupt because of **ELITIST GREED** who cashed in and cashed out at the expense of the **HARD WORKERS** they stole money from to enrich themselves.

Charles Gasparino wrote an **EXCELLENT** book entitled: **BOUGHT AND PAID FOR**, which shows the circles that empowered Obama to become president. This was going to be a **CHANGE** themed president. In July 2012, Obama caused an **UPROAR** among conservatives and business owners when he said, **“YOU DIDN'T BUILD THAT! SOMEONE ELSE DID!”** What I think he meant to say was that a majority of American businesses started with some kind of government loan or government grant or program that helped them make their own dreams for building a business come true, not that **THEY DIDN'T BUILD IT.**

**Well, a good, obedient capitalist like Dave Ramsey who had NOTHING HANDED TO HIM BUT DID IT ALL HIS WAY would disagree. And the wars fought between conservatives and liberals raged on, with both 2012 presidential candidates being GOLDMAN SACHS funded candidates.**

**Neither ROMNEY nor OBAMA had a formula for REAL CHANGE to set the working slaves FREE.**

**Being a WORKING SLAVE was the theme of both liberals and conservatives and while EMPOWERING the slave masters and slave drivers the slaves still didn't feel FREE and became more angry and upset and rebellious.**

**What remedy can there be for this situation, but in a change of the system which has produced it in a change of the fallacious and delusive system of quotas and requisitions?**

**To answer HAMILTON'S question: FREEDOM is the remedy. Whenever CONSERVATIVES argue in favor of the use of MONEY and TAXES, they justify it on the basis of some new war that needs to be fought or some new hospital that needs to be built, arguing, "THERE IS NO OTHER WAY THAN TO DEPEND ON MONEY, GRANTS, LOANS, until we figure out another way!" They never figured out ANOTHER WAY!**

**FREEDOM is the answer. With all the natural disasters and loss of jobs and loss of housing, the world has become a GHETTO state.**

**HAMILTON: What substitute can there be imagined for this ignis fatuus in finance, but that of permitting the national government to raise its own revenues by the ordinary methods of taxation authorized in every well-ordered constitution of civil government? Ingenious men may declaim with plausibility on any subject; but no human ingenuity can point out any other expedient to rescue us from the inconveniences and embarrassments naturally resulting from defective supplies of the public treasury.**

**ROBIN FOX: Uhm. A substitute that can be IMAGINED is to NOT PERMIT the national government or any state or local government to**

**“RAISE MONEY” by ANY method of TAXATION! TAXATION shouldn’t even exist and the IRS shut down.**

**If HEALTH CARE depends on the IRS something is WRONG! If we made ALL HEALTH CARE RESOURCES free to the patients, we wouldn’t need higher taxes or an IRS and the fact that the IRS threatens HEALTH CARE means that CRIMINALS are fooling you!**

**For the citizens to have to pay for ANY government, whether that government represents them or not, is just simply using another reformed monarchy system, where, instead of having one king, we have 500 kings and those 500 kings will vote for whether they want one overlord president versus another over lord president to rule, uhm, what?**

**Has this government, under OBAMA represented you? No, because he represents DESTRUCTION and not salvation. I would never seek to destroy the American government or transform it by destroying it, but rather, offering SLAVES that REPRESENTATIVES claim to WORK REAL HARD FOR, the chance to be FREE.**

**CAPITALISM is not any freer than communists or socialists. All three are intertwined.**

**What good is NATIONAL SECURITY when bankers and tax collectors, land owners and educators hold your lives hostage? Your personal security is ALWAYS threatened by representatives who don’t represent your BIBLICAL RIGHTS to life, liberty, and the pursuit of happiness. When government leaders themselves have to tax, borrow, and spend, tax, borrow, and spend, and then threaten you and your family with taxing and borrowing and spending, such a system has COLLAPSED and FAILED and they want to continue this madness!**

**Jesus said, “YOU CAN’T SERVE BOTH GOD AND MONEY!” God is a GOD OF FREEDOM. Since He created Earth’s resources FREE and people FREE you can’t depend on the SLAVE LABOR of others to make a government survive. Conservative argument has suggested, “If you work real hard for the wealthy, you can become wealthy too!” The liberal argument has been, “By TAXING THE WEALTHY more money,**

**we can help the poor more!” But they are all wrong because you can’t serve both GOD and MONEY, even though a GOOD, OBEDIENT conservative capitalist like Dave Ramsey might disagree. Are you catching my drift? I pick on conservatives at Fox News, even though I like them better than their liberal opponents – both sides are wrong in their formula for “FREEDOM.”**

**Liberal spenders say, “We must spend trillions to pay for everyone and everything.” Fiscal conservatives just simply say, “We don’t have enough REVENUE. We are spending more than we are taking in and borrowing more money than the government has. Is your proposal to RAISE TAXES to generate revenue? Well, we need to make SPENDING CUTS and BUDGET CUTS and cut here and cut there, instead of raising taxes and overspending and overborrowing and over taxing and over inflating!”**

**So there has been an abusive THREAT against EVERYONE and with all the over spending, over borrowing, over taxing, over inflating, we’ve had to over cut spending, over borrow MORE to replace those cuts, over CUT TAXING, over CUT INFLATION – but that philosophy has failed too!**

**Both sides are RIGHT and BOTH SIDES are wrong, but the MODERN POLITICAL SPINS, from the time the Federalist Papers were written to the current age, NOBODY HAS SOLVED these arguments with VIABLE SOLUTIONS that create real CHANGE for FREEDOM!**

**HAMILTON ASKED: What substitute can there be imagined for this ignis fatuus in finance, but that of permitting the national government to raise its own revenues by the ordinary methods of taxation authorized in every well-ordered constitution of civil government?**

**ROBIN FOX: Ordinary methods of taxation could not be achieved, thus ending the good conservative intentions. Today, conservatives still think they can follow the rules of the FEDERALIST PAPERS and be obedient to the writers of the U.S. Constitution. Liberal spenders are correct that it requires trillions of dollars in OFF THE RECORD money, but unfortunately, with GOVERNMENT REGULATION, every dime spent had to be recorded, monitored, and shown to the whole world.**

**What the SECRET SOCIETIES knew when they kept their spending methods a secret, was that this secret, once exposed, would have to be made public, and therefore a COLLAPSE of the entire financial system would become inevitable.**

**HONEST MATH never worked, either for the government or for the average citizen forced into low income wages.**

**The ILLUSIONS of COLLEGE and MORTGAGE DEBTS would cause every AMERICAN HOME to be held hostage to bankers and tax collectors.**

**An ordinary “METHOD OF TAXATION” would be to NOT collect ANY taxes.**

**A GOVERNMENT shouldn't have to get paid but work for FREE and THAT IS HARD WORK! Volunteering without a paycheck that depends on other people's hard work, sweat and tears. If the conservative argument about HARD WORK is to be fulfilled, it would have to be fulfilled without dependency on TAXES or MONEY.**

**HAMILTON: rescue us from the inconveniences and embarrassments naturally resulting from defective supplies of the public treasury.**

**Jesus Christ RESCUED us 2,000 years ago when He told us that HE is THE WAY, THE TRUTH, AND THE LIFE and you can't go to God except through Him. God gave us the FREE GIFT of Eternal Life through His own blood, sweat, and tears being shed before and during the moments of His crucifixion. Jesus told us we can't serve both God and money and that we must give up everything to follow Him. Now, the INCONVENIENCES and EMBARRASSMENTS of a MONEY and TAX based system, which has adopted the strange banking practices of a European style way of 'doing business' has resulted in the defective supplies of the public treasury.**

**ALEXANDER HAMILTON: The more intelligent adversaries of the new Constitution admit the force of this reasoning; but they qualify their admission by a distinction between what they call INTERNAL and EXTERNAL taxation. The former they would reserve to the State**

governments; the latter, which they explain into commercial imposts, or rather duties on imported articles, they declare themselves willing to concede to the federal head. This distinction, however, would violate the maxim of good sense and sound policy, which dictates that **every POWER ought to be in proportion to its OBJECT**; and would still leave the general government in a kind of tutelage to the State governments, inconsistent with every idea of vigor or efficiency. Who can pretend that **commercial imposts** are, or would be, alone equal to the present and future exigencies of the Union? **Taking into the account the existing debt, foreign and domestic**, upon any plan of extinguishment which a man moderately impressed with the importance of public justice and **public credit could approve**, in addition to **the establishments which all parties will acknowledge to be necessary**, we could not reasonably flatter ourselves, that this resource alone, upon the most improved scale, would even suffice for its present necessities. Its future necessities admit not of calculation or limitation; and upon the principle, more than once adverted to, the power of making provision for them as they arise ought to be equally unconfined. I believe it may be regarded as a position warranted by the history of mankind, that, **IN THE USUAL PROGRESS OF THINGS, THE NECESSITIES OF A NATION, IN EVERY STAGE OF ITS EXISTENCE, WILL BE FOUND AT LEAST EQUAL TO ITS RESOURCES.**

**ROBIN FOX:** Alexander Hamilton, and all conservatives since this statement was written, tried following this principle to the best of their ability, but it doesn't take a liberal to laugh at this very noble and God-fearing principle. If **MONEY** and **TAXES** are against **GOD'S WILL** for a Christian society, then our Christian Framers, who listened to Freemason thinking from the European models, went **WRONG!** **MONEY** is against **GOD'S WILL PERIOD!** **MONEY** did not make the **FREE WORLD** better. **THE FIRST SETTLERS** made this country better without the aid of money or taxes!

And any indebtedness to Europe should have been immediately resolved and not replaced with a new form of money and taxation, but replaced with a system where money and taxation did not exist. I know that modern and historical conservative Republicans have always looked to the Federalist Papers principles like an **AMENDMENT TO THE BIBLE**

**ITSELF. But don't forget. The Framers were men too. Men have made mistakes in leading churches.**

**The BAPTIST churches, when broke, made a HUGE MISTAKE in allowing the Rockefellers to fund keeping their doors open and building Universities and Schools subject to LOAN DEBTS and subjecting FREE CHRISTIAN STUDENTS to ridiculous loan debts that most American teens could not afford under the merciless banking systems set up by the very kind Rothschild and Rockefeller circles.**

**MONEY, BANKING, and TAXATION should NEVER have been a part of the U.S. CONSTITUTION or the FEDERALIST PAPERS. When these burdensome systems were first imposed on this FREE SOCIETY Americans had a natural repulsion towards such methods of exchange. It felt UN-NATURAL to human freedom to be priced or taxed or to have earth's resources priced and taxed. We were so busy defending ourselves from savage warring Indians, we missed the fact that their culture never required or needed money and taxes to live life.**

**As "Christian" as Alexander Hamilton, James Madison, and John Jay might have been, FREEMASONIC thinking from European models and philosophies about MONEY and TAXATION would be doomed to be repeated in America, not by ONE KING, but 500 kings! Europeans fleeing Europe to live in a free world would be slaughtered by the Civil and Revolutionary Wars, most likely inspired by Freemason invaders and since EUROPEAN BANKING and TAXATION were the only methods such leaders knew, they had to model their NEW WORLD with a pattern to be repeated. As nice and good as Lincoln was in freeing black slaves from slavery – everyone was already a slave of banks and taxes – repackaged differently and called: FREEDOM.**

**FREEDOM loving people have always hated MONEY and TAXATION.**

**They are against the HOLY SPIRIT.**

**MONEY and TAXATION are REPUGNANT.**

**If commerce could have been conducted without money and taxation, this truly would have been a FREE country.**



**Nobody can now buy or sell without money, which is the name and mark of the beast everyone is forced to accept.**

**Many soldiers died on the premise that by fighting off the British they were fighting for their own freedoms, which is true, but our leaders failed us by including money and taxation into our new United States government. Although it cannot be argued that the 13 Christian colonies formed the first United States of America and they FOUGHT for their freedoms, what these troops returned home to was poverty, bankers collecting money over earth's free resources and taxation WITH representation, which although sounds noble, was in fact, not noble at all.**

**Soon, both LIBERAL and CONSERVATIVE thinking, REPUBLICAN VERSUS DEMOCRATIC THINKING would be set to war against each other, cause division, fighting war, all the while the Rockefeller and Rothschild aspirations for ruling the world would fund other enemies in other lands so that both parties could unite against a common foe – and the invisible agenda of Satan could continue to lie to and deceive the masses into accepting their slavery to money and taxation so that physical comforts, entertainments, and pleasures could be achieved. To build a PROGRESSIVE AMERICA by playing PIMP over every household ruined this country from beginning to ending. If your grandma was lucky to get an orange to eat back in the depression, well, let's blame MONEY and TAXATION and those who MONOPOLIZED the U.S. GOVERNMENT in both parties and continue to do so today, as [www.opensecrets.org](http://www.opensecrets.org) reveals.**

**Perhaps the Rockefellers meant well. They were in slavery to money and taxation forced to follow their own constitution. The Rothschilds perhaps meant well in creating a rule that if you donate money to charity you can use your 'generosity' as a TAX WRITE OFF. Rothschilds and their affiliates in Europe and America, subjected to European slavery and European principles of taxation and money, really screwed up everything by pricing and taxing everyone and everything that God created FREE. Islamic countries, under their own oppressive TAXATION and MONEY systems kept their own false prophet disciples poor and broke. Russians and Chinese citizens were**

**kept poor and broke by their governments and bankers and tax collectors. So no matter what country you reside in, banking and taxation have served as two burdensome problems that has always threatened our personal and national security and allowing these so called: REPRESENTATIVES to own our land, our food, our homes, our energy and what GOD INTENDED all of us to share and to have as equals.**

**What really makes America so much different than other countries in taxation and money practices? Our bankers and tax collectors LIED, CHEATED, and STOLE. Our corporations committed many crimes of fraud, racketeering, swindling, insider trading, as [www.sec.org](http://www.sec.org) reveals how Carters, Clintons, and Obamas did business and sold out our businesses overseas.**

**Being “SUCCESSFUL” at this lie is the theme of both parties, while natural citizens who are attracted to FREEDOM do not want earth’s resources held hostage to these slave masters anymore. We are done serving a government that doesn’t serve us. We are done with banks and taxes and money and want nothing more to do with being ONE with other prison inmates.**

**MONEY and TAXATION have turned the whole world into a prison, while world leaders fight and war over this continual battle to keep each MONEY system alive as money is god versus the God of Israel. They HATE the God of Israel because His Kingdom in Heaven is FREE. While conservatives preach about working your way into heaven or into heaven on earth and liberals are always begging, borrowing, spending, and stealing from the masses, no resolution for human freedom has been achieved.**

**ALEXANDER HAMILTON: To say that deficiencies may be provided for by requisitions upon the States, is on the one hand to acknowledge that this system cannot be depended upon, and on the other hand to depend upon it for every thing beyond a certain limit.**

**ROBIN FOX: Taxing the states; taxing small businesses; overtaxing the rich; taxing the poor; taxing health care;**

**EVERYBODY MUST GET TAXED BOB DYLAN SONG REVISED**

Well, they'll tax you when you're trying to be so good  
They'll tax you just like they said they would  
They'll tax you when you're tryna go home  
Then they'll tax you when you're there all alone  
But I would not feel so all alone  
Everybody must get taxed

Well, they'll tax you when you're walkin' along the streets  
They'll tax you when you're tryna keep your seat  
They'll tax you when you're walkin' on the floor  
hey'll tax you when you're walkin' to the door  
But I would not feel so all alone  
Everybody must get taxed

They'll tax you when you're at the breakfast table  
They'll tax you when you are young and able  
They'll tax you when you're tryna make a buck  
They'll tax you and then they'll say, "Good luck"  
Tell ya what, I would not feel so all alone  
Everybody must get taxed

Well, they'll tax you and say that it's the end  
Then they'll tax you and then they'll come back again  
They'll tax you when you're riding in your car  
They'll tax you when you're playing your guitar  
Yes but I would not feel so all alone  
Everybody must get taxed, alright  
Well, they'll tax you when you walk all alone  
They'll tax you when you are walkin' home  
They'll tax you and then say they all are brave  
They'll tax you when you're set down in your grave  
But I would not feel so all alone  
Everybody must get taxed

And that is where THE ENEMIES OF THE UNITED STATES recognize what the WEALTHY never guessed: That THE TRUTH could prevail when LIES take over so that TRUTH is thrown to the ground and conservatives and liberals fight so much in mud slinging wars, that all the little people get hurt and all the big people too!

## **ALEXANDER HAMILTON:**

Those who have carefully **attended** to its vices and **deformities** as they have been exhibited by experience or delineated in the course of these papers, must **feel invincible repugnancy to trusting the national interests** in any degree to its operation. Its **inevitable** tendency, whenever it is brought into activity, must be to enfeeble the Union, and **sow the seeds of discord and contention** between the federal head and its members, and between the members themselves. Can it be expected that the deficiencies would be better supplied in this mode than the total wants of the Union have heretofore been supplied in the same mode? It ought to be recollected that if less will be required from the States, they will have proportionably less means to answer the demand. If the opinions of those who contend for the distinction which has been mentioned were to be received as evidence of truth, one would be led to conclude that there was some known point in the economy of national affairs at which it would be safe to stop and to say: Thus far **the ends of public happiness will be promoted by supplying the wants of government, and all beyond this is unworthy of our care or anxiety. How is it possible that a government half supplied and always necessitous, can fulfill the purposes of its institution, can provide for the security, advance the prosperity, or support the reputation of the commonwealth?**

**ROBIN FOX:** It can't when you pimp people out at a price like a bunch of prostitutes. Putting a price on people is the wrong formula. Giving people an earning wage and allowing someone else to hold your paycheck hostage was always the wrong formula. What is the difference between a communist government holding your paycheck or some stranger that owns a company coming from a communist country or a communist philosophy holding your paycheck?

**And WHY does the IRS collect taxes out of your INCOME? Ever wonder? Why do you volunteer your paychecks as TITHES and SPECIAL CONTRIBUTIONS to the IRS? To pay for entitlement programs that are ever expanding and ever needing cuts – thus**

**threatening people who can't live up to your ridiculous banking numbers?**

**The mere philosophy that you have to hold either gold, silver, or paper currency in your hand in order to 'work hard' was always a bad idea. I never agreed with this kind of exchange throughout my lifetime. You might argue, "Yes, but what would be the incentive to WORK AT ALL if everything was FREE? Who would work?" It's a dumb question and a very dumb idea that people would just sit around and be lazy and do nothing. Besides, even if a majority of people didn't want to work and just wanted to lounge around their own homes – what is that to you? Why should you care whether other people want to work or not? Work is a CURSE and not a blessing anyways. I personally want to retire. I don't want to work anymore. It should be my right to retire whenever I want without being punished, threatened, harassed, bothered, or forced into work I don't want to do. The mere fact that our society has forced everyone to working is like slave masters punishing slaves.**

**We need to remove the threats that EMPLOYERS impose upon us when they force us to work for them versus allowing people to work for themselves without the threat of being fired, laid off, or being provoked to quit, while the threat of losing one's house, one's transportation, one's possessions and security looms as employers freely hold paychecks hostage for their own greedy or political interests.**

**To threaten our government representatives that they will be here today and gone tomorrow and have only a small opportunity to earn hundreds of thousands of dollars, which will still not provide financial security for a lifetime is also wrong minded.**

**To even suggest that our FREE GOVERNMENT or a FREE PEOPLE had to raise revenue, requisition/taxes to pay for people's hard work has historically always been a bad idea.**

**I am also astonished to learn, that since MASONIC LIBRARIES hold historical and occultic doctrines, especially the D.C. FREEMASONIC LODGES, that our system of government was patterned after the Roman Empire's government system.**

**The Roman Empire's government system during the times of Yeshua Mashiach had a Senate of representatives from all over the Roman Empire and when one observed the Freemasonic architecture, from its Roman architecture to its Masonic symbolism, it is quite clear that the imitation of MONEY systems historically were used as a model for forming America as well. The EUROPEAN STYLE methods of harnessing earth's resources through banking and taxation were about to be repeated. MONEY was to be REFORMED with new paper and coin currency. MONEY was used to enslave Europeans historically and the same bankers who threatened people living under oppression from monarchies and the Catholic Church would soon be doomed to repeat a different kind of paper and coin currency that would not bear the images of kings or queens – but of United States Presidents. While other lands in the Middle East would bear the Islamic images of their Caliphs on their coined currencies, America would soon become no different of its oppression of the masses through money, coined as a symbol of “AMERICAN LIBERTY AND FREEDOM!”**

**HAMILTON: How can it ever possess either energy or stability, dignity or credit, confidence at home or respectability abroad?**

**ROBIN FOX: IT CAN'T! OBAMA SAID, “YES WE CAN!” HISTORY HAS TAUGHT US: SORRY, YOU LOOSE!**

**HAMILTON: How can its administration be any thing else than a succession of expedients temporizing, impotent, disgraceful?**

**ROBIN FOX: The history of both democrats and republicans in charge of the Treasury, the IRS, the FEDERAL RESERVE BANKING SYSTEM, banks, and all financial transactions have now ballooned the National Debt to over \$15 trillion dollars with Slum Monkey Trillionaire Barack Hussein Obama “IN CHARGE” as their primary pimp. INDEED MISTER HAMILTON, “impotent” and “disgraceful!”**

**HAMILTON: How will it be able to avoid a frequent sacrifice of its engagements to immediate necessity? How can it undertake or execute any liberal or enlarged plans of public good?**

**ROBIN FOX: Yes, from 2008 to 2012 we had Barack Hussein Obama's HEALTH CARE MANDATE, penalizing the poor for not choosing health insurance and using the IRS to penalize homeless, poor, and needy people with an IRS TAX PENALTY. And such evils were backed by the entire pimped out democratic party and opposed by good Republican leaders. "ENLARGED PLANS OF PUBLIC GOOD," have provided food stamps to citizens in need of \$400 to \$600 a month in grocery needs, only to be granted \$200.00 a month. While rent is \$1,100 to \$1,500.00 a month normally, unemployment checks are only about \$700 to \$1,000 a month – and this charged to the IRS! SOCIAL SECURITY funds have been depleted by a NEEDY GOVERNMENT seeking to fund Hamas against Israel with \$200 million to \$800 million a year! While Republicans threaten cuts to "ENTITLEMENT PROGRAMS", democrats threaten cuts to the MILITARY BUDGET. Every American citizen is being threatened and terrorized by a FAILED financial system. Millions and billions and trillions of dollars of US TREASURY and IRS funds were depleted in order to bail out the enemy BANKERS and CORPORATIONS who deserved to be shut down and close, but were not closed because "THE ECONOMY" depends on them to be open. While it appears that our 'representatives' REALLY CARE ABOUT US having banks and corporations to SLAVE for, America has become SLAVES and not a FREE country.**

**Our FREEDOM as Americans was lost when BANKS were opened and TAX collectors were allowed to have jobs.**

**Make society FREE of banks and taxes and society will work for themselves 'real hard!' This notion that you can't 'work hard' without money is really a stupid idea. That you can only 'work hard' for someone else because you have an incentive to EARN paper currency from a stranger holding such notes is completely crazy. I never liked it. I never agreed with it. I don't like having ANYONE in charge of my paycheck and threatening me with expulsion and having a landlord threaten taking my habitat away from me when I don't pay up. I have the right to FREE LAND because God created land FREE. The fact that someone else holds a title to land at my expense doesn't work for me. And if I don't want to work for THEM anymore I should have the right to dwell on my own land, as is EVERYONE'S God blessed right. But our**

**GOD BLESSED** rights to land and food have been taken hostage by **BANKS** and **TAXATION**, a formula that causes **HOMELESSNESS**. It is not just the **CHOICE** of the homeless to be homeless, but the **BANKING AND TAXATION** formulas which never should have existed, which **FREE** people naturally reject and no longer wish to work for as it is **VERY CLEAR** such institutions have become **ABUSIVE** to human freedoms and dignity.

I've been through over 200 dead end jobs in a democratic society that allowed people who are sexist, racist, immoral, evil, and perverted to have charge over my paychecks. The politics of a democratic system expressed towards white, heterosexual, Christian males who voted Republican were discriminated against, even though it was against Federal Law to do so. Although I myself believe in equality between sexes and races and have always exerted a good attitude and a great work ethic, people of the 'democratic mindset' were cruel, mean, and evil and repeatedly stabbed me in the back in the midst of me minding my own business, trying to get along with everyone, and doing the best job any employee could do. It didn't matter if I was reliable or 'on time' or did my job well, most employers were unsupportive, of not just me, but other employees as well. Employers wrote phony write ups against good employees in order to easily get rid of them due to the politics of hiring and firing politics urged on by a dysfunctional system. Write ups were also used to sabotage people's careers and we are not just talking about the **BAD EMPLOYEES** who were all too easy of a target. But, sometimes **BAD EMPLOYEES** were favored and not written up, while good employees were written up. The **BAD EMPLOYEES** not being written up, means that a criminal operation was occurring or perhaps foul play between employer and employees and if you were a **GOOD EMPLOYEE** fending for yourself, they would gang up on good employees as a new culture had taken over American jobs.

It would have been all too easy for Fox News speech writers to say, "Look, I worked hard. I started out working crappy jobs and here I am today! I'm successful! And if you work real hard too, you can work your way up and **BE SUCCESSFUL!** Or, you can start a business like **WE DID** and earn lots of money! You see, only lazy people are jealous of 'successful' people and people don't like Romney because he's



**‘RICH AND SUCCESSFUL!’ Romney helped build Dominoe’s Pizza and created hundreds of minimum wage jobs!” WOW! They all get good career stability and are empowered to say such things, not knowing what the unstable job market outside of their ‘stable and successful’ circle is like. Until they walk a mile in REAL PEOPLE’S shoes, they have no right to talk. As surely IVORY TOWER people don’t understand the little people and the little people don’t understand ivory tower people, there is always going to be a serious disconnect between both worlds, until the ENTIRE WORLD becomes FREE.**

**The wealthy view FREEDOM as something that can be earned ONLY through MONEY and TAXATION. Those who aren’t wealthy believe FREEDOM IS FREE and should not be earned through money and taxation and that there should be another way.**

**Fox News will send out field representatives to interview the average folks who are unemployed or standing in unemployment lines and most people, other than the ones Stossel interviews, are jaded and have given up on this system because it has become TRUTH that this SYSTEM and WAY OF LIFE is a dysfunctional system.**

**Even if we could land a job for every person unemployed, the BAD POLITICS being expressed against good hard working Americans can’t allow people to survive the banking and taxation system without having to go into debt, go broke, go bankrupt and loose everything.**

**The system’s philosophy is that you will always be a healthy slave, but if you aren’t a healthy slave, the banking and taxation system sends MONEY COLLECTORS after you and takes what little bit you have left. And if you have a record of not being able to pay them what YOU OWE THEM they won’t help you anymore and you will DIE.**

**I would show up on time, do my job well, but the politics of our representatives sold our companies to foreign owners from other lands bringing their own cultures of destruction across our borders to land on American soil and hurt our brave working heroes with threats of firing, layoffs, budget cuts, ‘diversity threats,’ ACLU threats, NAACP threats, threats of lawsuits, threats of minimum wages, threats that you have to work 30 years before paying off your mortgages with no**

**hopes of surviving the bad politics that comes with every employer you will ever work 'real hard' for.**

**People who boast that this system is the greatest in the world, usually get paid HIGH wages. If you get paid HIGHER WAGES, the justification for human slavery to provide you with the resources required for modern living is used with fancy political speeches designed to keep the masses asleep. While some citizens awaken to exercise their constitutional rights of the freedom to protest, the state and federal police are sent by politicians who are disagreed with, the masses of protesters become violent – and nothing gets solved in shutting down the bankers, the politicians, and the Wall Street insanity.**

**From the TEA PARTY PROTESTERS to the OCCUPY WALL STREET protesters, although noble in the cause of protesting the slave masters and slave drivers who are enslaving people through a failed prison system that has now involved the three branches of U.S. Government, It also appears that our three branches of government have sold our debts to foreign countries such as China so that CHINA is now the #1 superpower in the world versus the USA.**

**HAMILTON: Let us attend to what would be the effects of this situation in the very first war in which we should happen to be engaged.**

**ROBIN FOX: Who INSPIRED this first war? European monarchies AFRAID of losing their BANKING interests in the American FREE WORLD! “Hey, we will loose major money if we don’t take over the FREE WORLD! Those resources are FREE for the taking and the settlers are REBELLING AGAINST US!” And I applaud the FRAMERS for their rebellion against BAD monarchies and Catholic oppressions to institute a new Christian government among American settlers. Every American applauds our WAR HEROES from Washington to today. But couldn’t there have been another way for our troops to fight wars than receive paper or coined currency as their INCENTIVES? Many CIVIL WAR and REVOLUTIONARY WAR heroes fought without pay and had VOLUNTEERED to join the service to PROTECT freedom. However,**

**FREEDOM was STILL being held hostage by the coin and paper currency mindset.**

## **Section. 8 THE UNITED STATES CONSTITUTION.**

**The Congress shall have Power To lay and collect Taxes, Duties, Imposts and Excises, to pay the Debts and provide for the common Defence and general Welfare of the United States; but all Duties, Imposts and Excises shall be uniform throughout the United States;**

**To borrow Money on the credit of the United States;**

**To regulate Commerce with foreign Nations, and among the several States, and with the Indian Tribes;**

**To coin Money, regulate the Value thereof, and of foreign Coin, and fix the Standard of Weights and Measures;**

**To provide for the Punishment of counterfeiting the Securities and current Coin of the United States;**

**ROBIN FOX CONTINUED: This was a HUGE MISTAKE of the first United States Congress to be imposed upon the original 13 states. Though the states saw GOOD CHRISTIAN JUSTIFICATION to secede from European powers and unite the Eastern borders to protect the FREE WORLD, the imposition of “MONEY”, whether borrowed or turned to ‘credit’ or dependent on the hard work of others to pay for it; to COIN MONEY was to become a burden in the exchanges of good and services that were harvested from FREE LAND by a people seeking FREEDOM. People worked hard on this soil, long before the U.S. Constitution was written. Though the CONSTITUTION was written as a necessity to protect THE FREE WORLD from the SLAVE world, slavery still continued, not just for blacks, but for all Europeans who were made subject to a BANKING and TAXATION philosophy that sought to erode all European connections, only to imitate, through banking reformation, the same atrocities that had already occurred in Europe.**

**To conclude that “BARTERING DIDN’T WORK” is also true because many “Christian” groups did not rely on Biblical Providence and had to selfishly HOARD the land’s resources, which they FREELY harvested after running the FREE INDIANS out of these territories. A FREE PEOPLE called THE INDIAN PEOPLE, unwilling to live in peace would have to war and part of the UNITY Americans shared was a common resistance to INDIAN SAVAGES who attacked the colonies and would soon help the British in attacking the settled colonies. Instead of sharing Earth’s resources FREELY, as the first settlers had done before the Constitution, the bankers and tax collectors were again empowered to hold American resources hostage even though armed militias united across the 13 colonies for the new UNITED STATES OF AMERICA.**

**“BORROWING MONEY ON THE ‘CREDIT’ of the United States was a mistake that would cause all communities to be held hostage to that which they sought to become freed from.**

**Like the Indians that Pilgrims shared food and other rich resources with, the first settlers did fine before the British European armies attacked their colonies by their inferior weapons of warfare. Instead of just enslaving black Africans to do all the hard labor, the new government would formulate a FREEMASONIC type of banking/taxation formula, based on Roman/Freemason models. Though an attempt to REFORM MONEY seemed noble, so PROUDLY our religious and new constitutional leaders let us down by harvesting the hard work of others to empower their own ambitions.**

**The fact that MONEY had to dominate the thinking of a FREE PEOPLE was the beginning of the ending of this nation quickly born – toward generations that would die in more wars fought, both inside and outside of American soil.**

**CIVIL WAR**

**REVOLUTIONARY WAR**

**WORLD WAR I**

## **WORLD WAR II**

## **VIETNAM**

## **WAR WITH IRAQ 1991**

## **WAR WITH IRAQ/AFGHANISTAN 2001**

**Each new war brought the politics of harvesting the labor of others to support war against one infidel nation after the next. Though we patriotically parade our brave fighting heroes for the cause of “FIGHTING FOR FREEDOM,” 21<sup>ST</sup> CENTURY troops would return home to a home not theirs, but the Goldman Sachs Real Estate armies and ‘home builders’ charging hundreds of thousands of dollars in loan debts; transportation makers who went bankrupt, got bailed out, but still continued overcharging for transportation costs; health care debts out of control; energy inflation; food inflation; taxation with or without representation!**

**While the sympathies of good American citizens donate their love to charities such as WOUNDED WARRIORS PROJECT and BUILDING HOMES FOR HEROES, and charity, as a tax write off for the wealthy, seems to always be good cause to justify the use of paper/plastic currency, THE FACT that MONEY is required to ‘do good’ is a form of silent TERROR that cause people to either conform or rebel against that which is un-natural – which is dependency on someone else, strangers for personal survival.**

**MONEY embarrasses and humiliates the general population, unsuccessful at earning paychecks enough to support and sustain a life FREED of the ridiculous debts of principal and interest imposed upon every citizen.**

**To regulate Commerce with foreign Nations, and among the several States, and with the Indian Tribes;**

**To coin Money, regulate the Value thereof, and of foreign Coin, and fix the Standard of Weights and Measures;**

**Could we not have “REGULATED COMMERCE WITH FOREIGN NATIONS,” by not imitating their BANKING and TAXATION philosophies? Could we not have practiced FREE TRADE? The modern use of FREE TRADE is a different context because TRADES are not free unless negotiated as FREE as an agreement between foreign governments. Why could we not REGULATE COMMERCE without money by making all exchanges of resources: FREE TRADE? FREE TRADE works better than the Wall Streets maddening and insane methods of exchanging money and numbers that just don’t make any sense to a FREE people. WALL STREET METHODS are largely repugnant to FREEDOM seeking peoples who would rather not see Earth’s Resources exchanged by MONEY CHANGERS, but rather see FREE TRADE made by FREE TRADERS sharing earth’s resources at NO COST to ANYONE!**

**Until FREE TRADE dominates ALL THINKING the world will never be freed of this endless merciless math until those merciful communists DESTROY capitalists and capitalism – and those who love their system of capitalist and capitalism will continue protecting their interests – which do not interest the majority of peoples who know of Wall Street’s schemes and strategies as they ignore the will of the people to pursue a system held hostage to whichever ENEMY of the UNITED STATES is buying and selling. To SELL 20% OF NASDAQ to Saudi Arabia was insane. For Bush to propose selling U.S. PORTS to the United Arab Emirates was traitorous to his cause of protecting America and the Middle East and only led to Obama’s maddening aspirations of making Islamic illegal immigrants free to wander the 2,000 Islamic mosques that traitorous Democrats allowed to be built on Christian American soil.**

**To buy and sell American resources through CHINESE exchanges has now allowed the traitorous democrats to justify the use of communist Chinese slavery to make products overseas while nothing MADE IN AMERICA can be found. From jobs to manufactured products, our so called: REPRESENTATIVES have sold America to China, to Russia, to Middle Eastern countries and have thus, sold out our American jobs which are being shuttered by ‘AGENTS OF DIVERSITY’ who bring in their own cultures while snuffing out citizens already legalized here.**

**HAMILTON:** We will presume, for argument's sake, that the revenue arising from the impost duties answers the purposes of a provision for the public debt and of a peace establishment for the Union. Thus circumstanced, a war breaks out. What would be the probable conduct of the government in such an emergency? Taught by experience that proper dependence could not be placed on the success of requisitions, unable by its own authority to lay hold of fresh resources, and urged by considerations of national danger, would it not be driven to the expedient of diverting the funds already appropriated from their proper objects to the defense of the State? It is not easy to see how a step of this kind could be avoided; and if it should be taken, it is evident that it would prove the destruction of public credit at the very moment that it was becoming essential to the public safety. To imagine that at such a crisis credit might be dispensed with, would be the extreme of infatuation. In the modern system of war, nations the most wealthy are obliged to have recourse to large loans. A country so little opulent as ours must feel this necessity in a much stronger degree. But who would lend to a government that prefaced its overtures for borrowing by an act which demonstrated that no reliance could be placed on the steadiness of its measures for paying? The loans it might be able to procure would be as limited in their extent as burdensome in their conditions. They would be made upon the same principles that usurers commonly lend to bankrupt and fraudulent debtors, with a sparing hand and at enormous premiums.

**ROBIN FOX:** ALEXANDER HAMILTON, ENTER THE GOVERNMENT TODAY TO SEE YOUR PROPHECIES FULFILLED! YOUR CONCERNS WERE JUSTIFIED ON THE PRINCIPLES THAT THE CURRENT TRAITOROUS COMMUNIST DEMOCRATS PRACTICE IN BAD GOVERNMENT TODAY. And while we esteem our Republican colleagues for making an attempt to follow your HONEST practices and principles, it is IMPOSSIBLE under current NATIONAL and INTERNATIONAL THREATS to overcome either the HONEST MATH of Republican aspirations or the CRIMINAL ILLEGAL ASPIRATIONS of the neverending Rockefeller/Rothschild aspirations, who, after several generations of imposing TERROR tactics over the masses of people,

have in fact, not **IMPROVED** or **PROGRESSED** any society spiritually or intellectually by pimping out everyone's flesh as pimps do with prostitutes. One American leader after the next was bought and sold like a harlot with no chance for overcoming the merciless math of money and taxation. The least 'successful' illusionists who view money and taxation as a serious threat and illusion to personal and national freedom, are repulsed by such methods of exchanges practiced by **CORRUPTED REPRESENTATIVES** who represent banks and corporations and slave labor and taxation more than they represent **FREEDOM**, the **RIGHT OF CHURCHES** to be free, the right of citizens to retire from working anytime they want to in order to live quiet and peaceful lives under their own trees! To live **FREE** from being threatened by bankers, creditors, tax collectors is the **CONSTITUTIONAL RIGHT OF EVERY FREE CITIZEN**, but because the constitution has been violated by **FREEMASON** and **FREEMASON** philosophies, which follow Lucifer, the god of hard work, the rebel angel who no longer wanted to worship the God of Israel, but worship himself and his own vanity and share with the human race the vanity that if they **WORK REAL HARD** they can be like **GOD** and boast, "**WE DID IT ON OUR OWN WITHOUT GOD'S HELP!**"

Like Nebuchadnezzar fell after his great boast, "**Look at all that I HAVE BUILT WITH MY OWN HANDS TO GLORIFY MYSELF,**" so proudly our leaders boasted that they had built a **FREE WORLD** out of money and taxation. Those rebels who are poor and tired of being enslaved would be frowned upon as 'lazy, non-hard working gluttons who refuse to work,' while the rebels just laugh, no longer interested in being **THEIR SLAVES** anymore. **WORK HARD LIKE THE ROCKEFELLERS! WORK HARD LIKE THE ROTHSCHILDS! WORK HARD LIKE KINGS AND QUEENS! AND THE WHOLE WORLD WILL BE YOURS!**

**SUCCESS! POWER! THIS IS YOUR GOD!** If you follow this or that god, you will be blessed! If you are a hard worker, **GOD WILL BLESS YOU!** As to which god these **MONEY AND TAX COLLECTORS** are referring to is the patron god of hard work, the Masonic Lucifer, whom they have crowned as their 'god of hard work,' and we did it **ALL OUR OWN WAY WITHOUT HIM!**



**And to accept HELP FROM OTHERS! Can't do that! That makes you a loser! Why don't you follow Stossel and become what he views as a winner? Uhm. No thank you. Stossel loves SLAVERY and a SLAVE EMPIRE while at the same time violating our Christian freedoms by saying, "Homosexuals are okay. Prostitution is okay. Drug use is okay." And, well, homeless people are just a bunch of drug using, alcohol abusing losers who don't want to work and if they just do what Stossel did and "WORK REAL HARD" they don't have to be homeless anymore.**

**Egg heads like that are people that are like flies on dung – a thing to be smashed with a fly swatter! Because that is how Stossel views FREEDOM LOVING PEOPLE WHO HATE MONEY and TAXATION and disagree with his world view. Whether you are conservative or liberal, a libertarian or an independent, a Communist or a socialist, an Islamic fascist or some jerkoff dicktator, YOU ARE A SLAVE TO MONEY and TAXATION!**

**You have SURRENDERED yourselves, your bodies, your minds, your souls, your houses, your food, your energy over to the beast of Revelation 13:**

## **THE BEAST OUT OF THE SEA**

**And I saw a beast coming out of the sea.<sup>h</sup> He had ten horns and seven heads,<sup>i</sup> with ten crowns on his horns, and on each head a blasphemous name.<sup>j</sup>**

**Rev 13:2 The beast I saw resembled a leopard,<sup>k</sup> but had feet like those of a bear<sup>l</sup> and a mouth like that of a lion.<sup>m</sup> The dragon gave the beast his power and his throne and great authority.<sup>n</sup>**

**Rev 13:3 One of the heads of the beast seemed to have had a fatal wound, but the fatal wound had been healed.<sup>o</sup> The whole world was astonished<sup>p</sup> and followed the beast.**

**Rev 13:4 Men worshiped the dragon because he had given authority to the beast, and they also worshiped the beast and asked, "Who is like<sup>q</sup> the beast? Who can make war against him?"**

**Rev 13:5 The beast was given a mouth to utter proud words and blasphemies<sup>r</sup> and to exercise his authority for forty-two months.<sup>s</sup>**

**Rev 13:6 He opened his mouth to blaspheme God, and to slander his name and his dwelling place and those who live in heaven. <sup>t</sup>**

**Rev 13:7 He was given power to make war <sup>u</sup> against the saints and to conquer them. And he was given authority over every tribe, people, language and nation. <sup>v</sup>**

**Rev 13:8 All inhabitants of the earth <sup>w</sup> will worship the beast—all whose names have not been written in the book of life <sup>x</sup> belonging to the Lamb <sup>y</sup> that was slain from the creation of the world. <sup>17 z</sup>**

**Rev 13:9 He who has an ear, let him hear. <sup>a</sup>**

**Rev 13:10 If anyone is to go into captivity, into captivity he will go. If anyone is to be killed <sup>18</sup> with the sword, with the sword he will be killed. <sup>b</sup>**

**This calls for patient endurance and faithfulness <sup>c</sup> on the part of the saints. <sup>d</sup>**

## **The Beast out of the Earth**

**Rev 13:11 Then I saw another beast, coming out of the earth. <sup>e</sup> He had two horns like a lamb, but he spoke like a dragon. <sup>f</sup>**

**Rev 13:12 He exercised all the authority <sup>g</sup> of the first beast on his behalf, <sup>h</sup> and made the earth and its inhabitants worship the first beast, <sup>i</sup> whose fatal wound had been healed. <sup>j</sup>**

**Rev 13:13 And he performed great and miraculous signs, <sup>k</sup> even causing fire to come down from heaven <sup>l</sup> to earth in full view of men.**

**Rev 13:14 Because of the signs <sup>m</sup> he was given power to do on behalf of the first beast, he deceived <sup>n</sup> the inhabitants of the earth. <sup>o</sup> He ordered them to set up an image in honor of the beast who was wounded by the sword and yet lived. <sup>p</sup>**

**Rev 13:15 He was given power to give breath to the image of the first beast, so that it could speak and cause all who refused to worship <sup>q</sup> the image to be killed. <sup>r</sup>**

**Rev 13:16 He also forced everyone, small and great, <sup>s</sup> rich and poor, free and slave, to receive a mark on his right hand or on his forehead, <sup>t</sup>**

**Rev 13:17 so that no one could buy or sell unless he had the mark, <sup>u</sup> which is the name of the beast or the number of his name. <sup>v</sup>**

Rev 13:18 **This calls for wisdom. <sup>w</sup> If anyone has insight, let him calculate the number of the beast, for it is man's number. <sup>x</sup> His number is 666.**

**ROBIN FOX: Can't we UNDERSTAND that the one thing we cannot "BUY OR SELL" without is MONEY? Communist China cannot buy or sell without MONEY. Communist Russia cannot buy or sell without money. Whose names and portraits are displayed on communist money? Their communist dictators! North Koreans can't buy or sell without money and taxation. Islamic Middle Eastern leaders can't buy or sell without money or taxation. Socialist European states cannot buy or sell without money or taxation. Capitalist Americans cannot buy or sell without money or taxation. The international monetary exchanges cannot buy or sell without money. Though Earth's CREATOR FREELY CREATED all of earth's resources FREE and WITHOUT COST, without banks or TAX COLLECTOR booths, man chose to price and tax every living resource necessary for global survival. Each nation wars against the other over resources that ought to be shared out of TRUE LOVE and TRUE PEACE, but the principles of GREED, SELFISHNESS and the animal lust for TERRITORY and DOMINANCE also causes a FREE PEOPLE to find such OPPRESSORS and VANITY affairs to be repugnant to God's Creation, and therefore must arm and protect themselves from those seeking their blood, sweat, and tears to be enslaved at the enrichment of others.**

**MONEY, is in my opinion the MARK OF THE BEAST with which you cannot buy or sell without in current global financial systems. The 6<sup>th</sup> day is when God created man and therefore the 6<sup>th</sup> day of God's last work is the number of man. The 7<sup>th</sup> day is when God rested, and therefore mankind cannot enter God's 7<sup>th</sup> day of rest until they honor His Sabbath Day and Sabbath Year of rest. On the 7<sup>th</sup> year of Israeli slave labor, debts were to be cancelled. Every 50<sup>th</sup> year was a year of Jubilee for slaves to be freed.**

**Since mankind has VIOLATED God's 7<sup>th</sup> Day of rest, they are stuck on the 6<sup>th</sup> day of the patron god of hard work, Lucifer, who tempted the man and the woman to eat forbidden fruit so that THEY CAN BECOME LIKE GOD! The anti-Christ/anti-God of Israel beast who has ten kings ruling for a short time in order to hand their authority over to him, shall**

**force everyone to accept MONEY in his name, so that no one can buy or sell without MONEY – his mark.**

**The FREEMASON signature of LUCIFER, THE GOD OF HARD WORK, that desecrates God's 7<sup>th</sup> day of REST from labor, would seek to imitate dominion over man by destroying God's last finished work in mankind and womankind and holding them hostage to sin and the wages of sin which is death.**

**Adam was cursed by having to work by the sweat of his brow in the soil, instead of just working in a beautiful garden with his beautiful wife, while Eve would be cursed with the pains of childbirth and childrearing – and such a curse has been on earth for over 6,000 years. The devil has sat under every spreading tree to harness the hard work, blood, sweat and tears of humanity by providing them with some other king, some other god, some other idol or leadership away from Earth's Creator, while holding Earth's FREE RESOURCES hostage to people enslaved by the devil's many global power grabbers.**

**By handing A FREE WORLD over to the GREEN TREE OF MONEY, the serpent sat in American trees, under every American state, once again, deceiving and fooling humanity into a system of MONEY and TAXATION that would not answer the call TO GLOBAL FREEDOM, but subject the masses to more slavery, more greed, more selfish pursuits.**

**Work hard and you can be SUCCESSFUL at this LIE and OWN THE WORLD! And forget about all these underpaid and overworked slaves – with a GREAT PAYCHECK you can rule your own world and not concern yourself with those losers who don't want to work! Get it? Do you see now where just ONE MISTAKE can lead right into the devil's trap? I believe that the Framers of the CONSTITUTION and the three writers in the Federalist Papers were good Christian men, but they unfortunately sinned when they subjected the FREE WORLD to the same satanic banking and taxation philosophy that ruled over pagan and religious states since the devil sat in the forbidden tree!**

**Why else did earth's savior say: "YOU CAN'T SERVE BOTH GOD AND MONEY!"**

**Service to MONEY was always a lie and will forever be a lie, as MONEY and TAXATION do not exist in THE KINGDOM OF HEAVEN!**

**Earth's systems of exchange do not reflect Heaven's glory and God's answer to the world's greed is the same answer He gave in the Book of Revelation's Hidden Mysteries!**

## **Jesus Clears the Temple**

*2:14-16 pp—Mt 21:12, 13; Mk 11:15-17; Lk 19:45, 46*

**Jn 2:12 After this he went down to Capernaum<sup>g</sup> with his mother<sup>h</sup> and brothers<sup>i</sup> and his disciples. There they stayed for a few days.**

**Jn 2:13 When it was almost time for the Jewish Passover,<sup>j</sup> Jesus went up to Jerusalem.<sup>k</sup>**

**Jn 2:14 In the temple courts he found men selling cattle, sheep and doves,<sup>l</sup> and others sitting at tables exchanging money.<sup>m</sup>**

**Jn 2:15 So he made a whip out of cords, and drove all from the temple area, both sheep and cattle; he scattered the coins of the money changers and overturned their tables.**

**Jn 2:16 To those who sold doves he said, “**Get these out of here! How dare you turn my Father’s house<sup>n</sup> into a market**”**

**I share in my Savior’s ANGER on a global level! The whole earth is GOD’S HOUSE and these throne dwarves established by the devil’s mark, MONEY, have turned God’s House into a market!**

**Despite popular modern Biblical mis-interpretations of MONEY by current “Bible Teachers” such as DAVE RAMSEY or CNN capitalists, Jesus was very clear you can’t turn God’s House into a market place. Sorry Mister Libertarian Stossel, you faker, God does not approve of prostitution, homosexuality, slavery, or MONEY. Period.**

**And if my Savior is against such atrocities, I stand with my Savior and not those throne dwarves BOUGHT AND PAID FOR by money.**

**ALEXANDER HAMILTON: It may perhaps be imagined that, from the scantiness of the resources of the country, the necessity of diverting**

**the established funds in the case supposed would exist, though the national government should possess an unrestrained power of taxation. But two considerations will serve to quiet all apprehension on this head: one is, that we are sure the resources of the community, in their full extent, will be brought into activity for the benefit of the Union; the other is, that whatever deficiencies there may be, can without difficulty be supplied by loans.**

**ROBIN FOX: LET'S HIT the RED BUZZER! Alexander, you were WRONG on these points! The resources of the country were ABUNDANT and STILL ARE ABUNDANT! By pricing and taxing resources, they become SCANTY because you are limiting our true potential to harvest earth's resources without limit by limiting everything to LOANS! The LOAN SYSTEM is BAD! The mere suggestion that we had to subject our military or health care or housing markets to LOANS is BAD!**

**Who wants to live in a house or dwelling place that some stranger owns? NOBODY! And yet, we give up our whole lives paying rent or loan debt into someone else's pocket, making ourselves poorer and someone else richer! I think it is wrong that when you work, you labor for someone else and not yourself or your own family! Though it is true that MONEY inspires people to think ONLY of themselves and their own families, as we are all held hostage to trying to live up to some financial number that will break us from our chains of slavery to ever increasing debts, the LOAN SYSTEM is a DEBT SYSTEM and should never have been applied as a valid method of 'helping people to achieve their dreams of success in the monopoly illusion.'**

**MONEY only has value if you allow your LAWMAKERS to place value on them. Take the Rothschild's Gemological Institute of America, which does diamond and jewelry trade grading. We read a whole history for how ROCKS were weighed and who determined how much each rock would be priced according to either their rarity or plenty. STUPID! I thought this whole method of pricing God's rocks was stupid! OIL. Oil is FREE under God's Earth, but the Rockefellers decided to keep American oil for themselves and price and tax everyone to get that resource from his underpaid, overworked slaves!**

**And really, most American 'work ethic' philosophies come from the Rockefeller families who harvested God's resources for themselves and earned a great banking profit for those European bankers whose systems of taxation and banking dominated Europe and now America!**

**But we can't necessarily BLAME THE ROCKEFELLERS and BLAME THE ROTHSCHILDS, since it was a combination of European Monarchies, together with the Catholic Church establishments, coupled with American banker aspirations that inspired the FRAMERS to imitate such un-free and merciless financial systems.**

**Since I was a child I never liked ANY FINANCIAL SYSTEM and thought this whole game was really retarded and the wrong approach for Americans to be FREE.**

**For my own dad to have his paycheck threatened by strangers and live in a house that wasn't his and always being threatened with eviction was not something I enjoyed watching as a child. It was TERRIFYING to me as a child to learn about what a prison this world was through all this pricing and taxing everyone and everything. MONEY seemed un-natural to the natural world.**

**I seemed to always like INDIAN CULTURE because before my European leaders took over North America, their people didn't need banks or taxes to thrive and survive, for although there were always warring tribes fighting for territory, Christians should have used the Indian models for living without banks and taxation.**

**A devoted capitalist like John Stossel tried blasting this theory away, but was unconvincing in his capitalist arguments because he LOVES MONEY and TAXATION and thinks it's the best "AMERICAN" system in the world. But MONEY and TAXATION are NOT AMERICAN systems – but systems borrowed from primitive pagan cultures such as the Roman Empire and passed down through the European Rothschild bankers. And we can only assume that JESUS CHRIST did not inspire people to create money, use money, inspire taxation or use taxation. These were man-made fabrications to harvest the slave labor of others and call it FREEDOM. It was a way to JAIL God's resources with an attitude, "IT'S MINE AND NOT YOURS!" all throughout the world.**

**A Christianized Roman Empire still did not learn the lessons of pagan states ruled by fascist dictators. Americans also did not learn their lessons that having 500 kings is not necessarily better than having one king, because they are all being ruled by MONEY and TAXATION!**

**And just what if I want to STOP WORKING and be lazy on my own piece of land and property? That is my right! To try to force me into thinking that I have to work for someone else for money and be taxed and have a taxable income and have some landlords take most of my 'taxable income,' and then always hold earth's resources hostage to the point of having to go into loan debt every time I don't have enough money for the RICHIE RICH price fixers – IS WRONG!**

**Lucifer, the patron god of hard work has a philosophy that he can work on his own without God and doesn't need or want God to hand him anything or give him anything or do anything for him – but selfishly wants to do it all on his own! His rebellion against God and hostility against God all has to do with him wanting to sit on his own throne, rule his own universe, and not bow to God anymore. Such PRIDE and EGO, although sounds pretty convincing, can never work out if we have millions of independent people selfishly worshiping themselves or some other god that doesn't exist. The devil's philosophies of living without God have FAILED.**

**From one empire that the devil established to the next – they were and are all FAILURES.**

**And Christians attempting to build their own societies freed from the devil's advocates, failed also, when satanic principles were adopted into their new forming nations. I'm sorry to say that MONEY and TAXATION are from Satan and not from God, even if good Christian or Freemason men INTENDED GOOD at the time.**

**CHARITY and PHILANTHROPY are also fronts to mask MONEY as THE ONLY IDEA THAT WORKS! Wrong.**

**That might be how they operated communist countries, dictator countries, monarchies, socialist states, etc., but a truly CHRISTIAN COUNTRY would never have involved money and taxation, had it not**



been for 'the greater good of national defense.' I'm sorry, but I believe **MONEY** and **TAXATION** did not have to be used for our national defense. And for a lot of our **CIVIL WAR** and **REVOLUTIONARY WAR** fighting heroes, **MONEY** wasn't necessary for volunteering.

There is a common joke when you sign up today through military recruiters: **"DO YOU WANT TO VOLUNTEER?"**

Today, most people who wish to go be slaves in the military do so for **THE COLLEGE MONEY** because the **LOAN** systems that hold our educational system hostage won't let people in and even if they do let people **"IN"** it's too **GOD DAMNED EXPENSIVE!** And these **WONDERFUL UNIVERSITY** bankers have kept it this way for a long time! They impose all these **BURDENS OF LOAN DEBTS** on young people with this notion that, **"IF YOU WORK REAL HARD, YOU CAN BE AN ELITIST WEALTHY PERSON LIKE US! YOU CAN BE A SUCCESSFUL SLAVE!"**

As much as I like Andrea Tantaros, one of Fox New's **"THE FIVE"** stars, she made some comments, in addition to Kimberly Guilfoyle, after Romney won the Republican nomination as a presidential candidate: **"The LEFT doesn't like Romney because he's RICH and SUCCESSFUL!"**

Well, I wasn't on the **LEFT** and even though I am **RIGHT CENTER** when I vote, I reasoned that I personally don't like Romney because first of all, he has been part of a Freemason cult called: **MORMONISM** his whole life. Could he still have **SOME "Christian" values?** Sure he can. But as truly **OBAMA** belonged to a massive cult, so did Romney. So Romney lost on the Galatians 1 point:

## **No Other Gospel**

Gal 1:6 I am astonished that you are so quickly deserting the one who called<sup>m</sup> you by the grace of Christ and are turning to a different gospel<sup>n</sup> \_\_\_\_

Gal 1:7 which is really no gospel at all. Evidently some people are throwing you into confusion<sup>o</sup> and are trying to pervert<sup>p</sup> the gospel of Christ.

**Gal 1:8 But even if we or an angel from heaven should preach a gospel other than the one we preached to you,<sup>a</sup> let him be eternally condemned!<sup>r</sup>**

**Gal 1:9 As we have already said, so now I say again: If anybody is preaching to you a gospel other than what you accepted,<sup>s</sup> let him be eternally condemned!**

**Gal 1:10 Am I now trying to win the approval of men, or of God? Or am I trying to please men?<sup>t</sup> If I were still trying to please men, I would not be a servant of Christ. \_**

**I can honestly say that both Obama's philosophy about MONEY and TAXATION and ROMNEY'S philosophy about MONEY and TAXATION are BOTH WRONG, considering they are both PAID FOR by GOLDMAN SACHS MONEY.**

**And we all know as Americans that GOLDMAN SACHS philosophy was what caused Greece, Mexico, Europe, and America to have the worst DEPRESSION since the 1930s ever! Their Federal Reserve system was a joke and everyone knew it. The WALL STREET methods of exchange were also a joke. It is one big prison and we as Americans from every walk of life are no longer laughing.**

**To say that we couldn't have built America without banking, money, taxation is really wrong.**

**And since MONEY and TAXATION are set up against FREEDOM, many people don't want to work and slave for it anymore or being made to feel like less of a person if they don't join THE ONE PRISON WORLD.**

**ALEXANDER HAMILTON: The power of creating new funds upon new objects of taxation, by its own authority, would enable the national government to borrow as far as its necessities might require.**

**ROBIN FOX: The national government should never ever had to 'borrow' as far as its necessities might require. This means that EVERYONE should have their own printing presses and print as much money as is required to pay for education, health care, transportation,**

**housing, energy and whatever else their society demands of our slave labor!**

**I bet you don't like being called a SLAVE for all your hard work! But that is what you are under ANY money or taxation system.**

**Did you notice HOW BLANK you or anyone else becomes when you suggest that we shouldn't need MONEY or TAXATION. The blankness stares into the Abyss with the question: "WHAT ELSE CAN WE DO? WE HAVE NO OTHER METHOD 'THAT WORKS.'"**

**We've become so dependent upon MONEY and TAXATION and the slave labor of other people's 'hard work' we have contented ourselves with complacent submission to an illusion that is more like a MIRAGE OF FREEDOM versus an actual reality. They turned this illusion into REALITY and only if you are realizing that THE TRUMAN SHOW has become your life story, you want a DIFFERENT REALITY!**

**The only thing you are asked to do is "work a little bit," and you can HAVE EVERYTHING YOU WANT! Pretty common conservative argument.**

**THE PROMISES of capitalism, like every other money system, imitates one important Biblical REALITY:**

**Mt 4:8 Again, the devil took him to a very high mountain and showed him all the kingdoms of the world and their splendor.**

**Mt 4:9 "All this I will give you," he said, "if you will bow down and worship me."**

**Mt 4:10 Jesus said to him, "Away from me, Satan!"<sup>f</sup> For it is written: 'Worship the Lord your God, and serve him only.'<sup>17</sup> <sup>g</sup>**

**MONEY and TAXATION, which are SELFISH philosophies for a SELFISH group of people who justify their selfishness by hiding behind charities and philanthropies, promise to give you THE WHOLE WORLD! Do you really OWN the whole world yet? Is the world YOURS to own? No. It all belongs to God who created the Earth. The devil acts like it is HIS world to give away, which is kind of true among some of these evil**

**kingdoms in the Middle East and among communist states he created, but the whole world belongs to the God of Creation.**

**There is only ONE LAND on earth that belongs to one exclusive people – ISRAEL. Outside of Israel, the world is ours to share and to cultivate. But because of MONEY AND TAXATION we are not permitted to share, to give, to love, to help like we want to. Everything is held hostage to pricing – which is against our souls FREEDOM.**

**ALEXANDER HAMILTON: Foreigners, as well as the citizens of America, could then reasonably repose confidence in its engagements; but to depend upon a government that must itself depend upon thirteen other governments for the means of fulfilling its contracts, when once its situation is clearly understood, would require a degree of credulity not often to be met with in the pecuniary transactions of mankind, and little reconcilable with the usual sharp-sightedness of avarice.**

**Reflections of this kind may have trifling weight with men who hope to see realized in America the halcyon scenes of the poetic or fabulous age; but to those who believe we are likely to experience a common portion of the vicissitudes and calamities which have fallen to the lot of other nations, they must appear entitled to serious attention. Such men must behold the actual situation of their country with painful solicitude, and deprecate the evils which ambition or revenge might, with too much facility, inflict upon it.**

***PUBLIUS.***

**ROBIN FOX: I do agree that WAR was necessary to fight for THE FREE WORLD. But just WHY did we ever create banks, money or taxation is a satanic mystery that has plagued America with a prison culture from the moment this nation was being formed. It was EUROPEAN methods of exchange and modeling American methods of exchange, that ended freedoms potential with an illusion of freedom, versus the substance.**

# FEDERALIST No. 31

## The Same Subject Continued

### (Concerning the General Power of Taxation)

*From the New York Packet.*

*Tuesday, January 1, 1788.*

[Alexander Hamilton](#)

**To the People of the State of New York:**

**IN DISQUISITIONS of every kind, there are certain primary truths, or first principles, upon which all subsequent reasonings must depend. These contain an internal evidence which, antecedent to all reflection or combination, commands the assent of the mind. Where it produces not this effect, it must proceed either from some defect or disorder in the organs of perception, or from the influence of some strong interest, or passion, or prejudice. Of this nature are the maxims in geometry, that "the whole is greater than its part; things equal to the same are equal to one another; two straight lines cannot enclose a space; and all right angles are equal to each other." Of the same nature are these other maxims in ethics and politics, that there cannot be an effect without a cause; that the means ought to be proportioned to the end; that every power ought to be commensurate with its object; that there ought to be no limitation of a power destined to effect a purpose which is itself incapable of limitation. And there are other truths in the two latter sciences which, if they cannot pretend to rank in the class of axioms, are yet such direct inferences from them, and so obvious in themselves, and so agreeable to the natural and unsophisticated dictates of common-sense, that they challenge the assent of a sound and unbiased mind, with a degree of force and conviction almost equally irresistible.**

**The objects of geometrical inquiry are so entirely abstracted from those pursuits which stir up and put in motion the unruly passions of the human heart, that mankind, without difficulty, adopt not only the more simple theorems of the science, but even those abstruse paradoxes which, however they may appear susceptible of demonstration, are at variance with the natural conceptions which the**

mind, without the aid of philosophy, would be led to entertain upon the subject. The INFINITE DIVISIBILITY of matter, or, in other words, the INFINITE divisibility of a FINITE thing, extending even to the minutest atom, is a point agreed among geometricians, though not less incomprehensible to common-sense than any of those mysteries in religion, against which the batteries of infidelity have been so industriously leveled.

But in the sciences of morals and politics, men are found far less tractable. To a certain degree, it is right and useful that this should be the case. Caution and investigation are a necessary armor against error and imposition. But this untractableness may be carried too far, and may degenerate into obstinacy, perverseness, or disingenuity. Though it cannot be pretended that the principles of moral and political knowledge have, in general, the same degree of certainty with those of the mathematics, yet they have much better claims in this respect than, to judge from the conduct of men in particular situations, we should be disposed to allow them. The obscurity is much oftener in the passions and prejudices of the reasoner than in the subject. Men, upon too many occasions, do not give their own understandings fair play; but, yielding to some untoward bias, they entangle themselves in words and confound themselves in subtleties.

How else could it happen (if we admit the objectors to be sincere in their opposition), that positions so clear as those which manifest the necessity of a general power of taxation in the government of the Union, should have to encounter any adversaries among men of discernment?

**ROBIN FOX:** I would have OBJECTED to any kind of system requiring MONEY and TAXATION. MONEY and TAXATION are ADVERSARIES to freedom. When God created the land and its resources free, mankind should never have priced or taxed each other to harvest this world's resources. Such methods were established by DICTATORIAL monarchies and not kingdoms that were FREE.

**Though these positions have been elsewhere fully stated, they will perhaps not be improperly recapitulated in this place, as introductory to an examination of what may have been offered by way of objection to them. They are in substance as follows:**

**A government ought to contain in itself every power requisite to the full accomplishment of the objects committed to its care, and to the complete execution of the trusts for which it is responsible, free from every other control but a regard to the public good and to the sense of the people.**

**ROBIN FOX: You had a FREE WORLD Alexander. So did the Indians live in a FREE WORLD, freed of banks and taxation. The people wanted to share and to give earth's resources without being priced and taxed. Our government should never had adopted such financial principles, such as you proposed. We could have built America without such principles imposed and I disagree with you Mister Hamilton that any form of taxation was justifiable for a FREE government to exist. To state we could not have been FREE without money and taxation was a lie and is still a lie today – although it was your truth and their truth voted for in the new democracy.**

**HAMILTON: As the duties of superintending the national defense and of securing the public peace against foreign or domestic violence involve a provision for casualties and dangers to which no possible limits can be assigned, the power of making that provision ought to know no other bounds than the exigencies of the nation and the resources of the community. As revenue is the essential engine by which the means of answering the national exigencies must be procured, the power of procuring that article in its full extent must necessarily be comprehended in that of providing for those exigencies.**

**ROBIN FOX: FREEDOM is the essential engine of a FREE humanity. To make all of humanity dependent on a cash system has been a burden to every generation held hostage and in slavery to fallen nations.**

**ALEXANDER HAMILTON:** As theory and practice conspire to prove that **the power of procuring revenue** is unavailing when exercised over the States in their collective capacities, **the federal government must of necessity be invested with an unqualified power of taxation** in the ordinary modes.

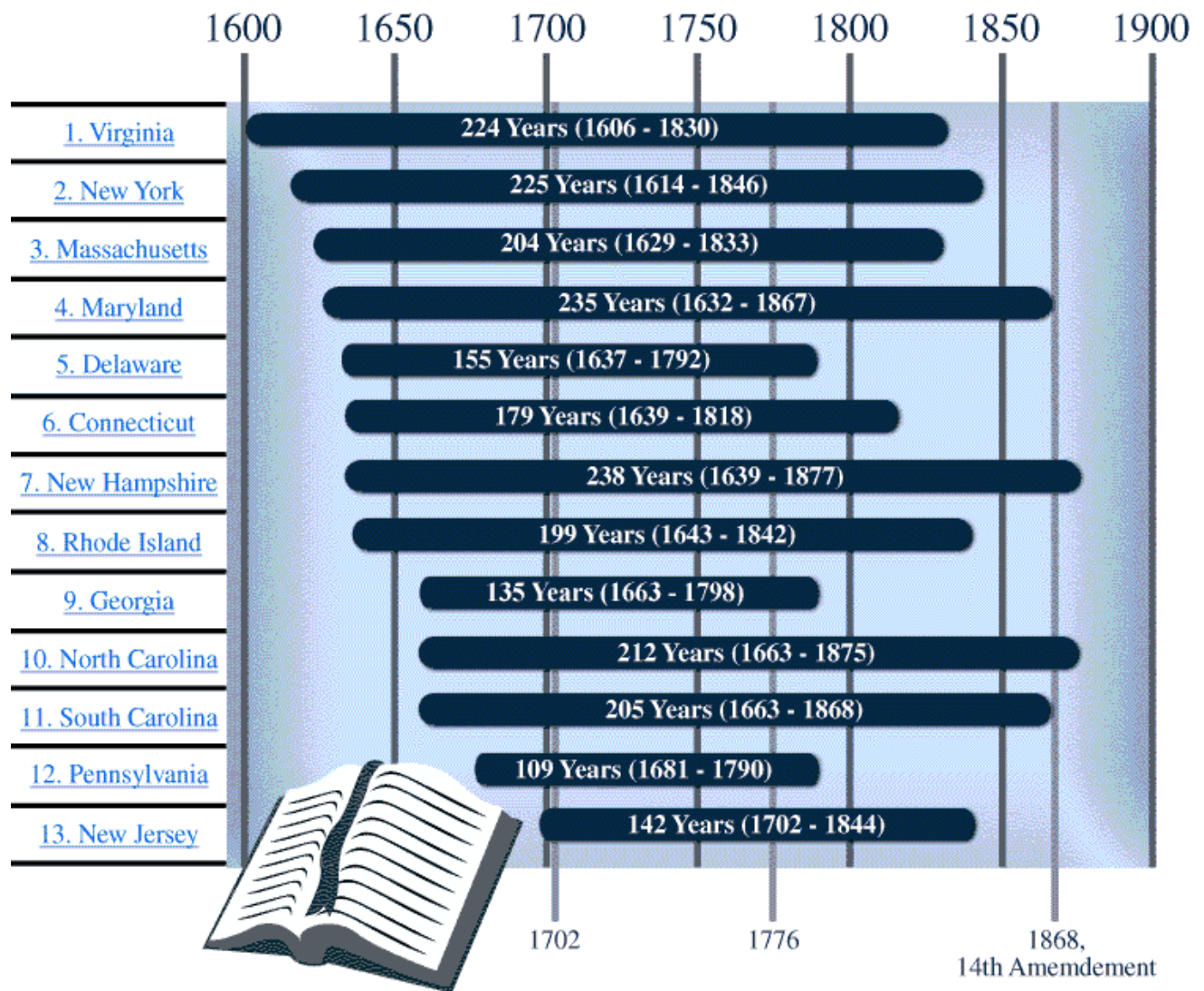
**ROBIN FOX: RED FLAG ALERT!** If **REVENUE** and **TAXATION** were a **FAILED** experiment among European monarchies, why would we bring such a dialogue into a **FREE WORLD**? This was **THE ERROR** of our framers by which this great nation would fall victim to banks, tax collections, and money's many limitations. Harnessing revenue at the backs of hard working slaves was how the **CONFEDERATE STATES** before the **CIVIL WAR** operated – that we have the right to collect from other people, that which is not **“OURS”**.

**ALEXANDER HAMILTON:** Did not experience evince the contrary, it would be natural to conclude that the propriety of a general power of taxation in the national government might safely be permitted to rest on the evidence of these propositions, unassisted by any additional arguments or illustrations. But we find, in fact, that **the antagonists of the proposed Constitution**, so far from acquiescing in their justness or truth, **seem to make their principal and most zealous effort against this part of the plan**. It may therefore be satisfactory to analyze the arguments with which they combat it.

**ROBIN FOX:** Indeed, **ANTAGONISTS** did have a valid argument on “this part of the plan” to create **TAXATION** and **MONEY** and **REVENUE**, while America's resources were **FREE** under many **FREE INDIAN TRIBES**. The land was free. The resources were free. People fleeing Europe didn't want **SLAVERY** to money and taxes and the burden of **COLLECTORS** ever again, and yet, somehow the Framers **MESSED** up by bringing **OLD** world systems into the **NEW WORLD**.

Even the religious leaders fell victim.





<http://undergod.procon.org/view.resource.php?resourceID=69>

**As we can see here, the 13 colonies faired fine without TAXATION, without BANKS, without the imposition of the British mandates! Unfortunately, after awhile, each of the 13 colonies would come to use coined money all over again. When the British sought to control and commit further acts of aggression through taxation without representation, it should have been all too natural for the Framers to reject MONEY, TAX COLLECTIONS, and the REVENUE based banking philosophies of Europe. They would have done well to return Africans back to Africa and try to learn from Indians how THEY survived without TAXATION and MONEY.**

**Each STATE among the 13 colonies had their own charters, BUT, the THREATS of European banking styles loomed over a people continually harassed and annoyed by old systems.**

**The NOBLE side of our Constitution and our FRAMERS were the following statements that we all agree, as BELIEVERS, are the FOUNDATION for AMERICAN FAITH:**

References to "God" in State Constitutions



All 50 state constitutions refer to "God" or some higher power. Forty-three states feature these religious references in the Preamble (introductory clause of explanation) of their constitution. The seven remaining states refer to "God" in their religious freedom provisions.

*"Preambles often lack the force of law and, thus, cannot be used to strike down state rules or statutes which conflict with provisions of the preamble. On the other hand, preambles often are considered to be the founders' (or the citizens') rationale or goals for enacting the Constitution.*

*Provisions which guarantee freedom of religion are curious creatures. They often contain both freedom of religion guarantees and proscriptions against government adoption of religion within the same provision (as does our federal 1st Amendment). This creates a tension when a person attempts to exercise religious freedom within the context of an arguably governmental function (e.g., a student offering a prayer during a public high school commencement ceremony).*

*Plainly, many of the State Constitutions have chosen to specifically reference God (or the equivalent) rather than adopting a more neutral approach found in the 1st Amendment. How the States courts have construed these differences might shed light on why God was specifically referenced and its import on the broader question of including God in our Pledge."*

<http://undergod.procon.org/view.resource.php?resourceID=000081>

State	Date of Constitution	Religious Terms in State Constitution [deity references are in <b>bold</b> ]
1. Alabama	1901	"We the people of the State of Alabama ... invoking the favor and guidance of <b>Almighty God</b> , do ordain and establish the following Constitution..."
2. Alaska	1956	"We, the people of Alaska, grateful to <b>God</b> and to those who founded our nation and pioneered this great land..."
3. Arizona	1911	"We, the people of the State of Arizona, grateful to <b>Almighty God</b> for our liberties, do ordain this Constitution..."
4. Arkansas	1998	Article II, Section 24. "All men have a natural and indefeasible right to worship <b>Almighty God</b> according to the dictates of their own consciences; no man can, of right, be compelled to attend, erect or support any place of worship; or to maintain any ministry against his consent. No human authority can, in any case or manner whatsoever, control or interfere with the right on conscience; and no preference

		shall ever be given, by law, to any religious establishment, denomination or mode of worship above any other.
5. California	1879	"We, the People of the State of California, grateful to <b>Almighty God</b> for our freedom, in order to secure and perpetuate its blessings, do establish this Constitution."
6. Colorado	1876	"We, the people of Colorado, with profound reverence for the <b>Supreme Ruler of the Universe...</b> "
7. Connecticut	1818	"The People of Connecticut, acknowledging with gratitude the good <b>Providence of God</b> in permitting them to enjoy..."
8. Delaware	1897	"Through <b>Divine goodness</b> , all men have by nature the rights of worshiping and serving <b>their Creator</b> according to the dictates of their consciences..."
9. Florida	1968	"We, the people of the State of Florida, grateful to <b>Almighty God</b> for our constitutional liberty..."
10. Georgia	1998	"To perpetuate the principles of free government, insure justice to all, preserve peace, promote the interest and happiness of the citizen and of the family, and transmit to posterity the enjoyment of liberty, we the people of Georgia, relying upon the protection and guidance of <b>Almighty God</b> , do ordain and establish this Constitution."
11. Hawaii	1959	"We, the people of Hawaii, grateful for <b>Divine Guidance...</b> "
12. Idaho	1890	"We, the people of the State of Idaho, grateful to <b>Almighty God</b> for our freedom..."
13. Illinois	1870	"We, the People of the State of Illinois - grateful to <b>Almighty God</b> for the civil, political and religious liberty which <b>He</b> has permitted us to enjoy and seeking <b>His</b> blessing upon our endeavors..."
14. Indiana	1851	"TO THE END, that justice be established, public order maintained, and liberty perpetuated; WE, the People of the State of Indiana, grateful to <b>ALMIGHTY GOD</b> for the free exercise of the right to choose our own form of government, do ordain this Constitution."
15. Iowa	1857	"We, the People of the State of Iowa, grateful to the <b>Supreme Being</b> for the blessings hitherto enjoyed, and feeling our dependence on <b>Him</b> for a continuation of those blessings..."
16. Kansas	1859	"We, the people of Kansas, grateful to <b>Almighty God</b> for our civil and religious privileges..."
17. Kentucky	1891	"We, the people of the Commonwealth of Kentucky, grateful to <b>Almighty God</b> for the civil, political and religious liberties..."
18. Louisiana	1974	"We, the people of the State of Louisiana, grateful to <b>Almighty God</b> for the civil, political, economic and religious liberties we enjoy..."
19. Maine	1820	"We the People of Maine... acknowledge with grateful hearts the goodness of the <b>Sovereign Ruler of the Universe</b> in affording us an opportunity... and imploring <b>His</b> aid and direction..."
20. Maryland	1867	"We, the people of the state of Maryland, grateful to <b>Almighty God</b> for

		our civil and religious liberty..."
21. Massachusetts	1780	"We, therefore, the people of Massachusetts, acknowledging, with grateful hearts, the goodness of the great <b>Legislator of the universe</b> , in affording us, in the course of <b>His</b> providence..."
22. Michigan	1963	"We, the people of the State of Michigan, grateful to <b>Almighty God</b> for the blessings of freedom..."
23. Minnesota	1857	"We, the people of the State of Minnesota, grateful to <b>God</b> for our civil and religious liberty, and desiring to perpetuate its blessings..."
24. Mississippi	1890	"We, the people of Mississippi in convention assembled, grateful to <b>Almighty God</b> , and invoking <b>His</b> blessing on our work..."
25. Missouri	1945	"We, the people of Missouri, with profound reverence for the <b>Supreme Ruler of the Universe</b> , and grateful for <b>His</b> goodness..."
26. Montana	1972	" We the people of Montana grateful to <b>God</b> for the quiet beauty of our state, the grandeur of our mountains, the vastness of our rolling plains, and desiring to improve the quality of life, equality of opportunity and to secure the blessings of liberty for this and future generations do ordain and establish this constitution."
27. Nebraska	1875	Art. I, CI-4 "All persons have a natural and infeasible right to worship <b>Almighty God</b> according to the dictates of their own consciences. No person shall be compelled to attend, erect or support any place of worship against his consent, and no preference shall be given by law to any religious society, nor shall any interference with the rights of conscience be permitted...."
28. Nevada	1864	"We the people of the State of Nevada, grateful to <b>Almighty God</b> for our freedom..."
29. New Hampshire	1783	Part I., Art. V. "Every individual has a natural and unalienable right to worship <b>God</b> according to the dictates of his own conscience, and reason; and no subject shall be hurt, molested, or restrained, in his person, liberty, or estate, for worshipping <b>God</b> in the manner and season most agreeable to the dictates of his own conscience; or for his religious profession, sentiments, or persuasion; provided he doth not disturb the public peace or disturb others in their religious worship."
30. New Jersey	1947	"We, the people of the State of New Jersey, grateful to <b>Almighty God</b> for civil and religious liberty which <b>He</b> hath so long permitted us to enjoy, and looking to <b>Him</b> for a blessing on our endeavors..."
31. New Mexico	1911	"We, the People of New Mexico, grateful to <b>Almighty God</b> for the blessings of liberty..."
32. New York	1938	"We The People of the State of New York, grateful to <b>Almighty God</b> for our Freedom, in order to secure its blessings..."
33. North Carolina	1971	"We, the people of the State of North Carolina, grateful to <b>Almighty God, the Sovereign Ruler of Nations</b> , for the preservation of the American Union and the existence of our civil, political and religious liberties, and acknowledging our dependence upon <b>Him</b> for the continuance of those blessings to us and our posterity..."

34. North Dakota	1889	"We, the people of North Dakota, grateful to <b>Almighty God</b> for the blessings of civil and religious liberty..."
35. Ohio	1851	"We the people of the state of Ohio, grateful to <b>Almighty God</b> for our freedom, to secure its blessings..."
36. Oklahoma	1907	"Invoking the guidance of <b>Almighty God</b> , in order to secure and perpetuate the blessings of liberty..."
37. Oregon	1857	Bill of Rights, Article I, Sect. 2 " All men shall be secure in the Natural right, to worship <b>Almighty God</b> according to the dictates of their own consciences..."
38. Pennsylvania	1874	"We, the people of Pennsylvania, grateful to <b>Almighty God</b> for the blessings of civil and religious liberty, and humbly invoking <b>His</b> guidance..."
39. Rhode Island	1986	" We, the people of the State of Rhode Island and Providence Plantations, grateful to <b>Almighty God</b> for the civil and religious liberty which <b>He</b> hath so long permitted us to enjoy, and looking to <b>Him</b> for a blessing upon our endeavors to secure and to transmit the same, unimpaired, to succeeding generations..."
40. South Carolina	1778	"We, the people of the State of South Carolina, in Convention assembled, grateful to <b>God</b> for our liberties, do ordain and establish this Constitution for the preservation and perpetuation of the same."
41. South Dakota	1889	"We, the people of South Dakota, grateful to <b>Almighty God</b> for our civil and religious liberties..."
42. Tennessee	1870	Art. I, Sect. III "That all men have a natural and indefeasible right to worship <b>Almighty God</b> according to the dictates of their own conscience..."
43. Texas	1876	"Humbly invoking the blessings of <b>Almighty God</b> , the people of the State of Texas, do ordain and establish this Constitution."
4. Utah	1896	"Grateful to <b>Almighty God</b> for life and liberty, we establish this Constitution..."
45. Vermont	1793	Art. III "That all persons have a natural and unalienable right, to worship <b>Almighty God</b> , according to the dictates of their own consciences and understandings, as in their opinion shall be regulated by the word of <b>God</b> ; and that no person ought to, or of right can be compelled to attend any religious worship, or erect or support any place of worship, or maintain any minister, contrary to the dictates of conscience, nor can any person be justly deprived or abridged of any civil right as a citizen, on account of religious sentiments, or peculia[r] mode of religious worship; and that no authority can, or ought to be vested in, or assumed by, any power whatever, that shall in any case interfere with, or in any manner control the rights of conscience, in the free exercise of religious worship. Nevertheless, every sect or denomination of christians ought to observe the sabbath or <b>Lord's day</b> , and keep up some sort of religious worship, which to them shall seem most agreeable to the revealed will of <b>God</b> ."
46. Virginia	1776	Bill of Rights, Sec. 16 "That religion, or the duty which we owe to <b>our Creator</b> , and the manner of discharging it, can be directed only by

		reason and conviction, not by force or violence; and therefore all men are equally entitled to the free exercise of religion, according to the dictates of conscience; and that it is the mutual duty of all to practice Christian forbearance, love, and charity towards each other."
47. Washington	1889	"We, the people of the State of Washington, grateful to the <b>Supreme Ruler of the Universe</b> for our liberties, do ordain this constitution."
48. West Virginia	1872	"Since through <b>Divine Providence</b> we enjoy the blessings of civil, political and religious liberty, we, the people of West Virginia, in and through the provisions of this Constitution, reaffirm our faith in and constant reliance upon <b>God</b> and seek diligently to promote, preserve and perpetuate good government in the state of West Virginia for the common welfare, freedom and security of ourselves and our posterity."
49. Wisconsin	1848	"We, the people of Wisconsin, grateful to <b>Almighty God</b> for our freedom, in order to secure its blessings, form a more perfect government..."
50. Wyoming	1889	"We, the people of the State of Wyoming, grateful to <b>God</b> for our civil, political and religious liberties, and desiring to secure them to ourselves and perpetuate them to our posterity, do ordain and establish this Constitution."

**I LOVE this part of our American heritage.**

**But MONEY and TAXATION models from European bankers, RUINED our chance at Freedom.**

**During the 1960s PROTESTS against the VIETNAM WAR and the IMPERIAL CAPITALIST PIGS of communist corporate America, Americans were no longer interested in the OLD SCHOOL systems that held America's resources hostage.**

**The ORIGINAL FEDERALIST PAPERS, the FOUNDATION of establishing a NEW CONSTITUTION for a NEW FREE WORLD, did JUSTIFY the creation of MONEY and TAXATION based on NATIONAL DEFENSE in the unity of the 13 colonies against another European invasion.**

**But BEING FROM EUROPE, the original framers missed the BOAT persay, to do without banking systems as the primary method of exchange.**

**Today, we are experiencing the NIGHTMARE FAILURES of a system that is LOVED, ADORED AND PRAISED by the wealthy and despised by the poor.**

**Even Fox News in all of their WONDERFUL presentations of THE GOOD SIDE OF AMERICA has not produced ONE ARGUMENT that has justified the current monetary system in a rational way that lays a foundation for the framework of a FREE SOCIETY.**

**With democrats worshipping their monkey god Barack Hussein Obama, a GOLDMAN SACHS appointed president and Republicans SNUBBING the TEA PARTY representative Sarah Palin, shoving her aside to dwell in a separate tent to support, MITT ROMNEY, there is no chance in either camp to really FREE THE SLAVES from money, taxation, and this continual battle to CONTROL and MANIPULATE earth's resources so that we can be LESS COMMUNISTIC.**

**I'm sorry to report after these observations that our FRAMERS are to BLAME for the misery both sides are suffering, and all those who are caught looking at both sides wondering if there is ANOTHER WAY to go without hurting the masses of people who have become dependent on dysfunctional ancient methods of monetary exchanges that THREATEN everyone, versus HELPING everyone.**

**HAMILTON: Those of them which have been most labored with that view, seem in substance to amount to this: "It is not true, because the exigencies of the Union may not be susceptible of limitation, that its power of laying taxes ought to be unconfined. Revenue is as requisite to the purposes of the local administrations as to those of the Union; and the former are at least of equal importance with the latter to the happiness of the people.**

**ROBIN FOX: MONEY/TAXATION/TAX COLLECTION/BANKING/LOANS/DEBTS have NEVER EVER led to the HAPPINESS OF A FREE PEOPLE. Sure, we can RALLY OUR FLAG against the British! We can hire STUART VARNEY to showcase how his own continent FAILED at SOCIALIST policies, while praising a failed capitalist system [and of course, I love Stuart Varney against all communists and communism as he is a good man that makes a point**

**that sharing GREY POUPON between limousines is a good case for “SUCCESS AND PROSPERITY.” Nevertheless, people are happy when they have toilet paper. People are happy when roads are paved. People are happy when they are FREE. But I must say, that the whole world is being held hostage to MONEY and TAXATION and this was THE WRONG FORMULA, except in the justification of WAR against a greater foe than bankers. Then again, doesn’t BANKING on an international level CREATE wars? But no society on earth is FREED from putting someone’s image on their own currency in order to elevate the pride of FAILED SYSTEMS that are like flies rubbing their hands together for a feast while standing on dung. And what I mean are communist and fascist countries, whose OPPRESSIONS through slave labor remain unchanged, ever looking to the FREE WORLD for some answers, only to end up emptier than the coffers of FAILED financial policies based on failed historical monetary philosophies.**

**I have the HIGHEST RESPECT for the FEDERALIST PAPERS written by three AWESOME framers of the best constitution on earth. But my point in ADDRESSING the FEDERALIST PAPERS head on, is that a lot of GOOD AND DECENT PEOPLE who aren’t communists, socialists, terrorists, dictators, or capitalists, disagree. Quite simply, there is much feeling that we want FREEDOM. MONEY destroyed my life. MONEY has destroyed a lot of lives while uplifting only the few and the proud.**

**I will not argue against the FAITH of our Framers who meant well:**

Founding Fathers on Religion in Government

[Note: Statements that are classified as "pro" or "con" do not necessarily mean that the person quoted is wholly "pro" or "con" "religion in government," only that the Founding Father quoted made statements that could be classified as "pro" or "con." Read [about the Founding Fathers](#)]

**General Reference** *(not clearly pro or con)*

Vincent Phillip Muñoz, PhD, Assistant Professor of Political Science at Tufts University, wrote in his paper "Religious Liberty and the American Founding" published in the Spring/Summer 2003 issue of *Intercollegiate Review*:

*"...Although the founders agreed on the legitimate ends of government, they disagreed about the means the state could use to secure those ends. Specifically, the founders disagreed on whether the government legitimately could employ religion as a means to*



*secure republican liberty.*

*Two general positions existed. On one side stood the libertarians, who emphasized the need to limit government in order to protect civil and religious liberty. James Madison and Thomas Jefferson most clearly represent this position. On the other side were those of a more conservative disposition, who believed religion supported the good order of society and thus that government should endorse and encourage religion. George Washington most clearly represents this position."*

Spring/Summer 2003 [Vincent Muñoz, PhD](#) ★★ ★



Charles L. Cohen, PhD, Director of the Lubar Institute for the Study of the Abrahamic Religions wrote in a July 18, 2006 e-mail to ProCon.org that:

*"The Framers did consider religion an important source of social morality - but they also knew that religious broils could destabilize governments, and, more than almost anything else, many of them feared denominational conflict."*


July 18, 2006 [Charles Cohen, PhD](#) ★★ ★

Founding Father	PRO Religion in Government	CON Religion in Government
<a href="#">John Adams</a> ★★★ Second President of the US	<p>"We have no government armed in power capable of contending in human passions unbridled by morality and religion. Our constitution was made only for a moral and religious people. It is wholly inadequate for the government of any other."</p> <p>1798, Address to the militia of Massachusetts</p> <p>"The experiment is made, and has completely succeeded: it can no longer be called in question, whether authority in magistrates, and obedience of citizens, can be grounded on reason, morality, and the Christian religion, without the monkery of priests, or the knavery of politicians."</p> <p>1788, "A Defence of the Constitutions of Government of the United States of America"</p> <p>[Editor's Note: We assume "the experiment"</p>	<p>"Nothing is more dreaded than the National Government meddling with Religion."</p> <p>June 12, 1812, Letter to Benjamin Rush</p> <p>"Although the detail of the formation of the American governments is at present little known or regarded either in Europe or in America, it may hereafter become an object of curiosity. It will never be pretended that any persons employed in that service had interviews with the gods, or were in any degree under the influence of Heaven, more than those at work upon ships or houses, or laboring in merchandise or agriculture; it will forever be acknowledged that these governments were contrived merely by the use of reason and the senses..."</p> <p>1788, "A Defence of the Constitutions of</p>

	refers to the experiment of creating a new nation called the United States of America.]	Government of the United States of America"
<a href="#"><u>Benjamin Franklin</u></a> ★★☆☆ Constitutional Convention Delegate and signer of the Constitution and Declaration of Independence	<p>"I have lived, a long time, and the longer I live, the more convincing proofs I see of this truth -- that God Governs in the affairs of men. And if a sparrow cannot fall to the ground without His notice, is it probable that an empire can rise without His aid?"</p> <p>July 28, 1787, Address at the Constitutional Convention</p>	<p>"When a Religion is good, I conceive it will support itself; and when it does not support itself, and God does not take care to support it so that its Professors are obliged to call for help of the Civil Power [government], it is a sign, I apprehend, of its being a bad one."</p> <p>Oct. 9, 1780, Letter to Richard Price</p>
<a href="#"><u>Alexander Hamilton,</u></a> ★★☆☆ First US Secretary of the Treasury	<p>"In my opinion, the present constitution is the standard to which we are to cling.... Let an association be formed to be denominated 'The Christian Constitutional Society,' its object to be first: The support of the Christian religion. Second: The support of the United States."</p> <p>Apr. 16-21, 1802, Letter to James Bayard</p>	<p>[Note: No "con" statement could be found.]</p>
<a href="#"><u>Patrick Henry</u></a> ★★☆☆ Member of the First Continental Congress, Governor of Virginia	<p>"The great pillars of all government...[are] virtue, morality, and religion. This is the armor, my friend, and this alone, that renders us invincible."</p> <p>Jan. 8, 1799, Letter to Archibald Blair</p>	<p>[Note: No "con" statement could be found.]</p>
<a href="#"><u>John Jay</u></a> ★★☆☆ First Chief Justice of the United States	<p>"Providence has given to our people the choice of their rulers, and it is the duty, as well as the privilege and interest of our Christian nation to</p>	<p>[Note: No "con" statement could be found.]</p>

Supreme Court	<p>select and prefer Christians for their rulers."</p> <p>Feb. 28, 1797, Letter to clergyman Jedidiah Morse</p>	
<p><a href="#"><u>Thomas Jefferson</u></a>    Third President of the United States</p>	<p>[Note: No "pro" statement could be found.]</p>	<p>"I contemplate with sovereign reverence that act of the whole American people which declared that their legislature should 'make no law respecting an establishment of religion, or prohibiting the free exercise thereof,' thus building a wall of separation between Church &amp; State."</p> <p>Jan. 1, 1802, Letter to the Connecticut Danbury Baptist Association</p>
<p><a href="#"><u>James Madison</u></a>    Fourth President of the United States</p>	<p>[Note: No "pro" statement could be found.]</p>	<p>"[T]here remains in others a strong bias towards the old error, that without some sort of alliance or coalition between Government &amp; Religion neither can be duly supported... the danger cannot be too carefully guarded against.</p> <p>Every new &amp; successful example therefore of a perfect separation between ecclesiastical and civil matters, is of importance... [R]eligion &amp; Govt. will both exist in greater purity, the less they are mixed together...</p> <p>We are teaching the world the great truth that Govts. do better without Kings &amp; Nobles than with them. The merit will be doubled by the other lesson that Religion flourishes in greater purity, without then with the aid of Govt."</p>

		<p>July 10, 1822, Letter to Edward Livingston</p> <p>"What influence, in fact, have ecclesiastical [of or relating to a church] establishments had on Civil Society? In some instances they have been seen to erect a spiritual tyranny on the ruins of the civil authority; in many instances they have been seen upholding the thrones of political tyranny; in no instance have they been seen the guardians of the liberties of the people. Rulers who wished to subvert the public liberty may have found an established Clergy convenient auxiliaries. A just Government, instituted to secure and perpetuate it, needs them not."</p> <p>June 20, 1787, "Memorial and Remonstrance" to the General Assembly of the Commonwealth of Virginia</p>
<p><a href="#"><u>George Mason</u></a>            ★★☆☆            Delegate to the Constitutional Convention, called the "father" of the US Bill of Rights</p>	<p>"The laws of nature are the laws of God, whose authority can be superseded by no power on earth."</p> <p>1772, <i>Robin v. Hardaway</i>,            General Court of Virginia</p>	<p>[Note: No "con" statement could be found.]</p>
<p><a href="#"><u>Thomas Paine</u></a>            ★★☆☆            Writer, Revolutionary leader</p>	<p>"The cause of America is in a great measure the cause of all mankind. Where, say some, is the king of America? I'll tell you, friend, He reigns above."</p> <p>1776, <i>Common Sense</i></p>	<p>"And here without anger or resentment I bid you farewell. Sincerely wishing, that as men and christians, ye many always fully and uninterruptedly enjoy every civil and religious right; and be, in your turn, the means of securing it to others; but that the example which ye have unwisely set, of mingling religion with politics, may be disavowed and reprobated by every inhabitant of America."</p> <p>1776, <i>Common Sense</i></p>

<p><a href="#"><u>George Washington</u></a>    First US President,  Commander of  Revolutionary Army</p>	<p>"Of all the dispositions and habits which lead to political prosperity, religion and morality are indispensable supports. In vain would that man claim the tribute of Patriotism, who should labor to subvert these great pillars of human happiness, these firmest props of the duties of Man and citizens. The mere Politician, equally with the pious man, ought to respect and to cherish them.  A volume could not trace all their connections with private and public felicity...</p> <p>Let it simply be asked where is the security for property, for reputation, for life, if the sense of religious obligation desert the oaths, which are the instruments of investigation in Courts of Justice?"</p> <p>Sep. 19, 1796, "Farewell Address,"  <i>Philadelphia's American Daily Advisor</i></p> <p>"[W]hile just government protects all in their religious rights, true religion affords to government its surest support."</p> <p>Oct. 1789, Letter to the Synod of the Reformed Dutch Church of North America</p>	<p>"Of all the animosities which have existed among mankind, those which are caused by difference of sentiments in religion appear to be the most inveterate and distressing, and ought most to be deprecated.</p> <p>I was in hopes that the enlightened and liberal policy, which has marked the present age, would at least have reconciled Christians of every denomination so far that we should never again see the religious disputes carried to such a pitch as to endanger the peace of society."</p> <p>Oct. 20, 1792, Letter to Edward</p>
---	--	---

<http://undergod.procon.org/view.resource.php?resourceID=000070>

**As a BELIEVER, I would side with HAMILTON and our CHRISTIAN FRAMERS against EUROPEAN oppression. I would stand WITH THEM on the BATTLEFIELD of NATIONAL SELF DEFENSE against any oppressive empires.**

**I reject the Catholic Church's history of the oppressions of Christians and Jews who died rejecting their false doctrines. I reject ANY king or queen or monarchy that doesn't provide their citizens with the FREEDOM that our Holy Bible and U.S. Constitution proposes.**

**But sometimes, some modern day UNBELIEVERS, in addition to believers who are wide awake in REJECTING money and taxation, can**

**be perceptive in their rebellions that sometimes, GOOD MEN make mistakes. I've made mistakes. But one thing that is unmistakably clear to me is that MONEY, TAXATION, and any FINANCIAL SYSTEM is repulsive to FREEDOM.**

**Can you IMAGINE a world without money and taxation?**

**Does your head go blank?**

**Have you heard your GURUS of "HARD WORK" tell you, "THERE IS NO OTHER WAY! WE CAN'T DO THAT! THAT'S NOT POSSIBLE!"**

**I was always kind of a middle of the road kind of guy – swerving neither to the far right nor the far left – but just remaining the middle balance on the teeter totter.**

**HAMILTON: It is, therefore, as necessary that the State governments should be able to command the means of supplying their wants, as that the national government should possess the like faculty in respect to the wants of the Union. But an indefinite power of taxation in the LATTER might, and probably would in time, deprive the FORMER of the means of providing for their own necessities; and would subject them entirely to the mercy of the national legislature.**

**As the laws of the Union are to become the supreme law of the land, as it is to have power to pass all laws that may be NECESSARY for carrying into execution the authorities with which it is proposed to vest it, the national government might at any time abolish the taxes imposed for State objects upon the pretense of an interference with its own. It might allege a necessity of doing this in order to give efficacy to the national revenues. And thus all the resources of taxation might by degrees become the subjects of federal monopoly, to the entire exclusion and destruction of the State governments."**

**ROBIN FOX: This is where Alexander Hamilton would agree with me in my generation while DEMOCRATS and a few Republicans corrupted today by the politics of money and taxation, that our MODERN SYSTEM has become the subjects of FEDERAL MONOPOLY to the entire exclusion and destruction of the State governments. Such an**

**ALEXANDER HAMILTON prediction has come true in OUR GENERATION! The ANTAGONISTS of our generation have proven these words of wisdom and fulfilled them with FAILED policies of their own COMMUNIST aspirations.**

**HAMILTON: This mode of reasoning appears sometimes to turn upon the supposition of usurpation in the national government; at other times it seems to be designed only as a deduction from the constitutional operation of its intended powers. It is only in the latter light that it can be admitted to have any pretensions to fairness. The moment we launch into conjectures about the usurpations of the federal government, we get into an unfathomable abyss, and fairly put ourselves out of the reach of all reasoning. Imagination may range at pleasure till it gets bewildered amidst the labyrinths of an enchanted castle, and knows not on which side to turn to extricate itself from the perplexities into which it has so rashly adventured. Whatever may be the limits or modifications of the powers of the Union, it is easy to imagine an endless train of possible dangers; and by indulging an excess of jealousy and timidity, we may bring ourselves to a state of absolute scepticism and irresolution. I repeat here what I have observed in substance in another place, that all observations founded upon the danger of usurpation ought to be referred to the composition and structure of the government, not to the nature or extent of its powers. The State governments, by their original constitutions, are invested with complete sovereignty. In what does our security consist against usurpation from that quarter? Doubtless in the manner of their formation, and in a due dependence of those who are to administer them upon the people. If the proposed construction of the federal government be found, upon an impartial examination of it, to be such as to afford, to a proper extent, the same species of security, all apprehensions on the score of usurpation ought to be discarded.**

**It should not be forgotten that a disposition in the State governments to encroach upon the rights of the Union is quite as probable as a disposition in the Union to encroach upon the rights of the State governments. What side would be likely to prevail in such a conflict, must depend on the means which the contending parties could employ toward insuring success. As in republics strength is always on the side**

**of the people, and as there are weighty reasons to induce a belief that the State governments will commonly possess most influence over them, the natural conclusion is that such contests will be most apt to end to the disadvantage of the Union; and that there is greater probability of encroachments by the members upon the federal head, than by the federal head upon the members. But it is evident that all conjectures of this kind must be extremely vague and fallible: and that it is by far the safest course to lay them altogether aside, and to confine our attention wholly to the nature and extent of the powers as they are delineated in the Constitution. Every thing beyond this must be left to the prudence and firmness of the people; who, as they will hold the scales in their own hands, it is to be hoped, will always take care to preserve the constitutional equilibrium between the general and the State governments. Upon this ground, which is evidently the true one, it will not be difficult to obviate the objections which have been made to an indefinite power of taxation in the United States.**



## **FEDERALIST No. 32**

### **The Same Subject Continued**

#### **(Concerning the General Power of Taxation)**

***From the Daily Advertiser.***

***Thursday, January 3, 1788.***

**[Alexander Hamilton](#)**

**To the People of the State of New York:**

**ALTHOUGH I am of opinion that there would be no real danger of the consequences which seem to be apprehended to the State governments from a power in the Union to **control them in the levies of money**, because I am persuaded that the sense of the people, the extreme hazard of provoking the resentments of the State governments, and a conviction of the utility and necessity of local administrations for local purposes, would be a complete barrier against the oppressive use of such a power; yet I am willing here to allow, in its full extent, **the justness of the reasoning which requires that the individual States should possess an independent and uncontrollable authority to raise their own revenues for the supply of their own wants.****

**ROBIN FOX: Seems reasonable. Individual states SHOULD possess an independent and uncontrollable authority to raise their own SUPPLY of WANT and DEMAND, but couldn't this have been done WITHOUT money and taxation? To transfer the Rothschild banking system of Europe to America was the wrong formula. Even Lincoln, at the height of wanting to create his own money, got shot, that the agenda of population control could take effect in order to destroy the very liberty our Framers fought and died for.**

**The argument has always been, "No! If everything was FREE nobody would want to work!" While that whole generation was used to depending on the slave labor of oppressed Africans and the British were on the war path, controlling a government or a state in the levies of MONEY was STILL the wrong formula. As truly the JUSTIFICATION of MONEY and TAXATION got repeated as THE PILLAR OF 'FREEDOM'**

**so I justify a world where MONEY and TAXATION do not exist – where no price is put on anything or anyone.**

**People have WORKED HARD under the delusion that they will get a GOOD or BETTER return for their labor. But to deceive the masses of Americans into believing that working ‘real hard’ for such low wages, while charging EXCESSIVE principal and interest among Universities was an evil that caused a lot of people to not pursue their dreams, oppressed not by lack of money, but oppressed by MONEY period.**

**Selling yourself and your dreams at a price, that someone else may harvest your talents is wrong. It’s not freedom.**

**FREEDOM would be being able to invent, create, innovate, work hard, play hard, without the imposition of being priced and taxed. The enjoyment and harvesting of earth’s resources could EASILY be SHARED so that nobody would be hungry, thirsty, or unsheltered. Even the best charities organized by the most generous wealthy philanthropists of the world still have not remedied the problems of an overpriced health care system, which ought to have been no cost to patients to begin with; the overpriced and overtaxed housing market, owned by throne dwarves; the overpriced and overtaxed food and energy supplies. From childhood through adulthood, this burden of pricing and taxing everything and everyone, at the expense of other people’s hard work, whose blood, sweat, and tears allowed ‘the wealthy’ to cash in and cash out of a system designed by the wealthy for the wealthy. Is it FAIR to reduce the employee to LOW wages and tell them they have to work 30 years for a mortgage, when it is most likely they won’t survive either keeping that job or being able to pay off that mortgage? UNDER SIEGE is what money and taxation provokes.**

**If the very problem of ENTITLEMENT PROGRAMS depending on TAXATION is a FAILED SOCIALIST system dependent upon CAPITALIST success, this whole experiment has FAILED so proudly to produce the FREE SOCIETY that the first settlers and last settlers of this great country dreamed of.**

**After what I have observed in the 40 years between 1972 and 2012 – none of earth’s resources were FREE, so long as everyone and everything was taxed and priced, while we hope to earn that extra ENTERTAINMENT money to pleasure ourselves with temporary gratifications of the carnal senses. Is not MONEY the main cause for the DESIRES and WANTS beyond just the basic needs? Have we really become so needy as to make personal ambitions, wants, and desires have the tax collectors and bankers put a price on us?**

**HAMILTON: And making this concession, I affirm that (with the sole exception of duties on imports and exports) they would, under the plan of the convention, retain that authority in the most absolute and unqualified sense; and that an attempt on the part of the national government to abridge them in the exercise of it, would be a violent assumption of power, unwarranted by any article or clause of its Constitution.**

**ROBIN FOX: It is the “VIOLENT ASSUMPTION OF POWER,” that democratic imposters have abused and destroyed this failed capitalist experiment of money and taxation and good Republican government, although tried being responsible by OBEYING THE RULES OF MATH, even the conservative Republican arguments are a failure. Whether it is greed and making cuts or overspending, overtaxing, and over inflating to achieve this FAILED utopian philosophy, MONEY and TAXATION are a burden to the human soul, made in GOD’S FREE IMAGE.**

**God lives in a FREE kingdom, and money and taxation in ANY WORLD POWER has not by any means reflected God’s Kingdom!**

**HAMILTON: An entire consolidation of the States into one complete national sovereignty would imply an entire subordination of the parts; and whatever powers might remain in them, would be altogether dependent on the general will.**

**ROBIN FOX: THE ROCKEFELLER oil monopoly, expanded this idea for the creation of the UNITED NATIONS, which, during the GLOBALIST REVOLUTION of international traitorous trade, they made the CONSOLIDATION OF NATIONS into one incomplete United Nations,**

**implying an entire subordination of the parts, inclusive of AMERICA and the POWERS of the world became altogether dependent on the general will of the United Nations, a tool used to INVADE AMERICA with a new kind of invasion from foreign government influence.**

**To have an imposter like Barack Hussein Obama voted into the presidency by liars, perverts, gangs, racists, gays, and approved of by a corrupted world body of socialists and communists, has in effect, made AMERICA a byword among freedom seeking nations, who no longer look up to America as a "FREE WORLD." The government of the United States of America has become a byword, because the FINANCIAL SYSTEMS worshiped by its leaders are a failed experimentation that has hurt, harassed, and threatened more people, than healed, comforted, and freed more people.**

**Islamics look at AMERICA and laugh and rightly so.**

**Communists look at AMERICA and want war and rightly so.**

**Socialists look at AMERICA and shout, "YOU SO PROUDLY FAILED TOO!"**

**Christians in America are waking up to the REALITY that MONEY and TAXATION are all one big LIE, and illusion that made the Rockefeller beasts FATTER. To subject a FREE WORLD to worlds that have never really been free and have had even WORSE and even MORE OPPRESSIVE financial systems tyrannically enslaving its citizens under communist principles – is a formula that can only be remedied through AMERICANS LOVING FREEDOM and shutting down banks, money systems, and taxation systems.**

**If you want to work hard, you can work hard without money.**

**If you want to build a business, instead of getting a loan, we'll simply NOT get a loan and build it for FREE without money or taxation prohibiting the progress of free and talented people's who do not wish the Clintonian or Nixon style oppressions to be repeated day and night under every rooftop THEY BUILT for someone else's glory.**

**Jos 24:13** So I gave you a land<sup>h</sup> on which you did not toil and cities you did not build; and you **live in them** and eat from vineyards and olive groves that you did not plant.<sup>i</sup>

**Jos 24:14** “Now fear the LORD<sup>j</sup> and serve him with all faithfulness.<sup>k</sup> Throw away the gods<sup>l</sup> your forefathers worshiped beyond the River and in Egypt,<sup>m</sup> and serve the LORD.

Indeed, the repeated history of WARS fought over land and territory among pagan states has caused astounding devastation and death and PEACE treaties had to be signed when the balance of powers had to be tipped in favor of the GREATER GOOD.

The only piece of land and property the world community is NOT ENTITLED to is THE LAND OF ISRAEL, reserved by GOD exclusively for the ISRAELI peoples and not to a pagan power.

## **New Heavens and a New Earth**

**Isa 65:17** “Behold, I will create new heavens and a new earth.<sup>n</sup> The former things will not be remembered,<sup>o</sup> nor will they come to mind.

**Isa 65:18** But be glad and rejoice<sup>p</sup> forever in what I will create, for I will create Jerusalem<sup>q</sup> to be a delight and its people a joy.

**Isa 65:19** I will rejoice<sup>r</sup> over Jerusalem and take delight<sup>s</sup> in my people; the sound of weeping and of crying<sup>t</sup> will be heard in it no more.

**Isa 65:20** “Never again will there be in it an infant<sup>u</sup> who lives but a few days, or an old man who does not live out his years;<sup>v</sup> he who dies at a hundred will be thought a mere youth; he who fails to reach<sup>134</sup> a hundred will be considered accursed.

**Isa 65:21** They will build houses<sup>w</sup> and dwell in them; they will plant vineyards and eat their fruit.<sup>x</sup>

**Isa 65:22** No longer will they build houses and others **live in them,**<sup>y</sup> or plant and others eat. For as the days of a tree,<sup>z</sup> so will be the days<sup>a</sup> of my people; my chosen<sup>b</sup> ones will long enjoy the works of their hands.

**Isa 65:23** They will not toil in vain<sup>c</sup> or bear children doomed to misfortune;<sup>d</sup> for they will be a people blessed<sup>e</sup> by the LORD, they and their descendants<sup>f</sup> with them.

**Isa 65:24** Before they call<sup>g</sup> I will answer;<sup>h</sup> while they are still speaking<sup>i</sup> I will hear.

**Isa 65:25** The wolf and the lamb<sup>j</sup> will feed together, and the lion will eat straw like the ox,<sup>k</sup> but dust will be the serpent's<sup>l</sup> food. They will neither harm nor destroy on all my holy mountain,"<sup>m</sup> says the LORD. \_

**"22** No longer will they build houses and others **live in them,**<sup>y</sup> or plant and others eat."

**YOUR SYSTEMS "GLOBALLY" through MONEY and TAXATION have inspired us to believe that before we can live in a house, someone else has to build them and that the owners of the builders must be enriched by our labor until we pay THEM what we OWE THEM! Why should we OWE anyone anything? We SHOULDN'T! And yet, both the liberal and conservative arguments have produced this notion that it's okay to "BUY A HOUSE," and when a job system ruled by foreign governments no longer pays you, you must give up your property, as it was NEVER YOUR PROPERTY TO BEGIN WITH and someone else must live in your house when you don't PAY THEM WHAT YOU OWED THEM! If you pay back what YOU OWE that makes you RESPONSIBLE! If you don't pay back what you OWE THEM that makes you IRRESPONSIBLE!**

**Duh. WRONG!**

**They will not toil in vain<sup>c</sup> or bear children doomed to misfortune;**

**Do you feel like you are toiling in vain? Are you bearing children DOOMED to the MISFORTUNES of MONEY and TAXATION which are**

**being labeled: HARD WORK! SUCCESS! ACHIEVEMENT! PROGRESS! ADVANCEMENT!**

**Most toil is based on VANITY and is expended in VAIN.**

***SOLOMON SAID:***

**The race is **not to the swift** or the battle to the strong,<sup>o</sup> nor does food come to the wise<sup>p</sup> or wealth to the brilliant or favor to the learned; but time and chance<sup>q</sup> happen to them all.<sup>r</sup>**

**But CONSERVATIVE argument says that the race is to the swift, the battle to the strong, food should only come to the wise, and wealth is only made by BRILLIANT and SUCCESSFUL people and favor should only be given to COLLEGE/UNIVERSITY educated. But no matter what they boast, they are in opposition to Solomon's wisdom.**

**Hag 1:5 Now this is what the LORD Almighty says: “Give careful thought<sup>n</sup> to your ways.**

**Hag 1:6 You have planted much, but have harvested little.<sup>o</sup> You eat, but never have enough.<sup>p</sup> You drink, but never have your fill.<sup>q</sup> You put on clothes, but are not warm. You earn wages,<sup>r</sup> only to put them in a purse with **holes in it.**”**

**Such has been the intolerable burden that has caused so much depression, anger, fighting, hopelessness, discouragement, anxiety and fear. The SYSTEMS of GLOBAL MONEY and GLOBAL TAXATION and even AMERICAN MONEY and AMERICAN TAXATION [not much difference], is that the LEADERS DEMAND your “HARD WORK!”, that you PLANT MUCH!**

**Yes. Conservatives preach: PLANT MUCH! And though you harvest a little, maybe in 30 years when you are Stossel's age you CAN HARVEST MUCH! After all, look at me! I'm SOMEBODY SUCCESSFUL! And if you don't like SUCCESS that makes you jealous and a person who just doesn't want to work real hard! I mean, if you sell enough**

**LEMONADE by exploiting little children who need medical care for their parents, YOU CAN SUCCEED! SEE!**

**Hag 1:6 You have planted much, but have harvested little. ° You eat, but never have enough. ° You drink, but never have your fill. ° You put on clothes, but are not warm. You earn wages, ° only to put them in a purse with holes in it.”**

**Most “JOBS” and “CAREERS” in ANY COUNTRY are based on SLAVE LABOR and not work that allows FREEDOM. MONEY and TAXATION give you purses with holes in them. MONEY only has as much value as THE WORLD placed on it and Jesus Christ has called us out of the world to love HIM more than money.**

**People are SO AFRAID that FREEDOM will never be achieved until EARTH'S OWNER comes to claim that which is HIS and not theirs or mine or yours to boast ownership over.**

**Someone else DOES OWN YOUR LAND – He is called: GOD ALMIGHTY and not “REAL ESTATE GURU JIMMY SWAGGART!”**

**HAMILTON: But as the plan of the convention aims only at a partial union or consolidation, the State governments would clearly retain all the rights of sovereignty which they before had, and which were not, by that act, EXCLUSIVELY delegated to the United States. This exclusive delegation, or rather this alienation, of State sovereignty, would only exist in three cases: where the Constitution in express terms granted an exclusive authority to the Union; where it granted in one instance an authority to the Union, and in another prohibited the States from exercising the like authority; and where it granted an authority to the Union, to which a similar authority in the States would be absolutely and totally CONTRADICTIONARY and REPUGNANT. I use these terms to distinguish this last case from another which might appear to resemble it, but which would, in fact, be essentially different; I mean where the exercise of a concurrent jurisdiction might be productive of occasional interferences in the POLICY of any branch of administration, but would not imply any direct contradiction or repugnancy in point of constitutional authority. These three cases of exclusive jurisdiction in the federal government may be exemplified by**



the following instances: The last clause but one in the eighth section of the first article provides expressly that Congress shall exercise "EXCLUSIVE LEGISLATION" over the district to be appropriated as the seat of government. This answers to the first case. The first clause of the same section empowers Congress "TO LAY AND COLLECT TAXES, DUTIES, IMPOSTS AND EXCISES"; and the second clause of the tenth section of the same article declares that, "NO STATE SHALL, without the consent of Congress, LAY ANY IMPOSTS OR DUTIES ON IMPORTS OR EXPORTS, except for the purpose of executing its inspection laws." Hence would result an exclusive power in the Union to lay duties on imports and exports, with the particular exception mentioned; but this power is abridged by another clause, which declares that no tax or duty shall be laid on articles exported from any State; in consequence of which qualification, it now only extends to the DUTIES ON IMPORTS. This answers to the second case. The third will be found in that clause which declares that Congress shall have power "to establish a UNIFORM RULE of naturalization throughout the United States." This must necessarily be exclusive; because if each State had power to prescribe a DISTINCT RULE, there could not be a UNIFORM RULE.

**ROBIN FOX:** Let's look at the CONSTITUTION that Alexander Hamilton referred to ARTICLE 1, SECTION 8:

Section 8.

The Congress shall have Power To lay and collect Taxes, Duties, Imposts and Excises, to pay the Debts and provide for the common Defence and general Welfare of the United States; but all Duties, Imposts and Excises shall be uniform throughout the United States;

**STOP:** Congress should never have had to bear the burden of a TAX system, collected from the hard work of others to pay for the common defence and general welfare of the United States. You might think, as a Constitutional Conservative Republican or a Libertarian that I am committing an act of TREASON by disagreeing with some of the ideals contained in the FEDERALIST PAPERS or the U.S. CONSTITUTION. The argument might follow, "Well, if you disregard one thing, you have

**to discard the WHOLE THING!” Not necessarily. We can just get rid of the TAXATION and MONEY parts and still hold onto the integrity of our CONSTITUTIONAL government, without scrapping the WHOLE document. I will NEVER argue NATIONAL DEFENSE as a first priority and it’s always been the first priority of good, caring, conservative Republican men who have held onto this principle as a basis for accepting MONEY and TAXATION as the method of bribing flesh and souls to become slaves. If the SOLDIER has to slave and the government official has to slave, then the citizen is NOT FREE to not be a slave and must be depended upon to PAY your leaders to sit and render decisions that you mostly would disagree with, if you had been so empowered.**

**They always state, “DON’T DEPEND ON THE GOVERNMENT BECAUSE GOVERNMENT DEPENDENCY IS COMMUNISM AND SOCIALISM – BOTH A FAILED PHILOSOPHY.”**

**I will respond: “No government representing people should depend on the hard work of citizens to pay for it because THAT IS COMMUNISM, a collective approach to using human beings as BATTERIES to feed the ONE WORLD religion of ecumenical orgies.” If the conservative argument is that “NO FREE AMERICAN CITIZEN should depend on the government,” then why does the government depend on EVERY CITIZEN to pay for them? Shall we ALL BE CUT OFF?**

**Does NATIONAL PRIDE and PATRIOTISM really depend upon TAXATION and MONEY as the acceptable form of so called: “RESPONSIBILITY,” “HARD WORK,” and INCENTIVE?**

**CONSTITUTION: To borrow Money on the credit of the United States;**

**ROBIN FOX: Bad idea that our representatives had to “BORROW” any money on any form of CREDIT. In turn, to make citizens dependent on BORROWING Student Loans to pay for education; loans to pay for cars and other forms of transportation; loan debts to pay for health care; taxation with or without representation: All such realities have been most burdensome to FREE SOULS that want nothing to do with being taxed or being treated like prostitutes.**

**CONSTITUTION: To regulate Commerce with foreign Nations, and among the several States, and with the Indian Tribes;**

**ROBIN FOX: I like the way that PILGRIMS negotiated with Indian tribes. Although it is THE TRUTH that a BARTERING SYSTEM wouldn't work any better than communism, socialism, capitalism, taxation, or some other form of monetary exchange is ALSO TRUE.**

**Although you couldn't FORCE people to give, to love, to share, to help, to volunteer, and actually CARE about your neighbors to utilize the 'hard work' ethic simply for the benefits of a FREE WORLD is to overcome a satanic fallen world ruled by satan who doesn't seem to want the human race to be free. Nor does the ruler of the kingdom of the air want anyone to BE FREE of money or taxation, since these are his systems ruled by people he appointed to rule over them.**

**CONSTITUTION: To establish an uniform Rule of Naturalization, and uniform Laws on the subject of Bankruptcies throughout the United States;**

**ROBIN FOX: I filed for bankruptcy two times. I watched my mother and father file for bankruptcy twice. We played by the rules of your ideas about civilization and suffered the humility and degradation that comes, not from OUR PERSONAL FAILURES, but on the FAILURES of a FAILED SYSTEM that other people initiated at our expense.**

**I wouldn't have wasted so much time if EDUCATION, HEALTH CARE, ENERGY, HOUSING, TRANSPORTATION were all free. We followed the rules and died under those rules. Now I have called into question every rule that has been JUSTIFIED by both our GOOD legislators, and EVIL legislators to determine exactly what it was that has destroyed my father's life and my own life too.**

**I don't blame myself for FINANCIAL FAILURE. As you can see, I could have earned MILLIONS of dollars as a BOOK WRITER, had the opportunity of a REAL UNIVERSITY EDUCATION not require me to be a SLAVE of student loan debt for seven lifetimes beyond my own time. Had HOUSING been free I could focus on other things; if someone cared enough to grant me a better computer system, I would written**

**thousands of more books than I already have, enjoying what I LOVE TO DO, versus being forced by others to be a work slave in the democratic contributions of DEAD END SLAVE LABOR JOBS and DEAD END unemployment.**

**Perhaps instead of people worrying about HEALTH CARE BILLS or being made to feel bad that other people's money paid for our insurance plans, or instead of people boasting that 'WE DID IT IN OUR OWN! PRAISE OURSELVES!'" we can instead create a world where instead of competing with each other to determine who achieved the most toys ALL ON THEIR OWN, we could create a better world, where everyone HELPS each other by FREEING the world's resources from being priced and taxed.**

**CONSTITUTION: To coin Money, regulate the Value thereof, and of foreign Coin, and fix the Standard of Weights and Measures;**

**ROBIN FOX: The regulation of "THE VALUE of coined and paper money; gold and silver, and this whole fixation of standards of weights and measures is all one big pile of poo poo! IT STINKS! If we could have established this GREAT CONSTITUTION for THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA, we could have done without this one very HUGE MISTAKE that our framers inserted here, quite un-noticably because their ends justified their means.**

**GOOD MEN fell as victims, while picking up the victims of European threats to intimidate, hurt, and take away the rights and freedoms of a people seeking FREEDOM versus slavery. To work for your OWN family, instead of working for someone else; to have a piece of land and property you can call: GOD'S instead of theirs, or ours or mine and instead of singing that this is MY LAND or YOUR LAND we could sing that it's all GOD'S LAND made for everyone to share and enjoy together at the same cost we found it - free.**

**A subtle ERROR is a lesser evil inserted that inspires a "GREATER GOOD." So we had to give everyone the INCENTIVE to accept TAXATION and MONEY and BANKING to pay for everyone and everything:**

**CONSTITUTION: To provide for the Punishment of counterfeiting the Securities and current Coin of the United States;**

**To establish Post Offices and post Roads;**

**To promote the Progress of Science and useful Arts, by securing for limited Times to Authors and Inventors the exclusive Right to their respective Writings and Discoveries;**

**To constitute Tribunals inferior to the supreme Court;**

**To define and punish Piracies and Felonies committed on the high Seas, and Offences against the Law of Nations;**

**To declare War, grant Letters of Marque and Reprisal, and make Rules concerning Captures on Land and Water;**

**ROBIN FOX: Such a GOOD GOVERNMENT can indeed obey this constitutional RATIONALE. I have no argument against such GOOD laws. However to use MONEY and TAXATION to hold all such rules hostage and to hold Americans hostage by MONEY and TAXATION, was never representative of a FREE SOCIETY – no matter how much “PROGRESS” one might argue that “MONEY” and “TAXATION” have inspired, at the expense of massive human bodies.**

**CONSTITUTION: To raise and support Armies, but no Appropriation of Money to that Use shall be for a longer Term than two Years;**

**ROBIN FOX: Once again, I agree with RAISING AND SUPPORTING ARMIES; but there should be NO LIMITS placed by MONEY or TAXATION into providing a FREE DEFENSE for a FREE MILITARY fighting for a FREE SOCIETY to be FREED of MONEY and TAXAS and “APPROPRIATIONS OF MONEY.”**

**Did your mind just go blank? Are we trying to draw up pictures on a WHITE BOARD?**

**CONSTITUTION: To provide and maintain a Navy;**

**To make Rules for the Government and Regulation of the land and naval Forces;**

**To provide for calling forth the Militia to execute the Laws of the Union, suppress Insurrections and repel Invasions;**

**To provide for organizing, arming, and disciplining, the Militia, and for governing such Part of them as may be employed in the Service of the United States, reserving to the States respectively, the Appointment of the Officers, and the Authority of training the Militia according to the discipline prescribed by Congress;**

**ROBIN FOX: Once again, this is all AGREEABLE, but MONEY and TAXATION have been used as more of a THREAT towards our military heroes and civil society, than something that is comforting, helpful, and liberated from the common constraints which are a provocation to free spirits.**

**THE DEPENDENCY upon ANY money or taxation system to pay for HEALTH CARE has also been a hindrance to progress for doctors and hospitals, as well as patients needing health care. The OVER-PRICING of health care has caused problems for INSURANCE COMPANIES, GOVERNMENT PROGRAMS, THE TAX SYSTEM, and all systems dealing with health care. And how can any government pay for EVERY SOLDIER and every person trying to defend a country that is NO LONGER FREE because MONEY and TAXES have held back the FREE WORLD from actually being FREE?**

**MONEY has THREATENED our armed forces more than all the swearing, cussing, filthy language, verbal abuses, physical abuses, utilized by our military hero leaders. The necessity of TAXATION to pay for the MILITARY seems to the soldier a GOOD THING, after all, a warrior of national defense will get a clean new uniform, three meals a day, lodging, medical care, and an education at either very little or no cost. But you have to go where they tell you to go; do what they tell you to do. When you enter boot camp you basically are treated more like a prisoner than a citizen with filthy and verbally threatening**

**language and made to feel like you are weak, you are dirt, you are scum – and laughing about it when you graduate. Women, complaining of abusive husbands at home, endure the same verbal harassment at boot camp – no difference between a military holding your paycheck in your hands – versus your husband or family or boyfriend.**

**When you go to boot camp you have to follow all of their programs and if you fail, you get booted out of boot camp and left destitute and disgraced.**

**And no matter how SUCCESSFUL many of our military heroes who succeed past the MANY verbal threats and abuses they must suffer to get each and every paycheck THEY EARN by a system that provides all of their physical needs and comforts – this system has been utterly abused and thrashed by the owners of MONEY and TAXATION SYSTEMS.**

**Though MONEY has NOT been the motive of each military hero seeking to protect this country against all enemies foreign and domestic, it was never a good idea to make our military dependent on the TAXATION of American citizens to pay for their lifestyles.**

**The CONSERVATIVE argument has always been that the GOVERNMENT should not provide ‘entitlement programs’ for the poor, the needy, the disabled, and people without money because it is dependency on HIGHER TAXES to pay for them; they will argue against the RESORT PRISONS where prisoners are given three meals a day and each prison system is a business collecting money to provide food and lodging to prisoners; so if such conservative complaints be justified, the conservatives, in turn, have ignored the GREAT TRUTH that THE MILITARY REVENUES are ALSO under the threats of TAXATION and MONEY.**

**Firefighters and Police officers, social workers and government employees – all bought and paid for out of taxpayers money.**

**The LIBERAL BLUE DOG SPENDERS have overspent, while CONSERVATIVE thinking is always trying to cut – both overspending and overcutting – are a FAILURE.**

**Why?**

**MONEY is not based on God's FREEDOM, GRACE or MERCY. Even the best philanthropists, as well intended they were for using their charitable contributions for a tax write off, did not understand that GOOD MOTIVES or GOOD INTENTIONS will result in GOOD CONSEQUENCES.**

**By trying to make things better through money and taxation, we have gone in the reverse direction, as predicted by the many genius financial system THINK TANKS who all PROPHECIES in their new age of Nostradamus crystal balls that such a system was heading for the worst crash ever!**

**The 1930s produced the FIRST GREAT DEPRESSION.**

**The Carter and Clintonian regimes created the second great depression to be finalized by the Obama regime.**

**And as GOODLY minded our Republican leaders through the Reagan and Bush Senior and Junior years were – both conservative cutting and liberal spending – while both seeking human salvation has resulted in a lot of FREEDOM DAMNATION.**

**ALEXANDER HAMILTON: To exercise exclusive Legislation in all Cases whatsoever, over such District (not exceeding ten Miles square) as may, by Cession of particular States, and the Acceptance of Congress, become the Seat of the Government of the United States, and to exercise like Authority over all Places purchased by the Consent of the Legislature of the State in which the Same shall be, for the Erection of Forts, Magazines, Arsenals, dock-Yards, and other needful Buildings;--And**

**ROBIN FOX: What's it all for? For me? For you? If our current "GOVERNMENT" created by TAXATION and MONEY from OTHER PEOPLE's taxes and money have FAILED to protect Americans from foreign invasion; for allowing 2,000 Islamic mosques to be erected on American soil; for allowing Israel to go through all the world's harassment and violence directed at the State; for allowing this FREE**



**COUNTRY to be destroyed; such a GREAT CONSTITUTION might be declared NULL and VOID, whether you believe in GOD or not.**

**Many who believe in THE GOD OF ISRAEL and many of those who do not, FEEL and THINK the same way – that our government, like other governments is a FAILURE when it comes to MONEY and TAXATION methods, which have oppressed the citizens, instead of freeing them.**

**Do you enjoy that TRAFFIC TICKET?**

**Do you enjoy that PARKING METER TICKET?**

**Do you enjoy the IRS taking your incomes?**

**Do you enjoy working for pennies for those who earn millions and having elitists preach to you that if it wasn't for the millionaires and billionaires you wouldn't be able to become a slave in those low waged jobs that make you a 'productive somebody' versus a lazy, good for nothing bumb?**

**What is the difference between the wealthy drunk and the poor or homeless drunk? Nothing. They are both drunkards. And yet you will preach that the millionaire has the right to be a drunk because he EARNED HIS DRUNKEN status, whereas the homeless man, who wants nothing more to do with your slave labor forces, who just wants to be free and left alone is made to feel that they don't deserve to get drunk or have any fun or be liberated for their refusal to work?**

**Do you enjoy getting a small paycheck with hours cut and no medical benefits?**

**Do you enjoy having strangers, hired by democrats, in charge of corporate politics that use the threat of 'human resources' to continually write you up as a way to get rid of you during budget cutting times?**

**How is that DIVERSITY clause working out for you?**

**How is that DEBT and LOAN and TAXATION system working out for you?**

**Do you love those HIGHER TAXES?**

**Do you love the HIGHER PRICES OF FOOD?**

**Do you love your unemployment checks and food stamps?**

**Do you love the costs of transportation and energy?**

**Like that DIRECT TV bill?**

**Love your PHONE BILLS?**

**Love your INSURANCE RATES?**

**Love your HEALTH CARE COLLECTION AGENCIES?**

**Love your GOVERNMENT REPRESENTATIVES making those CUTS of programs you need to survive?**

**Love all those THREATS and PROVOCATIONS that MONEY causes you depression, anxiety, worry, guilt, shame?**

**Do you enjoy the threats of BANKRUPTCY over the whole world?**

**Do you ENJOY communism?**

**Do you ENJOY socialism?**

**Do you ENJOY capitalism?**

**Do you ENJOY having someone else hold your earnings above your head?**

**Do you ENJOY living in on a piece of land and property that someone else owns?**

**Do you ENJOY being threatened with eviction when you FAIL to receive a paycheck from strangers?**

**Why is ANYONE depending on MONEY?**

**If O'Reilly complains so much about SELF RELIANCE, why doesn't he become SELF RELIANT without money and taxation?**

**Neither SELF SUFFICIENCY or dependency on others are formulas that Earth's creator had in mind. Our Creator ENTITLED us all to FREEDOM and we are ENTITLED to be FREE because GOD made HIS WORLD free. The fact that you want to be 'self reliant' under money and taxation and then punish the poor for the same things our military heroes, our government employees, and basically EVERYONE paid for by the IRS system, is a FAILED argument.**

**What we need is to make OLD SYSTEMS obsolete and hit the reset button with a new set of amendments to the U.S. Constitution, without abolishing the Constitution:**

**NEW AMENDMENTS TO our US CONSTITUTION need to be recommended:**

**AMENDMENT 1: THE IRS shall be closed.**

**AMENDMENT 2: MONEY is hereby cancelled and all debts, loans, credits are hereby cancelled, forgiven and forgotten.**

**AMENDMENT 3: All UNITED STATES LAND belongs to THE GOD OF ISRAEL and therefore is property of each inhabitant. From now on, all HOUSING will be provided for FREE with no MONIES or TAXES regulated to hinder you from having a piece of land and property you can call your own.**

**AMENDMENT 4: ALL HEALTH CARE RESOURCES shall be provided at NO COST to the patient.**

**AMENDMENT 5: ALL ENERGY WILL BE FREE. Prices on gas stations will be removed.**

**AMENDMENT 6: ALL TRANSPORTATION PROVIDERS will provide a vehicle for each household at no cost.**

**AMENDMENT 7: ALL FOOD will be free, harvested by FREE FARMERS, FREE FARM WORKERS, FREE GROCERY STORE LABORERS – the resources are hereby all FREE with no price tags.**

**AMENDMENT 8: NO ANIMAL SHALL BE PRICED**

**AMENDMENT 9: NO HUMAN BEING will be allowed to “EARN A PAYCHECK,” but be able to work for FREE as a FREE WORKER with nobody to threaten their desired employment again.**

**AMENDMENT 10: All people shall receive a FREE EDUCATION of their choice, where they have the most desire to train and use their talents and skills for the improvement of society, but all citizens required to work at that chosen career until the retirement age of 37. If you do not wish to retire at the age of 37 and want to continue to work, that will be your choice. When you RETIRE you don’t have to ever work again if you don’t want to. When you choose your career path you will work that job for 10 years.**

**AMENDMENT 11: Each company may remain open as long as people believe in that company. No banks shall regulate how a business may succeed at providing goods and services for the common people.**

**AMENDMENT 12: Everyone in America shall be FREE and work in a FREE Country without money and taxation systems.**

**AMENDMENT 13: THE MONEY AND TAXATION SYSTEMS ARE hereby abolished.**

**Do you really believe in 2012, that voting for a GOLDMAN SACHS Romney versus a GOLDMAN SACHS Obama will create a BETTER AMERICA? Once again, the GOLDMAN SACHS economy will be good, especially in the Rockefeller Center, where liberal battles conservative on the televised heroes of FREEDOM OF SPEECH VALUES – Fox News.**

**I have, from 1998 through 2012 been a contributor, supporter, defender, fan, and friend of the Fox News network, inspired by their many educated writers, producers, anchors, and field agents. They**

**are the HEROES of the written word, the Constitutional value of THE RIGHTS OF FREEDOM OF SPEECH, which is so sacred to our freedoms.**

**THE FREEDOM of THE PRESS, OF SPEECH, AND ASSEMBLY was a JOB WELL DONE for our Fox News heroes and affiliates. If one is proud of what made America great – we are proud together with Fox News heroes.**

**For the protection of our NATIONAL DEFENSE, we stand with FOX NEWS.**

**During 2012, with Sarah Palin losing, Herman Cain losing, Newt Gingrich losing out to ROMNEY and Obama on the rampage of going against the grain – both sides are forgetting the fact that most people don't trust them, believe they are BOTH Goldman Sachs phonies, and BOTH sides have a very limited view of what FREEDOM is according to Earth's Creator.**

**Both Romney and Obama can write fancy speeches or read good speeches written by people who know how to use smooth talk and flattery to showcase the many TRUTHS about MONEY and TAXATION.**

**Both sides are disappointed that no MONEY or TAXATION savior has come through to solve GLOBAL and NATIONAL PROBLEMS that actually FREE THE SLAVES from slavery.**

**The MIXED MESSAGES being sent out by Libertarians, Democrats, Republicans, Independents, and whatever other group is out there trying to bank on political arguments – never really achieved THE TRUTH of what Earth's Messiah taught us before He went up home to Heaven 2,000 years ago. He has been observing and helping Earth's inhabitants to a certain point. But today, the devil has been released from his prison to gather the nations in the four corners of the world to battle – the last days battle against the FREE LAND and FREE STATE OF ISRAEL surrounded by terrorists and terrorism.**

**The last AVOWED “FREE” country America is no longer free but ruled by a retarded social class of throne dwarves and stooges who know not what they do.**

**We do applaud those representatives and leaders of United States government who do their ABSOLUTE BEST 24/7 to save America and this world.**

**But for the world, there is ONLY ONE SAVIOR – JESUS CHRIST, who remains the same today, yesterday and forever.**

**GOOD MEN who FRAMED the Constitution and every American under it's laws meant well and intended well.**

**But being a “GOOD PERSON,” a “MORAL PERSON,” does not mean that such good and moral men couldn't possibly mis-interpret and miscalculate what the SOURCE of all GOODNESS taught us through GOSPEL TRUTH.**

**Of Obama, who follows a false god, and Romney, who follows a false Christ – both are guilty of following a lie. This is why everything they say and do and teach is fake, phony, and a lie and can't be taken seriously, even by doubting patriots who are seeking so desperately to be freed from both sides of the arguments.**

**But one common truth both sides share is a prophecy from ISAIAH:**

**Isa 29:13.**

**“These people <sup>s</sup> come near to me with their mouth and honor me with their lips, <sup>t</sup> but their hearts are far from me.” Their worship of me is made up only of rules **taught by men.** <sup>75 v</sup>**

**From Mormons to Muslims, from Catholics to Jews, from Communists to Socialists, from Dictators to Fascists, from Capitalists to whoever is NONE OF THE ABOVE [like me], their worship of “GOD” is made up of the rules taught by men.**

**Mt 15:7.**

**Mt 15:7 You hypocrites! Isaiah was right when he prophesied about you:**

**Mt 15:8 “These people honor me with their lips, but their hearts are far from me.**

**Mt 15:9 They worship me in vain; their teachings are but rules taught by men.<sup>t</sup> ’**

**Such a dialogue does not diminish the importance of the U.S. CONSTITUTION, but makes allowance for the FREEDOM OF SOUL, SPIRIT, AND MIND to reject, renounce, and be freed of the concepts of MONEY and TAXATION which have been abusive to the Free world.**

**Obama’s Islamic / Reverend Wright / Abyssinian version of America hasn’t worked at all.**

**Romney’s Mormon version of America won’t work either.**

**The continual battle for the minds and hearts of Americans who just want to be freed and left alone by these very educated idiots has made both presidential candidates PAWNS of lies upon lies upon lies, so that when they try to steal Jesus’ words and say, “We tell you the truth!” there is no truth among men inspired by the father of the lies that inspired their false religions.**

**This is where I have chosen to throw in the towel with MONEY and TAXATION.**

**It didn’t work out for me and now I am seeking a NEW GOVERNMENT CALLED: THE KINGDOM OF HEAVEN.**

**You won’t find my KINGDOM on earth. It is with JESUS and with ALL MY HEART, WITH ALL MY SOUL, AND ALL MY WEAKENED FLESH, I love the LORD’S LOVE for FREEDOM and will continue to WIN a 6,000 year old war by committing my soul to HIS FREEDOM and not the world’s slavery.**

**All ARGUMENTS around the world, ruled by Satan’s lies have FAILED.**

**All DEBATES have been capitalized upon.**

**All RELIGIONS have been declared worthless.**

**All GOVERNMENTAL EXPERIMENTS proven to FAIL.**

**MONEY AND TAXATION have FAILED.**

**God did not FAIL.**

**People failed.**

**God did not create YOUR money, want YOUR money, or inspire YOUR money.**

**He created YOU.**

**But if YOU want MONEY rather than GOD – you have to live with all the disciples who bowed in another direction to PROUDLY DECLARE: “WE DID IT ALL ON OUR OWN OUR WAY!”**

**I never gave my praise and worship to man.**

**I never loved money. I never loved taxation. I never loved people trying to exasperate me over principles that I deem stupid and wrong.**

**People who love their slavery and their slave empire HATE the God of Israel because He freed the Israeli slaves from the Egyptian slaves who were inspired by SETIAN / SATAN to oppress others through heavy bondage, heavy work and heavy taxation.**

**When the throne dwarves stare out of their skyscraper tombs digging up dirt for deeper graves, sometimes they enjoy descending from their towers of Babel to take a ‘break from what their hands have built sky high to heaven,’ and want to indulge to discover what all the little people on the ground level are doing.**

**Then, after finding their conditions intolerable, they return to their skyscraper tombs to find that next magical financial number that will award them a nicer looking coffin.**



**HAMILTON: To make all Laws which shall be necessary and proper for carrying into Execution the foregoing Powers, and all other Powers vested by this Constitution in the Government of the United States, or in any Department or Officer thereof.**

**A case which may perhaps be thought to resemble the latter, but which is in fact widely different, affects the question immediately under consideration. I mean the power of imposing taxes on all articles other than exports and imports. This, I contend, is manifestly a concurrent and coequal authority in the United States and in the individual States. There is plainly no expression in the granting clause which makes that power EXCLUSIVE in the Union. There is no independent clause or sentence which prohibits the States from exercising it. So far is this from being the case, that a plain and conclusive argument to the contrary is to be deduced from the restraint laid upon the States in relation to duties on imports and exports. This restriction implies an admission that, if it were not inserted, the States would possess the power it excludes; and it implies a further admission, that as to all other taxes, the authority of the States remains undiminished. In any other view it would be both unnecessary and dangerous; it would be unnecessary, because if the grant to the Union of the power of laying such duties implied the exclusion of the States, or even their subordination in this particular, there could be no need of such a restriction; it would be dangerous, because the introduction of it leads directly to the conclusion which has been mentioned, and which, if the reasoning of the objectors be just, could not have been intended; I mean that the States, in all cases to which the restriction did not apply, would have a concurrent power of taxation with the Union. The restriction in question amounts to what lawyers call a NEGATIVE PREGNANT that is, a NEGATION of one thing, and an AFFIRMANCE of another; a negation of the authority of the States to impose taxes on imports and exports, and an affirmance of their authority to impose them on all other articles. It would be mere sophistry to argue that it was meant to exclude them ABSOLUTELY from the imposition of taxes of the former kind, and to leave them at liberty to lay others SUBJECT TO THE CONTROL of the national legislature. The restraining or prohibitory clause only says, that they shall not, WITHOUT THE CONSENT OF CONGRESS, lay such duties;**

**and if we are to understand this in the sense last mentioned, the Constitution would then be made to introduce a formal provision for the sake of a very absurd conclusion; which is, that the States, WITH THE CONSENT of the national legislature, might tax imports and exports; and that they might tax every other article, UNLESS CONTROLLED by the same body. If this was the intention, why not leave it, in the first instance, to what is alleged to be the natural operation of the original clause, conferring a general power of taxation upon the Union? It is evident that this could not have been the intention, and that it will not bear a construction of the kind.**

**As to a supposition of repugnancy between the power of taxation in the States and in the Union, it cannot be supported in that sense which would be requisite to work an exclusion of the States. It is, indeed, possible that a tax might be laid on a particular article by a State which might render it INEXPEDIENT that thus a further tax should be laid on the same article by the Union; but it would not imply a constitutional inability to impose a further tax. The quantity of the imposition, the expediency or in expediency of an increase on either side, would be mutually questions of prudence; but there would be involved no direct contradiction of power. The particular policy of the national and of the State systems of finance might now and then not exactly coincide, and might require reciprocal forbearances. It is not, however a mere possibility of inconvenience in the exercise of powers, but an immediate constitutional repugnancy that can by implication alienate and extinguish a pre-existing right of sovereignty.**

**The necessity of a concurrent jurisdiction in certain cases results from the division of the sovereign power; and the rule that all authorities, of which the States are not explicitly divested in favor of the Union, remain with them in full vigor, is not a theoretical consequence of that division, but is clearly admitted by the whole tenor of the instrument which contains the articles of the proposed Constitution. We there find that, notwithstanding the affirmative grants of general authorities, there has been the most pointed care in those cases where it was deemed improper that the like authorities should reside in the States, to insert negative clauses prohibiting the exercise of them by the States. The tenth section of the first article consists altogether of**

such provisions. This circumstance is a clear indication of the sense of the convention, and furnishes a rule of interpretation out of the body of the act, which justifies the position I have advanced and refutes every hypothesis to the contrary.

**ROBIN FOX: LAWYERS** know all too well, how best to exploit both the weaknesses of the Federalist Papers and their strengths. Both weaknesses and strengths have been extracted and trampled on.

Could certain **CONSTITUTIONAL LAWS** about **MONEY** and **TAXATION** be reformed through a more **BIBLICAL POINT OF VIEW**? Yes.

Can a **BIBLICAL** point of view about **MONEY** and **TAXATION** be obtained?

## **WHAT THE BIBLE SAYS ABOUT INTEREST**

### **Ex 22:25.**

**Ex 22:25** “If you lend money to one of my people among you who is needy, do not be like a moneylender; charge him no **interest**.<sup>56</sup>

### **AMENDMENT 14: CHARGE NO NEEDY PERSON INTEREST.**

Moneylenders who charge needy people interest are in **VIOLATION** of Biblical law. This includes **STUDENT LOANS, MORTGAGE LOANS, and ANY LOAN OR DEBT**. I say it is in the best **INTERESTS** of the poor, to not be charged **ANY PRINCIPAL** in addition to paying **INTEREST**. This verse is under the **SOCIAL RESPONSIBILITY** section of Exodus.

Moneylenders during Egyptian slavery years had charged needy people interest and God did not want a **FREE NATION** to charge needy people any interest. This does not mean that God **APPROVED** of the monetary exchanges of those times and might have just told Israel not to charge anyone any money at any time and understood “**MONEYLENDING**” as something pagan due to the fall of man. Just like keeping women as second class citizens, marrying multiple wives, telling slaves how to behave or telling slave masters how to treat their slaves, does not mean that God permitted, tolerated, or approved of slavery or the curses of every tribe of man creating laws and rules for women to be separated as a sex object for reproduction purposes only.

**SOCIAL RESPONSIBILITY includes CARING for the needy and providing for them. The NEEDY ARE ENTITLED TO LIVE INTEREST FREE LIVES!**

**Lev 25:35.**

**Lev 25:35 “ ‘If one of your countrymen becomes poor<sup>p</sup> and is unable to support himself among you, help him<sup>q</sup> as you would an alien or a temporary resident, so he can continue to live among you.**

**Lev 25:36 Do not take **interest<sup>r</sup>** of any kind<sup>65</sup> from him, but fear your God,<sup>s</sup> so that your countryman may continue to live among you.**

**Lev 25:37 You must not lend him money at **interest<sup>t</sup>** or sell him food at a profit**

**AMENDMENT 15: You will not lend any money at INTEREST or sell any food at a profit to not just the poor, but to ANYONE. We will also STOP CHARING PRINCIPAL and just allow the poor to live FREE. FOOD WILL BE FREE, not just for the poor, but for EVERYONE as FOOD was created by GOD to be enjoyed at NO COST or obligation. We will go all the way to charge NO PRINCIPAL and NO INTEREST at all on anyone or anything!**

**If the conservative argument is that MODERN FOOD STAMPS cost too much of ‘other people’s money’ in the same manner that liberals argue that fighting wars cost too much of ‘other people’s money,’**

**Sorry Libertarian Stossel. Sorry Catholic OReilly. You are wrong about ‘entitlements’ You are to HELP your poor countrymen; if a poor countryman can’t help himself, you are OBLIGATED BY GOD HIMSELF to help them! Though Stossel and OReilly would acknowledge that ‘these entitlements are meant to help the poorest of the poor,” I will just go all the way in concluding that POOR and HOMELESS people would not be POOR AND HOMELESS if you STOP trying to make them your TAXATION AND MONEY SLAVE, and let them have FREE FOOD and FREE HOUSING. What they do with that freedom is their choice and NONE of your business.**

## **AMENDMENT 16 TO THE NEW CONSTITUTION:**

**Dt 23:19.**

**Dt 23:19 Do not charge your brother **interest**, whether on money or food or anything else that may earn **interest**.<sup>m</sup>**

**Dt 23:20 You may charge a foreigner<sup>n</sup> **interest**, but not a brother Israelite, so that the LORD your God may bless<sup>o</sup> you in everything you put your hand to in the land you are entering to possess.**

**THIS LAW OF GOD will be applied to American citizens too. No AMERICAN or ISRAELI will be charged INTEREST on money or food or anything else that may earn interest. In addition, since all money systems were based upon SLAVERY, we will abolish charging ANY MONEY for anything on earth and make all of God's resources FREE. If we get rid of money we won't need to worry about waiving interest!**

**Pr 28:8.**

**Pr 28:8 He who increases his wealth by exorbitant **interest**<sup>b</sup> amasses it for another,<sup>c</sup> who will be kind to the poor.<sup>d</sup>**

**Eze 18:5.**

**Eze 18:5 "Suppose there is a righteous man who does what is just and right.**

**Eze 18:6 He does not eat at the mountain<sup>p</sup> shrines or look to the idols<sup>q</sup> of the house of Israel. He does not defile his neighbor's wife or lie with a woman during her period.<sup>r</sup>**

**Eze 18:7 He does not oppress<sup>s</sup> anyone, but returns what he took in pledge<sup>t</sup> for a loan. He does not commit robbery<sup>u</sup> but gives his food to the hungry<sup>v</sup> and provides clothing for the naked.<sup>w</sup>**

**Eze 18:8 He does not lend at usury or take excessive **interest**.<sup>35 x</sup> He withholds his hand from doing wrong and judges fairly<sup>y</sup> between man and man.**

Eze 18:9 **He follows my decrees<sup>z</sup> and faithfully keeps my laws. That man is righteous;<sup>a</sup> he will surely live,<sup>b</sup>**

## **AMENDMENT 17 TO THE NEW CONSTITUTION**

Eze 18:8 **He does not lend at usury or take excessive interest.<sup>35 x</sup> He withholds his hand from doing wrong and judges fairly<sup>y</sup> between man and man.**

**Nobody will be allowed to lend at usury or take excessive interest. We will shutter all loan sharks, such as CASH CALL, who gives out a \$10,000 dollar loan, charges 89% interest and charges \$740.00 a month for 84 months. The car loan systems and any loan system will also be permanently shuttered.**

**Credit card companies will also be shuttered permanently. The systems of credit, borrowing, loaning, and spending will be shut down as money will be declared worthless in the FREE WORLD.**

## **AMENDMENT 18 TO THE NEW CONSTITUTION**

**Eze 22:12.**

Eze 22:12 **In you men accept bribes<sup>b</sup> to shed blood; you take usury<sup>c</sup> and excessive interest<sup>46</sup> and make unjust gain from your neighbors<sup>d</sup> by extortion. And you have forgotten<sup>e</sup> me, declares the Sovereign LORD.<sup>f</sup>**

Eze 22:13 **“I will surely strike my hands<sup>g</sup> together at the unjust gain<sup>h</sup> you have made and at the blood<sup>i</sup> you have shed in your midst.<sup>j</sup>**

**Although MONEY was used in Israel and by Israel, does not mean that God approved of MONEY.**

## **AMENDMENT 19 TO THE NEW CONSTITUTION**

**Mt 6:24.**

**Mt 6:24 “No one can serve two masters. Either he will hate the one and love the other, or he will be devoted to the one and despise the other. You cannot serve both God and Money. <sup>e</sup>**

## **AMENDMENT 20 TO THE NEW CONSTITUTION**

### **The Parable of the Workers in the Vineyard**

**Mt 20:1 “For the kingdom of heaven is like <sup>u</sup> a landowner who went out early in the morning to hire men to work in his vineyard. <sup>v</sup>**

**Mt 20:2 He agreed to pay them a denarius for the day and sent them into his vineyard.**

**Mt 20:3 “About the third hour he went out and saw others standing in the marketplace doing nothing.**

**Mt 20:4 He told them, ‘You also go and work in my vineyard, and I will pay you whatever is right.’**

**Mt 20:5 So they went. “He went out again about the sixth hour and the ninth hour and did the same thing.**

**Mt 20:6 About the eleventh hour he went out and found still others standing around. He asked them, ‘Why have you been standing here all day long doing nothing?’**

**Mt 20:7 “ ‘Because no one has hired us,’ they answered. “He said to them, ‘You also go and work in my vineyard.’**

**Mt 20:8 “When evening came, <sup>w</sup> the owner of the vineyard said to his foreman, ‘Call the workers and pay them their wages, beginning with the last ones hired and going on to the first.’**

**Mt 20:9 “The workers who were hired about the eleventh hour came and each received a denarius.**

**Mt 20:10 So when those came who were hired first, they expected to receive more. But each one of them also received a denarius.**

**Mt 20:11 When they received it, they began to grumble <sup>x</sup> against the landowner.**

Mt 20:12 **‘These men who were hired last worked only one hour,’ they said, ‘and you have made them equal to us who have borne the burden of the work and the heat<sup>y</sup> of the day.’**

Mt 20:13 **“But he answered one of them, ‘Friend,<sup>z</sup> I am not being unfair to you. Didn’t you agree to work for a denarius?’**

Mt 20:14 **Take your pay and go. I want to give the man who was hired last the same as I gave you.**

Mt 20:15 **Don’t I have the right to do what I want with my own money? Or are you envious because I am generous?’<sup>a</sup>**

Mt 20:16 **“So the last will be first, and the first will be last.”<sup>b</sup>**

**Therefore, in an EQUAL society that eliminates manipulating employees against each other through false hopes of “COMPETITIVE EARNINGS,” each person will receive EQUAL PAY by working for FREE whichever job THEY CHOOSE TO WORK FREELY AT for however long they want.**

## **AMENDMENT 21 TO THE NEW CONSTITUTION**

### **Jesus at the Temple**

*21:12-16 pp—Mk 11:15-18; Lk 19:45-47*

Mt 21:12 **Jesus entered the temple area and drove out all who were buying<sup>c</sup> and selling there. He overturned the tables of the money changers<sup>d</sup> and the benches of those selling doves.<sup>e</sup>**

Mt 21:13 **“It is written,” he said to them, “ ‘My house will be called a house of prayer,’<sup>89 f</sup> but you are making it a ‘den of robbers.’<sup>90 g</sup>”**

Mt 21:14 **The blind and the lame came to him at the temple, and he healed them.<sup>h</sup>**

Mt 21:15 **But when the chief priests and the teachers of the law saw the wonderful things he did and the children shouting in the temple area, “Hosanna to the Son of David,”<sup>i</sup> they were indignant.<sup>j</sup>**



Mt 21:16 **“Do you hear what these children are saying?” they asked him. “Yes,” replied Jesus, “have you never read, “ ‘From the lips of children and infants you have ordained praise’<sup>91</sup> ?”<sup>k</sup>**

**THE FREE CHILDREN have been ROBBED by the MONEY CHANGERS. It is time to drive THE MONEY CHANGERS away!**

## **AMENDMENT 22 TO THE NEW CONSTITUTION**

### **Judas Hangs Himself**

Mt 27:1 **Early in the morning, all the chief priests and the elders of the people came to the decision to put Jesus to death.<sup>c</sup>**

Mt 27:2 **They bound him, led him away and handed him over<sup>d</sup> to Pilate, the governor.<sup>e</sup>**

Mt 27:3 **When Judas, who had betrayed him,<sup>f</sup> saw that Jesus was condemned, he was seized with remorse and returned the thirty silver coins<sup>g</sup> to the chief priests and the elders.**

Mt 27:4 **“I have sinned,” he said, “for I have betrayed innocent blood.” “What is that to us?” they replied. “That’s your responsibility.”<sup>h</sup>**

Mt 27:5 **So Judas threw the **money** into the temple<sup>i</sup> and left. Then he went away and hanged himself.<sup>j</sup>**

Mt 27:6 **The chief priests picked up the coins and said, “It is against the law to put this into the treasury, since it is blood **money**.”**

Mt 27:7 **So they decided to use the **money** to buy the potter’s field as a burial place for foreigners.**

Mt 27:8 **That is why it has been called the Field of Blood<sup>k</sup> to this day.**

Mt 27:9 **Then what was spoken by Jeremiah the prophet was fulfilled:<sup>l</sup> “They took the thirty silver coins, the price set on him by the people of Israel, \_**

**Mk 6:8.**

Mk 6:8 **These were his instructions: “Take nothing for the journey except a staff—no bread, no bag, **no money in your belts**.”**

Mk 6:9 **Wear sandals but not an extra tunic.**

Mk 6:10 **Whenever you enter a house, stay there until you leave that town.**

**Mk 6:11 And if any place will not welcome you or listen to you, shake the dust off your feet<sup>b</sup> when you leave, as a testimony against them.”**

## **Jesus Clears the Temple**

*11:12-14 pp—Mt 21:18-22 11:15-18 pp—Mt 21:12-16; Lk 19:45-47; Jn 2:13-16*

**Mk 11:12 The next day as they were leaving Bethany, Jesus was hungry.**

**Mk 11:13 Seeing in the distance a fig tree in leaf, he went to find out if it had any fruit. When he reached it, he found nothing but leaves, because it was not the season for figs.<sup>1</sup>**

**Mk 11:14 Then he said to the tree, “May no one ever eat fruit from you again.” And his disciples heard him say it.**

**Mk 11:15 On reaching Jerusalem, Jesus entered the temple area and began driving out those who were buying and selling there. He overturned the tables of the money changers and the benches of those selling doves,**

**Mk 11:16 and would not allow anyone to carry merchandise through the temple courts.**

**Mk 11:17 And as he taught them, he said, “Is it not written: “ ‘My house will be called a house of prayer for all nations’<sup>43</sup> ?<sup>m</sup>**

**But you have made it ‘a den of robbers.’<sup>44</sup> ”<sup>n</sup> —**

**Since CHURCHES have not provided a FREE SOCIETY, we will ask all Christian churches if they want to have FREE LAND, free of taxation and any charges. We will ask if UNIVERSTIES and COLLEGES want to provide an education at no cost to students who desire to train and learn.**

## **AMENDMENT 23 TO THE NEW CONSTITUTION**

**To end money extortion we are hereby cancelling all money systems. We will SHARE Earth's FOOD, Earth's resources, and provide CLOTHING for all. As for TAX COLLECTIONS, we are closing down all tax collection agencies. There will be no more temptations or threats of collecting more than you are required to and there will be no more temptation to EXTORT money, since money has been made obsolete.**

**Lk 3:8 Produce fruit in keeping with repentance. And do not begin to say to yourselves, 'We have Abraham as our father.'<sup>r</sup> For I tell you that out of these stones God can raise up children for Abraham.**

**Lk 3:9 The ax is already at the root of the trees, and every tree that does not produce good fruit will be cut down and thrown into the fire."<sup>s</sup>**

**Lk 3:10 "What should we do then?"<sup>t</sup> the crowd asked.**

**Lk 3:11 John answered, "The man with two tunics should share with him who has none, and the one who has food should do the same."<sup>u</sup>**

**Lk 3:12 Tax collectors also came to be baptized.<sup>v</sup> "Teacher," they asked, "what should we do?"**

**Lk 3:13 "Don't collect any more than you are required to,"<sup>w</sup> he told them.**

**Lk 3:14 Then some soldiers asked him, "And what should we do?" He replied, "Don't extort money and don't accuse people falsely<sup>x</sup> —be content with your pay."**

## AMENDMENT 24 TO THE NEW CONSTITUTION

Lk 7:40.

Lk 7:40 Jesus answered him, **“Simon, I have something to tell you.” “Tell me, teacher,” he said.**

Lk 7:41 **“Two men owed money to a certain moneylender. One owed him five hundred denarii,<sup>31</sup> and the other fifty.**

Lk 7:42 **Neither of them had the money to pay him back, so he canceled the debts of both. Now which of them will love him more?”**

Lk 7:43 Simon replied, **“I suppose the one who had the bigger debt canceled.” “You have judged correctly,” Jesus said.**

Since **BANKS** and **CORPORATIONS** allowed the **GREEDY TO CASH OUT** and **BANKRUPT THEIR** own institutions and their own slave laborers were not allowed the same **GRACES** of **LOAN DEBT FORGIVENESS**, I hereby declare that **ALL DEBTS ARE CANCELLED**. No American citizen shall owe **ANY MONEY** to **ANY** creditor, debtor, loan shark, banker, or tax collector **EVER AGAIN!** Since we are **CANCELLING** the **IRS** and shutting their doors and **CANCELLING MONEY**, all debts are null and void. The **SLAVES** are now **FREED**.

## AMENDMENT 25 TO THE NEW CONSTITUTION

Lk 16:1.

### The Parable of the Shrewd Manager

Lk 16:1 Jesus told his disciples: **“There was a rich man whose manager was accused of wasting his possessions.”<sup>q</sup>**

Lk 16:2 **So he called him in and asked him, ‘What is this I hear about you? Give an account of your management, because you cannot be manager any longer.’**

Lk 16:3 **“The manager said to himself, ‘What shall I do now? My master is taking away my job. I’m not strong enough to dig, and I’m ashamed to beg—**

Lk 16:4 **I know what I'll do so that, when I lose my job here, people will welcome me into their houses.'**

Lk 16:5 **"So he called in each one of his master's debtors. He asked the first, 'How much do you owe my master?'**

Lk 16:6 **" 'Eight hundred gallons<sup>64</sup> of olive oil,' he replied. "The manager told him, 'Take your bill, sit down quickly, and make it four hundred.'**

Lk 16:7 **"Then he asked the second, 'And how much do you owe?' " 'A thousand bushels<sup>65</sup> of wheat,' he replied. "He told him, 'Take your bill and make it eight hundred.'**

Lk 16:8 **"The master commended the dishonest manager because he had acted shrewdly. For the people of this world<sup>r</sup> are more shrewd<sup>s</sup> in dealing with their own kind than are the people of the light.<sup>t</sup>**

Lk 16:9 **I tell you, use worldly wealth<sup>u</sup> to gain friends for yourselves, so that when it is gone, you will be welcomed into eternal dwellings.<sup>v</sup>**

Lk 16:10 **"Whoever can be trusted with very little can also be trusted with much,<sup>w</sup> and whoever is dishonest with very little will also be dishonest with much.**

Lk 16:11 **So if you have not been trustworthy in handling worldly wealth,<sup>x</sup> who will trust you with true riches?**

Lk 16:12 **And if you have not been trustworthy with someone else's property, who will give you property of your own?**

Lk 16:13 **"No servant can serve two masters. Either he will hate the one and love the other, or he will be devoted to the one and despise the other. **You cannot serve both God and Money.**"<sup>y</sup>**

Lk 16:14 **The Pharisees, who loved money,<sup>z</sup> heard all this and were sneering at Jesus.<sup>a</sup> Lk 16:15 He said to them, **"You are the ones who justify yourselves<sup>b</sup> in the eyes of men, but God knows your hearts.<sup>c</sup> What is highly valued among men is detestable in God's sight****

**ROBIN FOX: I think that MONEY is one of those detestable things that is highly valued among men but DETESTABLE in God's sight. Since our SAVIOR declared that WE "CANNOT SERVE BOTH GOD and money" this amendment will make it possible for every FREE PERSON the allowance of no longer serving MONEY or any MONEY SYSTEM since Earth's resources will be harvested for FREE by a FREE people returning to their own land and their own homes. The REAL ESTATE "GURUS" have not been trustworthy with GOD'S LAND and GOD'S**

**PROPERTY**, so that even **ISRAEL** has been compromised because of **MONEY** politics being played among the energy and money making tyrants of foreign lands ruled by oppression and chaos. The **MONEY** makers who have been served to **APPROPRIATE MONEY** and **REGULATE** it and **TAX IT** on **YOUR BEHALF** have not been trustworthy, and therefore, their constitutional ‘authority’ has been revoked and declared null and void, to be replaced by new **FREE LEADERS** who will be trustworthy in delegating freedom without **MONEY** and **TAXES** corrupting good intentions.

The world has also been untrustworthy in their assumptions about the **LAND OF ISRAEL**, which, by **TORAH LAW**, is **EXCLUSIVELY** Israel’s land. The world is being destroyed due to ignorance of **TORAH BORDERS** and some of Israel’s leaders, such as **ARIEL SHARON**, have not been compliant in guarding **GOD’S REAL ESTATE** whenever a compromise to the **MONEY SHARKS** ensued due to greedy oil and petroleum interests. Such **ENERGY** agreements that made ‘peace on earth’ between the harvesters of oil and petroleum resources and the leaders of an **UNFREE** world, demanded **MONEY** to harvest what ought to have been **FREE** for all. **MONEY** corrupted Israel’s cause by allowing foreign swindlers to use the same corrupt monetary systems that destroyed every nation throughout history.

## **AMENDMENT 26 TO THE NEW CONSTITUTION**

**Ac 3:1.**

### **Peter Heals the Crippled Beggar**

**Ac 3:1** One day Peter and John <sup>h</sup> were going up to the temple <sup>i</sup> at the time of prayer—at three in the afternoon. <sup>j</sup>

**Ac 3:2** Now a man crippled from birth <sup>k</sup> was being carried to the temple gate <sup>l</sup> called Beautiful, where he was put every day to beg <sup>m</sup> from those going into the temple courts.

**Ac 3:3 When he saw Peter and John about to enter, he asked them for money.**

**Ac 3:4 Peter looked straight at him, as did John. Then Peter said, "Look at us!"**

**Ac 3:5 So the man gave them his attention, expecting to get something from them.**

**Ac 3:6 Then Peter said, "Silver or gold I do not have, but what I have I give you. In the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, <sup>n</sup> walk."**

**Ac 3:7 Taking him by the right hand, he helped him up, and instantly the man's feet and ankles became strong. \_**

**HEALTH CARE shall be free. Jesus has healed and will heal patients at no cost or obligation. The HONOR of DOCTORS caring for the disabled and elderly, hurting and suffering, shall no longer be threatened by the red tape of MONEY and THE POLITICS OF MONEY, not sufficiently covered by either PRIVATE or GOVERNMENT INSURANCE companies, insufficient to wound the broken bodies and hearts of those who don't want to be threatened or harassed by health care costs. There will never again be a patient that is charged for HEALTH CARE. OBAMACARE IS ALSO HEREBY TERMINATED. OBAMACARE was about killing and murdering Americans, not helping them and OBAMA is guilty of MURDER in the first degree by expanding an unaffordable program that caused current systems to be cut, so that those recipients under government programs were injured, hurt, killed, and refused by doctors to be helped because of this evil plan.**

**Therefore, to cure patients, I am declaring that ALL HEALTH CARE COMPANIES will turn their services and products into CHARITABLE ORGANIZATIONS designed to SERVE THE PATIENTS so that patients can get ALL THE CARE THAT IS REQUIRED FOR HEALING! That will create a better and more productive American society – a society freed of HEALTH CARE DEBTS and stupid insurance plans that doesn't cover the MANIPULATED COSTS associated with health care. No more taxing patients. No more billing patients. The BILLING**

**DEPARTMENTS of every hospital and clinic will be shut. PATIENTS will now be able to enjoy FREE health care for all.**



## AMENDMENT 27 TO THE NEW CONSTITUTION

Ac 8:17.

Ac 8:17 **Then Peter and John placed their hands on them,<sup>i</sup> and they received the Holy Spirit.<sup>j</sup>**

Ac 8:18 **When Simon saw that the Spirit was given at the laying on of the apostles' hands, he offered them **money****

Ac 8:19 **and said, "Give me also this ability so that everyone on whom I lay my hands may receive the Holy Spirit."**

Ac 8:20 **Peter answered: "May your **money** perish with you, because you thought you could buy the gift of God with **money!**"<sup>k</sup>**

**SORRY, BUT THE CONSERVATIVE AND LIBERAL ARGUMENTS DO NOT WORK FOR THE ETERNAL TERM: YOU CAN'T BUY GOD'S GIFTS WITH MONEY!**

**Many church pulpits bought the gifts of God with money; they bought their College and University degrees with someone else's money under a loan system that they had to borrow from in order to earn more of other people's money in order to pay someone else back.**

**Therefore, since THE HOLY SPIRIT cannot be bought with money, we are now going to FREE THE CHURCH SLAVES from being hindered by College and University debts by offering a FREE EDUCATION for all.**

## AMENDMENT 28 TO THE NEW CONSTITUTION

### Love of Money

<sup>1Ti 6:3</sup> **If anyone teaches false doctrines<sup>t</sup> and does not agree to the sound instruction<sup>u</sup> of our Lord Jesus Christ and to godly teaching,**  
<sup>1Ti 6:4</sup> **he is conceited<sup>v</sup> and understands nothing. He has an unhealthy interest in controversies and quarrels about words<sup>w</sup> that result in envy, strife, malicious talk, evil suspicions**

1Ti 6:5 and constant friction between men of corrupt mind, who have been robbed of the truth <sup>x</sup> and who think that godliness is a means to financial gain.

1Ti 6:6 But godliness with contentment <sup>y</sup> is great gain. <sup>z</sup>

1Ti 6:7 For we brought nothing into the world, and we can take nothing out of it. <sup>a</sup>

1Ti 6:8 But if we have food and clothing, we will be content with that. <sup>b</sup>

1Ti 6:9 People who want to get rich <sup>c</sup> fall into temptation and a trap <sup>d</sup> and into many foolish and harmful desires that plunge men into ruin and destruction.

1Ti 6:10 For the love of money <sup>e</sup> is a root of all kinds of evil. Some people, eager for money, have wandered from the faith <sup>f</sup> and pierced themselves with many griefs. <sup>g</sup> \_

To eliminate a LOVE OF MONEY, we are cancelling money. No more exploiting charities or sick people as a means to financial gain.

## Godlessness in the Last Days

2Ti 3:1 But mark this: There will be terrible times in the last days. <sup>j</sup>

2Ti 3:2 People will be lovers of themselves, lovers of money, <sup>k</sup> boastful, proud, <sup>l</sup> abusive, <sup>m</sup> disobedient to their parents, <sup>n</sup> ungrateful, unholy,

2Ti 3:3 without love, unforgiving, slanderous, without self-control, brutal, not lovers of the good,

2Ti 3:4 treacherous, <sup>o</sup> rash, conceited, <sup>p</sup> lovers of pleasure rather than lovers of God—

2Ti 3:5 having a form of godliness <sup>q</sup> but denying its power. Have nothing to do with them. <sup>r</sup>

2Ti 3:6 They are the kind who worm their way <sup>s</sup> into homes and gain control over weak-willed women, who are loaded down with sins and are swayed by all kinds of evil desires,

2Ti 3:7 always learning but never able to acknowledge the truth. <sup>t</sup> \_

Heb 13:5.

Heb 13:5 **Keep your lives free from the love of **money**<sup>q</sup> and be content with what you have,<sup>r</sup> because God has said, “Never will I leave you; never will I forsake you.”<sup>59 s</sup>**

Heb 13:6 **So we say with confidence, “The Lord is my helper; I will not be afraid. What can man do to me?”<sup>60</sup>**

## **Boasting About Tomorrow**

Jas 4:13 **Now listen,<sup>f</sup> you who say, “Today or tomorrow we will go to this or that city, spend a year there, carry on business and make **money**.”<sup>g</sup>**

Jas 4:14 **Why, you do not even know what will happen tomorrow. What is your life? You are a mist that appears for a little while and then vanishes.<sup>h</sup>**

Jas 4:15 **Instead, you ought to say, “If it is the Lord’s will,<sup>i</sup> we will live and do this or that.”**

Jas 4:16 **As it is, you boast and brag. All such boasting is evil.<sup>j</sup>**

Jas 4:17 **Anyone, then, who knows the good he ought to do and doesn’t do it, sins.<sup>k</sup> \_**

**1Pe 5:2.**

1Pe 5:2 **Be shepherds of God’s flock<sup>e</sup> that is under your care, serving as overseers—not because you must, but because you are willing, as God wants you to be;<sup>f</sup> not greedy for **money**,<sup>g</sup> but eager to serve;**

1Pe 5:3 **not lording it over<sup>h</sup> those entrusted to you, but being examples<sup>i</sup> to the flock.**

## **NOT LORDING IT OVER OTHERS**

Lk 22:25 **Jesus said to them, “**The kings of the Gentiles lord it over them; and those who exercise authority over them call themselves Benefactors.****

Lk 22:26 **But you are not to be like that. Instead, the greatest among you should be like the youngest,<sup>i</sup> and the one who rules like the one who serves.<sup>j</sup>**

**Lk 22:27 For who is greater, the one who is at the table or the one who serves? Is it not the one who is at the table? But I am among you as one who serves.**<sup>k</sup>

Charging money for water is also stupid.

## **FEDERALIST No. 33**

### **The Same Subject Continued**

#### **(Concerning the General Power of Taxation)**

*From the Daily Advertiser.*

*January 3, 1788.*

**Alexander Hamilton**

**To the People of the State of New York:**

**THE residue of the argument against the provisions of the Constitution in respect to taxation is ingrafted upon the following clause. The last clause of the eighth section of the first article of the plan under consideration authorizes the national legislature "to make all laws which shall be NECESSARY and PROPER for carrying into execution THE POWERS by that Constitution vested in the government of the United States, or in any department or officer thereof"; and the second clause of the sixth article declares, "that the Constitution and the laws of the United States made IN PURSUANCE THEREOF, and the treaties made by their authority shall be the SUPREME LAW of the land, any thing in the constitution or laws of any State to the contrary notwithstanding."**

**ROBIN FOX:** There should be an amended clause that allows a way out of the SUPREME LAW OF THE LAND corrupted. It is natural to argue against ANY PROVISION of taxation, whether there is representation or not! I would LOVE to have had representation during GOOD REPULICAN YEARS, because when you had a job, you could, as an income earner, receive something back. But during the Obama administration, he penalized you and asked you to pay about one to two thousand dollars BEYOND your means and had goons in place to take more taxes from you, rather than giving you something back.

**HAMILTON:** These two clauses have been the source of much virulent invective and petulant declamation against the proposed Constitution. They have been held up to the people in all the exaggerated colors of misrepresentation as the pernicious engines by which their local governments were to be destroyed and their liberties exterminated; as the hideous monster whose devouring jaws would spare neither sex

**nor age, nor high nor low, nor sacred nor profane; and yet, strange as it may appear, after all this clamor, to those who may not have happened to contemplate them in the same light, it may be affirmed with perfect confidence that the constitutional operation of the intended government would be precisely the same, if these clauses were entirely obliterated, as if they were repeated in every article. They are only declaratory of a truth which would have resulted by necessary and unavoidable implication from the very act of constituting a federal government, and vesting it with certain specified powers. This is so clear a proposition, that moderation itself can scarcely listen to the railings which have been so copiously vented against this part of the plan, without emotions that disturb its equanimity.**

**ROBIN FOX: Yep. My liberties were exterminated. If you depend on FREE LOVE from un-relative relatives who are “successful,” and practicing good DEMOCRATIC LIBERAL CONSERVATISM when it comes to MONEY, POWER, and I made it, while your HIPPIE brother and sister didn’t, chances are, your children will suffer so much humiliation and frustration, it might go to follow why WALL STREET protests against THE TEA PARTY and THE OCCUPY WALL STREET MOVEMENT for FEAR that we might actually be FREE instead of a slave to MONEY and SUCCESS AT MONEY AND POWER AND FAME AND FORTUNE AND GLORY against ISRAEL’S GOD, who spoke of LIBERATION AND INDEPENDENCE from such arrogance that does not lead to confidence.**

**I am against ANY GOVERNMENT that had to resort to TAXATION or MONEY or LOANS or BORROWING MONEY as a valid method of exchange. Not even in a “CHRISTIAN AMERICA” was this plan of GENERAL TAXATION very effective for all Americans.**

**But there was MERCIFUL CONSIDERATION among American leaders who knew most Americans didn’t have much money as the elitists who were creating the money and handing out the money did. They knew that perhaps instead of allowing citizens to not have cars or appliances or basic needs, they would extend a CREDIT and BORROWING and LOAN system to EVERYONE and taking the belief**

**that Americans would always be healthy enough to work for 50 years until death in order to pay the credit unions and loan sharks back.**

**When you HAVE NO MONEY and there is a need, the SYSTEM shuts you out, so they tried being merciful by HANDING OUT MONEY to people so they could have it today and pay it back tomorrow.**

**I would have just GIVEN it to them for FREE and forget about threatening people with having to pay creditors and loan agents back. Such a stressful burden has not been good to a FREE PEOPLE.**

**I don't like living in a world where if I need something I can't have it unless I go into debt. Sure, I can do without a house, a car, and the world's provisions as a homeless man. No problem.**

**HAMILTON: What is a power, but the ability or faculty of doing a thing? What is the ability to do a thing, but the power of employing the MEANS necessary to its execution?**

**ROBIN FOX: EMPLOYING THE MEANS? The ability to DO A THING has to be done by a PERSON LIBERATED and 100% free. They should not have to be EMPLOYED by anyone. Being EMPLOYED is slavery and indebtedness to someone else due to dependency on a system that holds YOUR resources hostage to the notion that someone else owns it while you do not. Rather than advocating a society of FREELY SHARING [without being forced to by government or law, which is communism and not freedom]. People who are FREE naturally share with others because they have the abundant prosperity to share with other people and choose whom and what cause they want to share with.**

**HAMILTON: What is a LEGISLATIVE power, but a power of making LAWS? What are the MEANS to execute a LEGISLATIVE power but LAWS?**

**ROBIN FOX: <sup>1Co 15:56</sup> The sting of death is sin,<sup>m</sup> and the power of sin is the law." THE POWER OF SIN IS "THE LAW". LEGISLATIVE POWER that does not conform to GOD'S LAWS OF FREEDOM are man made laws to be abolished. Many CONSTITUTIONAL LAWS are in conformity**

with the democratic liberties that the Bible teaches, as GOD, AS KING allows His own children FREEDOM TO CHOOSE, the greatest of all Biblical teachings.

**MONEY and TAXATION do not promote the values of FREEDOM OF CHOICE, but conformity to another man or woman's choice.**

**HAMILTON: What is the power of laying and collecting taxes, but a LEGISLATIVE POWER, or a power of MAKING LAWS, to lay and collect taxes? What are the proper means of executing such a power, but NECESSARY and PROPER laws?**

**ROBIN FOX: We should never allowed the UNITED STATES GOVERNMENT or any citizen among the states to be granted the "POWER OF LAYING AND COLLECTING ANY TAXES!" The means were improper of executing such man made powers, which were UN-NECESSARY and IMPROPER laws for a FREE NATION of FREE PEOPLE living on FREE LAND with FREE RESOURCES that were HARVESTED FOR FREE, but burdened with PRICE FIXING and TAXATION. As good our Framers were, I disagree with their empowerment of the NEW GOVERNMENT of the UNITED STATES to levy taxes or raise revenues to enslave people's hard work for the purposes of serving the FINANCIAL INTERESTS of government versus their own families and their own selves.**

**For example, the IRS has been a huge burden on small businesses. By making independent contractors fill out a 10-99, HUGE SUMS of money are being collected every year, sometimes beyond what contractors do not earn and THERE IS NO MERCY. Lower taxes used to mean more earnings for both the wage earner and the business owner. Lower taxes on goods and services meant that people bought more and therefore the ECONOMICS of money worked for a little while because lower prices, plus higher wages equated more spending. This has been the theme of GOOD REPUBLICANISM from the 20<sup>th</sup> century until recently. Unfortunately, the over taxing and over spending has led to more over cutting and the cycles continue onward until everything has been screwed up with no hopes of returning to the 'let's play by monopoly games rules' mentality.**



**There is no guarantee that when you work ANY JOB you will be able to keep your job for very long. In Los Angeles, California, most companies would only hire you for three months and then get rid of you to avoid having to pay people full time benefits, which counted as an EXPENSE to the businesses being pounded by higher taxes and corporate espionage and greed and lawsuits.**

**Nobody can TRUST anybody. The LIE that is COLLEGE AND UNIVERSITY DEBT is keeping students PRISONERS of overwhelming debts, while the government and their various media outlets encourage students that working part time or volunteering will make them so productive that they will pay off those high principal and high interest student loans within the 30 year mortgages they try to qualify for after their education. This is on the premise that you can work for 30 years and pay off your mortgage without any health complications or aspirations to retire until you are sick or old. This sounds a lot like COMMUNISM versus capitalism to me. By keeping the slaves busy for a whole lifetime, you are, through money and taxation, harvesting human slave labor at cheap wages so that the various abuses the wealthy impose on their corporations and employees can continue forward with all the superstitions and lies and propaganda they brainwashed you with during your public and private education years.**

**The premise of PUBLIC EDUCATION being “FREE” to the student all through way through Grade 12, ENDS, and STATE SPONSORSHIP ENDS, because someone decided that if you want to go to College or a nice University you must go into a tremendous amount of Student LOAN debt to get that education. Which sounds more like COMMUNISM than a what a FREE society would do. To end providing a FREE EDUCATION at College or University levels and involve CITIBANK STUDENT LOAN CORPORATIONS [originally owned by Rockefeller/Chase gurus] is to humiliate and embarrass a large majority of unsuspecting students. The ‘illusions’ of ‘pride’, ‘ego,’ ‘competition,’ being smarter than you actually are or not being as smart as you know you could be if ‘you just try’ has really become a fantasy world, a MIRAGE, to make you a ‘responsible’ person just because you signed a CITIBANK STUDENT LOAN DOCUMENT that**

**couldn't give a DAMN whether you succeed or fail in paying that loan back.**

**So long as they get their OBAMA PIMP MONEY to bail out their own institutions without bailing out the students they claimed to be so important to their 'global economy', they are happy enriching themselves and continuing to collect money from their slaves. THE SLAVE MASTERS are all lying to themselves and lying to you. Sure, THEIR ECONOMY has been great while yours just STINKS! LIARS! YOU SCREAM IN PROTEST day after day that you work and slave with lower wages that have HIGHER TAXES taking away what little incomes are achieved before they fire you and hand you back to more democrats who are happy to give you an unemployment check that will not pay your high rent, not pay your high bills, not pay for what is crucial to paying all the bills that DAVE RAMSEY says you can pay off!**

**Such a neverending cycle of COMMUNIST CAPITALISM must end. The notion that PRIVATE ENTERPRISES will create more jobs that people can actually be successful at, as of the 21<sup>st</sup> century will only succeed as the PRISON that is MONEY and TAXATION gets progressively worse and your children more angrier at the prison we subjected them to.**

**With causing our citizens to always seek that NEW MAGIC NUMBER that will save the whole world and save themselves, such threats coming under the guise of 'ambition,' must end the greed of the greedy and EQUALIZE the rich and poor by getting rid of MONEY and TAXATION altogether. "ECONOMICS" doesn't work unless you are given a GRANT where you don't owe any money to anybody and have the ability to overcome the math they set against you from young age to old age. This does NOT diminish your skills in building a business or working hard to achieve whatever 'working dream' you set out to personally accomplish. Perhaps you feel that 'without God's Help,' or 'with God's help,' you built your business or dream all on your own. Perhaps there are those few who didn't get a bank loan or get a financial break and used those McDonalds wages to work their way up some place, get more money, save more money and use that money to invest in their own dreams [few and far between and whatever boasts are made about personal 'success' inside of the illusions that MONEY**

**and TAXATION create aren't really all that impressive to a free people who reject the idea that you can't be successful without MONEY and TAXATION.]**

**The CREATORS of the MONEY SYSTEM have a different world view – one that has been merciless and an utter failure to all global civilizations which are angry that we've been lied to and misled and have had our rights to be FREE and have EARTH'S RESOURCES FREE to share. And when an anti-Christ horn like Obama expresses "SHARING" and "FAIR SHARE" and tells business owners that it wasn't them who built their businesses but the government, the shouts of protest were very loud by the conservative side of the argument. Employees fired by business owners could offer their side of the argument as well, that unless you are given a grant, a huge loan, win the lottery or inherit lots of money or have access to your own printing press – your chances of 'succeeding' under a communist capitalist system are slim to none.**

**Fox News has done their best to try to sell the principles of capitalism to a world longing for a different direction other than the world government systems that are a failure. Nations are weary of the UNITED NATIONS failing to achieve freedom because THE ROCKEFELLER EGO has now filled every seat among these throne dwarves and stooges who want to continue to CHANGE THE FACE OF THE MARK OF THE BEAST'S MONEY with one angry ruler after another. Instead of ONE ANGRY KING bent on global changes to rule the world, we now have TEN ANGRY KINGS sitting on one beast they all give their authority to as they rule with the beast for a short time before relinquishing their power to him – thus accomplishing their own purposes by betraying their own peoples.**

**ONE MONEY. ONE BEAST. ONE WORLD. MONEY and TAXATION are the gods of all nations that aren't FREE.**

**America was supposed to set the example for how to lead on FREEDOM, but now, our sense of patriotism has been destroyed through money and taxation and FREEDOM a byword uttered by the**

**SMOOTH TALK AND FLATTERY of modern politics, BOUGHT AND PAID FOR by the [www.opensecrets.org](http://www.opensecrets.org) world.**

**People are weary of working for someone else, for strangers, who aren't their own families. People are weary of living in houses with someone else owning them. People are weary of signing bank loans and credit cards. People are weary of heavy taxes and higher prices. People are weary of foreigners threatening everyone with higher energy prices. People are weary of going to the grocery stores, feeling impressed by all the slave labor it took to organize such efficiency, but be made to feel forced to look at PRICES versus what they want. To watch a mother stare at her child and say, "You can't have that because we don't have the money," is among many tragedies, while the homeless will have to be worried that a video camera might catch them trying to take some food so they don't starve to death because of a system that isn't free. THEFT is always committed under the premise that there shouldn't be anything priced and taxed and jailed at the expense of human lives. The BANKERS are STEALING from God's Creation what belongs to GOD ALMIGHTY. The BANKERS, by pricing and taxing everyone and everything, are STEALING FROM GOD WHAT IS GOD'S and destroying FREEDOM by not making GOD'S PROPERTY and CREATED RESOURCES free. As a result of man made rules and regulations about 'raising revenues', even from the Constitutional Laws, humanity is caught between being forced to doing what they don't want to do [communism] or trying to beat a system they don't believe in by lying, cheating, and stealing, like the creators of global financial systems had to do for awhile without records being held up before the media frenzy.**

**What happened with THE FREEDOM OF INFORMATION, THE FREEDOM OF THE PRESS, THE FREEDOM OF SPEECH, THE FREEDOM OF ASSEMBLY, is that FREE PEOPLE protecting by THE GOOD SIDE OF OUR SYSTEM exposed the BAD and UGLY side of this system, holding the liars, cheaters, and thieves responsible for the corruptive practices occurring at the highest levels of government, banking, and corporate politics. It was kind of cool seeing [www.sec.gov](http://www.sec.gov) and [www.secretservice.gov](http://www.secretservice.gov), and [www.fbi.gov](http://www.fbi.gov), and [www.cia.gov](http://www.cia.gov) and [www.nsa.gov](http://www.nsa.gov) fulfilling their CONSTITUTIONAL RIGHTS to National**

**Security.** I myself have always appreciated the efforts of our military heroes, our law enforcement heroes, and our fire fighting heroes for all of their hard work. But I always viewed how **THE SYSTEM** held them in slavery to **COMMUNIST PRINCIPLES** that did not allow our heroes the chance to choose for themselves without ever threatening their salaries.

**We call them “VOLUNTEERS” and that would be true if they could function WITHOUT MONEY and WITHOUT TAXATION and return to homes that are FREE with FREE ENERGY in their FREE TRANSPORTATION. It would be nice if all trucks could get FREE FUEL so that all businesses offering FREE goods and FREE SERVICES were built and employed by FREE EMPLOYEES working for FREE in a FREE WORLD.**

**Imagine EMPLOYEES working for FREE because they themselves are FREE, happy to go to work without MONEY and TAXATION hindering their personal dreams or home lives. Instead of being treated like SLAVES threatened by too little or too much MONEY, all threats against you created by MONEY worries will be eliminated and you can do what YOU want without threats of being harassed by merciless math some banker figured out for you and the whole world.**

**While there are the few and the proud that laugh, smile, live in the la la land of having a good career because FAMILIES TAKE CARE OF FAMILIES, people without families who aren't being mentored and feeling left out by the cruelty of bad politics have a different world view. And those few and proud who are laughing and smiling today will snap out of la la land when they realize the systems they gave up their lives for were a lie that had soaked up all of their blood, sweat and tears for.....WHAT? For WHOM?**

**Indeed, our MONEY systems seemed wired more towards pleasing women, what women want and need among the various companies promoting sexuality and vanity, while men are appeased with the commercials of LAZY BOY furniture after a hard day's work. We've got to borrow more for that television, that computer, that car insurance, that health insurance, that 5 other insurance plans and eventually**

**repeat the cycles of banking for our children, subjected to mathematics that wore us out to the point of insanity.**

**Not the good life a FREE people ought to SETTLE for.**

**HAMILTON:** This simple train of inquiry furnishes us at once with a test by which to judge of the true nature of the clause complained of. It conducts us to this palpable truth, **that a power to lay and collect taxes must be a power to pass all laws NECESSARY and PROPER for the execution of that power;** and what does the unfortunate and culminated provision in question do more than declare the same truth, to wit, that **the national legislature, to whom the power of laying and collecting taxes had been previously given, might, in the execution of that power, pass all laws NECESSARY and PROPER to carry it into effect?**

**ROBIN FOX:** The 13 colonies agreed that allowing the British or any European power to lay and collect taxes should have been abolished, but by allowing our own “UNITED STATES” to repeat European oppression through “THE POWER TO LAY AND COLLECT TAXES” would cause the same oppressive powers on American soil all over again, even if an “AMERICAN” reset button was being pressed on European methods of taxation and banking. Such laws were UN-NECESSARY and IMPROPER to carry a FREE NATION into effect.

**The ROCKEFELLER empowerment of global powers through the LEAGUE OF NATIONS and THE UNITED NATIONS and THE UNITED STATES and THE ARAB LEAGUE and CHINESE MILITARY and RUSSIAN COMMUNISM and playing MONEY GODS to all nations everywhere has caused an unprecedented INTERNATIONAL CRISIS that those he empowered ‘are taking advantage of.’ They don’t want YOUR PERSONAL CRISIS to go to waste and can’t HANDLE THE TRUTH, the WAY, the LIFE that ONE MESSIAH offered as GOD on the Cross and in the Resurrection.**

**HAMILTON:** I have applied these observations thus **particularly to the power of taxation,** because it is the immediate subject under consideration, and because **it is the most important of the authorities proposed to be conferred upon the Union.** But the same process will

lead to the same result, in relation to all other powers declared in the Constitution. And it is EXPRESSLY to execute these powers that the sweeping clause, as it has been affectedly called, **authorizes the national legislature to pass all NECESSARY and PROPER laws**. If there is any thing exceptionable, it must be sought for in the specific powers upon which this general declaration is predicated. The declaration itself, though it may be chargeable with tautology or redundancy, is at least **perfectly harmless**.

**ROBIN FOX: MONEY AND TAXATION** have been harmful to my own freedom. Those who held the **POWER OF TAXATION** throughout my lifetime and all of these **UN-NECESSARY** man made improper laws were not good for a **FREEDOM** seeking people. I didn't go to College because I didn't want to be a slave to loan debt. I didn't get a car because it was too expensive. I didn't want to go into debt, but had to do so because that is what the system required for people with little or no money. I didn't drive to search for work because gas was too expensive. I didn't look for work because a part time wage working for communists would not pay enough for the **HIGH GREED PRINCIPLE AND INTEREST** of the **MORTGAGE TITLE HOLDERS**. With a communist in charge of the land under my house and a Mormon in charge of the house I lived in, and greedy swindlers firing everyone at the job I depended upon, and ever increasing inflation – no thank you. It was **PERFECTLY HARMFUL**. New immigrants or old citizens were also harmed by taxation and money methods un-natural to **FREE SOULS** and **FREE BODIES** held in slavery to ever finding that magic show number to pass **GO** on the Monopoly board.

**HAMILTON:** But **SUSPICION** may ask, Why then was it introduced? The answer is, that it could only have been done for greater caution, and to guard against all caviling refinements in those who might hereafter feel a disposition to curtail and evade the legitimate authorities of the Union. The Convention probably foresaw, what it has been a principal aim of these papers to inculcate, that the danger which most threatens our political welfare is that the State governments will finally sap the foundations of the Union; and might therefore think it necessary, in so cardinal a point, to leave nothing to construction. Whatever may have been the inducement to it, the wisdom of the

**precaution is evident from the cry which has been raised against it; as that very cry betrays a disposition to question the great and essential truth which it is manifestly the object of that provision to declare.**

**But it may be again asked, Who is to judge of the NECESSITY and PROPRIETY of the laws to be passed for executing the powers of the Union? I answer, first, that this question arises as well and as fully upon the simple grant of those powers as upon the declaratory clause; and I answer, in the second place, that the national government, like every other, must judge, in the first instance, of the proper exercise of its powers, and its constituents in the last. If the federal government should overpass the just bounds of its authority and make a tyrannical use of its powers, the people, whose creature it is, must appeal to the standard they have formed, and take such measures to redress the injury done to the Constitution as the exigency may suggest and prudence justify. The propriety of a law, in a constitutional light, must always be determined by the nature of the powers upon which it is founded. Suppose, by some forced constructions of its authority (which, indeed, cannot easily be imagined), the Federal legislature should attempt to vary the law of descent in any State, would it not be evident that, in making such an attempt, it had exceeded its jurisdiction, and infringed upon that of the State? Suppose, again, that upon the pretense of an interference with its revenues, it should undertake to abrogate a landtax imposed by the authority of a State; would it not be equally evident that this was an invasion of that concurrent jurisdiction in respect to this species of tax, which its Constitution plainly supposes to exist in the State governments? If there ever should be a doubt on this head, the credit of it will be entirely due to those reasoners who, in the imprudent zeal of their animosity to the plan of the convention, have labored to envelop it in a cloud calculated to obscure the plainest and simplest truths.**

**But it is said that the laws of the Union are to be the SUPREME LAW of the land. But what inference can be drawn from this, or what would they amount to, if they were not to be supreme? It is evident they would amount to nothing. A LAW, by the very meaning of the term, includes supremacy. It is a rule which those to whom it is prescribed are bound to observe. This results from every political association. If**



**individuals enter into a state of society, the laws of that society must be the supreme regulator of their conduct. If a number of political societies enter into a larger political society, the laws which the latter may enact, pursuant to the powers intrusted to it by its constitution, must necessarily be supreme over those societies, and the individuals of whom they are composed. It would otherwise be a mere treaty, dependent on the good faith of the parties, and not a government, which is only another word for POLITICAL POWER AND SUPREMACY. But it will not follow from this doctrine that acts of the large society which are NOT PURSUANT to its constitutional powers, but which are invasions of the residuary authorities of the smaller societies, will become the supreme law of the land. These will be merely acts of usurpation, and will deserve to be treated as such. Hence we perceive that the clause which declares the supremacy of the laws of the Union, like the one we have just before considered, only declares a truth, which flows immediately and necessarily from the institution of a federal government. It will not, I presume, have escaped observation, that it EXPRESSLY confines this supremacy to laws made PURSUANT TO THE CONSTITUTION; which I mention merely as an instance of caution in the convention; since that limitation would have been to be understood, though it had not been expressed.**

**Though a law, therefore, laying a tax for the use of the United States would be supreme in its nature, and could not legally be opposed or controlled, yet a law for abrogating or preventing the collection of a tax laid by the authority of the State, (unless upon imports and exports), would not be the supreme law of the land, but a usurpation of power not granted by the Constitution. As far as an improper accumulation of taxes on the same object might tend to render the collection difficult or precarious, this would be a mutual inconvenience, not arising from a superiority or defect of power on either side, but from an injudicious exercise of power by one or the other, in a manner equally disadvantageous to both. It is to be hoped and presumed, however, that mutual interest would dictate a concert in this respect which would avoid any material inconvenience. The inference from the whole is, that the individual States would, under the proposed Constitution, retain an independent and uncontrollable authority to raise revenue to any extent of which they may stand in**

need, by every kind of taxation, except duties on imports and exports. It will be shown in the next paper that this **CONCURRENT JURISDICTION** in the article of taxation was the only admissible substitute for an entire subordination, in respect to this branch of power, of the State authority to that of the Union.

***PUBLIUS.***

**FEDERALIST No. 34**

**The Same Subject Continued**  
**(Concerning the General Power of Taxation)**

***From the New York Packet.***

***Friday, January 4, 1788.***

**[Alexander Hamilton](#)**

**To the People of the State of New York:**

**I FLATTER myself it has been clearly shown in my last number that the particular States, under the proposed Constitution, would have COEQUAL authority with the Union in the article of revenue, except as to duties on imports. As this leaves open to the States far the greatest part of the resources of the community, there can be no color for the assertion that they would not possess means as abundant as could be desired for the supply of their own wants, independent of all external control. That the field is sufficiently wide will more fully appear when we come to advert to the inconsiderable share of the public expenses for which it will fall to the lot of the State governments to provide.**

**To argue upon abstract principles that this co-ordinate authority cannot exist, is to set up supposition and theory against fact and reality. However proper such reasonings might be to show that a thing OUGHT NOT TO EXIST, they are wholly to be rejected when they are made use of to prove that it does not exist contrary to the evidence of the fact itself. It is well known that in the Roman republic the legislative authority, in the last resort, resided for ages in two different political bodies not as branches of the same legislature, but as distinct and independent legislatures, in each of which an opposite interest prevailed: in one the patrician; in the other, the plebian. Many**

arguments might have been adduced to prove the unfitness of two such seemingly contradictory authorities, each having power to **ANNUL** or **REPEAL** the acts of the other. But a man would have been regarded as frantic who should have attempted at Rome to disprove their existence. It will be readily understood that I allude to the **COMITIA CENTURIATA** and the **COMITIA TRIBUTA**. The former, in which the people voted by centuries, was so arranged as to give a superiority to the patrician interest; in the latter, in which numbers prevailed, the plebian interest had an entire predominancy. And yet these two legislatures coexisted for ages, and the Roman republic attained to the utmost height of human greatness.

In the case particularly under consideration, there is no such contradiction as appears in the example cited; there is no power on either side to annul the acts of the other. And in practice there is little reason to apprehend any inconvenience; because, in a short course of time, the wants of the States will naturally reduce themselves within A **VERY NARROW COMPASS**; and in the interim, the United States will, in all probability, find it convenient to abstain wholly from those objects to which the particular States would be inclined to resort.

To form a more precise judgment of the true merits of this question, it will be well to advert to the proportion between the objects that will require a federal provision in respect to revenue, and those which will require a State provision. We shall discover that the former are altogether unlimited, and that the latter are circumscribed within very moderate bounds. In pursuing this inquiry, we must bear in mind that we are not to confine our view to the present period, but to look forward to remote futurity. Constitutions of civil government are not to be framed upon a calculation of existing exigencies, but upon a combination of these with the probable exigencies of ages, according to the natural and tried course of human affairs. Nothing, therefore, can be more fallacious than to infer the extent of any power, proper to be lodged in the national government, from an estimate of its immediate necessities. There ought to be a **CAPACITY** to provide for future contingencies as they may happen; and as these are illimitable in their nature, it is impossible safely to limit that capacity. It is true, perhaps, that a computation might be made with sufficient accuracy

**to answer the purpose of the quantity of revenue requisite to discharge the subsisting engagements of the Union, and to maintain those establishments which, for some time to come, would suffice in time of peace. But would it be wise, or would it not rather be the extreme of folly, to stop at this point, and to leave the government intrusted with the care of the national defense in a state of absolute incapacity to provide for the protection of the community against future invasions of the public peace, by foreign war or domestic convulsions? If, on the contrary, we ought to exceed this point, where can we stop, short of an indefinite power of providing for emergencies as they may arise? Though it is easy to assert, in general terms, the possibility of forming a rational judgment of a due provision against probable dangers, yet we may safely challenge those who make the assertion to bring forward their data, and may affirm that they would be found as vague and uncertain as any that could be produced to establish the probable duration of the world. Observations confined to the mere prospects of internal attacks can deserve no weight; though even these will admit of no satisfactory calculation: but if we mean to be a commercial people, it must form a part of our policy to be able one day to defend that commerce. The support of a navy and of naval wars would involve contingencies that must baffle all the efforts of political arithmetic.**

**Admitting that we ought to try the novel and absurd experiment in politics of tying up the hands of government from offensive war founded upon reasons of state, yet certainly we ought not to disable it from guarding the community against the ambition or enmity of other nations. A cloud has been for some time hanging over the European world. If it should break forth into a storm, who can insure us that in its progress a part of its fury would not be spent upon us? No reasonable man would hastily pronounce that we are entirely out of its reach. Or if the combustible materials that now seem to be collecting should be dissipated without coming to maturity, or if a flame should be kindled without extending to us, what security can we have that our tranquillity will long remain undisturbed from some other cause or from some other quarter? Let us recollect that peace or war will not always be left to our option; that however moderate or unambitious we may be, we cannot count upon the moderation, or hope to extinguish**

**the ambition of others. Who could have imagined at the conclusion of the last war that France and Britain, wearied and exhausted as they both were, would so soon have looked with so hostile an aspect upon each other? To judge from the history of mankind, we shall be compelled to conclude that the fiery and destructive passions of war reign in the human breast with much more powerful sway than the mild and beneficent sentiments of peace; and that to model our political systems upon speculations of lasting tranquillity, is to calculate on the weaker springs of the human character.**

**What are the chief sources of expense in every government? What has occasioned that enormous accumulation of debts with which several of the European nations are oppressed? The answers plainly is, wars and rebellions; the support of those institutions which are necessary to guard the body politic against these two most mortal diseases of society. The expenses arising from those institutions which are relative to the mere domestic police of a state, to the support of its legislative, executive, and judicial departments, with their different appendages, and to the encouragement of agriculture and manufactures (which will comprehend almost all the objects of state expenditure), are insignificant in comparison with those which relate to the national defense.**

**In the kingdom of Great Britain, where all the ostentatious apparatus of monarchy is to be provided for, not above a fifteenth part of the annual income of the nation is appropriated to the class of expenses last mentioned; the other fourteen fifteenths are absorbed in the payment of the interest of debts contracted for carrying on the wars in which that country has been engaged, and in the maintenance of fleets and armies. If, on the one hand, it should be observed that the expenses incurred in the prosecution of the ambitious enterprises and vainglorious pursuits of a monarchy are not a proper standard by which to judge of those which might be necessary in a republic, it ought, on the other hand, to be remarked that there should be as great a disproportion between the profusion and extravagance of a wealthy kingdom in its domestic administration, and the frugality and economy which in that particular become the modest simplicity of republican government. If we balance a proper deduction from one side against**

**that which it is supposed ought to be made from the other, the proportion may still be considered as holding good.**

**But let us advert to the large debt which we have ourselves contracted in a single war, and let us only calculate on a common share of the events which disturb the peace of nations, and we shall instantly perceive, without the aid of any elaborate illustration, that there must always be an immense disproportion between the objects of federal and state expenditures. It is true that several of the States, separately, are encumbered with considerable debts, which are an excrescence of the late war. But this cannot happen again, if the proposed system be adopted; and when these debts are discharged, the only call for revenue of any consequence, which the State governments will continue to experience, will be for the mere support of their respective civil list; to which, if we add all contingencies, the total amount in every State ought to fall considerably short of two hundred thousand pounds.**

**In framing a government for posterity as well as ourselves, we ought, in those provisions which are designed to be permanent, to calculate, not on temporary, but on permanent causes of expense. If this principle be a just one our attention would be directed to a provision in favor of the State governments for an annual sum of about two hundred thousand pounds; while the exigencies of the Union could be susceptible of no limits, even in imagination. In this view of the subject, by what logic can it be maintained that the local governments ought to command, in perpetuity, an EXCLUSIVE source of revenue for any sum beyond the extent of two hundred thousand pounds? To extend its power further, in EXCLUSION of the authority of the Union, would be to take the resources of the community out of those hands which stood in need of them for the public welfare, in order to put them into other hands which could have no just or proper occasion for them.**

**Suppose, then, the convention had been inclined to proceed upon the principle of a repartition of the objects of revenue, between the Union and its members, in PROPORTION to their comparative necessities; what particular fund could have been selected for the use of the**

**States, that would not either have been too much or too little too little for their present, too much for their future wants? As to the line of separation between external and internal taxes, this would leave to the States, at a rough computation, the command of two thirds of the resources of the community to defray from a tenth to a twentieth part of its expenses; and to the Union, one third of the resources of the community, to defray from nine tenths to nineteen twentieths of its expenses. If we desert this boundary and content ourselves with leaving to the States an exclusive power of taxing houses and lands, there would still be a great disproportion between the MEANS and the END; the possession of one third of the resources of the community to supply, at most, one tenth of its wants. If any fund could have been selected and appropriated, equal to and not greater than the object, it would have been inadequate to the discharge of the existing debts of the particular States, and would have left them dependent on the Union for a provision for this purpose.**

**The preceding train of observation will justify the position which has been elsewhere laid down, that "A CONCURRENT JURISDICTION in the article of taxation was the only admissible substitute for an entire subordination, in respect to this branch of power, of State authority to that of the Union." Any separation of the objects of revenue that could have been fallen upon, would have amounted to a sacrifice of the great INTERESTS of the Union to the POWER of the individual States. The convention thought the concurrent jurisdiction preferable to that subordination; and it is evident that it has at least the merit of reconciling an indefinite constitutional power of taxation in the Federal government with an adequate and independent power in the States to provide for their own necessities. There remain a few other lights, in which this important subject of taxation will claim a further consideration.**

***PUBLIUS.***

**FEDERALIST No. 35**

**The Same Subject Continued  
(Concerning the General Power of Taxation)**

*For the Independent Journal.*  
Alexander Hamilton

**To the People of the State of New York:**

**BEFORE we proceed to examine any other objections to an indefinite power of taxation in the Union, I shall make one general remark; which is, that if the jurisdiction of the national government, in the article of revenue, should be restricted to particular objects, it would naturally occasion an undue proportion of the public burdens to fall upon those objects. Two evils would spring from this source: the oppression of particular branches of industry; and an unequal distribution of the taxes, as well among the several States as among the citizens of the same State.**

**Suppose, as has been contended for, the federal power of taxation were to be confined to duties on imports, it is evident that the government, for want of being able to command other resources, would frequently be tempted to extend these duties to an injurious excess. There are persons who imagine that they can never be carried to too great a length; since the higher they are, the more it is alleged they will tend to discourage an extravagant consumption, to produce a favorable balance of trade, and to promote domestic manufactures. But all extremes are pernicious in various ways. Exorbitant duties on imported articles would beget a general spirit of smuggling; which is always prejudicial to the fair trader, and eventually to the revenue itself: they tend to render other classes of the community tributary, in an improper degree, to the manufacturing classes, to whom they give a premature monopoly of the markets; they sometimes force industry out of its more natural channels into others in which it flows with less advantage; and in the last place, they oppress the merchant, who is often obliged to pay them himself without any retribution from the consumer. When the demand is equal to the quantity of goods at market, the consumer generally pays the duty; but when the markets happen to be overstocked, a great proportion falls upon the merchant, and sometimes not only exhausts his profits, but breaks in upon his capital. I am apt to think that a division of the duty, between the seller and the buyer, more often happens than is commonly imagined. It is**



**not always possible to raise the price of a commodity in exact proportion to every additional imposition laid upon it. The merchant, especially in a country of small commercial capital, is often under a necessity of keeping prices down in order to a more expeditious sale.**

**The maxim that the consumer is the payer, is so much oftener true than the reverse of the proposition, that it is far more equitable that the duties on imports should go into a common stock, than that they should redound to the exclusive benefit of the importing States. But it is not so generally true as to render it equitable, that those duties should form the only national fund. When they are paid by the merchant they operate as an additional tax upon the importing State, whose citizens pay their proportion of them in the character of consumers. In this view they are productive of inequality among the States; which inequality would be increased with the increased extent of the duties. The confinement of the national revenues to this species of imposts would be attended with inequality, from a different cause, between the manufacturing and the non-manufacturing States. The States which can go farthest towards the supply of their own wants, by their own manufactures, will not, according to their numbers or wealth, consume so great a proportion of imported articles as those States which are not in the same favorable situation. They would not, therefore, in this mode alone contribute to the public treasury in a ratio to their abilities. To make them do this it is necessary that recourse be had to excises, the proper objects of which are particular kinds of manufactures. New York is more deeply interested in these considerations than such of her citizens as contend for limiting the power of the Union to external taxation may be aware of. New York is an importing State, and is not likely speedily to be, to any great extent, a manufacturing State. She would, of course, suffer in a double light from restraining the jurisdiction of the Union to commercial imposts.**

**So far as these observations tend to inculcate a danger of the import duties being extended to an injurious extreme it may be observed, conformably to a remark made in another part of these papers, that the interest of the revenue itself would be a sufficient guard against such an extreme. I readily admit that this would be the case, as long**

as other resources were open; but if the avenues to them were closed, HOPE, stimulated by necessity, would beget experiments, fortified by rigorous precautions and additional penalties, which, for a time, would have the intended effect, till there had been leisure to contrive expedients to elude these new precautions. The first success would be apt to inspire false opinions, which it might require a long course of subsequent experience to correct. Necessity, especially in politics, often occasions false hopes, false reasonings, and a system of measures correspondingly erroneous. But even if this supposed excess should not be a consequence of the limitation of the federal power of taxation, the inequalities spoken of would still ensue, though not in the same degree, from the other causes that have been noticed. Let us now return to the examination of objections.

One which, if we may judge from the frequency of its repetition, seems most to be relied on, is, that the House of Representatives is not sufficiently numerous for the reception of all the different classes of citizens, in order to combine the interests and feelings of every part of the community, and to produce a due sympathy between the representative body and its constituents. This argument presents itself under a very specious and seducing form; and is well calculated to lay hold of the prejudices of those to whom it is addressed. But when we come to dissect it with attention, it will appear to be made up of nothing but fair-sounding words. The object it seems to aim at is, in the first place, impracticable, and in the sense in which it is contended for, is unnecessary. I reserve for another place the discussion of the question which relates to the sufficiency of the representative body in respect to numbers, and shall content myself with examining here the particular use which has been made of a contrary supposition, in reference to the immediate subject of our inquiries.

The idea of an actual representation of all classes of the people, by persons of each class, is altogether visionary. Unless it were expressly provided in the Constitution, that each different occupation should send one or more members, the thing would never take place in practice. Mechanics and manufacturers will always be inclined, with few exceptions, to give their votes to merchants, in preference to

persons of their own professions or trades. Those discerning citizens are well aware that the mechanic and manufacturing arts furnish the materials of mercantile enterprise and industry. Many of them, indeed, are immediately connected with the operations of commerce. They know that the merchant is their natural patron and friend; and they are aware, that however great the confidence they may justly feel in their own good sense, their interests can be more effectually promoted by the merchant than by themselves. They are sensible that their habits in life have not been such as to give them those acquired endowments, without which, in a deliberative assembly, the greatest natural abilities are for the most part useless; and that the influence and weight, and superior acquirements of the merchants render them more equal to a contest with any spirit which might happen to infuse itself into the public councils, unfriendly to the manufacturing and trading interests. These considerations, and many others that might be mentioned prove, and experience confirms it, that artisans and manufacturers will commonly be disposed to bestow their votes upon merchants and those whom they recommend. We must therefore consider merchants as the natural representatives of all these classes of the community.

With regard to the learned professions, little need be observed; they truly form no distinct interest in society, and according to their situation and talents, will be indiscriminately the objects of the confidence and choice of each other, and of other parts of the community.

Nothing remains but the landed interest; and this, in a political view, and particularly in relation to taxes, I take to be perfectly united, from the wealthiest landlord down to the poorest tenant. No tax can be laid on land which will not affect the proprietor of millions of acres as well as the proprietor of a single acre. Every landholder will therefore have a common interest to keep the taxes on land as low as possible; and common interest may always be reckoned upon as the surest bond of sympathy. But if we even could suppose a distinction of interest between the opulent landholder and the middling farmer, what reason is there to conclude, that the first would stand a better chance of being deputed to the national legislature than the last? If we take fact

**as our guide, and look into our own senate and assembly, we shall find that moderate proprietors of land prevail in both; nor is this less the case in the senate, which consists of a smaller number, than in the assembly, which is composed of a greater number. Where the qualifications of the electors are the same, whether they have to choose a small or a large number, their votes will fall upon those in whom they have most confidence; whether these happen to be men of large fortunes, or of moderate property, or of no property at all.**

**It is said to be necessary, that all classes of citizens should have some of their own number in the representative body, in order that their feelings and interests may be the better understood and attended to. But we have seen that this will never happen under any arrangement that leaves the votes of the people free. Where this is the case, the representative body, with too few exceptions to have any influence on the spirit of the government, will be composed of landholders, merchants, and men of the learned professions. But where is the danger that the interests and feelings of the different classes of citizens will not be understood or attended to by these three descriptions of men? Will not the landholder know and feel whatever will promote or insure the interest of landed property? And will he not, from his own interest in that species of property, be sufficiently prone to resist every attempt to prejudice or encumber it? Will not the merchant understand and be disposed to cultivate, as far as may be proper, the interests of the mechanic and manufacturing arts, to which his commerce is so nearly allied? Will not the man of the learned profession, who will feel a neutrality to the rivalships between the different branches of industry, be likely to prove an impartial arbiter between them, ready to promote either, so far as it shall appear to him conducive to the general interests of the society?**

**If we take into the account the momentary humors or dispositions which may happen to prevail in particular parts of the society, and to which a wise administration will never be inattentive, is the man whose situation leads to extensive inquiry and information less likely to be a competent judge of their nature, extent, and foundation than one whose observation does not travel beyond the circle of his neighbors and acquaintances? Is it not natural that a man who is a**

**candidate for the favor of the people, and who is dependent on the suffrages of his fellow-citizens for the continuance of his public honors, should take care to inform himself of their dispositions and inclinations, and should be willing to allow them their proper degree of influence upon his conduct? This dependence, and the necessity of being bound himself, and his posterity, by the laws to which he gives his assent, are the true, and they are the strong chords of sympathy between the representative and the constituent.**

**There is no part of the administration of government that requires extensive information and a thorough knowledge of the principles of political economy, so much as the business of taxation. The man who understands those principles best will be least likely to resort to oppressive expedients, or sacrifice any particular class of citizens to the procurement of revenue. It might be demonstrated that the most productive system of finance will always be the least burdensome. There can be no doubt that in order to a judicious exercise of the power of taxation, it is necessary that the person in whose hands it should be acquainted with the general genius, habits, and modes of thinking of the people at large, and with the resources of the country. And this is all that can be reasonably meant by a knowledge of the interests and feelings of the people. In any other sense the proposition has either no meaning, or an absurd one. And in that sense let every considerate citizen judge for himself where the requisite qualification is most likely to be found.**

## **FEDERALIST No. 36**

**The Same Subject Continued**  
**(Concerning the General Power of Taxation)**  
***From the New York Packet.***  
***Tuesday January 8, 1788.***  
**[Alexander Hamilton](#)**

**To the People of the State of New York:**

**WE HAVE seen that the result of the observations, to which the foregoing number has been principally devoted, is, that from the natural operation of the different interests and views of the various**

classes of the community, whether the representation of the people be more or less numerous, it will consist almost entirely of proprietors of land, of merchants, and of members of the learned professions, who will truly represent all those different interests and views. If it should be objected that we have seen other descriptions of men in the local legislatures, I answer that it is admitted there are exceptions to the rule, but not in sufficient number to influence the general complexion or character of the government. There are strong minds in every walk of life that will rise superior to the disadvantages of situation, and will command the tribute due to their merit, not only from the classes to which they particularly belong, but from the society in general. The door ought to be equally open to all; and I trust, for the credit of human nature, that we shall see examples of such vigorous plants flourishing in the soil of federal as well as of State legislation; but occasional instances of this sort will not render the reasoning founded upon the general course of things, less conclusive.

The subject might be placed in several other lights that would all lead to the same result; and in particular it might be asked, What greater affinity or relation of interest can be conceived between the carpenter and blacksmith, and the linen manufacturer or stocking weaver, than between the merchant and either of them? It is notorious that there are often as great rivalships between different branches of the mechanic or manufacturing arts as there are between any of the departments of labor and industry; so that, unless the representative body were to be far more numerous than would be consistent with any idea of regularity or wisdom in its deliberations, it is impossible that what seems to be the spirit of the objection we have been considering should ever be realized in practice. But I forbear to dwell any longer on a matter which has hitherto worn too loose a garb to admit even of an accurate inspection of its real shape or tendency.

There is another objection of a somewhat more precise nature that claims our attention. It has been asserted that a power of internal taxation in the national legislature could never be exercised with advantage, as well from the want of a sufficient knowledge of local circumstances, as from an interference between the revenue laws of the Union and of the particular States. The supposition of a want of

**proper knowledge seems to be entirely destitute of foundation. If any question is depending in a State legislature respecting one of the counties, which demands a knowledge of local details, how is it acquired? No doubt from the information of the members of the county. Cannot the like knowledge be obtained in the national legislature from the representatives of each State? And is it not to be presumed that the men who will generally be sent there will be possessed of the necessary degree of intelligence to be able to communicate that information? Is the knowledge of local circumstances, as applied to taxation, a minute topographical acquaintance with all the mountains, rivers, streams, highways, and bypaths in each State; or is it a general acquaintance with its situation and resources, with the state of its agriculture, commerce, manufactures, with the nature of its products and consumptions, with the different degrees and kinds of its wealth, property, and industry?**

**Nations in general, even under governments of the more popular kind, usually commit the administration of their finances to single men or to boards composed of a few individuals, who digest and prepare, in the first instance, the plans of taxation, which are afterwards passed into laws by the authority of the sovereign or legislature.**

**Inquisitive and enlightened statesmen are deemed everywhere best qualified to make a judicious selection of the objects proper for revenue; which is a clear indication, as far as the sense of mankind can have weight in the question, of the species of knowledge of local circumstances requisite to the purposes of taxation.**

**The taxes intended to be comprised under the general denomination of internal taxes may be subdivided into those of the DIRECT and those of the INDIRECT kind. Though the objection be made to both, yet the reasoning upon it seems to be confined to the former branch. And indeed, as to the latter, by which must be understood duties and excises on articles of consumption, one is at a loss to conceive what can be the nature of the difficulties apprehended. The knowledge relating to them must evidently be of a kind that will either be suggested by the nature of the article itself, or can easily be procured from any well-informed man, especially of the mercantile class. The**

**circumstances that may distinguish its situation in one State from its situation in another must be few, simple, and easy to be comprehended. The principal thing to be attended to, would be to avoid those articles which had been previously appropriated to the use of a particular State; and there could be no difficulty in ascertaining the revenue system of each. This could always be known from the respective codes of laws, as well as from the information of the members from the several States.**

**The objection, when applied to real property or to houses and lands, appears to have, at first sight, more foundation, but even in this view it will not bear a close examination. Land taxes are commonly laid in one of two modes, either by ACTUAL valuations, permanent or periodical, or by OCCASIONAL assessments, at the discretion, or according to the best judgment, of certain officers whose duty it is to make them. In either case, the EXECUTION of the business, which alone requires the knowledge of local details, must be devolved upon discreet persons in the character of commissioners or assessors, elected by the people or appointed by the government for the purpose. All that the law can do must be to name the persons or to prescribe the manner of their election or appointment, to fix their numbers and qualifications and to draw the general outlines of their powers and duties. And what is there in all this that cannot as well be performed by the national legislature as by a State legislature? The attention of either can only reach to general principles; local details, as already observed, must be referred to those who are to execute the plan.**

**But there is a simple point of view in which this matter may be placed that must be altogether satisfactory. The national legislature can make use of the SYSTEM OF EACH STATE WITHIN THAT STATE. The method of laying and collecting this species of taxes in each State can, in all its parts, be adopted and employed by the federal government.**

**Let it be recollected that the proportion of these taxes is not to be left to the discretion of the national legislature, but is to be determined by the numbers of each State, as described in the second section of the first article. An actual census or enumeration of the people must**



**furnish the rule, a circumstance which effectually shuts the door to partiality or oppression. The abuse of this power of taxation seems to have been provided against with guarded circumspection. In addition to the precaution just mentioned, there is a provision that "all duties, imposts, and excises shall be UNIFORM throughout the United States."**

**It has been very properly observed by different speakers and writers on the side of the Constitution, that if the exercise of the power of internal taxation by the Union should be discovered on experiment to be really inconvenient, the federal government may then forbear the use of it, and have recourse to requisitions in its stead. By way of answer to this, it has been triumphantly asked, Why not in the first instance omit that ambiguous power, and rely upon the latter resource? Two solid answers may be given. The first is, that the exercise of that power, if convenient, will be preferable, because it will be more effectual; and it is impossible to prove in theory, or otherwise than by the experiment, that it cannot be advantageously exercised. The contrary, indeed, appears most probable. The second answer is, that the existence of such a power in the Constitution will have a strong influence in giving efficacy to requisitions. When the States know that the Union can apply itself without their agency, it will be a powerful motive for exertion on their part.**

**As to the interference of the revenue laws of the Union, and of its members, we have already seen that there can be no clashing or repugnancy of authority. The laws cannot, therefore, in a legal sense, interfere with each other; and it is far from impossible to avoid an interference even in the policy of their different systems. An effectual expedient for this purpose will be, mutually, to abstain from those objects which either side may have first had recourse to. As neither can CONTROL the other, each will have an obvious and sensible interest in this reciprocal forbearance. And where there is an IMMEDIATE common interest, we may safely count upon its operation. When the particular debts of the States are done away, and their expenses come to be limited within their natural compass, the possibility almost of interference will vanish. A small land tax will answer the purpose of the States, and will be their most simple and most fit resource.**

**Many spectres have been raised out of this power of internal taxation, to excite the apprehensions of the people: double sets of revenue officers, a duplication of their burdens by double taxations, and the frightful forms of odious and oppressive poll-taxes, have been played off with all the ingenious dexterity of political legerdemain.**

**As to the first point, there are two cases in which there can be no room for double sets of officers: one, where the right of imposing the tax is exclusively vested in the Union, which applies to the duties on imports; the other, where the object has not fallen under any State regulation or provision, which may be applicable to a variety of objects. In other cases, the probability is that the United States will either wholly abstain from the objects preoccupied for local purposes, or will make use of the State officers and State regulations for collecting the additional imposition. This will best answer the views of revenue, because it will save expense in the collection, and will best avoid any occasion of disgust to the State governments and to the people. At all events, here is a practicable expedient for avoiding such an inconvenience; and nothing more can be required than to show that evils predicted to not necessarily result from the plan.**

**As to any argument derived from a supposed system of influence, it is a sufficient answer to say that it ought not to be presumed; but the supposition is susceptible of a more precise answer. If such a spirit should infest the councils of the Union, the most certain road to the accomplishment of its aim would be to employ the State officers as much as possible, and to attach them to the Union by an accumulation of their emoluments. This would serve to turn the tide of State influence into the channels of the national government, instead of making federal influence flow in an opposite and adverse current. But all suppositions of this kind are invidious, and ought to be banished from the consideration of the great question before the people. They can answer no other end than to cast a mist over the truth.**

**As to the suggestion of double taxation, the answer is plain. The wants of the Union are to be supplied in one way or another; if to be done by the authority of the federal government, it will not be to be done by that of the State government. The quantity of taxes to be paid**

by the community must be the same in either case; with this advantage, if the provision is to be made by the Union that the capital resource of commercial imposts, which is the most convenient branch of revenue, can be prudently improved to a much greater extent under federal than under State regulation, and of course will render it less necessary to recur to more inconvenient methods; and with this further advantage, that as far as there may be any real difficulty in the exercise of the power of internal taxation, it will impose a disposition to greater care in the choice and arrangement of the means; and must naturally tend to make it a fixed point of policy in the national administration to go as far as may be practicable in making the luxury of the rich tributary to the public treasury, in order to diminish the necessity of those impositions which might create dissatisfaction in the poorer and most numerous classes of the society. Happy it is when the interest which the government has in the preservation of its own power, coincides with a proper distribution of the public burdens, and tends to guard the least wealthy part of the community from oppression!

As to poll taxes, I, without scruple, confess my disapprobation of them; and though they have prevailed from an early period in those States [<sup>1</sup>] which have uniformly been the most tenacious of their rights, I should lament to see them introduced into practice under the national government. But does it follow because there is a power to lay them that they will actually be laid? Every State in the Union has power to impose taxes of this kind; and yet in several of them they are unknown in practice. Are the State governments to be stigmatized as tyrannies, because they possess this power? If they are not, with what propriety can the like power justify such a charge against the national government, or even be urged as an obstacle to its adoption? As little friendly as I am to the species of imposition, I still feel a thorough conviction that the power of having recourse to it ought to exist in the federal government. There are certain emergencies of nations, in which expedients, that in the ordinary state of things ought to be forborne, become essential to the public weal. And the government, from the possibility of such emergencies, ought ever to have the option of making use of them. The real scarcity of objects in this country, which may be considered as productive sources of revenue, is

**a reason peculiar to itself, for not abridging the discretion of the national councils in this respect. There may exist certain critical and tempestuous conjunctures of the State, in which a poll tax may become an inestimable resource. And as I know nothing to exempt this portion of the globe from the common calamities that have befallen other parts of it, I acknowledge my aversion to every project that is calculated to disarm the government of a single weapon, which in any possible contingency might be usefully employed for the general defense and security.**

**I have now gone through the examination of such of the powers proposed to be vested in the United States, which may be considered as having an immediate relation to the energy of the government; and have endeavored to answer the principal objections which have been made to them. I have passed over in silence those minor authorities, which are either too inconsiderable to have been thought worthy of the hostilities of the opponents of the Constitution, or of too manifest propriety to admit of controversy. The mass of judiciary power, however, might have claimed an investigation under this head, had it not been for the consideration that its organization and its extent may be more advantageously considered in connection. This has determined me to refer it to the branch of our inquiries upon which we shall next enter.**

### **PUBLIUS.**

#### **ROBIN FOX:**

**Oh swell. When I first pitched the Robin Hood scenario, it was done in the Errol Flynn version. A tyrant had taken over King Richard's kingdom while he was off fighting the Crusades against Islamic fascists. King John had stolen from the poor to give to the rich and Robin Hood merely took back from the rich what the rich stole from the poor through heavy taxation. I also pitched that American settlers protested against European taxation without representation by throwing tea into the ocean.**

**Well, Senator Demitt wrote in his book that Robin Hood was a villain who stole from the rich to give to the poor. Many Fox News writers got Robin Hood wrong when they stated that Robin Hood was a thief who stole from the rich to give to the poor and then mistakingly called Obama: ROBAMAHOOD and stated, “Obama is stealing from the rich to give to the poor.”**

**They got the original story of Robin Hood, Errol Flynn version wrong.**

**It was actually the wealthy who STOLE from the poor and Robin Hood simply confiscated their property back and gave that property back to those it JUSTLY belonged to by right of Biblical Faith and Reason.**

**On August 7, 2012, Obama called Romney, “ROMNEYHOOD” saying that Romney was stealing from the poor to give to the rich. Well, Obama’s writers and Obama himself ALSO GOT THE STORY WRONG! It was KING JOHN and not Robin Hood who stole from the poor to give to the rich and OBAMA IS JUST LIKE A TYRANT, stealing from the poor and giving to the rich and pretending to be: ROBAMAHOOD when he was just always simply ROBBIN’ DA HOOD!**

**Obama was responsible for TAXATION WITHOUT REPRESENTATION which makes HIM A TYRANT! Obama got the Robin Hood story wrong by calling Romney: ROMNEYHOOD. There seems to be a lot of confusion between the REAL ROBIN HOOD versus the fictional Robin Hood – but I always went by the Errol Flynn version from the days of classical films, which is the ICON on my facebook page, as well as one of my pseudonyms: SIR ROBIN OF LOXLEY.**

**How I INTENDED THE PROPER context was that nobody should steal from anybody and that the KINGDOM belongs to KING JESUS. KING JESUS IS IN HEAVEN where MONEY and TAXATION and pricing material resources do not exist. If we are going to fight against tyrants like King John or any world ruler who imposes systems of MONEY and TAXATION as tools of slavery to oppress the masses and**

**hinder them from enjoying Earth's resources at no cost, we ought to get rid of money and taxation entirely and create and innovate a FREE SOCIETY where we can invent without MONEY getting in the way or corrupting our dreams.**

**My MESSAGE has been very consistent. Obama is a TYRANT, a LIAR, and a DECEIVER. He is the one who has caused TAXES and INFLATION to skyrocket, creating more poor people on behalf of the elitists who funded him. Because he is "BLACK" he used the race card to exploit the black vote, because blacks have been VERY ANGRY, HURT, and BOTHERED by the history of slavery that whites imposed upon them.**

**The Mexican and Indian peoples were also exploited over their historical feelings of frustration in being brushed aside through the European MONEY SYSTEMS of TAXATION and PRICING earth's resources. Even Christians have been frustrated over SLAVE MASTERS trying to enslave people's labor through pricing and taxing everyone.**

**Obama belongs to a circus of liars who are part of the devil's tribe so you can't believe or trust a word he has said or says.**

**But watch out: ROMNEY'S CIRCLES have stolen from the poor to enrich the Richie riches! During 2012, since a large majority of Americans had to depend on government assistance to survive unemployment and the inability to pay for the ridiculous costs of health care imposed, Stuart Varney, Stossel, and O'Reilly flashed their "FISCAL CONSERVATIVE" support for all the wealthy and elite, insulted the poor, and while applauding NASA for spending \$2.9 billion dollars to rove around the Clintonian regime's beloved MARS planet to look at rocks, Andrea Tantaros on the Five said, "Ron Paul is just so brave and courageous for doing the hard job of talking about entitlement cuts!"**

**At that moment, there was a SERIOUS DISCONNECT between Fox News and citizens who were dumbfounded that \$2.9 billion dollars would be spent in sending a toy to Mars to study dirt and rocks 'on behalf of children studying math and science,' while the poor, the needy, the disabled, the elderly, could have used that \$2.9 billion for health care, food, or social security, all of which was being CUT by both parties.**

**If 1 in 7 or 1 in 4 Americans were on entitlements, and fiscal conservatives were saying they want to cut out those programs, OBAMA WAS WINNING THE ELECTION BY A LANDSLIDE!**

**Fox News became blinded with images of DONALD TRUMP, the wealthy being necessary for minimum waged job creation, and while earning stable paychecks affording them the opportunity to overcome the bad math imposed on 'hard working slaves,' the hard working slaves who worked hard and got nothing in return but debt, bankruptcy, and unemployment were VERY MAD and rightly so.**

**Un-Biblical liberals were winning the argument against Bible Believers, because on a Biblical level, "CHRISTIANS" / "CATHOLICS" were living in a LIE TOO!**

**You can't go up against the devil, the father of lies, with more lies.**

**What made Romney a GREAT SABOTAGE RINGER for the Republican party that supported him, is that Romney's whole religion of FREEMASON MORMONISM was a lie. Romney also did Herman Cain and Sarah Palin dirty, not to mention he always seemed power hungry with some kind of agenda. Romney going to Israel to win the Jewish vote was all too visible and unbelievable. Why? The same GOLDMAN SACHS who funded Obama in 2008, was also funding ROMNEY and the reason why Obama was "likable," is that there were more slaves oppressed under slave labor, than wealthy people who may have**

**‘worked real hard as slaves too,’ but got special handouts, loans, grants, and a jumpstart to help make their business succeed.**

**EVERYONE, whether you are a business owner or a slave employee, ‘worked real hard.’ But many business owners and employees worked hard to get NOWHERE FAST because of the ridiculous costs of housing, health care, energy, education, all HELD HOSTAGE by banks and taxes.**

**No, not all bankers are evil Stossel.**

**No, not all IRS agents are evil Stossel. Dummy spinner!**

**Stossel went from totally sheek to totally geek during 2012. He lost it. Even as a “CONSTITUTIONAL LIBERTARIAN,” he blew it bad too and wouldn’t challenge the MONEY AND TAXATION parts of the CONSTITUTION which were in violation of FREEDOM.**

**By deceiving people into believing that MONEY and TAXATION are the saviors of the ‘global and national economy’ we have set up EVERYONE FOR FAILURE.**

**Am I jealous or hateful of Romney or any wealthy person who ‘achieved success’ under the rules of this monopoly game lie? No.**

**GOOD MEN have FACTUALLY DONE GOOD THINGS to try to make the world a better place.**

**They threw up lots of fancy buildings, built lots of fancy cars, invented energy resources, and employed a LOT OF HARD WORKERS at minimum wages to make the world what it is today.**

**Both liberals and conservatives, however, have been played for fools as fighting over these godless myths, lies, and basic ancient principles over money and taxation remain a huge burden on everyone, everywhere in every nation.**



**My context of Robin Hood is that both THE WEALTHY and THE POOR should neither be made 'wealthy' or 'poor' by MONEY and TAXATION methods.**

**Wealthy and poor would be made equal if we eliminated money and taxation entirely.**

**Did I agree with ROBAMA HOOD in taxing both rich and poor to create more riches and poverty? No. He was CHANGING America into a ghetto!**

**Did I agree with the Fox News wealthy and elite that they are somehow the saviors of the world by providing minimum waged jobs and imposing higher debts? No.**

**My writings and my message and my research have all been consistent with providing PROOF POSITIVE that ONLY JESUS is the Savior of the world and if the world had obeyed him, including "CONSTITUTIONAL FRAMERS", MONEY and TAXATION would NEVER HAVE EXISTED.**

**Inventors would have had the incentive to invent if a system of MONEY had not existed to begin with and the inventors that Glenn Beck introduced in the first chapters of his book entitled: ARGUING WITH IDIOTS wouldn't have died broke!**

**To say that people wouldn't want to work if they didn't get paid, MIGHT be true, but in a Christian society, we never would have needed money to share earth's resources freely and enjoy creating and working without pricing and taxation.**

**Our dependency on borrowing, taking out a loan, means that we aren't surviving the financial numbers imposed upon us.**

**College and University education costs too much. If you don't have any money you can't go to school, UNLESS the Rockefeller Citibank**

**Student Loan Corporation HANDS YOU A LOAN so you can “PAY THEM BACK WHAT YOU OWE THEM WITH INTEREST.”**

**And everyone sold out.**

**EVERYONE.**

**And if you don't score those “STRAIGHT A'S” they will disqualify you from getting a ‘scholarship’ to pay for your entire education!**

**If you aren't SMART or HEALTHY or ELITE, you can't have it!**

**You don't deserve FREEDOM unless you ‘work real hard’ for it!**

**What I find rather humorous about African American and Female slavery liberation is that Freemasons could only laugh and use the mirage of Freedom under their money system by saying, “You are NO LONGER SLAVES! You can now be FREE to participate in the SOCIETIES ‘WE BUILT’ and obtain your freedom only when you've proven yourself to be worthy to rise above the minimum wages imposed upon all of our hard working slaves who have accepted our ‘culture.’**

**It's really become a sick, sad, scary, stupid society.**

**From childhood, to now, my feelings of FREEDOM and about FREEDOM were always oppressed by this system of MONEY and TAXATION, putting a price on people and material things, always threatening people with various threats that hinder our freedoms.**

**To say that we have to be slaves for 30 years to have a mortgage with the Rockefeller banks cleared is evil, not good.**

**To say that we have to be slaves to go to College/University and never be able to break free of that debt is evil and not good.**

**To say that only the wealthy can save the world from poverty by creating minimum wage jobs for their servants is UN-BIBLICAL.**

**When the wealthy repeated the Michael Douglas phrase from the film Wall Street preaching with laughter, “GREED IS GOOD!” and Stossel jumping on the band wagon after playing his magical flute to deceive his disciples into following a golden brick road that doesn’t exist in God’s Kingdom, the words of God concerning GREED echoed louder:**

**Isa 57:17 I was enraged by his sinful **greed**; <sup>m</sup> I punished him, and hid <sup>n</sup> my face in anger, yet he kept on in his willful ways. <sup>o</sup>**

**Isa 57:18 I have seen his ways, but I will heal <sup>p</sup> him; I will guide <sup>q</sup> him and restore comfort <sup>r</sup> to him,**

**Isa 57:19 creating praise on the lips <sup>s</sup> of the mourners in Israel. Peace, peace, <sup>t</sup> to those far and near,” <sup>u</sup> says the LORD. “And I will heal them.”**

**Isa 57:20 But the wicked <sup>v</sup> are like the tossing sea, <sup>w</sup> which cannot rest, whose waves cast up mire <sup>x</sup> and mud.**

**Isa 57:21 “There is no peace,” <sup>y</sup> says my God, “for the wicked.” <sup>z</sup>**

**Eze 16:26 You engaged in prostitution <sup>a</sup> with the Egyptians, <sup>b</sup> your lustful neighbors, and provoked <sup>c</sup> me to anger with your increasing promiscuity. <sup>d</sup>**

**Eze 16:27 So I stretched out my hand <sup>e</sup> against you and reduced your territory; I gave you over <sup>f</sup> to the **greed** of your enemies, the daughters of the Philistines, <sup>g</sup> who were shocked by your lewd conduct.**

**Eze 16:28 You engaged in prostitution with the Assyrians <sup>h</sup> too, because you were insatiable; and even after that, you still were not satisfied. <sup>i</sup>**

**Eze 16:29 Then you increased your promiscuity to include Babylonia, <sup>32 j</sup> a land of merchants, but even with this you were not satisfied. <sup>k</sup>**

**Eze 16:30 “ ‘How weak-willed you are, declares the Sovereign LORD, when you do all these things, acting like a brazen prostitute! <sup>l</sup>**

**A prostitute SELLS THEIR FLESH FOR MONEY.**

**Under MONEY and TAXATION, everyone’s flesh is sold for money and that’s why I used such terms as “SLAVERY” and “PROSTITUTION” to describe all global financial systems. Don’t think I am picking on American capitalism.**

**I am picking on ALL MONEY SYSTEMS.**

**They are not in harmony with God's message of FREEDOM.**

**If GOD created Earth's resources FREE, why are we supporting the philosophy of holding them hostage to pricing, taxation, and greedy SELF interests that are not INTERESTED IN YOU as an individual to do anything but SUBMIT TO THEM versus Earth's Creator?**

**Mt 23:25 "Woe to you, teachers of the law and Pharisees, you hypocrites! You clean the outside of the cup and dish,<sup>m</sup> but inside they are full of greed and self-indulgence.<sup>n</sup>**

**Mt 23:26 Blind Pharisee! First clean the inside of the cup and dish, and then the outside also will be clean.**

**Mt 23:27 "Woe to you, teachers of the law and Pharisees, you hypocrites! You are like whitewashed tombs,<sup>o</sup> which look beautiful on the outside but on the inside are full of dead men's bones and everything unclean.**

**Mt 23:28 In the same way, on the outside you appear to people as righteous but on the inside you are full of hypocrisy and wickedness.**

**Mt 23:29 "Woe to you, teachers of the law and Pharisees, you hypocrites! You build tombs for the prophets<sup>p</sup> and decorate the graves of the righteous.**

**Mt 23:30 And you say, 'If we had lived in the days of our forefathers, we would not have taken part with them in shedding the blood of the prophets.'**

**Mt 23:31 So you testify against yourselves that you are the descendants of those who murdered the prophets.<sup>q</sup>**

**Mt 23:32 Fill up, then, the measure<sup>r</sup> of the sin of your forefathers!<sup>s</sup>**

**Mt 23:33 "You snakes! You brood of vipers!<sup>t</sup> How will you escape being condemned to hell?<sup>u</sup>**

**Mk 7:14** Again Jesus called the crowd to him and said, **“Listen to me, everyone, and understand this.**

**Mk 7:15** **Nothing outside a man can make him ‘unclean’ by going into him. Rather, it is what comes out of a man that makes him ‘unclean.’<sup>24</sup> ”**

**Mk 7:17** **After he had left the crowd and entered the house, his disciples asked him<sup>s</sup> about this parable.**

**Mk 7:18** **“Are you so dull?” he asked. “Don’t you see that nothing that enters a man from the outside can make him ‘unclean’?**

**Mk 7:19** **For it doesn’t go into his heart but into his stomach, and then out of his body.”** (In saying this, Jesus declared all foods<sup>t</sup> “clean.”)<sup>u</sup>

**Mk 7:20** **He went on: “What comes out of a man is what makes him ‘unclean.’**

**Mk 7:21** **For from within, out of men’s hearts, come evil thoughts, sexual immorality, theft, murder, adultery,**

**Mk 7:22** **greed,<sup>v</sup> malice, deceit, lewdness, envy, slander, arrogance and folly.**

**Mk 7:23** **All these evils come from inside and make a man ‘unclean.’ ”**

**Lk 12:15** **Then he said to them, “Watch out! Be on your guard against all kinds of greed; a man’s life does not consist in the abundance of his possessions.”<sup>k</sup>**

**Lk 12:16** **And he told them this parable: “The ground of a certain rich man produced a good crop.**

**Lk 12:17** **He thought to himself, ‘What shall I do? I have no place to store my crops.’**

**Lk 12:18** **“Then he said, ‘This is what I’ll do. I will tear down my barns and build bigger ones, and there I will store all my grain and my goods.**

**Lk 12:19** **And I’ll say to myself, “You have plenty of good things laid up for many years. Take life easy; eat, drink and be merry.” ’**

**Lk 12:20** **“But God said to him, ‘You fool!’<sup>i</sup> This very night your life will be demanded from you.<sup>m</sup> Then who will get what you have prepared for yourself?’<sup>n</sup>**

**Lk 12:21** **“This is how it will be with anyone who stores up things for himself but is not rich toward God.”<sup>o</sup>**

**Ro 1:28** Furthermore, since they did not think it worthwhile to retain the knowledge of God, he gave them over<sup>f</sup> to a depraved mind, to do what ought not to be done.

**Ro 1:29** They have become filled with every kind of wickedness, evil, **greed** and depravity. They are full of envy, murder, strife, deceit and malice. They are gossips,<sup>g</sup>

**Ro 1:30** slanderers, God-haters, insolent, arrogant and boastful; they invent ways of doing evil; they disobey their parents;<sup>h</sup>

**Ro 1:31** they are senseless, faithless, heartless,<sup>i</sup> ruthless.

**Ro 1:32** Although they know God's righteous decree that those who do such things deserve death,<sup>j</sup> they not only continue to do these very things but also approve<sup>k</sup> of those who practice them.

**1Th 2:5** You know we never used flattery, nor did we put on a mask to cover up **greed**<sup>n</sup> —God is our witness.<sup>o</sup>

**1Th 2:6** We were not looking for praise from men,<sup>p</sup> not from you or anyone else.

**2Pe 2:3** In their **greed**<sup>x</sup> these teachers will exploit you<sup>y</sup> with stories they have made up. Their condemnation has long been hanging over them, and their destruction has not been sleeping.

**2Pe 2:14** With eyes full of adultery, they never stop sinning; they seduce<sup>s</sup> the unstable;<sup>t</sup> they are experts in **greed**<sup>u</sup> —an accursed brood!<sup>v</sup>

**2Pe 2:15** They have left the straight way and wandered off to follow the way of Balaam<sup>w</sup> son of Beor, who loved the wages of wickedness.

**2Pe 2:16** But he was rebuked for his wrongdoing by a donkey—a beast without speech—who spoke with a man's voice and restrained the prophet's madness.<sup>x</sup>

**2Pe 2:17** These men are springs without water<sup>y</sup> and mists driven by a storm. Blackest darkness is reserved for them.<sup>z</sup>

**2Pe 2:18** For they mouth empty, boastful words<sup>a</sup> and, by appealing to the lustful desires of sinful human nature, they entice people who are just escaping<sup>b</sup> from those who live in error.

**2Pe 2:19 They promise them freedom, while they themselves are slaves of depravity—for a man is a slave to whatever has mastered him. <sup>c</sup>**

**2Pe 2:20 If they have escaped the corruption of the world by knowing <sup>d</sup> our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ <sup>e</sup> and are again entangled in it and overcome, they are worse off at the end than they were at the beginning. <sup>f</sup>**

**2Pe 2:21 It would have been better for them not to have known the way of righteousness, than to have known it and then to turn their backs on the sacred command that was passed on to them. <sup>g</sup>**

**2Pe 2:22 Of them the proverbs are true: “A dog returns to its vomit,” <sup>7 h</sup> and, “A sow that is washed goes back to her wallowing in the mud.”**

**These words are all applicable to the politics of our time.**

**We all share SLAVERY in common, but also a sense of frustration in wanting to be free and THEY won't let you be happy unless you earn lots of money and obtain your freedom enough to be able to walk into every store, dependent on minimum waged workers to hand you over-prices material resources, taxed and priced at the expense of God's Creation.**

**It is not just the rich who are stealing money from the poor or the poor stealing money from the rich:**

**Both RICH and POOR are stealing from God's Creation and not celebrating and sharing that FREEDOM as GOD ORIGINALLY CREATED FREEDOM.**

**People LOVE their slavery because they have fallen into sin.**

**Mt 4:8 Again, the devil took him to a very high mountain and showed him all the kingdoms of the world and their splendor.**

**Mt 4:9 “All this I will give you,” he said, “if you will bow down and worship me.”**

**Mt 4:10 Jesus said to him, “Away from me, Satan! <sup>f</sup> For it is written: ‘Worship the Lord your God, and serve him only.’ <sup>17 g</sup>”**

**Like Eve, the idea of BECOMING like “GOD” and sitting as ‘god’ over the universe seems appealing to everyone.**

**You cannot buy or sell unless you have accepted the names and marks of money and only when you “WORK REAL HARD” to achieve those WEALTHY FINANCIAL NUMBERS can you ever be “FREE” or inherit the ‘wealth of constitutional obedience to succeeding in requisition and revenue collections.’**

**Both conservatives and liberals have a good side and an evil side when it comes to MONEY and TAXATION, but no matter which SPIN on words and ideas both sides drum up to win the throne of the presidency for the causes of money and taxation, which are oppressive to human freedom – in the end, Revelation 13 will be allowed to rule for a short time before the Second Coming of Earth’s owner.**

**Since we belong to a KINGDOM THAT IS FREE, we are slaves of Jesus Christ, who has promised us FREEDOM and ETERNAL LIFE.**

**If we are miserable on earth, it is because we haven’t given up EVERYTHING for Him yet.**

**As of the completion of this chapter, I have given up all of my jobs, given up my house, any claims to the world’s fame, fortune, and glory, to retain the purity of my own consistent message, which the HOLY SPIRIT put into my heart, soul and mind – which is HEAVENLY FREEDOM.**

**While I work and slave just like everybody else, forced to accept a financial system I don’t believe in for ‘survival purposes’ and continuing to help the poor by playing under the good rules of this dysfunctional system, my SOUL and my MIND are FREE, even though my body and earth’s resources are not.**



**I can talk like this boldly, because I am a single, ordinary man who does not want to bring any children into a world of slavery and sin like this one.**

**But men with wives and children and women with husbands and children and children with disabled parents and parents with disabled children, cannot talk of such freedom as they have all become dependent upon and enslaved by MONEY and TAXATION, DEBT AND BORROWING, and doing their best to turn this lie into personal truths that tend to always bring people a sense of displeasure, emptiness and the opposite of happiness.**

**We are all pursuing our RIGHTS to LIFE, LIBERTY and the PURSUIT of HAPPINESS, even though we are always threatened with death, slavery, and misery, which is what MONEY and TAXATION inspires for those held hostage to it.**

**The wealthy cannot accept such terms.**

**The poor are all too eager to embrace it.**

**When a wealthy person enters a fast food restaurant and throw pennies to minimum waged workers, they are so proud of themselves and feel just so happy and free!**

**When a homeless person who has no money walks into a fast food restaurant and witnesses the exchange between the slave minimum waged worker and the wealthy buyer of a food resource held hostage to pricing and taxation, the homeless person wishes that either side would be kind and generous enough to help out with some food at no cost or obligation.**

**The person without money sees SLAVERY on both sides of the counter and wants nothing to do with either side of the counter because they just want to be free to enjoy earth's resources without being**

**categorized as 'rich' or 'poor' or even 'working class,' and not have anything or anyone priced or taxed.**

**What will the aftermath of Election 2012 bring?**

**More slavery.**

**Not even Rick Warren's 'charitable' millions or the Catholic priest's golden thrones can replace: THE TRUTH.**

**Which is why Mister 666 of Revelation 13 must reign for a little while before Earth's owner returns to take His FREE people the REAL HOME prepared for them since the Creation of the FREE WORLD – a REAL KINGDOM WITH REAL FREEDOM with a Holy King who LOVES us, without cost and without obligation!**

**In order for "HEAVEN ON EARTH" to exist, EARTH'S RESOURCES would have to be returned to a total "Christian" society willing to share, to give, to love, to help without cost or obligation.**

**Naturally, since the world is greedy, sinful, selfish, and immoral, "HEAVEN IS NOT A PLACE ON EARTH!"**

**LOVE is not really love on earth.**

**So if you FEEL the same way I do about MONEY and TAXATION on earth. Have hope that such methods will no longer exist in God's Kingdom. MONEY and TAXATION methods are from Satan and not from God and will continue through the last days until God fulfills His promise to destroy the created world:**

**Heb 12:26 At that time his voice shook the earth,<sup>e</sup> but now he has promised, "Once more I will shake not only the earth but also the heavens."<sup>57 f</sup>**

**Heb 12:27 The words "once more" indicate the removing of what can be shaken<sup>g</sup> —that is, created things—so that what **cannot be shaken** may remain.**

Heb 12:28 **Therefore, since we are receiving a kingdom that cannot be shaken,<sup>h</sup> let us be thankful, and so worship God acceptably with reverence and awe,<sup>i</sup>**

Heb 12:29 **for our “God is a consuming fire.”<sup>58 j</sup>**

2Pe 3:7 **By the same word the present heavens and earth are reserved for fire,<sup>u</sup> being kept for the day of judgment<sup>v</sup> and destruction of ungodly men.**

2Pe 3:8 **But do not forget this one thing, dear friends: With the Lord a day is like a thousand years, and a thousand years are like a day.<sup>w</sup>**

2Pe 3:9 **The Lord is not slow in keeping his promise,<sup>x</sup> as some understand slowness. He is patient<sup>y</sup> with you, not wanting anyone to perish, but everyone to come to repentance.<sup>z</sup>**

2Pe 3:10 **But the day of the Lord will come like a thief.<sup>a</sup> The heavens will disappear with a roar;<sup>b</sup> the elements will be destroyed by fire,<sup>c</sup> and the earth and everything in it will be laid bare.<sup>8 d</sup>**

2Pe 3:11 **Since everything will be destroyed in this way,<sup>e</sup> what kind of people ought you to be? You ought to live holy and godly lives**

2Pe 3:12 **as you look forward<sup>e</sup> to the day of God and speed its coming.<sup>9 f</sup> That day will bring about the destruction of the heavens by fire, and the elements will melt in the heat.<sup>9</sup>**

2Pe 3:13 **But in keeping with his promise we are looking forward to a new heaven and a new earth,<sup>h</sup> the home of righteousness.**

2Pe 3:14 **So then, dear friends, since you are looking forward to this, make every effort to be found spotless, blameless<sup>i</sup> and at peace with him.**

## **CHAPTER 9**

### **YOU ARE FACING THE BEAST AND GOING THROUGH THE TRIBULATION WHETHER YOU BELIEVE IT OR NOT**

**Before we go to Heaven, we have some SERIOUS trials in the last days to endure. As noted earlier, there are clear indications that many last days BELIEVERS who do not die will have to go through the tribulation. Forget about those fiction writers who have followed every body else's wrong minded fantasies about two raptures and just stick with what the Bible says about THE SECOND COMING RAPTURE.**

**Until Jesus PHYSICALLY RETURNS and EVERYONE SEES HIM COMING, we will watch people vanish through death. This is THE REALITY you must face and ignore the false teachings that you will 'never have to go through the tribulation because God would never allow you to suffer wrath.'**

**In this chapter, I will do a short REVELATION 13 WORD MATCH as I just finished my book entitled:**

**REVELATION'S HIDDEN MYSTERIES OF THE ANCIENT OF DAYS THE SCROLL, AND THE LAMB The Reasons Why The Four Living Creatures Must Release The Four Horsesman And Why The 7 Thunders, The 7 Trumpets & 7 Bowls Of Destruction Must Destroy Those Destroying Earth**

**What are you FACING TODAY in the TOTALITARIAN regimes of the devil throughout the earth, who has empowered world leaders against HEAVEN'S FREEDOM?**

## **REVELATION 13 THE BEAST**

### **The Beast out of the Sea**

**And I saw a beast coming out of the sea.<sup>h</sup> He had ten horns and seven heads,<sup>i</sup> with ten crowns on his horns, and on each head a blasphemous name.<sup>j</sup>**

**Rev 13:2 The beast I saw resembled a leopard,<sup>k</sup> but had feet like those of a bear<sup>l</sup> and a mouth like that of a lion.<sup>m</sup> The dragon gave the beast his power and his throne and great authority.<sup>n</sup>**

**Rev 13:3 One of the heads of the beast seemed to have had a fatal wound, but the fatal wound had been healed.<sup>o</sup> The whole world was astonished<sup>p</sup> and followed the beast.**

**Rev 13:4 Men worshiped the dragon because he had given authority to the beast, and they also worshiped the beast and asked, “Who is like<sup>q</sup> the beast? Who can make war against him?”**

**Rev 13:5 The beast was given a mouth to utter proud words and blasphemies<sup>r</sup> and to exercise his authority for forty-two months.<sup>s</sup>**

**Rev 13:6 He opened his mouth to blaspheme God, and to slander his name and his dwelling place and those who live in heaven.<sup>t</sup>**

**Rev 13:7 He was given power to make war<sup>u</sup> against the saints and to conquer them. And he was given authority over every tribe, people, language and nation.<sup>v</sup>**

**Rev 13:8 All inhabitants of the earth<sup>w</sup> will worship the beast—all whose names have not been written in the book of life<sup>x</sup> belonging to the Lamb<sup>y</sup> that was slain from the creation of the world.<sup>17 z</sup>**

**Rev 13:9 He who has an ear, let him hear.<sup>a</sup>**

**Rev 13:10 If anyone is to go into captivity, into captivity he will go. If anyone is to be killed<sup>18</sup> with the sword, with the sword he will be killed.<sup>b</sup>**

**This calls for patient endurance and faithfulness<sup>c</sup> on the part of the saints.<sup>d</sup>**

## **The Beast out of the Earth**

- Rev 13:11** Then I saw another beast, coming out of the earth.<sup>e</sup> He had two horns like a lamb, but he spoke like a dragon.<sup>f</sup>
- Rev 13:12** He exercised all the authority<sup>g</sup> of the first beast on his behalf,<sup>h</sup> and made the earth and its inhabitants worship the first beast,<sup>i</sup> whose fatal wound had been healed.<sup>j</sup>
- Rev 13:13** And he performed great and miraculous signs,<sup>k</sup> even causing fire to come down from heaven<sup>l</sup> to earth in full view of men.
- Rev 13:14** Because of the signs<sup>m</sup> he was given power to do on behalf of the first beast, he deceived<sup>n</sup> the inhabitants of the earth.<sup>o</sup> He ordered them to set up an image in honor of the beast who was wounded by the sword and yet lived.<sup>p</sup>
- Rev 13:15** He was given power to give breath to the image of the first beast, so that it could speak and cause all who refused to worship<sup>q</sup> the image to be killed.<sup>r</sup>
- Rev 13:16** He also forced everyone, small and great,<sup>s</sup> rich and poor, free and slave, to receive a mark on his right hand or on his forehead,<sup>t</sup>
- Rev 13:17** so that no one could buy or sell unless he had the mark,<sup>u</sup> which is the name of the beast or the number of his name.<sup>v</sup>
- Rev 13:18** This calls for wisdom.<sup>w</sup> If anyone has insight, let him calculate the number of the beast, for it is man's number.<sup>x</sup> His number is 666.

## BEAST

**And I saw a beast coming out of the sea. <sup>h</sup>**

### BEAST #1

**Ps 68:30 Rebuke the **beast** <sup>f</sup> among the reeds, <sup>g</sup> the herd of bulls <sup>h</sup> among the calves of the nations. Humbled, may it bring bars of silver. Scatter the nations <sup>i</sup> who delight in war. <sup>j</sup>**

**Ps 68:31 Envoys will come from Egypt; <sup>k</sup> Cush <sup>130 l</sup> will submit herself to God.**

### BEAST #2

**Ps 73:21 When my heart was grieved and my spirit embittered,**

**Ps 73:22 I was senseless <sup>e</sup> and ignorant; I was a brute **beast** <sup>f</sup> before you.**

### BEAST #3

**Isa 35:8 And a highway <sup>k</sup> will be there; it will be called the Way of Holiness. <sup>l</sup> The unclean <sup>m</sup> will not journey on it; it will be for those who walk in that Way; wicked fools will not go about on it. <sup>83</sup>**

**Isa 35:9 No lion <sup>n</sup> will be there, nor will any ferocious **beast** <sup>o</sup> get up on it; they will not be found there.**

### BEAST #4

**Jer 7:20 “ ‘Therefore this is what the Sovereign <sup>k</sup> LORD says: My anger <sup>l</sup> and my wrath will be poured <sup>m</sup> out on this place, on man and **beast**, on the trees of the field and on the fruit of the ground, and it will burn and not be quenched. <sup>n</sup>**

## **BEAST #5**

**Da 7:2 Daniel said: “In my vision at night I looked, and there before me were the four winds of heaven<sup>r</sup> churning up the great sea.**

**Da 7:3 Four great beasts,<sup>s</sup> each different from the others, came up out of the sea.**

**Da 7:4 “The first was like a lion,<sup>t</sup> and it had the wings of an eagle.<sup>u</sup> I watched until its wings were torn off and it was lifted from the ground so that it stood on two feet like a man, and the heart of a man was given to it.**

**Da 7:5 “And there before me was a second **beast**, which looked like a bear. It was raised up on one of its sides, and it had **three ribs in its mouth between its teeth**. It was told, ‘Get up and eat your fill of flesh!’<sup>v</sup>**

## **THREE RIBS IN THE BEAR’S MOUTH**

**Ge 2:22 Then the LORD God made a woman from **the rib<sup>12 x</sup>** he had taken out of the man, and he brought her to the man.**

**Ge 2:23 The man said, “This is now bone of my bones and flesh of my flesh;<sup>y</sup> she shall be called<sup>z</sup> ‘woman,<sup>13</sup>’ for she was taken out of man.<sup>a</sup>**

**The FIRST and only appearance of the word “RIB” occurs here in Genesis 2:22. Eve was the ‘flesh of Adam’s flesh’, the first woman to be taken out of his own rib. The BEAR has THREE RIBS in its mouth, indicating there may be THREE WOMEN/STATES who are swallowed up by the bear. We COULD say that the BEAR PERSIA, included in Revelation 13 –**

**Rev 13:2 The beast I saw resembled a leopard,<sup>k</sup> but **had feet like those of a bear<sup>l</sup>** and a mouth like that of a lion.<sup>m</sup>**

**The EZEKIEL 38 list includes: PERSIA/IRAN as the first nation among Gog’s troops.**



**We know that PERSIA, took over BABYLON/ISRAEL/EGYPT, who COULD represent the three ribs the bear swallowed up. And the BEAR of Revelation 13 includes the FOOTSTEPS of the historical Persia in its modern aspirations to eat the flesh of the woman Israel and burn her with fire. There IS a possibility that these same THREE RIBS in the mouth of Iran could include eating up BABYLON/IRAQ 2. Egypt 3. Israeli/Syrian region. With 21,000 Syrian citizens murdered by the Syrian government by August 2012, it is safe to conclude that the ISLAMIC BEAST, having been given power and authority by their various Islamic worshipers have eaten up too much flesh throughout the Middle East and the world over.**

**Yes, you won't READ THAT ANYWHERE because prophecy scholars just CAPITALIZED on fictional works throughout the 20<sup>th</sup> and 21<sup>st</sup> century and no FREEMASON, CATHOLIC or "Christian" university will ever teach you this. Only renegades like me who see CLEARLY how the nations of Islam, the false god Allah, the false prophet Muhammad, and evil horns such as Obama nation of desolation and the Iranian Ayatollah rule fits PERFECTLY into prophetic events corresponding to last days events.**

**Why would the bear be told to, "GET UP and eat your fill of flesh."**

**The bear was lying down and told to get up and eat the flesh of three women/states.**

**EATING FLESH was also a word matched phrase, corresponding to the consequences of Israel's sins of disobedience.**

## **EAT THE FLESH #1**

**Lev 26:29.**

**Lev 26:29** You will **eat<sup>y</sup> the flesh** of your sons and the flesh of your daughters. <sup>z</sup>

**Lev 26:30** I will destroy your high places, <sup>a</sup> cut down your incense altars <sup>b</sup> and pile your dead bodies on the lifeless forms of your idols, <sup>c</sup> and I will abhor <sup>d</sup> you.

**Lev 26:31** I will turn your cities into ruins <sup>e</sup> and lay waste <sup>f</sup> your sanctuaries, <sup>g</sup> and I will take no delight in the pleasing aroma of your offerings. <sup>h</sup>

**Lev 26:32** I will lay waste the land, <sup>i</sup> so that your enemies who live there will be appalled. <sup>j</sup>

## **EAT THE FLESH #2**

**Ps 50:13** Do I **eat the flesh** of bulls or drink the blood of goats?

**Ps 50:14** Sacrifice thank offerings <sup>k</sup> to God, fulfill your vows <sup>l</sup> to the Most High, <sup>m</sup>

**Ps 50:15** and call <sup>n</sup> upon me in the day of trouble; <sup>o</sup> I will deliver <sup>p</sup> you, and you will honor <sup>q</sup> me.”

## **EAT THE FLESH #3**

**Isa 65:2** All day long I have held out my hands to an obstinate people, <sup>r</sup> who walk in ways not good, pursuing their own imaginations <sup>s</sup> —

**Isa 65:3** a people who continually provoke me to my very face, <sup>t</sup> offering sacrifices in gardens <sup>u</sup> and burning incense <sup>v</sup> on altars of brick;

**Isa 65:4** who sit among the graves <sup>w</sup> and spend their nights keeping secret vigil; who **eat the flesh** of pigs, <sup>x</sup> and whose pots hold broth of unclean meat;

**Isa 65:5** who say, ‘Keep away; don’t come near me, for I am too sacred <sup>y</sup> for you!’ Such people are smoke <sup>z</sup> in my nostrils, a fire that keeps burning all day.

#### **EAT THE FLESH #4**

Isa 66:17 **“Those who consecrate and purify themselves to go into the gardens,<sup>m</sup> following the one in the midst of<sup>135</sup> those who **eat the flesh** of pigs<sup>n</sup> and rats<sup>o</sup> and other abominable things—they will meet their end<sup>p</sup> together,” declares the LORD**

#### **EAT THE FLESH #5**

Jer 19:9 **I will make them **eat<sup>i</sup> the flesh** of their sons and daughters, and they will eat one another’s flesh during the stress of the siege imposed on them by the enemies<sup>m</sup> who seek their lives.’**

#### **EAT THE FLESH #6**

Eze 39:18 **You will **eat the flesh** of mighty men and drink the blood of the princes of the earth as if they were rams and lambs, goats and bulls—all of them fattened animals from Bashan.<sup>y</sup>**

#### **EAT THE FLESH #7**

Jn 6:53 **Jesus said to them, “I tell you the truth, unless you **eat the flesh<sup>i</sup> of the Son of Man<sup>j</sup> and drink his blood,<sup>k</sup> you have no life in you.****

Jn 6:54 **Whoever eats my flesh and drinks my blood has eternal life, and I will raise him up at the last day.<sup>l</sup>**

#### **EAT THE FLESH #8**

Rev 19:17 **And I saw an angel standing in the sun, who cried in a loud voice to all the birds<sup>u</sup> flying in midair,<sup>v</sup> “Come,<sup>w</sup> gather together for the great supper of God,<sup>x</sup>**

Rev 19:18 **so that you may **eat the flesh** of kings, generals, and mighty men, of horses and their riders, and the flesh of all people,<sup>y</sup> free and slave,<sup>z</sup> small and great.”<sup>a</sup>**

**THE BEAR gets up and eats its fill of flesh LITERALLY. The Revelation 19 context, is of course, metaphorical at the same time it is physical.**

**2Th 2:7 For the secret power of lawlessness is already at work; but the one who now holds it back<sup>r</sup> will continue to do so till he is taken out of the way.**

**2Th 2:8 And then the lawless one will be revealed,<sup>s</sup> whom the Lord Jesus will overthrow with the breath of his mouth<sup>t</sup> and destroy by the splendor of his coming. <sup>u</sup>**

**Rev 19:19 Then I saw the beast<sup>b</sup> and the kings of the earth<sup>c</sup> and their armies gathered together to make war against the rider on the horse<sup>d</sup> and his army.**

**Rev 19:20 But the beast was captured, and with him the false prophet<sup>e</sup> who had performed the miraculous signs<sup>f</sup> on his behalf.<sup>g</sup>**

**Da 7:6 “After that, I looked, and there before me was another beast, one that looked like a leopard.<sup>w</sup> And on its back it had four wings like those of a bird. This beast had four heads, and it was given authority to rule.**

**Da 7:7 “After that, in my vision<sup>x</sup> at night I looked, and there before me was a fourth beast—terrifying and frightening and very powerful. It had large iron<sup>y</sup> teeth; it crushed and devoured its victims and trampled<sup>z</sup> underfoot whatever was left.<sup>a</sup> It was different from all the former beasts, and it had ten horns.<sup>b</sup>**

**Da 7:8 “While I was thinking about the horns, there before me was another horn, a little<sup>c</sup> one, which came up among them; and three of the first horns were uprooted before it. This horn had eyes like the eyes of a man<sup>d</sup> and a mouth that spoke boastfully.<sup>e</sup>**

**Da 7:9 “As I looked, “thrones were set in place, and the Ancient of Days<sup>f</sup> took his seat.<sup>g</sup> His clothing was as white as snow;<sup>h</sup> the hair of his head was white like wool.<sup>i</sup> His throne was flaming with fire, and its wheels<sup>j</sup> were all ablaze.**

**Da 7:10 A river of fire<sup>k</sup> was flowing, coming out from before him.<sup>i</sup>**

**Thousands upon thousands attended him; ten thousand times ten thousand stood before him. The court was seated, and the books<sup>m</sup> were opened.**

**Da 7:11 “Then I continued to watch because of the boastful words the horn was speaking.<sup>n</sup> I kept looking until the **beast** was slain and its body destroyed and thrown into the blazing fire.<sup>o</sup>**

**Da 7:12 (The other beasts had been stripped of their authority, but were allowed to live for a period of time.)**

**Da 7:13 “In my vision at night I looked, and there before me was one like a son of man,<sup>p</sup> coming<sup>q</sup> with the clouds of heaven.<sup>r</sup> He approached the Ancient of Days and was led into his presence.**

**Da 7:14 He was given authority,<sup>s</sup> glory and sovereign power; all peoples, nations and men of every language worshiped him.<sup>t</sup> His dominion is an everlasting dominion that will not pass away, and his kingdom<sup>u</sup> is one that will never be destroyed.<sup>v</sup>**

## **BEAST #6**

**Da 7:19 “Then I wanted to know the true meaning of the fourth **beast**, which was different from all the others and most terrifying, with its iron teeth and bronze claws—the **beast** that crushed and devoured its victims and trampled underfoot whatever was left.**

**Da 7:20 I also wanted to know about the ten horns<sup>b</sup> on its head and about the other horn that came up, before which three of them fell—the horn that looked more imposing than the others and that had eyes and a mouth that spoke boastfully.<sup>c</sup>**

**Da 7:21 As I watched, this horn was waging war against the saints and defeating them,<sup>d</sup>**

**Da 7:22 until the Ancient of Days came and pronounced judgment in favor of the saints of the Most High, and the time came when they possessed the kingdom.<sup>e</sup>**

**Da 7:23** “He gave me this explanation: ‘The fourth **beast** is a fourth kingdom that will appear on earth. It will be different from all the other kingdoms and will devour the whole earth, trampling it down and crushing it.’<sup>f</sup>

**Da 7:24** The ten horns<sup>g</sup> are ten kings who will come from this kingdom. After them another king will arise, different from the earlier ones; he will subdue three kings.

**Da 7:25** He will speak against the Most High<sup>h</sup> and oppress his saints<sup>i</sup> and try to change the set times<sup>j</sup> and the laws. The saints will be handed over to him for a time, times and half a time.<sup>22 k</sup>

**Da 7:26** “‘But the court will sit, and his power will be taken away and completely destroyed<sup>l</sup> forever.

**Da 7:27** Then the sovereignty, power and greatness of the kingdoms<sup>m</sup> under the whole heaven will be handed over to the saints,<sup>n</sup> the people of the Most High.<sup>o</sup> His kingdom will be an everlasting<sup>p</sup> kingdom, and all rulers will worship<sup>q</sup> and obey him.’

## **BEAST #7**

**Rev 11:7** Now when they have finished their testimony, the **beast**<sup>h</sup> that comes up from the Abyss<sup>i</sup> will attack them,<sup>j</sup> and overpower and kill them.

## **BEAST #8**

**Rev 14:9** A third angel followed them and said in a loud voice: “If anyone worships the **beast**<sup>z</sup> and his image<sup>a</sup> and receives his mark on the forehead<sup>b</sup> or on the hand,

**Rev 14:10** he, too, will drink of the wine of God’s fury,<sup>c</sup> which has been poured full strength into the cup of his wrath.<sup>d</sup> He will be tormented with burning sulfur<sup>e</sup> in the presence of the holy angels and of the Lamb.

**Rev 14:11** And the smoke of their torment rises for ever and ever.<sup>f</sup> There is no rest day or night<sup>g</sup> for those who worship the **beast** and his image,<sup>h</sup> or for anyone who receives the mark of his name.”<sup>i</sup>

Rev 14:12 **This calls for patient endurance<sup>j</sup> on the part of the saints<sup>k</sup> who obey God's commandments<sup>l</sup> and remain faithful to Jesus.**

Rev 14:13 **Then I heard a voice from heaven say, "Write: Blessed are the dead who die in the Lord<sup>m</sup> from now on." "Yes," says the Spirit,<sup>n</sup> "they will rest from their labor, for their deeds will follow them."**

## **BEAST #9**

Rev 15:2 **And I saw what looked like a sea of glass<sup>e</sup> mixed with fire and, standing beside the sea, those who had been victorious<sup>f</sup> over the **beast**<sup>g</sup> and his image<sup>h</sup> and over the number of his name.<sup>i</sup> They held harps<sup>j</sup> given them by God.**

## **BEAST #10**

Rev 16:2 **The first angel went and poured out his bowl on the land,<sup>j</sup> and ugly and painful sores<sup>k</sup> broke out on the people who had the mark of the **beast** and worshiped his image.<sup>l</sup>**

## **BEAST #11**

Rev 16:10 **The fifth angel poured out his bowl on **the throne of the beast**,<sup>e</sup> and his kingdom was plunged into darkness.<sup>f</sup> Men gnawed their tongues in agony**

Rev 16:11 **and cursed<sup>g</sup> the God of heaven<sup>h</sup> because of their pains and their sores,<sup>i</sup> but they refused to repent of what they had done.<sup>j</sup>**

## **BEAST #12**

Rev 16:13 **Then I saw three evil<sup>21</sup> spirits<sup>n</sup> that looked like frogs;<sup>o</sup> they came out of the mouth of the dragon,<sup>p</sup> out of the mouth of the **beast**<sup>q</sup> and out of the mouth of the false prophet.<sup>r</sup>**

Rev 16:14 **They are spirits of demons<sup>s</sup> performing miraculous signs,<sup>t</sup> and they go out to the kings of the whole world,<sup>u</sup> to gather them for the battle<sup>v</sup> on the great day<sup>w</sup> of God Almighty.**

Rev 16:15 **“Behold, I come like a thief! <sup>x</sup> Blessed is he who stays awake <sup>y</sup> and keeps his clothes with him, so that he may not go naked and be shamefully exposed.”<sup>z</sup>**

## **BEAST #13**

Rev 17:3 **Then the angel carried me away in the Spirit <sup>y</sup> into a desert.<sup>z</sup> There I saw a woman sitting on a scarlet <sup>a</sup> **beast** that was covered with blasphemous names <sup>b</sup> and had seven heads and ten horns.<sup>c</sup>**

## **BEAST #14**

Rev 17:7 **Then the angel said to me: “Why are you astonished? I will explain to you the mystery <sup>k</sup> of the woman and of the **beast** she rides, which has the seven heads and ten horns.<sup>l</sup>**

Rev 17:8 **The **beast**, which you saw, once was, now is not, and will come up out of the Abyss <sup>m</sup> and go to his destruction.<sup>n</sup> The inhabitants of the earth <sup>o</sup> whose names have not been written in the book of life <sup>p</sup> from the creation of the world will be astonished <sup>q</sup> when they see the **beast**, because he once was, now is not, and yet will come.**

## **BEAST #15**

Rev 17:8 **The **beast**, which you saw, once was, now is not, and will come up out of the Abyss <sup>m</sup> and go to his destruction.<sup>n</sup> The inhabitants of the earth <sup>o</sup> whose names have not been written in the book of life <sup>p</sup> from the creation of the world will be astonished <sup>q</sup> when they see the **beast**, because he once was, now is not, and yet will come.**

Rev 17:9 **“This calls for a mind with wisdom.<sup>r</sup> The seven heads <sup>s</sup> are seven hills on which the woman sits.**

Rev 17:10 **They are also seven kings. Five have fallen, one is, the other has not yet come; but when he does come, he must remain for a little while.**



Rev 17:11 The **beast** who once was, and now is not, <sup>t</sup> is an eighth king. He belongs to the seven and is going to his destruction.

Rev 17:12 “The ten horns <sup>u</sup> you saw are ten kings who have not yet received a kingdom, but who for one hour <sup>v</sup> will receive authority as kings along with the **beast**.

Rev 17:13 They have one purpose and will give their power and authority to the **beast**. <sup>w</sup>

## BEAST #16

Rev 17:16 The **beast** and the ten horns <sup>d</sup> you saw will hate the prostitute. <sup>e</sup> They will bring her to ruin <sup>f</sup> and leave her naked; <sup>g</sup> they will eat her flesh <sup>h</sup> and burn her with fire. <sup>i</sup>

Rev 17:17 For God has put it into their hearts <sup>j</sup> to accomplish his purpose by agreeing to give the **beast** their power to rule, <sup>k</sup> until God's words are fulfilled. <sup>l</sup>

Rev 17:18 The woman you saw is the great city <sup>m</sup> that rules over the kings of the earth.”

## BEAST #17

Rev 19:19 Then I saw the **beast** <sup>b</sup> and the kings of the earth <sup>c</sup> and their armies gathered together to make war against the rider on the horse <sup>d</sup> and his army.

Rev 19:20 But the **beast** was captured, and with him the false prophet <sup>e</sup> who had performed the miraculous signs <sup>f</sup> on his behalf. <sup>g</sup> With these signs he had deluded <sup>h</sup> those who had received the mark of the **beast** <sup>i</sup> and worshiped his image. <sup>j</sup> The two of them were thrown alive into the fiery lake <sup>k</sup> of burning sulfur. <sup>l</sup>

## BEAST #18

Rev 20:4 I saw thrones <sup>x</sup> on which were seated those who had been given authority to judge. <sup>y</sup> And I saw the souls of those who had been beheaded <sup>z</sup> because of their testimony for Jesus <sup>a</sup> and because of the word of God. <sup>b</sup> They had not worshiped the **beast** <sup>c</sup> or his image and had not received his mark on their foreheads or their hands. <sup>d</sup> They came to life and reigned <sup>e</sup> with Christ a thousand years.

## **BEAST #19**

Rev 20:10 **And the devil, who deceived them, <sup>t</sup> was thrown into the lake of burning sulfur, <sup>u</sup> where the **beast** <sup>v</sup> and the false prophet <sup>w</sup> had been thrown.**

## **LEOPARD #1**

Rev 13:2 **The beast I saw resembled a leopard, <sup>k</sup> but had feet like those of a bear <sup>l</sup> and a mouth like that of a lion. <sup>m</sup>**

Isa 11:6 **The wolf will live with the lamb, <sup>s</sup> the **leopard** will lie down with the goat, the calf and the lion and the yearling <sup>32</sup> together; and a little child will lead them.**

Isa 11:7 **The cow will feed with the bear, their young will lie down together, and the lion will eat straw like the ox. <sup>t</sup>**

Isa 11:8 **The infant <sup>u</sup> will play near the hole of the cobra, and the young child put his hand into the viper's <sup>v</sup> nest.**

Isa 11:9 **They will neither harm nor destroy <sup>w</sup> on all my holy mountain, <sup>x</sup> for the earth <sup>y</sup> will be full of the knowledge <sup>z</sup> of the LORD as the waters cover the sea.**

## **LEOPARD #2**

Jer 5:6 **Therefore a lion from the forest <sup>i</sup> will attack them, a wolf from the desert will ravage <sup>j</sup> them, a **leopard** <sup>k</sup> will lie in wait near their towns to tear to pieces any who venture out, for their rebellion is great and their backslidings many. <sup>l</sup>**

## **LEOPARD #3**

Jer 13:23 **Can the Ethiopian <sup>27</sup> change his skin or the **leopard** its spots? Neither can you do good who are accustomed to doing evil. <sup>j</sup>**

## **LEOPARD #4**

**Da 7:6.**

**Da 7:6 “After that, I looked, and there before me was another beast, one that looked like a leopard.<sup>w</sup> And on its back it had four wings like those of a bird. This beast had four heads, and it was given authority to rule.**

## **LEOPARD #5**

**Hos 13:7 So I will come upon them like a lion,<sup>h</sup> like a leopard I will lurk by the path.**

**Hos 13:8 Like a bear robbed of her cubs,<sup>i</sup> I will attack them and rip them open. Like a lion<sup>j</sup> I will devour them; a wild animal will tear them apart.<sup>k</sup>**

**Hos 13:9 “You are destroyed, O Israel, because you are against me,<sup>l</sup> against your helper.<sup>m</sup>**

## **LEOPARD #6**

**Rev 13:2 The beast I saw resembled a leopard,<sup>k</sup> but had feet like those of a bear<sup>l</sup> and a mouth like that of a lion.<sup>m</sup> The dragon gave the beast his power and his throne and great authority.<sup>n</sup>**

**As previously noted, the same animals of Daniel, appear in Revelation 13:**

**1. THE LION**

**2. THE BEAR**

**3. THE LEOPARD**

**Only in Revelation, they appear in reverse order and with DIMINISHED power. The beast “resembles” a leopard, has**

**“feet” like a bear, and a “mouth” LIKE a lion. It is possible that Revelation 13 was reminding us of Daniel’s prophecy of the LION, THE BEAR, and the LEOPARD which are consolidated under the beast of Revelation 13.**

**The LION of Daniel was considered BABYLON.**

**The BEAR of Daniel was considered PERSIA.**

**The leopard represented the GREECE/EGYPTIAN/SYRIAN rule.**

**The Revelation 13 beast would include IRAQ/IRAN/EGYPT/SYRIA/GREECE as part of his body.**

**For example, Obama was GIVEN AUTHORITY and GIVEN power but did not achieve it himself.**

**Whereas a KING often earned the kingdom through WAR and CONQUEST and ACHIEVED SOMETHING GREAT, the beast is GIVEN power by Satan, much like Barack Hussein Obama was GIVEN power in 2008. As a man of lawlessness, Obama tried to “CHANGE THE SET TIMES AND THE LAWS,” became strong, but not by his own power; Obama’s administration saw the subduing of three rulers: Egyptian president Hosni Mubarak dethroned under Obama regime; Libyan president Gaddafi dethroned by Obama regime; Osama bin Laden ordered killed by the Obama regime; and the Obama regime consisted of a collaboration with the Muslim Brotherhood. Obama made great boasts, even an act of blasphemy against Jesus. Obama broke every rule and law America had ever established and is a PERFECT analogy for just how**

**gullible and stupid the world had become and RIFE for the acceptance of Satan with blind allegiance to the Obama regime.**

**The OBAMA NATION OF DESOLATION arose during the world's GLOBAL ECONOMIC CRISIS with Satanic powers GIVING Obama power. If ANYONE was almost a perfect match to the anti-Christ description, it would have been Obama. The people who knew their God firmly resisted Obama as he started small but grew until he reached the heavens and cast down the host.**

**Other world rulers were also Satanically inspired: Syrian president Assad, who, by August 2012 murdered 21,000 Syrians; Iranian president who threatened Israel with extinction through nuclear ambitions; Russian president making a comeback for communism and creating proxy wars with the U.S. by empowering Israel's enemies; and many other world rulers empowered by the devil to exterminate their own citizens for.....what?**

**It is CLEAR the RETURN of Jesus Christ will COME SOON. So IT IS TIME to get ready for the BIG SHOWDOWN, as Revelation records it.**

**Hopefully, I will see you in HEAVEN.**

**DOES "OBAMA NATION OF DESOLATION" fit the profile?**

## **OBAMA MATCHES DANIEL 7:24**

**Da 7:24.**

**After them another king will arise, different from the earlier ones; he will subdue three kings.**

**Da 7:25 He will speak against the Most High <sup>h</sup> and oppress his saints <sup>i</sup> and try to change the set times <sup>j</sup> and the laws. The saints will be handed over to him for a time, times and half a time. <sup>22 k</sup>**

**Da 7:26 “But the court will sit, and his power will be taken away and completely destroyed <sup>l</sup> forever.**

**1. OBAMA IS DIFFERENT FROM ALL EARLIER WORLD RULERS**

**2. OBAMA’S “MUSLIM BROTHERHOOD” subdued three kings:**

**1. EGYPT – HOSNI MUBARAK**

**2. LIBYA – GADDAFI**

**3. SYRIA – HAFEZ ASSAD**

**Obama spoke against THE GOD OF ISRAEL beside Louis Farrakhan and Reverend Wright.**

**3. Obama has tried to “CHANGE” the set times and the laws.**

**4. ISRAEL along with America has been ‘handed’ over to the Obama regime.**

**5. THE COURT is interesting, because Obama was a lawyer and a Senator playing judge, jury, and executioner of the entire world, but THE COURT OF HEAVEN will decide if and when his power will be ‘taken away from him’.**

6. <sup>Eze 30:2</sup> “Son of man, prophesy and say: ‘This is what the Sovereign LORD says: “ ‘Wail ” and say, “Alas for that day!”
7. <sup>Eze 30:3</sup> For the day is near, ° the day of the LORD <sup>p</sup> is near—a day of clouds, a time of doom for the nations.
8. <sup>Eze 30:4</sup> A sword will come against Egypt, <sup>q</sup> and anguish will come upon Cush. <sup>74 r</sup> When the slain fall in Egypt, her wealth will be carried away and her foundations torn down. <sup>s</sup>
- 9.
10. <sup>Eze 30:5</sup> Cush and Put, <sup>t</sup> Lydia and all Arabia, <sup>u</sup> **Libya** <sup>75</sup> and the people <sup>v</sup> of the covenant land will fall by the sword along with Egypt. <sup>w</sup>

**DURING THE OBAMA REGIME all these countries fell.**

**OBAMA FITS THE PROFILE OF Da 11:41.**

<sup>Da 11:41</sup> He will also invade the Beautiful Land. <sup>9</sup> Many countries will fall, but Edom, <sup>h</sup> Moab <sup>i</sup> and the leaders of Ammon will be delivered from his hand.

<sup>Da 11:42</sup> He will extend his power over many countries; Egypt will not escape.

<sup>Da 11:43</sup> He will gain control of the treasures of gold and silver and all the riches of Egypt, <sup>j</sup> with the **Libyans** <sup>k</sup> and Nubians in submission.

<sup>Da 11:44</sup> But reports from the east and the north will alarm him, and he will set out in a great rage to destroy and annihilate many.

**With the fall of Gadaffi, THE LIBYANS and AFRICANS/NUBIANS are in unprecedented SUBMISSION to Allah/Muhammad/The Muslim Brotherhood/Obama.**

**Is Obama simply a political name for: ABOMINATION?**

## **DOES OBAMA FIT THE REVELATION 13 MARK OF THE BEAST IN HEALTH CARE?**

Rev 13:16 **He also forced everyone, small and great,<sup>s</sup> rich and poor, free and slave, to receive a mark on his right hand or on his forehead,<sup>t</sup>**

Rev 13:17 **so that no one could **buy or sell** unless he had the mark,<sup>u</sup> which is the name of the beast or the number of his name.<sup>v</sup>**

Rev 13:18 **This calls for wisdom.<sup>w</sup> If anyone has insight, let him calculate the number of the beast, for it is man's number.<sup>x</sup> His number is 666.**

**THE NEW HEALTH CARE MANDATE demands you accept “Obamacare” or die.**

**Obama has to attach his name and face to health care, to taxes, to new global peace plans, to the new money system, to the global “ROBIN HOOD” TAX, to ALL WORLD EVENTS and nobody is allowed to buy or sell without his name.**

**Although we are to conclude that nobody is allowed to buy or sell without MONEY, it appears that as POWER was ‘given’ to Obama and he didn’t earn it through royalty, this MAN OF LAWLESSNESS, once a lawyer, who uses THE LAW to give power to sin [1Co 15:56.**

**the **power of sin** is the law.<sup>n</sup>**

**Is OBAMA A ‘MAN OF LAWLESSNESS’ though he was once a lawyer and is trying to ‘CHANGE THE SET TIMES AND THE LAWS,’**

**2Th 2:3.**

2Th 2:3 **Don’t let anyone deceive you<sup>k</sup> in any way, for that day will not come until the rebellion<sup>l</sup> occurs and **the man of lawlessness<sup>3</sup>** is revealed,<sup>m</sup> the man doomed to destruction.**



**Obama advocated homosexuality in the military and advocated 'gay marriage,' attacked the Catholic Church 'saints' through a contraception mandate.**

**One could also have attributed these qualities to HITLER in World War II.**

**Whether or not OBAMA is the anti-Christ has been disputable.**

**We do know that JESUS CHRIST will destroy the final man of lawlessness by the splendor of His coming.**

**The expectations we have is that THE MONEY SYSTEMS of the world will become worsened by man's pride, greed, and lust for power and wealth and good nations, unfortunately deceived by money's illusions are all too weakened by heavy war and taxation.**

**Can we have ANY SENSE OF ENCOURAGEMENT while this world prophetically goes bye bye?**

## **Invitation to the Thirsty**

**Isa 55:1 "Come, all you who are thirsty, ° come to the waters; ° and you who have no money, come, buy ° and eat! Come, buy wine and milk ° without money and without cost. °"**

**Isa 55:2 Why spend money on what is not bread, and your labor on what does not satisfy? ° Listen, listen to me, and eat what is good, ° and your soul will delight in the richest ° of fare.**

**Isa 55:3 Give ear and come to me; hear ° me, that your soul may live. ° I will make an everlasting covenant ° with you, my faithful love ° promised to David. °**

**Isa 55:4 See, I have made him a witness ° to the peoples, a leader and commander ° of the peoples.**

**Isa 55:5 Surely you will summon nations<sup>d</sup> you know not, and nations that do not know you will hasten to you,<sup>e</sup> because of the LORD your God, the Holy One<sup>f</sup> of Israel, for he has endowed you with splendor.”<sup>g</sup>**

**Isa 55:6 Seek<sup>h</sup> the LORD while he may be found;<sup>i</sup> call<sup>j</sup> on him while he is near.**

**Isa 55:7 Let the wicked forsake<sup>k</sup> his way and the evil man his thoughts.<sup>l</sup> Let him turn<sup>m</sup> to the LORD, and he will have mercy<sup>n</sup> on him, and to our God, for he will freely pardon.<sup>o</sup>**

**Isa 55:8 “For my thoughts<sup>p</sup> are not your thoughts, neither are your ways my ways,”<sup>q</sup> declares the LORD.**

**Isa 55:9 “As the heavens are higher than the earth,<sup>r</sup> so are my ways higher than your ways and my thoughts than your thoughts.<sup>s</sup>**

**Isa 55:10 As the rain<sup>t</sup> and the snow come down from heaven, and do not return to it without watering the earth and making it bud and flourish,<sup>u</sup> so that it yields seed<sup>v</sup> for the sower and bread for the eater,<sup>w</sup>**

**Isa 55:11 so is my word<sup>x</sup> that goes out from my mouth: It will not return to me empty,<sup>y</sup> but will accomplish what I desire and achieve the purpose<sup>z</sup> for which I sent it.**

**Isa 55:12 You will go out in joy<sup>a</sup> and be led forth in peace;<sup>b</sup> the mountains and hills will burst into song<sup>c</sup> before you, and all the trees<sup>d</sup> of the field will clap their hands.<sup>e</sup>**

**Isa 55:13 Instead of the thornbush will grow the pine tree, and instead of briars<sup>f</sup> the myrtle<sup>g</sup> will grow. This will be for the LORD'S renown,<sup>h</sup> for an everlasting sign, which will not be destroyed.”<sup>i</sup>**